The Complete Works
of
Sir Philip Sidney

In Three Volumes
Volume I
SIR PHILIP SIDNEY

Born 1554
Died 1586
THE
COUNTESS
DE PÉRHINOKES
À LAODICE
In a Series of the Modern
Novels

A NEW
Edition
By John Maxwell
In 1838
THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA,
WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIPPE SIDNEI.

LONDON
Printed for William Ponsonbie.
Anno Domini, 1590.

Title-page of the Editio Princeps
SIR PHILIP SIDNEY

THE
COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES
ARCADIA

EDITED BY
ALBERT FEUILLERAT
Professor of English Literature in the University of Rennes

Cambridge:
at the University Press
1912
CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS

London: FETTER LANE, E.C.
C. F. CLAY, Manager

Edinburgh: 100, PRINCES STREET
Berlin: A. ASHER AND CO.
Leipzig: F. A. BROCKHAUS
New York: G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS
Bombay and Calcutta: MACMILLAN AND CO., Ltd.

All rights reserved
PREFATORY NOTE

Reprints of the separate works of Sir Philip Sidney are numerous; yet, however incredible this may seem, no complete edition has hitherto been accessible. The object of the volumes now offered to Elizabethan students is to collect all the literary productions of Sidney: The Countesse of Pembrokes Arcadia, the Poems and The Defence of Poesie as well as the Correspondence and the Political Pamphlets. I even propose to include the translations of the Psalms and of Mornay’s Vérité de la Religion Chrétienne, it being possible to ascertain Sidney’s share in these works.

The fact that such an important author should have had to wait so long for his due is probably referable to the difficulties with which a modern editor has to struggle in choosing an authentic text. Sir Philip Sidney was blessed with a most charming and most talented sister; but this fascinating lady made no scruple to revise and, as she probably thought, to better the writings of her deceased brother. Hence, the danger of printing, as Sir Philip’s, passages which fell from the pen of Mary. In many cases, it is hopeless to determine how much is due to her collaboration; in others, unauthorised editions fortunately permit us to escape the effects of her revisory spirit. For this reason, my principle has been—whenever this was possible—to
choose as a basis of the text the earliest editions known, even when these, from a literary point of view, are inferior to "amended" texts.

As regards the present volume, my choice has proved simple enough. Two forms of *Arcadia* have been preserved. The earlier, known as "the old Arcadia," contained five books and was circulated in manuscript, several copies of which still exist, three having been discovered by Mr B. Dobell. With this first form, the author, it appears, was not satisfied and he set about revising it; or, rather, he enlarged it by the addition of several new stories dovetailed into the principal one, after the manner of Spanish romances. At the time of his death, Sidney had not proceeded further than a portion of the third Book, and thus his manuscript was left unfinished. This manuscript, having come to the hands of Ponsonby, was printed and published in a quarto volume, in 1590. Three years later, another edition in folio, pretending to wipe away "those spottes wherewith the beauties" of *Arcadia* "were unworthely blemished," appeared with rearrangements and additions said to have been worked up from "severall loose sheets" sent by the author to the Countess of Pembroke. As a matter of fact, the editor of this new edition—as I shall show in due course—contented himself with slightly modifying the text of the quarto and completing the story from that "old Arcadia" already mentioned, thus giving the unnatural combination of a rejected work and of a work which represented the final form adopted by the author. Such being the case, I have thought it best to give in a separate volume—the first—the text of the quarto of 1590, reserving for the second volume that part of the original *Arcadia* which was added in 1593. Thus,
the incongruity of blending two incompatible forms has been avoided without omitting what is, after all, an interesting part of Sir Philip Sidney's works.

In accordance with the scheme of *The Cambridge English Classics*, the text adopted is printed without any deviations from the original in the matter of spelling and punctuation, save those recorded in the list found on page 520. These exceptions consist of evident misprints which it has been thought useless to preserve. In the Notes, I have given the variant readings supplied by all the editions published from 1593 down to 1674. These are fourteen in number, or, rather, twelve, for the 1623 and 1629 folios are duplicates of the 1621 and 1627 editions respectively. This long and self-imposed task has been, I need not say, tedious and has involved sacrifices of many sorts. To some, it may even seem foolish to have wasted so much time upon mere collation. Yet I do not regret my pains, for it is now possible to solve most of the bibliographical problems which present themselves, that of the Edinburgh edition amongst others.

In the next volumes, I shall have the very pleasant duty to acknowledge various and numerous obligations. In the present volume, my debts are few, though important. First of all, I must mention the courtesy of Mr A. W. Pollard, who, hearing that I was working upon *Arcadia*, spontaneously offered me the use of a valuable copy belonging to him. I owe also many thanks to Mr A. R. Waller, who incited me to undertake

---

1 In the British Museum (Press Mark: G. 10440).
2 The manuscripts of "the old Arcadia" have not been collated; to include their variants would have meant practically printing the whole of the earlier form. It also goes without saying that I have not recorded differences in spelling. In the Notes, the spelling given is that of the earliest edition where the difference appears.
this edition, and who, after the printing of the text, patiently—and silently—waited for two long years, till I had fought out my battle with the ponderous mass of the fourteen folios above-mentioned. Lastly, I ought not to forget my wife, for without her constant help I should never have been able to bring my work to an end.

A. FEUILLERAT

10 November 1911
## CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>The Countesse of Pembroke's Arcadia</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>List of Misprints in the Quarto which have been corrected</td>
<td>520</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Notes (variants)</td>
<td>522</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appendix (the Eclogues as printed in 1593)</td>
<td>563</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alphabetical Table of the Personages in Arcadia</td>
<td>567</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Index of First Lines of Poems</td>
<td>571</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Corrigenda</td>
<td>572</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA,
WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIPPE SIDNEI.

LONDON
Printed for William Ponsonbie.
Anno Domini, 1590.
TO MY DEARE LADIE
AND SISTER, THE COUN-
TESSE OF PEMBROKE.

Here now have you (most deare, and most worthy

to be most deare Lady) this idle worke of
mine: which I fear (like the Spiders webbe) will be
thought fitter to be swept away, then worn to any
other purpose. For my part, in very trueth (as the
cruell fathers among the Greekes, were woont to doo
to the babes they would not foster) I could well find
in my harte, to cast out in some desert of forgetfulnes
this child, which I am loath to father. But you
desired me to doo it, and your desire, to my hart is
an absolute commandement. Now, it is done onelie
for you, onely to you: if you keepe it to your selfe, or
to such friendes, who will weigh errors in the bal-
launce of good will, I hope, for the fathers sake, it
will be pardon'd, perchance made much of, though in
it selfe it have deformities. For indeede, for severer
eyes it is not, being but a trifle, and that triflinglie
handled. Your deare selfe can best witnes the
maner, being done in loose sheetes of paper, most of
it in your presence, the rest, by sheetes, sent unto you,
as fast as they were done. In summe, a young head,
not so well stayed as I would it were, (and shall be
when God will) having many many fancies begotten
in it, if it had not ben in some way delivered, would
have growen a monster, & more sorie might I be that
they came in, then that they gat out. But his chiefe
safetie, shalbe the not walking abroad; & his chiefe protection, the bearing the liverye of your name; which (if much much good will do not deceave me) is worthy to be a sacluary for a greater offender. This say I, because I knowe the vertue so; and this say I, because it may be ever so; or to say better, because it will be ever so. Read it then at your idle tymes, and the follyes your good judgement wil finde in it, blame not, but laugh at. And so, looking for no better stuffe, then, as in an Haberdashers shoppe, glasses, or feathers, you will continue to love the writer, who doth exceedinglie love you; and most most hartelie praies you may long live, to be a princi-pall ornament to the familie of the Sidneis.

Your loving Brother

Philip Sidnei.

The division and summing of the Chapters was not of Sir Philip Sidneis dooing, but adventured by the over-seer of the print, for the more ease of the Readers. He therefore submits himselfe to their judgement, and if his labour answere not the worthines of the booke, desireth pardon for it. As also if any defect be found in the Eclogues, which although they were of Sir Phillip Sidneis writing, yet were they not perused by him, but left till the worke had bene finished, that then choise should have bene made, which should have bene taken, and in what manner brought in. At this time they have bene chosen and disposed as the over-seer thought best.
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIP SIDNEI.

THE FIRST BOOKE.

CHAP. I.

1 The sheperdish complaints of the absented lovers Strephon and Claius. 2 The second shipwrack of Pyrocles and Musidorus. Their strange saving, 3 interview, and 4 parting.

It was in the time that the earth begins to put on her new apparel against the approch of her lover, and that the Sun running a most even course becomes an indifferent arbiter betwene the night and the day; when the hopelesse shepheard Strephon was come to the sandes, which lie against the Island of Cithera; where viewing the place with a heavy kinde of delight, and sometimes casting his eyes to the Ileward, he called his friendly rivall, the pastor Claius unto him, and setting first downe in his darkened countenance a dolefull copie of what he would speake: O my Claius, said he, hether we are now come to pay the rent, for which we are so called unto by over-busie Remembrance, Remembrance, restlesse Remembrance, which claymes not onely this dutie of us, but for it will have us forget our selves. I pray you when wee were amid our flocke, and that of other shepeheardes some were running after their sheep strayed beyond their bounds, some delighting their eyes with seeing them nibble upon the short and sweete grasse, some medicining their sicke ewes, some setting a bell for an ensigne of a sheepish squadron, some with more leasure inventing new games of exercising their bodies & sporting their wits: did Remembrance graunt us any holiday, eyther for pastime
or devotion, nay either for necessary foode or naturall rest? but that still it forced our thoughts to worke upó this place, where we last (alas that the word last should so long last) did gaze our eyes upon her ever florishing beautie: did it not still crie within us? Ah you base minded wretches, are your thoughts so deeply bemired in the trade of ordinary worldlings, as for respect of gaine some paulyry wooll may yeeld you, to let so much time passe without knowing perfectly her estate, especially in so troublesome a season? to leave that shore unsaluted, from whence you may see to the Island where she dwelleth? to leave those steps unkissed wherein Urania printed the farewell of all beautie? Wel then, Remembrance commanded, we obeyed, and here we finde, that as our remembrance came ever cloathed unto us in the forme of this place, so this place gives newe heathe to the feaver of our languishing remembrance. Yonder my Claius, Urania lighted, the verie horse (me thought) bewayled to be so disburnd: and as for thee, poore Claius, when thou wentst to help her downe, I saw reverence and desire so devide thee, that thou didst at one instant both blushe and quake, and in stead of bearing her, weart ready to fall downe thy selfe. There shee sate, vouchsafing my cloake (then most gorgeous) under her: at yonder rising of the ground she turned her selve, looking backe toward her woonted abode, and because of her parting bearing much sorrow in hir eyes, the lightsomnes whereof had yet so naturall a cherefulnesse, as it made even sorrow seeme to smile; at that turning she spake unto us all, opening the cherrie of hir lips, & Lord how greedily mine eares did feed upon the sweete words she uttered? And here she laide her hand over thine eyes, when shee saw the teares springing in them, as if she would conceale them from other, and yet her selve feele some of thy sorrow: But woe is me, yonder, yonder, did she put her foote into the boate, at that instant as it were deviding her heavenly beautie, betweene the Earth and the Sea. But when she was embarked, did you not marke how the windes whistled, & the seas daunst for joy, how the sailes did swel with pride, and all because they had Urania? O Urania, blessed be thou Urania, the sweetest fairenesse and fairest sweetnesse: with that worde his voice brake so with sobbing, that he could say no further; and Claius thus answered. Alas my Strephon (said he) what
needes this skore to reckon up onely our losses? What doubt is there, but that the light of this place doth call our thoughtes to appeare at the court of affecion, held by that racking steward, Remembrance? Aswell may sheepe forget to feare when they spie wolwes, as wee can misse such fancies, when wee see any place made happie by her treading. Who can choose that saw her but thinke where she stayed, where she walkt, where she turned, where she spoke? But what is all this? truely no more, but as this place served us to thinke of those things, so those things serve as places to call to memorie more excellent matters. No, no, let us thinke with consideration, and consider with acknowledging, and acknowledge with admiration, and admire with love, and love with joy in the midst of all woes: let us in such sorte thinke, I say, that our poore eyes were so inriched as to behold, and our low hearts so exalted as to love, a maide, who is such, that as the greatest thing the world can shewe, is her beautie, so the least thing that may be praysed in her, is her beautie. Certainly as her eyelids are more pleasant to behold, then two white kiddes climing up a faire tree, and browsing on his tendrest braunches, and yet are nothing, compared to the day-shining starres contayned in them; and as her breath is more sweete then a gentle South-west wind, which comes creeping over flowrie fieldes and shadowed waters in the extreeme heate of summer, and yet is nothing, compared to the hony flowing speach that breath doth carrie: no more all that our eyes can see of her (though when they have seene her, what else they shall ever see is but drie stuble after clovers grasse) is to bee matched with the flocke of unspeakeable vertues laid up delightfully in that best builded foilde. But in deede as wee can better consider the sunnes beautie, by marking how he guildes these waters, and moun-taines them by looking upon his owne face, too glorious for our weake eyes: so it may be our conceits (not able to beare her sun-stayning excellencie) will better way it by her workes upon some meaner subject employed. And alas, who can better witnesse that then we, whose experience is grounded upon feeling? hath not the onely love of her made us (being silly ignorant shepheards) raise up our thoughts above the ordinary levell of the worlde, so as great clearkes do not disdaine our conference? hath not the desire to seeme worthie in her eyes
made us when others were sleeping, to sit vewing the course of heavens? when others were running at base, to runne over learned writings? when other marke their sheepe, we to marke our selves? hath not shee throwne reason upon our desires, and, as it were given eyes unto Cupid? hath in any, but in her, love-fellowship maintained friendship betweene rivals, and beautie taught the beholders chastitie? He was going on with his praises, but Strephon bad him stay, & looke: & so they both perceaved a thing which floted drawing nearer and nearer to the banke; but rather by the favourable working of the Sea, then by any selfe industrie. They doubted a while what it should be; till it was cast up even hard before the: at which time they fully saw that it was a man: Wherupon running for pitie sake unto him, they found his hands (as it should appeare, constanter frends to his life then his memorie) fast griping upon the edge of a square small coffer, which lay all under his breast: els in him selfe no shew of life, so as the boord seemed to bee but a beere to carry him a land to his Sepulchre. So drew they up a young man of so goodly shape, and well pleasing favour, that one would think death had in him a lovely countenance; and, that though he were naked, nakednes was to him an apparrel. That sight increased their compassion, and their compassion called up their care; so that lifting his feete above his head, making a great deale of salt water to come out of his mouth, they layd him upon some of their garments, and fell to rub and chafe him, till they brought him to recover both breath the servant, & warmth the companion of living. At length, opening his eyes, he gave a great groane, (a dolefull note but a pleaasunt dittie) for by that, they found not onely life, but strength of life in him. They therefore continued on their charitable office, until (his spirits being well returned,) hee (without so much as thanking them for their paines) gate up, and looking round about to the uttermost lymittes of his sight, and crying upon the name of Pyrocles, nor seeing nor hearing cause of comfort: what (said he) and shall Musidorus live after Pyrocles? therewithall hee offered wilfully to cast destruction & himselfe againe into the sea: a strange sight to the shepheards, to whom it seemed, that before being in apparance dead had yet saved his life, and now comming to his life, shoulde be a cause to procure his death; but they ranne unto him, and
pulling him backe, (then too feeble for them) by force stickled that unnatural fray. I pray you (said he) honest men, what such right have you in me, as not to suffer me to doe with my self what I list? and what pollicie have you to bestow a benefite where it is counted an injury? They hearing him speake in Greek (which was their naturall language) became the more tender hearted towards him; and considering by his calling and looking, that the losse of some deare friend was great cause of his sorow; told him they were poore men that were bound by course of humanitie to prevent so great a mischiefe; and that they wisht him, if opinion of some bodies perishing bred such desperate anguish in him, that he should be comforted by his owne proofe, who had lately escaped as apparan danger as any might be. No, no (said he) it is not for me to attend so high a blissefulnesse: but since you take care of mee, I pray you finde meanes that some Barke may be provided, that will goe out of the haven, that if it be possible we may finde the body farre too precious a foode for fishes: and for the hire (said he) I have within this casket, of value sufficient to content them. Claius presently went to a Fisherman, & having agreed with him, and provided some apparrell for the naked stranger, he imbarked, and the Shepheards with him: and were no sooner gone beyond the mouth of the haven, but that some way into the sea they might discerne (as it were) a stayne of the waters colour, and by times some sparkes and smoke mounting thereout. But the young man no sooner saw it, but that beating his brest, he cried, that there was the beginning of his ruine, intreating them to bend their course as neere unto it as they could: telling, how that smoake was but a small relique of a great fire, which had drive both him & his friend rather to committe themselves to the cold mercie of the sea, then to abide the hote crueltie of the fire: and that therefore, though they both had abandoned the ship, that he was (if any where) in that course to be met withall. They steared therefore as neere thetherward as they could: but when they came so neere as their eies were ful masters of the object, they saw a sight full of piteous strangenes: a ship, or rather the carkas of the shippe, or rather some few bones of the carkas, huling there, part broken, part burned, part drowned: death having used more then one dart to that destruction. About it floted great store.
of very rich things, and many chestes which might promise no lesse. And amidst the precious things were a number of dead bodies, which likewise did not onely testifie both elemêts violence, but that the chiefe violence was growen of humane inhumanitie: for their bodies were ful of grisly wounds, & their bloud had (as it were) filled the wrinckles of the seas visage: which it seemed the sea woulde not wash away, that it might witnes it is not alwaies his fault, when we condemne his crueltie: in summe, a defeate, where the conquered kept both field and spoile: a shipwrack without storme or ill footing: and a wast of fire in the midst of water.

But a little way off they saw the mast, whose proude height now lay along; like a widdow having lost her make of whom she held her honor: but upon the mast they saw a yong man (at least if he were a man) bearing shew of about 18. yeres of age, who sate (as on horsback) having nothing upon him but his shirt, which being wrought with blew silk & gold; had a kind of resemblance to the sea: on which the sun (then neare his Westerne home) did shoote some of his beames. His haire (which the young men of Greece used to weare very long) was stirred up & down with the wind, which seemed to have a sport to play with it, as the sea had to kisse his feet; himselfe full of admirable beautie, set foorth by the strangenes both of his seate & gesture: for, holding his head up full of unmoved majestie, he held a sworde aloft with his faire arme, which often he waved about his crowne as though he would threaten the world in that extremitie. But the fishermen, when they came so neere him, that it was time to throwe out a rope, by which hold they might draw him, their simplicity bred such amasement, & their amasement such a superstitiô, that (assuredly thinking it was some God begotten betweene Neptune and Venus, that had made all this terrible slaughter) as they went under sayle by him, held up their hands, and made their prayers. Which when Musidorus sawe, though he were almost as much ravished with joy, as they with astonishment, he lept to the Mariner, and tooke the rope out of his hande and (saying, doest thou live, and arte well? who answered, thou canst tell best, since most of my well beyng standes in thee,) threwe it out, but alreadie the shippe was past beyond Pyrocles: and therefore Musidorus could doo no more but perswade the
Mariners to cast about againe, assuring them that hee was but a man, although of most divine excellencies, and promising great rewardes for their paine.

And now they were alreadie come upon the staies; when one of the saylers descried a Galley which came with sayles and oares directlie in the chase of them; and streight perceaved it was a well knowne Pirate, who hunted not onely for goodes but for bodies of menne, which hee employed eyther to bee his Galley slaves, or to sell at the best market. Which when the Maister understood, he commaunded forthwith to set on all the canvasse they could, and flye homeward, leaving in that sort poore Pyrocles so neere to be reskewed. But what did not Musidorus say? what did he not offer to perswade them to venture the fight? But feare standing at the gates of their ears, put back all perswasions: so that hee had nothing to accompanie Pyrocles, but his eyes; nor to succour him, but his wishes. Therefore praying for him, and casting a long look that way he saw the Galley leave the pursuit of them, & turne to take up the spoiles of the other wrack: and lastly he might well see them lift up the yong man; and alas (said he to himselfe) deere Pyrocles shall that bodie of thine be enchayned? shall those victorious handes of thine be commaunded to base offices? shall vertue become a slave to those that be slaves to viciousnes? Alas, better had it bene thou hadst ended nobly thy noble daies: what death is so evill as unworthy servitude? But that opinion soone ceased when he saw the gallie setting upon an other ship, which held long and strong fight with her: for then he began a fresh to feare the life of his friende, and to wish well to the Pirates whome before he hated, least in their ruyne hee might perish. But the fishermen made such speed into the haven, that they absented his eyes from beholding the issue: where being enterd, he could procure neither them nor any other as then to put themselves into the sea: so that beyng as full of sorrow for being unable to doe any thing, as voide of counsell how to doe any thing, besides, that sickness grew something upon him, the honest shepheardes Strephon and Claius (who being themselves true friends, did the more perfectly judge the justnesse of his sorrowe) advise him, that he should mitigate somewhat of his woe, since he had gotten an amendment in fortune, being come from assured persuasion
of his death, to have no cause to dispaire of his life: as one that had lamented the death of his sheepe, should after know they were but strayed, would receive pleasure though readily hee knew not where to finde them.

CHAP. 2.

1 The pastors comfortes to the wracked Musidorus. 2 His passage into Arcadia. The descriptions of 3 Laconia, 4 Arcadia, Kalanders 5 person, 6 house, and 7 entertainement to Musidorus, now called Palladius. His 8 sicknes, recovery, 9 and perfections.

1 Now sir (saide they) thus for our selves it is. Wee are in profession but shepheards, and in this countrie of Laconia little better then strangers, and therefore neither in skill, nor habilitie of power greatly to stead you. But what we can present unto you is this: Arcadia, of which countrie wee are, is but a little way hence, and even upon the next confines.

5 There dwelleth a Gentleman, by name Kalander, who vouchsafeth much favour unto us: A man who for his hospitalitie is so much haunted, that no newes sturre, but comes to his eares; for his upright dealing so beloved of his neighbours, that he hath many ever readie to doe him their uttermost service, and by the great good will our Prince beares him, may soone obtaine the use of his name and credit, which hath a principall swaie, not only in his owne Arcadia but in al these coutrie of Peloponnesus: and (which is worth all) all these things give him not so much power, as his nature gives him will to benefit: so that it seemes no Musicke is so sweet to his eare as deserved thankes. To him we will bring you, & there you may recover againe your helth, without which you cannot be able to make any diligent search for your friend: and therefore but in that respect, you must labour for it. Besides, we are sure the coft of curtesie, & ease of wise counsell shall not be wanting.

2 Musidorus (who besides he was meerly unacquainted in the coutrie had his wits astonished with sorow) gave easie consent
to that, frō which he saw no reason to disagree: & therefore (defraying the Mariners with a ring bestowed upon thē) they tooke their journey together through Laconia; Claius & Strephon by course carrying his chest for him, Musidorus only bearing in his coûtenance evidēt marks of a sorowfulmind supported with a weak bodie, which they perceiving, & knowing that the violence of sorow is not at the first to be strivē withal: (being like a mighty beast, soner tamed with followeing, thā overthowē by withstāding) they gave way unto it for that day & the next; never troubling him, either with asking questions, or finding fault with his melācholie, but rather fitting to his dolor dolorous discourses of their own & other folks misfortunes. Which speeches, thogh they had not a lively entrāce to his sēces shut up in sorow, yet like one half asleep, he toke hold of much of the matters spoken unto him, so as a man may say, ere sorow was aware, they made his thoughts beare away something els beside his own sorow, which wrought so in him, that at lēgth he grew cōtent to mark their speeches, then to marvel at such wit in shepheardes, after to like their company, & lastly to vouchsafe conferēce: so that the 3. day after, in the time that the morning did strow roses & violets in the heavenly floore against the cōming of the Sun, the nightingales (striving one with the other which couldē in most dainty variety recount their wrong-caused sorow) made thē put of their sleep, & rising frō under a tree (which that night had bin their paviliō) they went on their jorney, which by & by welcomed Musidorus eyes (wearied with the wasted soile of Laconia) with delightfull prospects. There were hilles which garnished their proud 4 heights with stately trees: hüble valleis, whose base estate semed cōforted with refreshing of silver rivers: medows, enameld with al sorts of ey-pleasing floures: thickets, which being lined with most pleasāt shade, were witnessed so to by the chereful depositiō of many wel-tuned birds: each pasture stored with sheep feeding with sober security, while the pretē lābs with bleting oratory craved the dams cōfort: here a shepheardes boy piping, as though he should never be old: there a yong shepherdesse knitting, and withall singing, & it seemed that her voice cōforted her hands to work, & her hāds kept time to her voices musick. As for the houses of the coutry (for many houses came under their eye) they were all scattered,
no two being one by th'other, & yet not so far off as that it barred mutual succour: a shew, as it were, of an accopanable solitarines, & of a civil wildnes. I pray you (said Musidorus, then first unsealing his long silent lips) what coûtries be these we passe through, which are so divers in shew, the one wâting no store, th'other having no store but of want.

3 The country (answered Claius) where you were cast a shore, & now are past through, is Laconia, not so poore by the barrennes of the soyle (though in it selfe not passing fertill) as by a civill warre, which being these two yeares within the bowels of that estate, betweene the gentlemen & the peasants (by them named Helots) hath in this sorte as it were disfigured the face of nature, and made it so unhospitall as now you have found it: the townes neither of the one side nor the other, willingly opening their gates to strangers, nor strangers willingly entring for feare of being mistaken.

4 But this countrie (where now you set your foote) is Arcadia: and even harde by is the house of Kalander whether we lead you: this countrie being thus decked with peace, and (the childe of peace) good husbandrie. These houses you see so scattered are of men, as we two are, that live upon the commoditie of their sheepe: and therefore in the division of the Arcadian estate are termed shepheards; a happie people, wanting litle, because they desire not much. What cause then, said Musidorus, made you venter to leave this sweete life, and put your selfe in yonder unpleasant and dangerous realme? Garded with povertie (answered Strephon) & guided with love: But now (said Claius) since it hath pleased you to aske any thing of us whose basenes is such as the very knowledge is darknes: geve us leave to know somthing of you, & of the young man you so much lament, that at least we may be the better instructed to enforce Kalander, and he the better know how to proportion his entertainment. Musidorus (according to the agreement betweene Pyrocles and him to alter their names) answered, that he called himself Palladius, and his friend Daiphantus; but till I have him againe (said he) I am in deed nothing: and therefore my storie is of nothing, his entertainement (since so good a man he is) cannot be so lowe as I account my estate: and in summe, the summe of all his curtesie may be to helpe me by some meanes to seeke my frend.
They perceived he was not willing to open himselve further, and therefore without further questioning brought him to the house: about which they might see (with fitte consideration both of the ayre, the prospect, and the nature of the ground) all such necessarie additions to a great house, as might well shewe, Kalander knew that provision is the foundation of hospitalitie, and thrust the fewell of magnificence. The house it selfe was built of faire and strong stone, not affecting so much any extraordinarie kinde of finenes, as an honorable representing of a firme statelines. The lightes, doores and staires, rather directed to the use of the guest, then to the eye of the Artificer: and yet as the one cheefly heeded, so the other not neglected; each place handsome without curiositie, and homely without lothsomnes: not so daintie as not to be trode on, nor yet slubberd up with good fellowshippe: all more lasting then beautifull, but that the consideration of the exceeding lastingnesse made the eye beleeve it was exceeding beautifull. The servants not so many in number, as cleanlie in apparell, and serviceable in behaviour, testifying even in their countenaunces, that their maister tooke aswell care to be served, as of the that did serve. One of them was forth-with readie to welcome the shepheards, as men, who though they were poore, their maister greatly favoured: and understanding by them, that the young man with them was to be much accounted of, for that they had seene tokens of more then common greatnes, how so ever now eclipsed with fortune: He ranne to his master, who came presentlie forth, and pleasantly welcomming the shepheards, but especially applying him to Musidorus, Strephon privately told him all what he knew of him, and particularly that hee found this stranger was loath to be known.

No said Kalander (speaking alowd) I am no herald to enquire of mens pedegrees, it sufficeth me if I know their vertues: which (if this young mans face be not a false wittnes) doe better apparrell his minde, then you have done his body. While hee was speaking, there came a boy in shew like a Merchants prentice, who taking Strephon by the sleeve, delivered him a letter, written joyntly both to him and Claius from Urania: which they no sooner had read, but that with short leave-taking of Kalander (who quickly ghest and smiled at the matter) and once againe (though hastely) recommending the
yong man unto him, they went away, leaving Musidorus even lothe to part with them, for the good conversation he had of them, & obligation he accounted himselfe tied in unto them: and therefore, they delivering his chest unto him, he opened it, and would have presented the with two very rich jewels, but they absolutelie refused them, telling him they were more then enough rewarded in the knowing of him, and without herkenning unto a replie (like men whose harts disdained all desires but one) gate speedely away, as if the letter had brought wings to make them flie. But by that sight Kalander soone judged that his guest was of no meane calling; and therefore the more respectfullie entertaining him, Musidorus found his sicknes (which the fight, the sea, and late travell had layd upon him) grow greatly: so that fearing some suddaine accident, he delivered the chest to Kalander; which was full of most pretious stones, gorgeously & cunningly set in diverse maners, desiring him he would keep those trifles, and if he died, he would bestow so much of it as was needfull, to finde out and redeeme a young man, naming himselfe Daiphantus, as then in the handes of Laconia pirates.

8 But Kalander seeing him faint more and more, with carefulfull speede conveyed him to the most commodious lodging in his house: where being possset with an extreme burning fever, he cointinued some while with no great hope of life: but youth at length got the victorie of sickness, so that in six weekes the excellencie of his returned beautie was a credible embassadour of his health; to the great joy of Kalander: who, as in this time he had by certaine friendes of his that dwelt neare the Sea in Messenia, set foorth a shippe and a galley to seeke and succour Daiphantus: so at home did hee omit nothing which he thought might eyther profite or gratifie Palladius.

9 For having found in him (besides his bodily giftes beyond the degree of Admiration) by dayly discourses which he delighited him selfe to have with him, a mind of most excellent composition (a pearcing witte quite voide of ostentation, high erected thoughts seated in a harte of courtesie, an eloquence as sweete in the uttering, as slowe to come to the uttering, a behaviour so noble, as gave a majestie to adversitie: and all in a man whose age could not be above one & twenty yeares,) the good old man was even enamoured with a fatherly love
towards him; or rather became his servant by the bondes such vertue laid upon him; once hee acknowledged him selfe so to be, by the badge of diligent attendance.

CHAP. 3.

The pictures of Kalanders dainty garden-house. His narration of the Arcadian estate, the King, the Queene, their two daughters, and their gardians, with their qualities, which is the ground of all this storie.

But Palladius having gotten his health, and onely staying there to be in place, where he might heare answere of the shippes set forth, Kalander one afternoone led him abroad to a wel arayed ground he had behind his house, which hee thought to shewe him before his going, as the place him selfe more then in any other delighted: the backeside of the house was neythet field, garden, nor orchard; or rather it was both fielde, garden, and orcharde: for as soone as the descending of the stayres had delivred them downe, they came into a place cunninglie set with trees of the moste tast-pleasing fruities: but scarcelie they had taken that into their consideration, but that they were suddainely stept into a delicate greene, of each side of the greene a thicket bend, behinde the thicketes againe newe beddes of flowers, which being under the trees, the trees were to them a Pavilion, and they to the trees a mosaical floore: so that it seemed that arte therein would needes be delightfull by counterfaiting his enemie error, and making order in confusion.

In the middest of all the place, was a faire ponde, whose shaking christall was a perfect mirrour to all the other beauties, so that it bare shewe of two gardens; one in deede, the other in shaddowes: and in one of the thicketes was a fine fountaine made thus. A naked Venus of white marble, wherein the graver had used such cunning, that the naturall blew veines of the marble were framed in fitte places, to set forth the beautifull veines of her bodie. At her brest she had her babe Æneas, who seemed (having begun to sucke) to leave that, to looke upon her fayre eyes, which smiled at the babes follie, the meane while the
breast running. Hard by was a house of pleasure builte for a Sommer retiring place, whether Kalander leading him, he found a square roome full of delightfull pictures, made by the most excellent workman of Greece. There was Diana when Acteon sawe her bathing, in whose cheekes the painter had set such a colour, as was mixt betweene shame & disdaine: & one of her foolish Nymphes, who weeping, and withal lowning, one might see the workman meant to set forth teares of anger. In another table was Atalanta; the posture of whose lims was so livelie expressed, that if the eyes were the only judges, as they be the onely seers, one would have sworne the very picture had runne. Besides many mo, as of Helena, Omphale, Iole: but in none of them all beautie seemed to speake so much as in a large table, which contained a comely old man, with a lady of midle age, but of excellët beautie; & more excellët would have bene deemed, but that there stood betweene thë a yong maid, whose wonderfulnesse tooke away all beautie from her, but that, which it might seeme shee gave her backe againe by her very shadow. And such differëce, being knowne that it did in deed counterfeit a person living, was there betweene her and al the other, though Goddesses, that it seemd the skill of the painter bestowed on the other new beautie, but that the beautie of her bestowed new skill of the painter. Though he thought inquisitiveness an uncomely guest, he could not choose but aske who she was, that bearing shew of one being in deed, could with natural gifts go beyond the reach of inventiö. Kalander answered, that it was made by Philoclea, the younger daughter of his prince, who also with his wife were conteined in that Table: the painter meaning to represent the present condition of the young Ladie, who stood watched by an over-curious eye of her parents: & that he would also have drawne her eldest sister, esteemed her match for beautie, in her shepheardish attire; but that the rude clown her gardià would not suffer it: nether durst he aske leave of the Prince for feare of suspitio. Palladius perceaved that the matter was wrapt up in some secrsesie, and therefore would for modestie demande no further: but yet his countenance could not but with dumme Eloquence desire it: Which Kalander perceaving, well said he, my deere guest, I know your minde, and I will satisfie it: neyther will I doo it like a niggardly answerer, going no further then the boundes of
the question, but I will discover unto you, aswell that wherein my knowledge is common with others, as that which by extra-
ordinarie means is delivered unto me: knowing so much in you,
though not long acquainted, that I shall find your cares faithfull
treasurers. So then sitting downe in two chaires, and some-
times casting his eye to the picture, he thus spake.

This countrie Arcadia among all the provinces of Greece, hath ever beene had in singular reputation: partly for the
sweetnesse of the ayre, and other natural benefites, but principi-
ally for the well tempered minds of the people, who (finding
that the shining title of glorie so much affected by other
nations, doth in deed helpe little to the happinesse of life) are
the onely people, which as by their Justice and providence geve
neither cause nor hope to their neyghbours to annoy them, so
are they not sturred with false praise to trouble others quiet,
thinking it a small reward for the wasting of their owne lives in
ravening, that their posteritie should long after saie, they had
done so. Even the Muses seeme to approve their good de-
terminatiō, by chosing this countrie for their chiefe repairing
place, & by bestowing their perfections so largely here, that
the very shepheards have their fancies lifted to so high conceits,
as the learned of other nations are content both to borrow their
names, and imitate their cunning.

Here dwelleth, and raigneth this Prince (whose picture you see) by name Basilius, a Prince of sufficient skill to governe so
quiet a countrie, where the good minds of the former princes
had set down good lawes, and the well bringing up of the
people doth serve as a most sure bond to hold the. But to be
plaine with you, he excels in nothing so much, as in the zealous
love of his people, wherein he doth not only passe al his owne
fore-goers, but as I thinke al the princes living. Wherof the
cause is, that though he exceed not in the vertues which get
admiration; as depth of wisdome, height of courage and large-
nesse of magnificence, yet is hee notable in those whiche stirre
affection, as trueuth of worde, meekenesse, courtesie, merciful-
nesse, and liberalitie.

He being already well striken in yeares, maried a young princes, named Gynecia, daughter to the king of Cyprus, of
notable beautie, as by her picture you see: a woman of great
wit, and in truth of more princely vertues, then her husband:
of most unspotted chastitie, but of so working a minde, and so vehement spirits, as a man may say, it was happier shee tooke a good course: for otherwise it would have beene terrible.

Of these two are brought to the worlde two daughters, so beyonde measure excellent in all the gifts allotted to reasonable creatures, that wee may thinke they were borne to shewe, that Nature is no stepmother to that sex, how much so ever some men (sharpe witted onely in evill speaking) have sought to disgrace them. The elder is named Pamela; by many men not deemed inferiour to her sister: for my part, when I marked them both, me thought there was (if at least such perfections may receyve the worde of more) more sweetnesse in Philoclea, but more majestie in Pamela: me thought love plaide in Philocleas eyes, and threatned in Palmelas: me thought Philoclea beautie onely perswaded, but so perswaded as all harts must yeelde: Palmelas beautie used violence, and such violence as no hart could resist: and it seemes that such proportion is betweene their mindes; Philoclea so bashfull as though her excellencies had stolne into her before shee was aware: so humble, that she will put all pride out of countenance: in summe, such proceeding as will stirre hope, but teach hope good manners. Pamela of high thoughts, who avoide not pride with not knowing her excellencies, but by making that one of her excellencies to be void of pride; her mothers wisdome, greatnesse, nobilitie, but (if I can ghesse aright) knit with a more constant temper. Now then, our Basilius being so publickly happie as to be a Prince, and so happie in that happinesse as to be a beloved Prince, and so in his private blessed as to have so excellent a wife, and so over-excellent children, hath of late taken a course which yet makes him more spoken of then all these blessings. For, having made a journey to Delphos, and safely returned, within short space he brake up his court, and retired himselfe, his wife, and children into a certaine Forrest hereby, which hee calleth his desert, where in (besides a house appointed for stables and lodgings for certaine persons of meane calling, who do all household services,) hee hath builded two fine lodges. In the one of them him selfe remaines with his younger daughter Philoclea, which was the cause they three were matched together in this picture, without having any other creature living in that lodge with him.
Which though it bee strange, yet not so strange, as the course he hath taken with the princesses Pamela, whom he hath placed in the other lodge: but how thinke you accompanied? truly with none other, but one Dametas, the most arrant doltish clowne, that I thinke ever was without the priviledge of a bable, with his wife Miso, and daughter Mopsa, in whome no witt can devise anie thing wherein they maie pleasure her, but to exercise her patience, and to serve for a foile of her perfections. This loutish clowne is such, that you never saw so ill favourd a visar; his behaviour such, that he is beyond the degree of ridiculous; and for his apparrel, even as I would wish him: Miso his wife, so handsome a beldame, that onely her face and her splayfoote have made her accused for a witch; onely one good point she hath, that she observes decoru, having a froward mind in a wretched body. Betweene these two personages (who never agreed in any humor, but in disagreeing) is issued forth mistresse Mopsa, a fitte woman to participate of both their perfections: but because a pleasant fellow of my acquaintance set forth her praises in verse, I will only repeate them, and spare mine owne tongue, since she goes for a woman. These verses are these, which I have so often caused to be song, that I have them without booke.

What length of verse can serve brave Mopsas good to show? Whose vertues strange, & beuties such, as no mā thē may know Thus shrewdly burndē thē, how cā my Muse escape? The gods must help, and pretious things must serve to shew her shape. Like great god Saturn faire, and like faire Venus chaste: As smothe as Pan, as Juno milde, like goddesse Iris faste. With Cupid she fore-sees, and goes god Vulcans pace: And for a tast of all these gifts, she steales god Momus grace. Her forhead jacinth like, her cheeke of opall hue, Her twinkling eies bedeckt with pearle, her lips as Saphir blew: Her haire like Crapal-stone; her mouth O heavenly wyde; Her skin like burnisht gold, her hands like silver ure untryde. As for her parts unknowne, which hidden sure are best: Happie be they which well beleve, & never seeke the rest.

Now truely having made these descriptions unto you, me thinkes you should imagine that I rather faine some pleasant
THE COUNTESES OF PEMBROKES

devise, then recount a truth, that a Prince (not banished from his own wits) could possibly make so unworthy a choice. But truely (deare guest) so it is, that Princes (whose doings have beene often soothed with good successe) thinke nothing so absurde, which they cannot make honourable. The beginning of his credite was by the Princes straying out of the way, one time he hunted, where meeting this fellow, and asking him the way; & so falling into other questiōs, he found some of his aunswers (as a dog sure if he could speake, had wit enough to describe his kennell) not unsensible, & all uttered with such rudenes, which he enterpreted plainnesse (though there be great difference betweene them) that Basilius conceaving a sodaine delight, tooke him to his Court, with apparant shew of his good opinion: where the flattering courtier had no sooner take the Princes minde, but that there were straight reasons to confirme the Princes doing, & shadowes of vertues found for Dametas. His silence grew wit, his bluntnesse integritie, his beastly ignorance vertuous simplicitie: & the Prince (according to the nature of great persons, in love with that he had done himselfe) fancied, that his weaknesse with his presence would much be mended. And so like a creature of his owne making, he liked him more and more, and thus having first given him the office of principall heardman, lastly, since he took this strange determination, he hath in a manner put the life of himselfe and his children into his hands. Which authoritie (like too great a sayle for so small a boate) doth so over-sway poore Dametas, that if before he were a good foole in a chamber, he might be allowed it now in a comedie: So as I doubt me (I feare mee in deede) my master will in the end (with his cost) finde, that his office is not to make men, but to use men as men are; no more then a horse will be taught to hunt, or an asse to mannage. But in sooth I am afraide I have given your eares too great a surfette, with the grosse discourses of that heavie peece of flesh. But the zealous greefe I conceive to see so great an error in my Lord, hath made me bestow more words, then I confesse so base a subject deserveth.
The cause of Basilius his discourting. Philanax his dissuasive letter. Basilius his priviledged companie. Four causes why old men are discoursers. The state, the skil, and exercise of the Arcadian shepheards.

Thus much now that I have tolde you, is nothing more then in effect any Arcadian knowes. But what moved him to this strange solitarines hath bin imparted (as I thinke) but to one person living. My selfe cæ conjecture, & in deed more then conjecture, by this accident that I will tell you: I have an onely sonne, by name Clitophon, who is now absent, preparing for his owne mariage, which I meane shortly shalbe here celebrated. This sonne of mine (while the Prince kept his Court) was of his bed-chamber; now since the breaking up thereof, returned home, and shewed me (among other things he had gathered) the copy which he had taken of a letter: which when the prince had read, he had laid in a window, presuming no body durst looke in his writings: but my sonne not only tooke a time to read it, but to copie it. In trueth I blamed Clitophon for the curiositie, which made him break his duetie in such a kind, whereby kings secrets are subject to be revealed: but since it was done, I was content to take so much profite, as to know it. Now here is the letter, that I ever since for my good liking, have caried about me: which before I read unto you, I must tell you from whom it came. It is a noble-man of this countrie, named Philanax, appointed by the Prince, Regent in this time of his retiring, and most worthie so to be: for, there lives no man, whose excellent witte more simpie imbraseth integritie, besides his unfained love to his master, wherein never yet any could make question, saving, whether he loved Basilius or the Prince better: a rare temper, while most men either servile-ly yeeld to al appetites, or with an obstinate austeritie looking to that they fansie good, in effect neglect the Princes person. This then being the man, whom of all other (and most worthie) the Prince cheefly loves, it should seeme (for more then the letter I have not to ghesse by)
that the Prince upon his returne from Delphos, (Philanax then lying sick) had written unto him his determination, rising (as evidently appeares) upon some Oracle he had there receaved: whereunto he wrote this answere.

Philanax his letter to Basilius.

2 Most redouted & beloved prince, if aswel it had pleased you at your going to Delphos as now, to have used my humble service, both I should in better season, and to better purpose have spoken: and you (if my speech had prevayled) should have beene at this time, as no way more in danger, so much more in quietnes; I would then have said, that wisdome and vertue be the only destinies appointed to mā to follow, whence we ought to seeke al our knowledge, since they be such guydes as cannot faile; which, besides their inward coſfort, doo lead so direct a way of proceeding, as either prosperitie must ensue; or, if the wickednes of the world should oppresse it, it can never be said, that evil hapneth to him, who falles accompanied with vertue: I would then have said, the heavenly powers to be reverenced, and not searched into; & their mercies rather by prayers to be sought, then their hidden counsels by curiositie. These kind of soothsayers (since they have left us in our selves sufficient guides) to be nothing but fansie, wherein there must either be vanitie, or infalliblenes, & so, either not to be respected, or not to be prevented. But since it is weakenes too much to remember what should have beene done, and that your commandemēt stretcheth to know what is to be done, I do (most deare Lord) with humble boldnes say, that the maner of your determination dooth in no sort better please me, then the cause of your going. These thirtie yeares you have so governed this Region, that neither your Subjectes have wanted justice in you, nor you obediēce in them; & your neighbors have found you so hurtlesly strong, that they thought it better to rest in your friendshipe, then make newe triall of your enmitie. If this then have proceeded out of the good constitition of your state, and out of a wise providence, generally to prevent all those things, which might ençober your happines: why should you now seeke newe courses, since your owne ensample comforts you to continue, and that it is to me most certaine (though it please you not to tell me the very words of
the Oracle) that yet no destinie, nor influence whatsoever, can bring mans wit to a higher point, then wisdome and goodnes? Why should you deprive your selfe of government, for feare of loosing your government? like one that should kill himselfe for feare of death? nay rather, if this Oracle be to be acqoited of, arme up your courage the more against it: for who wil stick to him that abandones himselfe? Let your subjeicts have you in their eyes; let them see the benefites of your justice dayly more and more; and so must they needes rather like of present sureties, then uncertaine changes. Lastly, whether your time call you to live or die, doo both like a prince. Now for your second resolution; which is, to suffer no worthie prince to be a suiter to either of your daughters, but while you live to keep the both unmaried; & as it were, to kill the joy of posteritie, which in your time you may enjoy: moved perchance by a mis-under-stoode Oracle: what shall I say, if the affection of a father to his owne children, cannot plead sufficieny against such fancies? once certaine it is, the God, which is God of nature, doth never teach unnaturalnes: and even the same minde hold I touching your banishing them from companie, least, I know not what strange loves should follow. Certainly Sir, in my ladies, your daughters, nature promiseth nothing but goodnes, and their education by your fatherly care, hath beene hetherto such, as hath beene most fit to restrayne all evill: giving their mindes vertuous delights, and not greeving them for want of wel-ruled libertie. Now to fall to a sodain straightening them, what can it doo but argue suspition, a thing no more unpleasant, then unsure, for the preserving of vertue? Leave womens minds, the most untamed that way of any: see whether any cage can please a bird? or whether a dogge growe not fiercer with tying: what dooth jalousie, but stirre up the mind to thinke, what it is from which they are restrayned? for they are treasures, or things of great delight, which men use to hide, for the aptnesse they have to catch mens fancies: and the thoughtes once awaked to that, harder sure it is to keepe those thoughtes from accomplishment, then it had beene before to have kept the minde (which being the chiefe part, by this meanes is defiled) from thinking. Lastly, for the recommending so principall a charge of the Princesse Pamela, (whose minde goes beyond the governing of many thousands such) to such a person as Dametas
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

is (besides that the thing in it self is strange) it comes of a very evil ground, that ignorance should be the mother of faithfulnes. O no; he cannot be good, that knowes not why he is good, but stands so farre good, as his fortune may keepe him unassaied: but comming once to that, his rude simplicitie is either easily changed, or easily deceived: & so growes that to be the last excuse of his fault, which seemed to have been the first foundation of his faith. Thus farre hath your commandement and my zeal drawn me; which I, like a man in a valley that may discern hilles, or like a poore passenger that may spie a rock, so humbly submit to your gracious consideration, beseeching you againe, to stand wholly upon your own vertue, as the surest way to maintaine you in that you are, and to avoyd any evill which may be imagined.

By the contents of this letter you may perceive, that the cause of all, hath beeene the vanitie which possesseth many, who (making a perpetuall mansion of this poore baiting place of mans life) are desirous to know the certaintie of things to come; wherein there is nothing so certaine, as our continual uncertaintie. But what in particular points the oracle was, in faith I know not: nether (as you may see by one place of Philanax letter) he himselfe distinctly knew. But this experience shewes us, that Basilius judgement, corrupted with a Princes fortune, hath rather heard then followed the wise (as I take it) counsell of Philanax. For, having lost the sterne of his government, with much amazement to the people, among whom many strange bruits are received for currant, and with some apperance of daunger in respect of the valiant Amphalus, his nephew, & much envy in the ambitious number of the Nobilitie against Philanax, to see Philanax so aduanced, though (to speake simply) he deserve more thē as many of us as there be in Arcadia: the prince himself hath hidden his head, in such sort as I told you, not sticking plainly to cōfesse, that he means not (while he breathes) that his daughters shall have any husbād, but 3 keep thē thus solitary with him: wher he gives no other body leve to visit him at any time, but a certain priest, who being excellent in poetrīe, he makes him write out such things as he best likes, he being no les delightful in cōversatīō, thē needfull for devotiō, & about twēty specified shepheards, in whō (some for exercises, & some for Æglogs) he taketh greater recreatiō.
And now you know as much as my self: wherin if I have held you over long, lay hardly the fault upon my olde age, which in the very disposition of it is talkative: whether it be (said he smiling) that nature loves to exercise that part most, which is least decayed, and that is our tongue: or, that knowledge being the only thing whereof we poore old men can brag, we cannot make it known but by utterance: or, that mankinde by all means seeking to eternize himselfe so much the more, as he is neere his end, dooth it not only by the children that come of him, but by speeches and writings recommended to the memorie of hearers and readers. And yet thus much I wil say for my selfe, that I have not laid these matters, either so openly, or largely to any as your selfe: so much (if I much fayle not) doe I see in you, which makes me both love and trust you. Never may he be old, answered Palladius, that dooth not reverence that age, whose heavines, if it waie downe the frayl and fleshly ballance, it as much lifts up the noble and spirittual part: and well might you have allledged another reason, that their wisdome makes them willing to profite others. And that have I received of you, never to be forgotten, but with ungratefullnes. But among many strange conceits you tolde me, which have shewed effects in your Prince, truly even the last, that he should conceive such pleasure in shepheards discourses, would not seeme the least unto me, saving that you tolde me at the first, that this countrie is notable in those wits, and that in deed my selfe having beene brought not onely to this place, but to my life, by Strephon and Claius, in their conference found wits as might better become such shepheards as Homer speaks of, that be governors of peoples, then such senatours who hold their councell in a shepecoate: for them two (said Kalander) especially Claius, they are beyond the rest by so much, as learning commonlie doth adde to nature: for, having neglected their wealth in respect of their knowledge, they have not so much empayred the meamer, as they bettered the better. Which all notwithstanding, it is a sporte to heare howe they impute to love, whiche hath indewed their thoughts (sai they) with suche a strength.

But certainly, all the people of this countrie from high to lowe, is given to those sportes of the witte, so as you would wonder to heare how soone even children will beginne to
versifie. Once, ordinary it is among the meanest sorte, to make Songses and Dialogues in meeter, either love whetting their braine, or long peace having begun it, example and emulation amending it. Not so much, but the clowne Dametas will stumble sometimes upon some Songs that might become a better brayne: but no sorte of people so excellent in that kinde as the pastors; for their living standing but upon the looking to their beastes, they have ease, the Nurse of Poetrie. Neither are our shepheards such, as (I heare) they be in other countries; but they are the verie owners of the sheepe, to which eyther themselves looke, or their children give daylie attendaunce. And then truely, it would delight you under some tree, or by some rivers side (when two or three of them meet together) to heare their rurall muse, how pretely it will deliver out, sometimes joyes, sometimes lamentations, sometimes challengings one of the other, sometimes under hidden formes uttering such matters, as otherwise they durst not deale with. Then they have most commonly one, who judgeth the price to the best doer, of which they are no lesse gladde, then great Princes are of triumphes: and his parte is to sette downe in writing all that is saide, save that it may be, his pen with more leasure doth polish the rudenesse of an unthought-on songe. Now the choise of all (as you may well thinke) either for goodnesse of voice, or pleasantnesse of wit, the Prince hath: among whom also there are two or three straungers, whom inwarde melancholies having made weery of the worldes eyes, have come to spende their lives among the countrie people of Arcadia; & their conversation being well approved, the prince vouchsafeth them his presence, and not onely by looking on, but by great courtesie and liberalitie, animates the Shepheards the more exquisitely to labour for his good liking. So that there is no cause to blame the Prince for somtimes hearing them; the blame-worthinesse is, that to heare them, he rather goes to solitarinesse, then makes them come to companie. Neyther doo I accuse my maister for advauncing a countriman, as Dametas is, since God forbid, but where worthinesse is (as truely it is among divers of that fellowship) any outward lownesse should hinder the hiest raying, but that he would needes make election of one, the basenesse of whose minde is such, that it sinckes a thousand degrees lower, then the basest bodie
could carrie the most base fortune: Which although it might bee answer'd for the Prince, that it is rather a trust hee hath in his simple plainnesse, then any great advauncement, beyng but chiefe hearde: yet all honest hartes feel, that the trust of their Lord goes beyond all advauncement. But I am ever too long upon him, when hee crosseth the waye of my speache, and by the shaddow of yonder Tower, I see it is a fitter time, with our supper to pay the duties we owe to our stomacks, then any great advancement, being but chiefe hearde: and all honest hartes feel, that the trust of their Lord goes beyond all advancement. But I am ever too long upon him, when hee crosseth the waye of my speache, and by the shaddow of yonder Tower, I see it is a fitter time, with our supper to pay the duties we owe to our stomacks, more witte I might have learned of Homer (whome even now you mentioned) who never entertain'd eyther guestes or hostes with long speaches, till the mouth of hunger be throughly stopped. So withall he rose, leading Palladius through the gardeine againe to the parler, where they used to suppe; Palladius assuring him, that he had alreadie bene more fed to his liking, then hee could bee by the skilfull'est trencher-men of Media.

CHAP. 5.

The sorrow of Kalanders for his sonne Clitophon. The storie of Argalus and Parthenia, their perfections, their love, their troubles, her impoysoning, his rare constancie, her strange refusall, their pathologies, her flight, his revenge on his rivall the mischiefe-worker Demagoras, then Captaine of the rebell Helots, who take him, and Clitophon that sought to helpe him: but both are kept alive by their new captaine.

But beeing come to the supping place, one of Kalanders servaunts rounded in his eare; at which (his collour chaungyng) hee retired him selfe into his chamber; complainting his men diligently to waite and attend upon Palladius, and to excuse his absence with some necessarie busines he had presentlie to dispatch. Which they accordingly did, for some fewe dayes forcing them selves to let no change appeare: but though they framed their countenaunces never so cunningly, Palladius perceaved there was some il-pleasing accident fallen out. Whereupon, being againe set alone at supper, he called to the Steward, and desired him to tell him
the matter of his suddaine alteration: who after some trifling excuses, in the ende confessed unto him, that his maister had received newes, that his sonne before the daie of his neere marriage, chaunst to be at a battaile, which was to be fought betweene the Gentlemenne of Lacedæmon and the Helots: who winning the victorie, hee was there made prisoner, going to deliver a friend of his taken prysoner by the Helots; that the poore young Gentleman had offered great raunsome for his life: but that the hate those paysaunts conceaved agaynst all Gentleman was suche, that everie houre hee was to looke for nothing, but some cruell death: which hether-unto had onely beene delayed by the Captaines vehement dealing for him, who seemed to have a hart of more manlie pittie then the rest. Which losse had stricken the old Gentleman with such sorrowe, as if aboundance of teares did not seeme sufficiently to witnesse it, he was alone retyred, tearing his bearde and hayre, and cursing his old age, that had not made his grave to stoppe his eares from such advertisements: but that his faithfull servaunts had written in his name to all his friends, followers, and tenants (Philanax the governour refusing to deale in it, as a private cause, but yet giving leave to seeke their best redresse, so as they wronged not the state of Lacedæmon) of whom there were now gathered upon the frontiers good forces, that he was sure would spende their lives by any way, to redeeme or revenge Clitophon. Now sir (said he) this is my maisters nature, though his grief be such, as to live is a griefe unto him, & that even his reason is darkened with sorrow; yet the lawes of hospitality (long and holily observed by him) give still such a sway to his proceeding, that he will no waie suffer the straunger lodged under his roofe, to receyve (as it were) any infection of his anguish, especially you, toward whom I know not whether his love, or admiration bee greater. But Palladius could scarce heare out his tale with patience: so was his hart torne in peeces with compassion of the case, liking of Kalanders noble behaviour, kindnesse for his respect to himwarde, and desire to finde some remedie, besides the image of his dearest friend Daiphantus, whom he judged to suffer eyther a like or a worse fortune: therefore rising from the boorde, he desired the steward to tell him particularly, the ground, and event of this accident, because by knowledge of many circumstaunces, there might perhaps
some waie of helpe be opened. Whereunto the Steward easilie in this sorte condescended.

My Lord (said he) when our good king Basilius, with better 2 successe then expectation, tooke to wife (even in his more then decaying yeares) the faire yong princes Gynecia; there came with her a young Lord, cousin german to her selfe, named Argalus, led hether, partly with the love & honour of his noble kinswomā, partly with the humour of youth, which ever thinkes that good, whose goodnes he sees not: & in this court he received so good encrease of knowledge, that after some yeares spent, he so manifested a most vertuous mind in all his actions, that Arcadia gloried such a plant was transported unto them, 3 being a Gentleman in deede most rarely accomplished, excellentlie learned, but without all vayne glory: friendly, without factiousnes: valiaunt, so as for my part I thinke the earth hath no man that hath done more heroicall acts then hee; how soever now of late the fame flies of the two princes of Thessalia and Macedon, and hath long done of our noble prince Amphialius: who in deede, in our partes is onely accounted likely to match him: but I say for my part, I thinke no man for valour of minde, and habilitie of bodie to bee preferred, if equalled to Argalus; and yet so valiant as he never durst doo any bodie injurie: in behaviour some will say ever sadde, surely sober, and somewhat given to musing, but never uncourteous; his worde ever ledde by his thought, and followed by his deede; rather liberall then magnificent, though the one wanted not, and the other had ever good choise of the receiver: in summe (for I perceive I shall easily take a great draught of his praises, whom both I and all this countrie love so well) such a man was (and I hope is) Argalus, as hardly the nicest eye can finde a spot in, if the over-vehement constancie of yet spotles affection, may not in harde wrested constructions be counted a spot: which in this manner began that worke in him, which hath made bothe him, and it selfe in him, over all this country famous. My maisters sonne Clitophon (whose losse gives the cause to this discourse, and yet gives me cause to beginne with Argalus, since his losse proceedes from Argalus) beyng a young Gentleman, as of great birth (being our kings sisters sonne) so truely of good nature, and one that can see good and love it, haunted more the companie of this worthie Argalus, then of any
other: so as if there were not a friendship (which is so rare, as it is to bee doubted whether it bee a thing in deede, or but a worde) at least there was such a liking and friendlines, as hath brought forth the effectes which you shall heare. About two yeares since, it so fell out, that hee brought him to a great Ladies house, sister to my maister, who had with her, her onely daughter, the faire Parthenia; faire in deede (fame I thinke it selfe daring not to call any fayrer, if it be not Helena queene of Corinth, and the two incomparable sisters of Arcadia) and that which made her fairenesse much the fayrer, was, that it was but a faire embassadour of a most faire minde, full of wit, and a wit which delighted more to judge it selfe, then to showe it selfe: her speach being as rare as pretious; her silence without sullennesse; her modestie without affection; her shamefastnes without ignorance: in summe, one, that to praise well, one must first set downe with himselfe, what it is to be excellent: for so she is.

4 I thinke you thinke, that these perfections meeting, could not choose but find one another, and delight in that they found; for likenes of manners is likely in reason to drawe liking with affection: mens actions do not alwaies crosse with reason: to be short, it did so in deede. They loved, although for a while the fire therof (hopes winges being cut of) were blowen by the bellowes of dispaire, upon this occasion.

5 There had bee a good while before, and so continued, a suter to this same lady, a great noble ma, though of Laconia, yet neere neighbour to Parthenias mother, named Demagoras: A man mightie in riches & power, and proude thereof, stubbornly stout, loving no bodie but him selfe, and for his owne delights sake Parthenia: and pursuing vehemently his desire, his riches had so guelded over all his other imperfections, that the olde Ladie (though contrarie to my Lord her brothers minde) had given her consent; and using a mothers authoritie upon her faire daughter, had made her yeeld thereunto, not because shee liked her chois, but because her obiedent minde had not yet taken uppon it to make choyse; and the daie of their assurance drew neere, when my young Lord Clitophon brought this noble Argalus, perchaunce principallie to see so rare a sight, as Parthenia by all well judging eyes was judged.

But though fewe dayes were before the time of assurance
appointed, yet love that sawe hee had a great journey to make in shorte time, hasted so him selfe, that before her worde could tie her to Demagoras, her harte hath vowed her to Argalus, with so gratefull a receipte in mutuall affection, that if shee desired above all things to have Argalus, Argalus feared nothing but to misse Parthenia. And now Parthenia had learned both liking and misliking, loving and loathing, and out of passion began to take the authoritie of judgement; in so much, that when the time came that Demagoras (full of proude joy) thought to receave the gifte of her selfe, shee with wordes of resolute refusall (though with teares shewing she was sore she must refuse) assured her mother, she would first be bedded in her grave, then wedded to Demagoras. The chaunge was no more straungan, then unpleasant to the mother: who beyng determinately (least I shoulde say of a great Lady, wilfully) bent to marrie her to Demagoras, tryed all wayes which a wittie and hard-harted mother could use, upon so humble a daughter: in whome the onely resisting power was love. But the more shee assaulted, the more shee taught Parthenia to defende: and the more Parthenia defended, the more she made her mother obstinate in the assault: who at length finding, that Argalus standing betweene them, was it that most eclipsed her affection from shining upon Demagoras, she sought all meanes how to remove him, so much the more, as he manifested himself an unremoveable suiter to her daughter: first, by employing him in as many dagerous enterprises, as ever the evill stepmother Luno recommended to the famous Hercules: but the more his vertue was tried, the more pure it grew, while all the things she did to overthrow him, did set him up upon the height of honor; inough to have moved her harte, especially to a man every way so worthy as Argalus: but she strugling against all reason, because she would have her will, and shew her authoritie in matching her with Demagoras, the more vertuous Argalus was, the more she hated him: thinking her selfe conquer'd in his coquests, and therefore still employing him in more and more dangerous attempts: meane while, she used all extremities possible upon her faire daughter, to make her geve over her selfe to her direction. But it was hard to judge, whether he in doing, or she in suffering, shewed greater constancie of affection: for, as to Argalus the world sooner
wanted occasions, then he valour to goe thorow them; so to Parthenia, malice sooner ceased, thē her unchanged patience. Lastly, by treasons, Demagoras and she would have made away Argalus: but hee with providence & courage so past over all, that the mother tooke such a spitefull grief at it, that her hart brake withall, and she died.

6 But then, Demagoras assuring himselfe, that now Parthenia was her owne, she would never be his, and receiving as much by her owne determinate answere, not more desiring his owne happines, then envying Argalus, whom he saw with narrow eyes, even ready to enjoy the perfection of his desires; strengthening his conceite with all the mischievous counsels which disdayned love, and envious pride could geve unto him; the wicked wretch (taking a time that Argalus was gone to his countrie, to fetch some of his principall frendes to honour the mariage, which Parthenia had most joyfully consented unto,) the wicked Demagoras (I say) desiring to speake with her, with unmercifull force, (her weake armes in vaine resisting) rubd all over her face a most horrible poyson: the effect whereof was such, that never leaper lookt more ugly thē she did: which done, having his men & horses ready, departed away in spite of her servâts, as redy to revenge as they could be, in such an unexpected mischiefe. But the abominablenes of this fact being come to my L. Kalander, he made such meanes, both by our kings intercession, & his own, that by the king, & Senat of Lacedæmō, Demagoras was upon paine of death, banished the countrie: who hating the punishment, where he should have hated the fault, joynde himselfe, with al the powers he could make, unto the Helots, lately in rebellion against that state: and they (glad to have a man of such authority among thē) made him their general: & under him have committed divers the most outrageous villanies, that a base multitude (full of desperate revenge) can imagine.

7 But within a while after this pitifull fact committed upon Parthenia, Argalus returned (poore gentleman) having her faire image in his heart, and alredy promising his eies the uttermost of his felicitie, when they (no bodie els daring to tell it him) were the first messengers to themselves of their owne misfortune. I meane not to move passions with telling you the griefe of both, when he knew her, for at first he did not, nor at first
knowledge could possibly have Vertues aide so ready, as not
even weakly to lament the losse of such a jewell, so much the
more, as that skilful men in that arte assured it was unrecover-
able: but within a while, trueth of love (which still held the
first face in his memorie) a vertuous constancie, and even a
delight to be constant, faith geven, and inward worthines
shining through the foulest mistes, tooke so full holde of the
noble Argalus, that not onely in such comfort which witty
arguments may bestow upon adversitie, but even with the most
abundant kindnesse that an eye-ravished lover can expresse, he
laboured both to drive the extremity of sorow from her, & to
hasten the celebration of their mariage: wherunto he unfainedly
shewed himself no lesse cherefully earnest, then if she had never
been disinherited of that goodly portion, which nature had so
liberally bequeathed unto her: and for that cause deferred his
inteded revenge upon Demagaras, because he might continually
be in her presence; shewing more hüble serviceablenes, and
joy to content her, then ever before.

But as he gave this rare ensæple, not to be hoped for of any 8
other, but of an other Argalus: so of the other side, she tooke
as strange a course in affection: for, where she desired to enjoy
him, more then to live; yet did she overthrow both her owne
desire, and his, and in no sorte would yeeld to marry him; with
a strange encounter of loves affects, and effects: that he by an
affection sprong from excessive beautie, should delight in horrible
foulness; and she, of a vehement desire to have him, should
kindly byyld a resolution never to have him: for trueth is, that
so in heart she loved him, as she could not finde in her heart
he should be tied to what was unworthy of his presence.

Truely Sir, a very good Orator might have a fayre field to
use eloquence in, if he did but onely repeate the lamentable, and
truely affectionated speeches, while he conjured her by remem-
brance of her affection, & true oathes of his owne affection, not
to make him so unhappy, as to think he had not only lost her
face, but her hart; that her face, when it was fayrest, had been
but as a marshall, to lodge the love of her in his minde; which
now was so well placed, as it needed no further help of any
outward harbinger: beseeching her, even with teares, to know,
that his love was not so superficial, as to go no further then the
skin; which yet now to him was most faire, since it was hers:
how could hee be so ungratefull, as to love her the lesse for that, which she had onely received for his sake? that he never beheld it, but therein he saw the lovelines of her love towarde him: protesting unto her, that he would never take joy of his life, if he might not enjoy her, for whom principally he was glad he had life. But (as I heard by one that overheard them) she (wringing him by the hand) made no other answere but this: my Lord (said she) God knowes I love you: if I were Princesse of the whole world, and had withal, al the blessings that ever the world brought forth, I should not make delay, to lay my selfe, & them, under your feete: or if I had continued but as I was, though (I must cofesse) far unworthy of you, yet would I, (with too great a joy for my hart to think of) have accepted your vouchsafing me to be yours, & with faith and obedience would have supplied all other defects. But first let me be much more miserable then I am, ere I match Argalus to such a Parthenia: Live happy, deare Argalus, I geve you full libertie, and I beseech you take it; and I assure you I shall rejoyce (whatsoever become of me) to see you so coupled, as may be fitte, both for your honor, and satisfaction. With that she burst out in crying and weeping, not able longer to conteine her selfe from blaming her fortune, and wishing her owne death.

10 But Argalus with a most heavie heart still pursuing his desire, she fixt of mind to avoid further intreatie, & to flie all companie; which (even of him) grew unpleasant unto her; one night she stole away: but whether, as yet is unknowen, or in deede what is become of her.

11 Argalus sought her long, and in many places: at length (desparing to finde her, and the more he despaired, the more enraged) weerie of his life, but first determining to be revenged of Demagoras, hee went alone disguysed into the chiefe towne held by the Helots: where comming into his presence, garded about by many of his souldiers, he could delay his fury no longer for a fitter time: but setting upon him, in despight of a great many that helped him, gave him divers mortall wounds, and himself (no question) had been there presently murthered, but that Demagoras himselfe desired he might be kept alive; perchaunce with intention to feed his owne eyes with some cruel execution to bee layd upon him, but death came soner then he
lookt for; yet having had leisure to appoint his successor, a young man, not long before delivered out of the prison of the King of Lacedæmon, where hee should have suffered death for having slaine the kings Nephew: but him he named, who at that time was absent, making roades upon the Lacedemonians, but being returned, the rest of the Helots, for the great liking they conceived of that yong man, (especially because they had none among themselves to whom the others would yeeld) were cōtent to follow Demagoras appointment. And well hath it succeeded with them, he having since done things beyond the hope of the yongest heads; of whom I speak the rather, because he hath hetherto preserved Argalus alive, under pretence to have him publiquely, and with exquisite tormentes executed, after the ende of these warres, of which they hope for a soone and prosperous issue.

And he hath likewise hetherto kept my young Lord Clitophon alive, who (to redeme his friend) went with certaine other noble-men of Laconia, and forces gathered by them, to besiege this young and new successor: but he issuing out (to the wonder of all men) defeated the Laconians, slew many of the noble-men, & tooke Clitophon prisoner, whom with much a doo he keepeth alive: the Helots being villanously cruell; but he tempereth the so, sometimes by folowing their humor, sometimes by striving with it, that hetherto hee hath saved both their lives, but in different estates; Argalus being kept in a close & hard prison, Clitophon at some libertie. And now Sir, though (to say the truth) we can promise our selves litle of their safeties, while they are in the Helots hands, I have delivered all I understande touching the losse of my Lords sonne, & the cause therof: which, though it was not necessarie to Clitophons case, to be so particularly told, yet the strägenes of it, made me think it would not be unplesant unto you.
CHAP. 6.

1 Kalanders expedition against the Helots. 2 Their estate. 3 Palladius his stratageme against them: 4 which prevayleth. 5 The Helots resistance, discomfiture, and 6 re-enforce by the returne of their new capitaine 7 The combat and 8 enterknowledge of Daiphantus & Palladius, and by their 9 means a peace, with 10 the release of Kalander and Clitophon.

Palladius thanked him greatly for it, being even passionatly delighted with hearing so straunge an accident of a knight so famous over the world, as Argalus, with whome he had himselfe a long desire to meet: so had fame poured a noble emulation in him, towards him.

But the (wel bethinking himself) he called for armour, desiring them to provide him of horse & guide, and armed all saving the head, he wët up to Kalader, whom he found lying upo the groud, having ever since banished both sleepe and foode, as enemies to the mourning which passion perswaded him was reasonable. But Palladius rasesd him up, saying unto him: No more, no more of this, my Lord Kalander; let us labour to finde, before wee lament the losse: you know my selfe misse one, who, though he be not my sonne, I would disdayn the favour of life after him: but while there is hope left, let not the weaknes of sorow, make the strength of it languish: take comfort, and good successe will folow. And with those wordes, comfort seemed to lighten in his eyes, and that in his face and gesture was painted victorie. Once, Kalanders spirits were so revived withal, that (receiving some sustenance, and taking a little rest) he armed himselfe, and those few of his servants he had left unsent, and so himself guyded Palladius to the place upon the frontiers: where alredy there were assembled betwene three and four thousand men, all wel disposed (for Kalanders sake) to abide any perill: but like men disused with a long peace, more determinate to doo, then skilfull how to doo: lusty bodies, and brave armours: with such courage, as rather grew of despising their enemies,
whom they knew not, then of any confidence for any thing, which in them selves they knew; but neither cunning use of their weapons, nor arte shewed in their marching, or incamping. Which Palladius soone perceiving, he desired to understand (as much as could be delivered unto him) the estate of the Helots.

And he was answered by a man well acquainted with the affairs of Laconia, that they were a kinde of people, who having been of old, freemen and possessorers, the Lacedemonians had conquered them, and layd, not onely tribute, but bondage upon them: which they had long borne; till of late the Lacedemonians through greedinesse growing more heavie then they could beare, and through contempt lesse carefull how to make them beare, they had with a generall consent (rather springing by the generalnes of the cause, then of any artificiall practise) set themselves in armes, and whetting their courage with revenge, and grounding their resolutio upon despaire, they had proceeded with unloked-for succes: having already take divers Towns and Castels, with the slaughter of many of the gentrie; for whom no sex nor age could be accepted for an excuse. And that although at the first they had fought rather with beastly furie, then any souldierly discipline, practise had now made then comparable to the best of the Lacedemonians; & more of late then ever; by reason, first of Demagoras a great Lord, who had made him self of their partie, and since his death, of an other Captaine they had gotten, who had brought up their ignorance, and brought downe their furie, to such a meane of good government, and withall led them so valourouslie, that (besides the time wherein Clitophon was taken) they had the better in some other great conflicts: in such wise, that the estate of Lacedemon had sent unto them, offering peace with most reasonable and honorable conditions. Palladius having gotten this generall knowledge of the partie against whom, as hee had already of the party for whom he was to fight, he went to Kalander, and told him plainlie, that by playne force there was small apparaunce of helping Clitophon: but some device was to be taken in hand, wherein no lesse discretion then valour was to be used.

Whereupon, the counsell of the chiefe men was called, and at last, this way Palladius (who by some experience, but especiallie by reading Histories, was acquainted with strata-
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

gemes) invented, and was by all the rest approved: that all the
men there should dresse themselves like the poorest sorte of
the people in Arcadia, having no banners, but bloudie shirtes
hanged upon long staves, with some bad bagge pipes in stead of
drumme and fife, their armour they should aswell as might be,
cover, or at least make them looke so rustilie, and ill-favouredly
as might well become such wearers; and this the whole number
should doo, saving two hundred of the best chosen Gentlemen,
for courage and strength, whereof Palladius him selfe would be
one, who should have their armes chayned, and be put in cartes
like prisoners. This being performed according to the agree-
ment, they marched on towards the towne of Cardamila where
Clitophon was captive; and being come two houres before Sunne-
set within vewe of the walles, the Helots alreadie descryeing their
number, and beginning to sound the Allarum, they sent a
cunning fellow, (so much the cunninger as that he could maske
it under rudenes) who with such a kind of Rhetorike, as weeded
out all flowers of Rhetorike, delivered unto the Helots assembled
together, that they were countrie people of Arcadia, no lesse
oppressed by their Lords, & no lesse desirous of liberty then
they, & therfore had put themselves in the field, & had alreadie
(besides a great number slaine) taken nine or ten skore Gentle-
men prisoners, whom they had there well & fast chained. Now
because they had no strong retiring place in Arcadia, & were
not yet of number enough to keepe the fiedle against their
Princes forces, they were come to them for succor; knowing,
that daily more & more of their qualitie would flock unto the,
but that in the mean time, lest their Prince should pursue the,
or the Lacedæmonian King & Nobilitie (for the likenes of the
cause) fall upon them, they desired that if there were not
roome enough for them in the towne, that yet they might
encampe under the walles, and for surety have their prisoners
(who were such me as were ever able to make their peace)
kept within the towne.

4 The Helots made but a short consultatiō, being glad that
their contagion had spread it selfe into Arcadia, and making
account that if the peace did not fall out betweene them and
their King, that it was the best way to set fire in all the parts
of Greece; besides their greedinesse to have so many Gentlemen
in their handes, in whose raunsoms they already meant to have
a share; to which hast of concluding, two things wel helped; the one, that their Captaine with the wisest of them, was at that time absent about confirming or breaking the peace, with the state of Lacedaemon: the second, that over-many good fortunes began to breed a proude recklesnesse in them: therefore sending to view the campe, and finding that by their speach they were Arcadians, with whom they had had no warre, never suspecting a private mans credite could have gathered such a force, and that all other tokens witnessed them to be of the lowest calling (besides the chaines upon the Gentlemen) they graunted not onely leave for the prisoners, but for some others of the companie, and to all, that they might harbour under the walles. So opened they the gates, and received in the carts; which being done, and Palladius seing fit time, he gave the signe, and shaking of their chaynes, (which were made with such arte, that though they seemed most strong and fast, he that ware them might easily loose them) drew their swords hidden in the cartes, and so setting upon the ward, made them to flie eyther from the place, or from their bodies, and so give entrie to all the force of the Arcadians, before the Helots could make any head to resist them.

But the Helots being men hardened against dauners, gathered as (well as they could) together in the market place, and thence would have given a shrewd welcome to the Arcadians, but that Palladius (blaming those that were slow, hartning the that were forward, but especially with his owne ensample leading them) made such an impression into the squadron of the Helots, that at first the great bodie of them beginning to shake, and stagger; at length, every particular bodie recommended the protection of his life to his feet. Then Kalander cried to go to the prison, where he thought his sonne was, but Palladius wisht him (first scouring the streates) to house all the Helots, and make themselves maisters of the gates.

But ere that could be accomplished, the Helots had gotten new hart, and with divers sortes of shot from corners of streates, and house windowes, galled them; which courage was come unto them by the returne of their Captain; who though he brought not many with him (having disperst most of his companies to other of his holds) yet meeting a great number running out of the gate, not yet possest by the Arcadians, he made them
turne face, & with banners displayed, his Trumpet give the lowdest testimonie he could of his returne, which once heard, the rest of the Helots which were otherwise scattered, bent thetherward, with a new life of resolution: as if their Captaine had bee a roote, out of which (as into braunches) their courage had sprong. Then began the fight to grow most sharpe, and the encounters of more cruell obstinacie. The Arcadians fighting to keepe that they had wonne, the Helots to recover what they had lost. The Arcadians, as in an unknowne place, having no succour but in their handes; the Helots, as in their own place, fighting for their livings, wives, & children. There was victorie & courage against revenge and despaire: safety of both sides being no otherwise to be gotten, but by destruction.

7 At length, the left winge of the Arcadians began to loose ground; which Palladius seeing, he streight thrust himselfe with his choise bande against the throng that oppressed thē, with such an overflowing of valour, that the Captaine of the Helots (whose eies soone judged of that wherwith thēselves were governed) saw that he alone was worth al the rest of the Arcadians. Which he so wondere at, that it was hard to say, whether he more liked his doings, or misliked the effects of his doings: but determining that upon that cast the game lay, and disdaining to fight with any other, sought onely to joine with him: which minde was no lesse in Palladius, having easily marked, that he was as the first mover of al the other handes. And so their thoughts meeting in one point, they consented (though not agreed) to trie each others fortune: & so drawing themselves to be the uttermost of the one side, they began a combat, which was so much inferior to the bataille in noise and number, as it was surpassing it in bravery of fighting, & (as it were) delightful terriblenes. Their courage was guided with skill, and their skill was armed with courage; neither did their hardinesse darken their witte, nor their witte coole their hardines: both valiant, as men despising death; both confidant, as unwonted to be overcome; yet doutefull by their present feeling, and respectfull by what they had already scene. Their feete stedy, their hands diligent, their eyes watchfull, & their harts resolute. The partes either not armed, or weakly armed, were well knownen, and according to the knowledge should
have bene sharply visited, but that the aunswere was as quicke as the objection. Yet some lighting; the smarte bred rage, and the rage bred smarte againe: till both sides beginning to waxe faint, and rather desirous to die accompanied, then hopeful to live victorious, the Captaine of the Helots with a blow, whose violence grew of furie, not of strength, or of strength proceeding of furie, strake Palladius upon the side of the head, that he reeled astonied: and withall the helmet fell of, he remayning bare headed: but other of the Arcadians were redie to shield him from any harme might rise of that nakednes.

But little needed it, for his chiefe enemie in steed of pursuing that advauntage, kneeled downe, offering to deliver the pommell of his sworde, in token of yeelding, with all speaking aloud unto him, that he thought it more libertie to be his prisoner, then any others generall. Palladius standing uppon him selfe, and misdoubting some craft, and the Helots (that were next their captaine) wavering betweene looking for some stratageme, or fearing treason, What, saide the captaine, hath Palladius forgotten the voice of Daiphantus?

By that watche worde Palladius knew that it was his onely friende Pyrocles, whome he had lost upon the Sea, and therefore both most full of wonder, so to be mett, if they had not bene fuller of joye then wonder, caused the retraite to be sounded, Daiphantus by authoritie, and Palladius by persuasion; to which helped well the little advauntage that was of eyther side: and that of the Helots partie their Captaines behaviour had made as many amazed as sawe or heard of it: and of the Arcadian side the good olde Kalander striving more then his old age could atchieve, was newly taken prisoner. But in deede, the chiefe parter of the fraye was the night, which with her blacke armes pulled their malicious sightes one from the other. But he that tooke Kalander, meant nothing lesse then to save him, but onelie so long, as the Captaine might learne the enemies secrets: towards whom he led the old Gentleman, when he caused the retreit to be sounded: looking for no other deliverie from that captivitie, but by the painfull taking away of all paine: when whome should he see nexte to the Captaine (with good tokens how valiantly he had fought that daie against the Arcadians) but his sonne Clitophon? But nowe the Captaine had caused all the principall Helots to be assembled, as well to deliberate
what they had to do, as to receive a message from the 
Arcadians; Amög whom Palladius vertue (besides the love 
Kalander bare him) having gottē principall authoritie, he had 
persuaded them to seeke rather by parley to recover the Father 
and the Sonne, then by the sword: since the goodnes of the 
Captain assured him that way to speed, and his value (where- 
with he was of old acquainted) made him thinke any other way 
dangerous. This therfore was donne in orderly manner, giving 
to them to understand, that as they came but to deliver Clitophon, 
so offering to leave the footing they already had in the towne, 
to goe away without any further hurte, so as they might have 
the father, & the sonne without raunsome delivered. Which 
conditions beyng heard and conceaved by the Helots, Daiphantus 
perswaded them without delay to accept them. For first (sayd 
he) since the strife is within our owne home, if you loose, you 
loose all that in this life can bee deare unto you: if you winne, 
it will be a blouddy victorie with no profite, but the flattering 
in our selves that same badde humour of revenge. Besides, it 
is like to stirre Arcadia uppon us, which nowe, by using these 
persons well, maie bee brought to some amitie. Lastly, but 
especially, least the king and nobility of Laconia (with whom 
now we have made a perfect peace) should hope, by occasion of 
this quarrell to joyne the Arcadians with them, & so breake of 
the profitable agreement alreadie concluded. In summe, as in 
al deliberations (waying the profite of the good successe with 
the harme of the evill successe) you shall find this way most 
safe and honorable.

10 The Helots asmuch moved by his authoritie, as perswaded 
by his reasons, were content therewith. Whereupon, Palladius 
tooke order that the Arcadians should presently march out of 
the towne, taking with them their prisoners, while the night 
with mutual diffidence might keepe them quiet, and ere day 
came they might be well on of their way, and so avoid those 
accidents which in late enemies, a looke, a word, or a particular 
mans quarel might engēder. This being on both sides con- 
cluded on, Kalander and Clitophon, who now (with infinite joy 
did knowe each other) came to kisse the hands and feet of 
Daiphantus: Clitophon telling his father, how Daiphantus (not 
without danger to himselfe) had preserved him from the furious 
malice of the Helots: & even that day going to conclude the
peace (least in his absence he might receive some hurt) he had
taken him in his companie, and geven him armour, upon
promise he should take the parte of the Helots; which he had
in this fight perfourmed, little knowing that it was against his
father: but (said Clitophon) here is he, who (as a father) hath
new-begotten me, and (as a God) hath saved me from many
deaths, which already laid hold on me: which Kalander with
tears of joy acknowledged (besides his owne deliverance) onely
his benefite. But Daiphantus, who loved doing well for it selfe,
and not for thanks, brake of those ceremonies, desiring to know
how Palladius (for so he called Musidorus) was come into that
companie, & what his present estate was: whereof receiving a
brief declaration of Kalander, he sent him word by Clitophon,
that he should not as now come unto him, because he held
himselfe not so sure a master of the Helots minds, that he
would adventure him in their power, who was so well knowen
with an unfriendly acquaintance; but that he desired him to
return with Kalander, whether also he within few daies (having
dispatched himselfe of the Helots) would repaire. Kalander
would needes kisse his hande againe for that promise, pro-
testing, he would esteme his house more blessed the a temple
of the gods, if it had once received him. And then desiring
pardon for Argalus, Daiphantus assured them that hee woulde
die, but hee woulde bring him, (though till then kept in close
prison, indeed for his safetie, the Helots being so animated
against him as els hee could not have lived) and so taking their
leave of him, Kalander, Clitophon, Palladius and the rest of the
Arcadians swearing that they would no further in any sorte
molest the Helots, they straight way marched out of the towne,
carying both their dead and wounded bodies with them; and
by morning were alreadie within the limits of Arcadia.
CHAP. 7.

1 The articles of peace between the Lacedæmonians & Helots,
2 Daiphatus his departure frō the Helots with Argalus to Kalanders house. 3 The offer of a straunge Lady to Argalus
4 his refusal, and 5 who she was.

The Helots of the other side shutting their gates, gave them selves to bury their dead, to cure their wounds, and rest their weired bodies: till (the next day bestowing the chereful use of the light upon them) Daiphantus making a generall convocation spake unto them in this manner. We are first (said he) to thanke the Gods, that (further then wee had either cause to hope; or reason to imagine) have delivered us out of this gulfe of daunger, wherein we were alredie swallowed. For all being lost, (had they had not directed, my return so just as they did) it had bene too late to recover that, which being had, we could not keep. And had I not happened to know one of the principall men among them, by which meanes the truce beganne betweene us, you may easily conceive, what little reason we have to think, but that either by some supplie out of Arcadia, or from the Nobilitie of this Country (who would have made fruiites of wisdome grow out of this occasion,) wee should have had our power turned to ruine, our pride to repentance and sorow. But now the storme, as it fell out, so it ceased: and the error committed, in retaining Clitophon more hardly then his age or quarrell deserved, becomes a sharply learned experience, to use in other times more moderation.

Now have I to deliver unto you the conclusion between the Kings with the Nobilitie of Lacedæmon, and you; which is in all points as your selves desired: aswell for that you would have graunted, as for the assurance of what is graunted. The Townes and Fortes you presently have, are still left unto you, to be kept either with or without garrison, so as you alter not the lawes of the Countrie, and pay such dueties as the rest of the Laconians doo. Your selves are made by publique decree, free men, and so capable both to give and receive voice in election of
ARCADIA. LIB. 1.

Magistrates. The distinction of names between Helots and Lacedaemonians to be quite taken away, and all indifferently to enjoy both names and priviledges of Laconians. Your children to be brought up with theirs in Spartane discipline: and so you (framing your selves to be good members of that estate) to be hereafter fellowes, and no longer servaunts.

Which conditions you see, cary in themselves no more contentation then assurance. For this is not a peace which is made with them, but this is a peace by which you are made of them. Lastly, a forgetfulness decreed of all what is past, they shewing theselves glad to have so valiant men as you are, joyned with them: so that you are to take mindes of peace, since the cause of war is finished; and as you hated them before like oppressours, so now to love them as brothers; to take care of their estate because it is yours, and to labour by vertuous doing, that the posteritie may not repent your joyning. But now one Article onely they stood upon, which in the end I with your commissioners have agreed unto, that I should no more tarry here, mistaking perchaunce my humor, and thinking me as sedicious as I am young, or els it is the king Amiclas procuring, in respect that it was my il hap to kil his nephew Eurileon; but how soever it be, I have condiscended. But so will not wee cryed almost the whole assemble, coucelling one an other, rather to trye the uttermost event, then to loose him by whō they had beeone victorious. But he as well with generall orations, as particular dealing with the men of most credit, made them throughly see how necessary it was to preferree such an opportunity before a vaine affection; but yet could not prevaile, til openly he swere, that he would (if at any time the Lacedaemonians brake this treatie) come back againe, and be their captaine.

So then after a few dayes, setling them in perfect order, hee 2 tooke his leave of them, whose eyes bad him farwell with teares, & mouthes with kissing the places where he stept, and after making temples unto him as to a demi-God: thinking it beyond the degree of humanitie to have a witt so farre overgoing his age, and such dreadful terror proceed from so excellent beutie. But he for his sake obtayned free pardon for Argalus, whom also (uppon oath never to beare armes against the Helots) he delivered: and taking onely with him cærtaine principall Jewells of his owne, he would have parted alone with Argalus, (whose
countenaunce well shewed, while Parthenia was lost he counted not himselfe delivered) but that the whole multitude would needs gard him into Arcadia. Where again leaving the all to lament his departure, he by enquire gotte to the wel-knowne house of Kalander: There was he received with loving joye of Kalander, with joyfull love of Palladius, with humble (though doulful) demeanor of Argalus (whom specially both he and Palladius regarded) with gratefull servisables of Clitophon, and honourable admiration of all. For being now well veiwed to have no haire of his face, to witnes him a man, who had done acts beyond the degree of a man, and to looke with a certaine almost bashefull kinde of modestie, as if hee feared the eyes of men, who was unmooved with sight of the most horrible countenaunces of death; and as if nature had mistaken her woorke to have a Marses heart in a Cupides bodye: All that beheld him (and al that might behold him, did behold him) made their eyes quicke messengers to their minds, that there they had seene the uttermost that in mankind might be seene. The like wonder Palladius had before stirred, but that Daiphantus, as younger and newer come, had gotten now the advantage in the moyst & fickle impression of eye-sight. But while all men (saving poore Argalus) made the joy of their eyes speake for their harts towards Daiphantus: Fortune (that belike was bid to that banket, & ment then to play the good fellow) brought a pleasait adventure among the.

3 It was that as they had newly dined, there came in to Kalander a messenger, that brought him word, a young noble Lady, neere kinswoman to the fair Helen Queene of Corinth; was come thether, and desired to be lodged in his house. Kalander (most glad of such an occasion) went out, and all his other worthie guests with him, saving onely Argalus, who remained in his chamber, desirous that this company were once broken up, that he might goe in his solitarie quest after Parthenia. But when they met this Lady; Kalander streight thought he sawe his neree Parthenia, and was about in such familiar sorte to have spoken unto her: But she in grave and honorable manner giving him to understand that he was mistaken, he halfe ashamed, excused himselfe with the exceeding likenes was betwene them, though indeede it seemed that his Lady was of the more pure and daintie complexion; shee said,
it might very well be, having bene many times taken one for an other. But assoone as she was brought into the house, before she would rest her, she desired to speake with Argalus publickly, who she heard was in the house. Argalus came in hastely, and as hastelie thought as Kalander had done, with sodaine chaunges of joye into sorrow. But she whē she had stayd their thoughts with telling them her name, and qualitie in this sort spake unto him. My Lord Argalus, sayd she, being of late left in the court of Queene Helen of Corinth, as chiefe in her absence (she being upō some occasion gone thēce) there came unto me the Lady Parthenia, so disguysed, as I thinke Greece hath nothing so ougly to behold. For my part, it was many dayes, before with vehement oathes, and some good proofes, she could make me thinke that she was Parthenia. Yet at last finding certenly it was she, and greatly pitying her misfortune, so much the more, as that all men had ever told me, (as now you doo) of the great likenes betweene us, I tooke the best care I could of her: and of her understood the whole tragicall historie of her undeserved adventure: and therewithall, of that most noble constancie in you my Lord Argalus: which whosoever loves not, shewes himselfe to be a hater of vertue, and unworthy to live in the societie of mankind. But no outward cherishing could salve the inward sore of her minde, but a fewe dayes since shee died: before her death earnestly desiring, and perswading me, to thinke of no husbande but of you; as of the onely man in the world worthie to be loved; with-all, she gave me this Ring to deliver you; desiring you, & by the authoritie of love co-maunding you, that the affection you bare her you should turne to me: assuring you, that nothing can please her soule more, then to see you and me matched together. Now my L. though this office be not (perchance) sutable to my estate nor sex, who shuld rather looke to be desired; yet, an extraordinarie desert requires an extraordinarie proceding: and therfore I am come (with faithfull love built upō your worthines) to offer my self, & to beseech you to accept the offer: & if these noble gêlem ê presêt will say it is great folly, let thē withal, say it is great love. And then she staid, earnestly attending Argalus his answere, who (first making most hartie sighes do such obsequies as he could, to Parthenia) thus answered her.

Madame (said he) infinitely bound am I unto you, for this, 4
no more rare, then noble courtesie; but most bound for the
goodnes I perceive you shewed to the lady Parthenia, (with that
the teares ranne downe his eyes; but he followed on) and as
much as so unfortunat a man, fitte to be the spectacle of miserie,
can doo you service; determine you have made a purchase of a
slave (while I live) never to fayle you. But this great matter
you propose unto me, wherein I am not so blind, as not to see
what happines it should be unto mee; Excellent Ladie, know,
that if my hart were mine to give, you before al other, should
have it; but Parthenias it is, though dead: there I began, there
I end all matter of affection: I hope I shall not long tarry after
her, with whose beautie if I had onely been in love, I should be
so with you, who have the same beautie: but it was Parthenias
selfe I loved, and love; which no likenes can make one, no
coamaundement dissolve, no soulnes desile, nor no death finish.
And shall I receive (said she) such disgrace, as to be refused?
Noble Ladie (said he) let not that harde word be used; who
know your exceeding worthinesse farre beyond my desert: but
it is onely happinesse I refuse, since of the onely happines I
could and can desire, I am refused.

5 He had scarce spoken those words, when she ranne to him,
and imbrasing him, Why then Argalus (saide she) take thy
Parthenia; and Parthenia it was in deede. But because sorow
forbad him too soon to beleeve, she told him the trueth, with
all circumstances; how being parted alone, meaning to die in
some solitarie place, as she hapned to make her complaint, the
Queen Helen of Corinth (who likewise felt her part of miseries)
being then walking also alone in that lovely place, heard her,
and never left, till she had knowen the whole discourse. Which
the noble Queene greatly pitying, she sent her to a Phisition of
hers, the most excellent man in the worlde, in hope he could
helpe her: which in such sorte as they saw perfourmed, and
she taking with her of the Queenes servaunts, thought yet to
make this triall, whether he would quickly forget his true
Parthenia, or no. Her speach was confirmed by the Corinthian
Gentlemen, who before had kept her counsell, and Argalus
easily persuadde to what more then ten thousand yeares of life
he desired: and Kalander would needes have the mariage
celebrated in his house, principallie the longer to hold his deare
guestes, towards whom he was now (besides his owne habite of
hospitalitie) carried with love and dutie: & therfore omitted no service that his wit could invent, and his power minister.

CHAP. 8.

The adventures first of Musidorus, then of Pyrocles since their shipwracke, to their meeting. The marriage of Argalus and Parthenia.

But no waie he sawe he could so much pleasure them, as by leaving the two friends alone, who being shruncke aside to the banqueting house where the pictures were; there Palladius recounted unto him, that after they had both abandoned the burning ship (& either of them taken some thing under him the better to supporte him to the shore) he knew not how, but either with over-labouring in the fight and sodaine colde, or the too much receaving of salt water, he was past himselfe: but yet holding fast (as the nature of dying men is to doo) the chest that was under him, he was cast on the sandes, where he was taken up by a couple of Shepherds, and by them brought to life againe, and kept from drowning him selfe, when he despaired of his safetie. How after having failed to take him into the fisher boate, he had by the Shepheards persuasion come to this Gentlemans house; where being daungerouslie sicke, he had yeelded to seeke the recovery of health, onely for that he might the sooner go seeke the deliverie of Pyrocles: to which purpose Kalander by some friends of his in Messenia, had alreadie set a ship or two abroad, when this accident of Clitophons taking had so blessedly procured their meeting. Thē did he set foorth unto him the noble entertainement and careful cherishing of Kalander towards him, & so upon occasiō of the pictures present delivered with the franknesse of a friends tongue, as neere as he could, word by word what Kalander had told him touching the strange storie (with al the particularities belonging) of Arcadia, which did in many sortes so delight Pyrocles to heare; that he would needs have much of it againe repeated, and was not contented till Kalander him selfe had answered him divers questions.
2 But first at Musidorus request, though in brief manner, his mind much running upon the strange storie of Arcadia, he did declare by what course of aventures he was come to make up their mutuall happiness in meeting. When (cosin, said he) we had stript our selves, and were both leapt into the Sea, and swom a little toward the shoare, I found by reason of some wounds I had, that I should not be able to get the lande, and therefore turned backe againe to the mast of the shipp, where you found me, assuring my selfe, that if you came alive to the shore, you would seeke me; if you were lost, as I thought it as good to perish as to live, so that place as good to perish in as an other. There I found my sworde among some of the shrowds, wishing (I must confesse) if I died, to be found with that in my hand, and withall waving it about my head, that saylers by it might have the better glimpse of me. There you missing me, I was taken up by Pyrates, who putting me under boorde prisoner, presentlie sett uppon another shipp, and maintaining a long fight, in the ende, put them all to the sworde. Amongst whom I might heare them greatlie prayse one younge man, who fought most valiantlie, whom (as love is carefull, and misfortune subject to doubtfulnes) I thought certainly to be you. And so holding you as dead, from that time till the time I sawe you, in trueth I sought nothing more then a noble ende, which perchance made me more hardie then otherwise I would have bene. Triall whereof came within two dayes after: for the Kings of Lacedaemon having sett out some Galleys, under the charge of one of their Nephews to skowre the Sea of the Pyrates, they met with us, where our Captaine wanting men, was driven to arme some of his prisoners, with promise of libertie for well fighting: among whom I was one, and being boorded by the Admirall, it was my fortune to kil Eurileon the Kings nephew: but in the end they prevailed, & we were all take prisoners: I not caring much what became of me (onely keeping the name of Daiphantus, according to the resolution you know is betweene us,) but beyng laid in the jayle of Tenaria, with speciall hate to me for the death of Eurileon, the popular sort of that towne conspired with the Helots, and so by night opened them the gates; where entering and killing all of the gentle and riche faction, for honestie sake brake open all prisons, and so delivered me; and I mooved with gratefulnesse,
and encouraged with carelesnesse of life, so behaved my selfe in some conflictes they had in fewe dayes, that they barbarouslie thinking unsensible wonders of mee, and withall so much they better trusting mee, as they heard I was hated of the Kinge of Lacedemon, (their chiefe Captaine beyng slaine as you knowe by the noble Argalus, who helped thereunto by his perswasion) having borne a great affection unto me, and to avoyde the daungerous emulation whiche grewe among the chief, who should have the place, and all so affected, as rather to have a straunger then a competitour, they elected mee, (God wotte little prowde of that dignitie,) restoring unto mee such things of mine as being taken first by the pyrates, and then by the Lacedemonians, they had gotten in the sacke of the towne. Now being in it, so good was my successe with manie victories, that I made a peace for them to their owne liking, the verie daie that you delivered Clitophon, whom I with much adoo had preserved. And in my peace the King Amiclas of Lacedemon would needes have mee bannished, and deprived of the dignitie whereunto I was exalted : which (and you may see howe much you are bounde to mee) for your sake I was content to suffer, a newe hope rising in mee, that you were not dead: and so meaning to travaile over the worlde to seeke you; and now here (my deere Musidorus) you have mee. And with that (embracing and kisinge each other) they called Kalander, of whom Daiphantus desired to heare the full storie, which before hee had recounted to Palladius, and to see the letter of Philanax, which hee read and well marked.

But within some daies after, the marriage betweene Argalus and the faire Parthenia beyng to be celebrated, Daiphantus and Palladius selling some of their jewels, furnished themselves of very faire apparell, meaning to doo honour to their loving hoste; who as much for their sakes, as for the marriage, set foorth each thing in most gorgeous manner. But all the cost bestowed did not so much enrich, nor all the fine deckinges so much beautifie, nor all the daintie devises so much delight, as the fairenesse of Parthenia, the pearle of all the maydes of Mantinea : who as shee went to the Temple to bee maried, her eyes themselves seemed a temple, wherein love and beautie were married: her lippes, although they were kepte close with modest silence, yet with a pretie kinde of naturall swelling, they seemed to invite
the guestes that lookt on them; her cheekes blushing, and
withal when shee was spoken unto, a little smilyng, were like
roses, when their leaves are with a little breath stirred: her
hayre being layed at the full length downe her backe, bare
shewe as if the voward fayled, yet that would conquere. Dai-
phantus marking her, O Jupiter (said he speaking to Palladius)
how happens it, that Beautie is onely confined to Arcadia? But Palladius not greatly attending his speach, some daies were
continued in the solemnising the marriage, with all concepts
that might deliver delight to mens fancies.

CHAP. 9.

Pyrocles his inclination to love. His, and Musidorus disputation
thereabouts broken of by Kalander.

But such a chaunge was grown in Daiphantus, that (as if
cheerfulnesse had bene tediousnesse, and good enter-
tainment were turnd to discouertesie) he would ever get him
selfe alone, though almost when he was in companie he was
alone, so little attention he gave to any that spake unto him:
even the colour and figure of his face began to receive some
alteration; which he shewed little to heede: but everie morn-
ing earlie going abroad, either to the garden, or to some woods
towards the desert, it seemed his only comfort was to be without
a cōforter. But long it could not be hid from Palladius, whom
ttrue love made redy to marke, & long knowledge able to marke;
& therfore being now growē weary of his abode in Arcadia,
having informed himself fully of the strength & riches of the
cōtry, of the nature of the people, and manner of their lawes:
and, seing the courte could not be visited, prohibited to all men,
but to certaine sheapheardish people, he greatly desired a speedy
returne to his own countrie, after the many mazes of fortune he
had troden. But perceaving this great alteration in his friend,
he thought first to breake with him thereof, and then to hasten
his returne; whereto he founde him but smaily enclined:
whereupon one day taking him alone with certaine graces and
countenances, as if he were disputing with the trees, began in
this manner to say unto him.

54
A mind well trained and long exercised in vertue (my sweete and worthy cosin) doth not easily change any course it once undertakes, but upon well grounded & well wayed causes. For being witness to it selfe of his owne inward good, it findes nothing without it of so high a price, for which it should be altered. Even the very countenaunce and behaviour of such a man doth shew forth Images of the same constancy, by maintaining a right harmonie betwixt it and the inward good, in yeelding it selfe suitable to the vertuous resolution of the minde. This speech I direct to you (noble friend Pyrocles) the excellencie of whose minde and well chosen course in vertue, if I do not sufficiently know, having seene such rare demonstrations of it, it is my weakenes, and not your unworthines. But as in deede I know it, and knowing it, most dearely love both it, and him that hath it; so must I needs saye, that since our late comming into this country, I have marked in you, I will not say an alteratiō, but a relenting truely, & a slacking of the maine career, you had so notably begun, & almost performed; and that in such sorte, as I cannot finde sufficient reason in my great love toward you how to allow it; for (to leave of other secreter arguments which my acquaintaunce with you makes me easily finde) this in effect to any manne may be manyst, that whereas you were wont in all places you came, to give your selfe vehemently to the knowledge of those things which might better your minde; to seeke the familiaritie of excellent men in learning and sooldiery: and lastly, to put all these things in practise both by continuall wise proceedinge, and worthie enterprisies, as occasion fell for them; you now leave all these things undone: you let your minde fall a sleepe: beside your countenaunce troubled (which surely comes not of vertue; for vertue like the cleare heaven, is without cloudes) and lastly you subject your selfe to solitarines, the slye enimie, that doth most separate a man from well doing. Pyrocles minde was all this while so fixed upon another devotion, that he no more attentively marked his friends discourse, then the childe that hath leave to playe, markes the last part of his lesson; or the diligent Pilot in a daugherous tempest doth attend the unskilful words of a passinger: yet the very sound having imprinted the general point of his speech in his hart, pierced with any mislike of so deerely an esteemed friend, and desirous by degrees to
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

bring him to a gentler consideration of him, with a shamefast looke (witnessing he rather could not helpe, then did not know his fault) answered him to this purpose. Excellent Musidorus, in the praise you gave me in the beginning of your spech, I easily acknowledge the force of your good will unto mee, for neither coulde you have thought so well of me, if extremitie of love had not made your judgement partiall, nor you could have loved me so intierlie, if you had not beene apt to make so great (though undeserved) judgements of me; and even so must I say to those imperfections, to which though I have ever through weaknes been subject, yet you by the daily meding of your mind have of late bin able to looke into them, which before you could not discerne; so that the chaunge you speake of, falles not out by my impairing, but by your betring. And yet under the leave of your better judgement, I must needes say thus much, my deere cosin, that I find not my selfe wholye to be condemned, because I do not with continuall vehement folow those knowledges, which you call the bettering of my minde; for both the minde it selfe must (like other things) sometimes be unbent, or else it will be either weakned, or broken; And these knowledges, as they are of good use, so are they not all the minde may stretch it selfe unto: who knowes whether I feede not my minde with higher thoughts? Trulie as I know not all the particularies, so yet I see the bounds of all these knowledges: but the workings of the minde I finde much more infinite, then can be led unto by the eye, or imagined by any, that distract their thoughts without themselves. And in such contemplation, or as I thinke more excellent, I enjoye my solitarines; and my solitarines perchaunce is the nurse of these contemplations. Eagles we see fly alone; and they are but sheepe, which alwaies heard together; codemne not therefore my minde somtime to enjoy it selfe; nor blame not the taking of such times as serve most fitte for it. And alas, deere Musidorus, if I be sadde, who knowes better then you the just causes I have of sadnes? And here Pyrocles sodainly stopped, like a man unsatisfied in himselfe, though his witte might wel have served to have satisfied another. And so looking with a countenaunce, as though he desired he should know his minde without hearing him speake, and yet desirous to speake, to breath out some part of his inward evil, sending againe new

56
blood to his face, he continued his speach in this manner. And Lord (dere cosin, said he) doth not the pleasauntnes of this place carry in it selfe sufficient reward for any time lost in it? Do you not see how all things conspire together to make this coutry a heavenly dwelling? Do you not see the grasse how in colour they excell the Emeralds, everie one striving to passe his fellow, and yet they are all kept of an equal height? And see you not the rest of these beautifull flowers, each of which would require a mans wit to know, and his life to expresse? Do not these stately trees seeme to maintaine their florishing olde age with the onely happines of their seat, being clothed with a continuall spring, because no beautie here should ever fade? Doth not the aire breath health, which the Birds (delightfull both to care and eye) do dayly solemnize with the sweet cosent of their voyces? Is not every echo therof a perfect Musicke? and these fresh and delightful brookes how slowly they slide away, as loth to leave the company of so many things united in perfection? and with how sweete a murmure they lament their forced departure? Certainelie, certainely, cosin, it must needs be that some Goddesse enhabiteth this Region, who is the soule of this soile: for neither is any, lesse then a Goddesse, worthie to be shrined in such a heap of pleasures: nor any lesse thē a Goddesse, could have made it so perfect a plotte of the celestiall dwellings. And so ended with a deep sigh, rufully casting his eye upon Musidorus, as more desirous of pittie thē pleading. But Musidorus had all this while helde his looke fixed upon Pyrocles countenance; and with no lesse loving attention marked how his words proceeded from him: but in both these he perceived such strange diversities, that they rather increased new doubts, then gave him ground to settle any judgement: for, besides his eyes sometimes even great with teares, the oft chāging of his colour, with a kind of shaking unstayednes over all his body, he might see in his countenance some great determinatiō mixed with feare; and might perceive in him store of thoughts, rather stirred then digested; his words interrupted continually with sighes (which served as a burthen to each sentence) and the tenor of his speech (though of his wōted phrase) not knit together to one constāt end, but rather dissolved in it selfe, as the vehementie of the inwarde passion prevayled: which made Musidorus frame his aunswere neerest to
that humor, which should soonest put out the secret. For, having in the beginning of Pyrocles speech which defendèd his solitarines, framed in his minde a replie against it, in the praise of honourable action, in shewing that such a kind of côteplatiò is but a glorious title to idlenes; that in actiò a man did not onely better himself, but benefit others; that the gods would not have delivered a soule into the body, which hath armes & legges, only instrumènts of doing, but that it were intèded the mind should imploy thè; & that the mind should best know his own good or evill, by practise: which knowledge was the onely way to increase the one, and correct the other: besides many other argumentes, which the plentifulnesse of the matter yeelded to the sharpnes of his wit. When he found Pyrocles leave that, and fall into such an affected praising of the place, he left it likewise, and joyned with him therein: because he found him in that humor utter more store of passion; and even thus kindly embrasing him, he said: Your words are such (noble cousin) so sweetly and strongly handled in the praise of solitarinesse, as they would make me likewise yeeld my selfe up into it, but that the same words make me know, it is more pleasant to enjoy the companie of him that can speake such words, then by such wordes to be perswaded to follow solitari-nes. And even so doo I give you leave (sweet Pyrocles) ever to defend solitarines; so long, as to defende it, you ever keep companie. But I marvell at the excessive praises you give to this countrie; in trueth it is not unpleasant: but yet if you would returne into Macedon, you should see either many heavens, or find this no more then earthly. And evè Tempe in my Thessalia, (where you & I to my great happinesse were brought up together) is nothing inferiour unto it. But I think you will make me see, that the vigor of your witte can shew it selfe in any subject: or els you feede sometimes your solitarines with the conceites of the Poets, whose liberall pennes can as easilie travaile over mountaines, as molehils: and so like wel disposed men, set up every thing to the highest note; especially, when they put such words in the mouths of one of these fantastical mind-infected people, that children & Musitiâs cal Lovers. This word, Lover, did no lesse pearce poore Pyrocles, then the right tune of musicke toucheth him that is sick of the Tarantula. There was not one part of his body, that did not feele a sodaine
motion, while his hart with panting, seemed to daunce to the sounde of that word; yet after some pause (lifting up his eyes a little from the ground, and yet not daring to place them in the eyes of Musidorus) armed with the verie coûtenance of the poore prisoner at the barr, whose aunswere is nothing but guiltie: with much a do he brought forth this question. And alas, saide he, deare cosin, what if I be not so much the Poet (the freedome of whose penne canne exercise it selfe in any thing) as even that miserable subject of his conning, whereof you speake? Now the eternall Gods forbid (mainely cryed out Musidorus) that ever my eare should be poysoned with so evill newes of you. O let me never know that any base affectio shuld get any Lordship in your thoughts. But as he was speaking more, Kalander came, and brake of their discourse, with inviting the to the hunting of a goodly stagge, which beeing harbored in a wood therby, he hoped would make them good sporte, and drive away some part of Daiphantus melancholy. They condiscended, & so going to their lodgings, furnished the selves as liked them Daiphantus writing a few wordes which he left in a sealed letter against their returne.

CHAP. 10.

1 Kalanders hunting. 2 Daiphantus his close departure, 3 and letter 4 Palladius his care, and 5 guest after him, 6 accompanied with Clitophon. 7 His finding and taking on Amphilus his armor 8 Their encounter with Queene Helens attendants. 9 Her mistaking Palladius.

Then went they together abroad, the good Kalander entertaining the, with pleasaut discoursing, howe well he loved the sporte of hunting when he was a young man, how much in the comparison thereof he disdained all chamber de-lights; that the Sunne (how great a jorne he sover he had to make) could never prevent him with earlines, nor the Moone (with her sober countenance) dissuade him from watching till midnight for the deeres feeding. O, saide he, you will never live to my age, without you kepe your selves in breath with
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

exercise, and in hart with joyfullnes: too much thinking doth consume the spirits: & oft it falles out, that while one thinkes too much of his doing, he leaves to doe the effect of his thinking. Then spared he not to remember how much Arcadia was chaunged since his youth: activitie & good felowship being nothing in the price it was then held in, but according to the nature of the old growing world, still worse & worse. Thē would he tell them stories of such gallaunts as he had known: and so with pleasant company beguiled the times hast, and shortned the wayes length, till they came to the side of the wood, where the houndes were in couples staying their comming, but with a whining Accent craving libertie: many of them in colour and marks so resembling, that it showed they were of one kinde. The huntsmen handsomely attired in their greene liveries, as though they were children of Sommer, with staves in their hands to beat the guiltlesse earth, when the houndes were at a fault, and with hornes about their neckes to sounde an alarum upon a sillie fugitive. The houndes were straight uncoupled, and ere long the Stagge thought it better to trust the nimblenes of his feete, then to the slender fortification of his lodging: but even his feete betrayed him; for howsoever they went, they themselves uttered themselves to the sent of their enimies; who one taking it of an other, and sometimes beleeving the windes advertisements, sometimes the view of (their faithfull councellors) the huntsmen, with open mouthes then denounced warre, when the warre was alreadie begun. Their crie being composed of so well sorted mouthes, that any man would perceive therein some kind of proportion, but the skilfull woodmen did finde a musick. Then delight and varietie of opinion drew the horsmen sundrie wayes; yet cheering their houndes with voyce and horn, kept still (as it were) together. The wood seemed to conspire with them against his own citi-zens, dispersing their noise through all his quarters; and even the Nimph Echo left to bewayle the losse of Narcissus, and became a hunter. But the Stagge was in the end so hotly pursued, that (leaving his flight) he was driven to make courage of despare; & so turning his head, made the hounds (with change of speech) to testifie that he was at bay: as if from hotte pursuite of their enemie, they were sodainly come to a parley.

60
But Kalander (by his skill of coasting the Countrey) was among the first that came in to the besiged Deere; whom when some of the younger sort would have killed with their swordes, he woulde not suffer: but with a Crossebowe sent a death to the poore beast, who with teares shewed the unkindnesse he tooke of mans crueltie.

But by the time that the whole companie was assembled, and that the Stagge had bestowed himselfe liberally among them that had killed him, Daiphantus was mist, for whom Palladius carefully enquiring, no newes could be given him, but by one that sayd, he thought he was returned home; for that he markt him, in the chiefe of the hunting, take a by-way, which might lead to Kalanders house. That answer for the time satisfying, and they having perfourmed all dueties, as well for the Stagges funeral, as the hounds triumph, they returned: some talking of the fatnes of the Deeres bodie; some of the fairenes of his head; some of the hounds cunning; some of their speed; and some of their cry: til comming home (about the time that the candle begins to inherit the Suns office) they found Daiphantus was not to bee found. Whereat Palladius greatly marvailing, and a day or two passing, while neither search nor inquirie could help him to knowledge, at last he lighted upon the letter, which Pyracles had written before hee went a hunting, and left in his studie among other of his writings. The letter was directed to Palladius himselfe, and conteyned these words.

My onely friend, violence of love leades me into such a course, wherof your knowledge may much more vexe you, then help me. Therefore pardon my concealing it from you, since: if I wrong you, it is in respect I beare you. Returne into Thessalia, I pray you, as full of good fortune, as I am of desire: and if I live, I will in short time follow you; if I die, love my memorie.

This was all, and this Palladius read twise or thrise over. Ah (said he) Pyracles, what meanes this alteratio? what have I deserved of thee, to be thus banished of thy counsels? Hertofore I have accused the sea, condemned the Pyrats, and hated my evill fortune, that deprived me of thee; But now thy self is the sea, which drounes my comfort, thy selfe is the Pirat that robbes thy selfe of me: Thy owne will becomes my evill fortune. The turned he his thoughts to all forms of ghesse that might light upon the purpose and course of Pyracles: for he
was not so sure by his wordes, that it was love, as he was doubtful where the love was. One time he thought, some beautie in Laconia had layed hold of his eyes; an other time he feared, that it might be Parthenias excellencie, which had broken the bands of all former resolution. But the more he thought, the more he knew not what to thinke, armies of objections rising against any accepted opinion.

5 Then as carefull he was what to doo himselfe: at length determined, never to leave seeking him, till his search should be either by meeting accomplisht, or by death ended. Therfore (for all the unkindnesse bearing tender respect, that his friends secrete determination should be kept from any suspicion in others) he went to Kalander, and told him, that he had receaved a message from his friend, by which he understood he was gone backe againe into Laconia, about some matters greatly importing the poore men, whose protection he had undertaken, and that it was in any sorte fit for him, to follow him, but in such private wise, as not to be knowne, and that therefore he would as then bid him farewell: arming him selfe in a blacke armour, as either a badge, or prognostication of his mind: and taking onely with him good store of monie, and a fewe choise jewels, leaving the greatest number of them, & most of his apparell with Kalander: which he did partly to give the more cause to Kalander to expect their return, & so to be the lesse curiously inquisitive after thē: and partly to leave those honor-able thankes unto him, for his charge & kindnes, which he knew he would no other way receave. The good old man having neither reason to dissuade, nor hope to persuade, receaved the things, with mind of a keeper, not of an owner; but before he went, desired he might have the happines, fully to know what they were: which he said, he had ever till then delaid, fearing to be any way importune: but now he could not be so much an enemie to his desires as any longer to imprison thē in silence. Palladius tolde him that the matter was not so secrete, but that so worthie a friend deserved the knowledge, and shuld have it as soone as he might speak with his friéd: without whose consent (because their promise bound him otherwise) he could not reveale it: but bad him hold for most assured, that if they lived but a while, he should find that they whichbare the names of Daiphātus and Palladius, would
give him & his cause to thinke his noble courtesie wel imploied. 

Kaläder would presse him no further: but desiring that he
might have leave to go, or at least to sende his sonne and 
servaunts with him, Palladius brake of all ceremonies, by tell-
ing him; his case stood so, that his greatest favour should be in 
making lest adoo of his parting. Wherewith Kalander knowing 
it to be more cumber then courtesie, to strive, abstained from 
further urging him, but not from hartie mourning the losse of 
so sweet a conversation.

Onely Clitophon by vehement importunitie obteyned to go 6 
with him, to come againe to Daiphantus, whom he named and 
accoùted his Lord. And in such private guise departed Pallad- dius, though having a companio to talke with all, yet talking 
much more with unkindnesse. And first they went to Mantinea; 
whereof because Parthenia was, he suspected there might be 
some cause of his abode. But finding there no newes of him 
he went to Tegaea, Ripa, Enispe, Stymphalus, and Pheneus, 
famous for the poisonous Stygian water, and through all the rest 
of Arcadia, making their eyes, their eares, and their tongue 
serve almost for nothing, but that enquirie. But they could 
know nothing but that in none of those places he was knowne. 
And so went they, making one place succeed to an other, in 
like uncertaintie to their search, manie times encountering strange 
advêtures, worthy to be registred in the roulles of fame; but 
this may not be omitted. As they past in a pleasant valley, (of 7 
either side of which high hils lifted up their beetle-browes, as if 
they would over looke the pleasantnes of their under-prospe6t) 
they were by the daintines of the place, & the wearines of 
theselves, invited to light frö their horses; & pulling of their 
bits, that they might something refresh their mouths upon the 
grasse (which plentifully grewe, brought up under the care of 
those wel shading trees,) they theselves laid the downe hard by 
the murmuring musicke of certain waters, which spouted out of 
the side of the hils, and in the bottome of the valley, made of 
many springs a pretie brooke, like a common-wealth of many 
families: but when they had a while harkened to the persuasion 
of sleepe, they rose, and walkt onward in that shadie place, till 
Clitphon espied a piece of armour, & not far of an other peece: 
and so the sight of one peece teaching him to looke for more, he 
at length found all, with headpeece & shield, by the devise
whereof, which was he streight knew it to be the armour of his cousin, the noble Amphialus. Wherupon (fearing some incovenience hapned unto him) he told both his doubte, and his cause of doubte to Palladius, who (considering ther eof) thought best to make no longer stay, but to follow on: least perchance some violèce were offered to so worthy a Knight, whom the fame of the world seemed to set in ballance with any Knight living. Yet with a sodaine conceit, having long borne great honour to the name of Amphialus, Palladius thought best to take that armour, thinking thereby to learne by them that should know that armour, some newes of Amphialus, & yet not hinder him in the search of Daiphantus too. So he by the help of Clitophon quickly put on that armour, whereof there was no one piece wanting, though hacked in some places, bewraying some fight not long since passed. It was some-thing too great, but yet served well enough.

And so getting on their horses, they travailed but a little way, when in opening of the mouth of the valley into a faire field, they met with a coach drawne with foure milke-white horses, furnished all in blacke, with a black a more boy upo every horse, they al appareled in white, the coach it self very richly furnished in black & white. But before they could come so neere as to discerne what was within, there came running upo them above a dozen horsmen, who cried to the to yeeld themselves prisoners, or els they should die. But Palladius not accustomed to grant over the possessiō of him self upon so unjust titles, with sword drawne gave them so rude an answer, that divers of the never had breath to reply again: for being wel backt by Clitophon, & having an excellēt horse under him, when he was overprest by some, he avoided them, and ere th'other thought of it, punished in him his fellowes faults: and so, ether with cunning or with force, or rather with a cunning force, left none of them either living, or able to make his life serve to others hurt. Which being done, he approched the coach, assuring the black boies they should have no hurt, who were els readie to have run away, & looking into the coach, he foud in the one end a Lady of great beautie, & such a beautie, as shewed forth the beames both of wisdome & good nature, but al as much darkened, as might be, with sorow. In the other, two Ladies, (who by their demeanure shewed well,
they were but her servants) holding before them a picture; in which was a goodly Gentleman (whom he knew not) painted, having in their faces a certaine waiting sorrow, their eies being infected with their mistres weeping.

But the chiefe Ladie having not so much as once heard the noise of this conflict (so had sorrow closed up all the entries of her mind, & love tied her sences to that beloved picture) now the shadow of him falling upon the picture made her cast up her eie, and seeing the armour which too well she knew, thinking him to be Amphialus the Lord of her desires, (bloud coming more freely into her cheekes, as though it would be bold, & yet there growing new againe pale for feare) with a pitiful looke (like one unjustly condemned) My Lord Amphialus (said she) you have enough punished me: it is time for cruelty to leave you, & evil fortune me; if not I pray you, (& to graunt, my prayer fitter time nor place you can have) accomplish the one even now, & finish the other. With that, sorrow impatient to be slowly uttered in her oft staying speeches, poured it self so fast in teares, that Palladius could not hold her longer in errour, but pulling of his helmet, Madame (said he) I perceave you mistake me: I am a stranger in these parts, set upon (without any cause given by me) by some of your servants, whom because I have in my just defence evill entreated, I came to make my excuse to you, whom seing such as I doo, I find greater cause, why I should crave pardon of you. When she saw his face, & heard his speech, she looked out of the coach, and seing her men, some slaine, some lying under their dead horses, and striving to get from under them, without making more account of the matter, Truely (said she) they are well served that durst lift up their armes against that armour. But Sir Knight, (said she) I pray you tell me, how come you by this armour? for if it be by the death of him that owed it, then have I more to say unto you. Palladius assured her it was not so; telling her the true manner how he found it. It is like enough (said she) for that agrees with the manner he hath lately used. But I beseech you Sir (said she) since your prowes hath bereft me of my company: let it yet so farre heale the woundes it selfe hath given, as to garde me to the next towne. How great so ever my businesse be fayre Ladie (said he) it shall willingly yeeld to so noble a cause: But first even by the favour you beare to the Lorde of this noble armour, I conjure

S. A.  

E 65
you to tell me the storie of your fortune herein, lest hereafter when the image of so excellent a Ladie in so straunge a plight come before mine eyes, I condemne my selfe of want of consideration in not having demaunded thus much. Neither aske I it without protestation, that wherein my sworde and faith may availe you, they shall binde themselves to your service. Your conjuration, fayre Knight (said she) is too strong for my poore spirite to disobey, and that shall make me (without any other hope, my ruine being but by one unrelieveable) to graunt your wil herein: and to say the truth, a straunge nicenesse were it in me to refraine that from the eares of a person representing so much worthinesse, which I am glad even to rockes and woods to utter.

CHAP. II.

The story of Queene Helen Philoxenus her suiter Amphialus an intercessor for his friende. His praises birth, and education. Her love wonne to himselfe His refusall and departure Philoxenus wronge-rage against him. Their fight. The death of sonne and father. Amphialus his sorrow and detestation of the Queene. A new onset on Palladius for Amphialus his Armour: whose griefe is amplified by meeting his dead frends dog. Palladius his parting with Helen and Clitophon.

Now you then that my name is Helen, Queene by birth: and hetherto possession of the faire Citie and territorie of Corinth. I can say no more of my selfe, but beloved of my people: and may justly say, beloved, since they are content to beare with my absence, and folly. But I being left by my fathers death, and accepted by my people, in the highest degree, that countrie could receive; assoone, or rather, before that my age was ripe for it; my court quickly swarmed full of suiters; some perchaunce loving my state, others my person, but once I know all of them, howsoever my possessions were in their harts, my beauty (such as it is) was in their mouthes; many strangers of princely and noble blood, and all of mine owne country, to whom ether birth or vertue gave courage to avowe so high a desire.
Among the rest, or rather before the rest, was the Lord Philoxenus, sonne and heire to the vertuous noble man Timotheus: which Timotheus was a man both in power, riches, parentage, and (which passed all these) goodnes, and (which followed all these) love of the people, beyond any of the great men of my countrie. Now this sonne of his I must say truly, not unworthy of such a father, bending himselfe by all means of servisefulnes to mee, and setting forth of himselfe to win my favour, wan thus farre of mee, that in truth I lesse misliked him then any of the rest: which in some proportion my countenaunce delivered unto him. Though I must protest it was a verie false embassadour, if it delivered at all any affection, whereof my hart was utterly void, I as then esteeming my selfe borne to rule, & thinking foule scorne willingly to submit my selfe to be ruled.

But whiles Philoxenus in good sorte pursued my favour, and perchaunce nourished himselfe with over much hope, because he found I did in some sorte acknowledge his valew, one time among the rest he brought with him a deare friend of his. With that she loked upon the picture before her, & straight sighed, & straight teares followed, as if the Idol of dutie ought to be honoured with such oblations, and the her speach staid the tale, having brought her to that loke, but that looke having quite put her out of her tale. But Palladius greatly pitying so sweete a sorrow in a Ladie, whom by fame he had already knownen, and honoured, besought her for her promise sake, to put silence so longe unto her moning, til she had recounted the rest of this story.

Why said she, this is the picture of Amphialus: what neede I say more to you? what eare is so barbarous but hath hard of Amphialus? who follows deeds of Armes, but every where findes monumet of Amphialus? who is courteous, noble, liberall, but he that hath the example before his eyes of Amphialus? where are all heroicall parts, but in Amphialus? O Amphialus I would thou were not so excellent, or I would I thought thee not so excellent, and yet would I not, that I would so: with that she wept againe, til he againe solliciting the conclusion of her story. Then must you (said she) know the story of Amphialus: for his will is my life, his life my history: and indeed, in what can I better employ my lippes, then in speaking of Amphialus?
This knight then whose figure you see, but whose mind can be painted by nothing, but by the true shape of vertue, is brothers sonne to Basilius King of Arcadia, and in his childhood esteemed his heir: till Basilius in his olde yeeres marrying a young and a faire Lady, had of her those two daughters, so famous for their perfection in beauty: which put by their young cosin from that expectation. Whereupon his mother (a woman of a hauty hart, being daughter to the King of Argos, either disdaining, or fearing, that her sonne should live under the power of Basilius sent him to that Lorde Timotheus (betwene whom and her dead husband ther had passed streight bands of mutuall hospitality to be brought up in company with his sonne Philoxenus?

A happie resolution for Amphialus, whose excellent nature was by this meanes trayned on with as good education, as any Princes sonne in the world could have, which otherwise it is thought his mother (farre unworthie of such a sonne) would not have given him. The good Timotheus no lesse loving him then his owne sonne: well they grew in yeeres; and shortly occasions fell aptly to trie Amphialus, and all occasions were but steppes for him to clime fame by. Nothing was so hard, but his valour overcame: which yet still he so guided with true vertue, that although no man was in our parts spoken of but he, for his māhood, yet, as though therein he excelled him selfe, he was cōmonly called the courteous Amphialus. An endlesse thing it were for me to tell, how many adventures (terrible to be spoken of) he atchieved: what monsters, what Giants, what conquest of countries: sometimes using policy, some times force, but alwaies vertue, well followed, and but followed by Philoxenus: betweene whom, and him, so fast a friendship by education was knit, that at last Philoxenus having no greater matter to employ his frindship in, then to winne me, therein desired, and had his uttermost furtheraunce: to that purpose brought he him to my court, where truly I may justly witnes with him, that what his wit could conceive (and his wit can conceave as far as the limits of reason stretch) was all directed to the setting forwarde the suite of his friend Philoxenus: my eares could heare nothing from him, but touching the worthines of Philoxenus, and of the great happines it would be unto me to have such a husband: with many arguments, which
God knowes, I cannot well remember because I did not much beleive.

For why should I use many circuistances to come to that where alredy I am, and ever while I live must continue? In fewe worde, while he pleaded for an other, he wanne me for himselfe: if at least (with that she sighed) he would account it a winning, for his fame had so framed the way to my mind, that his presence so full of beauty, sweetnes, and noble conversation, had entred there before he vouchsafed to call for the keyes. O Lord, how did my soule hang at his lippes while he spake! O when he in feeling manner would describe the love of his frend, how well (thought I) dooth love betweene those lips! when he would with daintiest eloquence stirr pitie in me toward Philoxenus, why sure (said I to my selfe) Helen, be not afraid, this hart cannot want pitie: and when he would extol the deeds of Philoxenus, who indeede had but waited of him therin, alas (thought I) good Philoxenus, how evil doth it become. thy name to be subscribed to his letter? What should I say? nay, what should I not say (noble knight) who am not ashamed, nay am delighted, thus to expresse mine owne passions?

Dayes paste; his eagernes for his frende never decreased, my affection to him ever increased. At length, in way of ordinarie courtesie, I obteined of him (who suspected no such matter) this his picture, the only Amphialus, I feare that I shall ever enjoy: and growen bolder, or madder, or bould with madness, I discovered my affection unto him. But, Lord, I shall never forget, how anger and courtesie, at one instant appeared in his eyes, when he heard that motion: how with his blush he taught me shame. In summe, he left nothing unassayed, which might disgrace himselfe, to grace his frid; in sweet termes making me receive a most resolute refusal of himselfe. But when he found that his presence did far more perswade for himselfe, then his speche could doo for his frend, he left my court: hoping, that forgetfulnessse (which commonly waits upon absence) woulde make roome for his frende: to whome he woulde not utter thus much (I thinke) for a kinde feare not to grieve him, or perchance (though he cares little for me) of a certaine honorable gratefulnes, nor yet to discourse so much of my secrets: but as it should seeme, meant to travell into farre countreyes, untill his friends affection either ceased, or prevayled.
But within a while, Philoxenus came to see how onward the fruites were of his friends labour, when (as in trueth I cared not much how he tooke it) he found me sitting, beholding this picture, I know not with how affectionate countenace, but I am sure with a most affectionate mind. I straight found jelousie and disdaine tooke hold of him: and yet the froward paine of mine owne harte made me so delight to punish him, whom I esteemed the chiefest let in my way; that when he with humble gesture, and vehement speeches, sued for my favor; I told him, that I would heare him more willingly, if he would speake for Amphialus, as well as Amphialus had done for him: he never answered me, but pale and quaking, went straight away; and straight my heart misgave me some evill successe: and yet though I had authoritie inough to have stayed him (as in these fatall things it falles out, that the hie-working powers make second causes unwittingly accessarie to their determinations) I did no further but sent a foot-man of mine (whose faithfulnes to me I well knew) from place to place to follow him, and bring me word of his proceedings: which (alas) have brought forth that which I feare I must ever rewe.

For he had travailed scarce a dayes jorney out of my Countrey, but that (not farre from this place) he overtooke Amphialus, who (by succouring a distressed Lady) had bene here stayed: and by and by called him to fight with him, protesting that one of the two should die: you may easily judge how straunge it was to Amphialus, whose hart could accuse it selfe of no fault, but too much affection toward him, which he (refusing to fight with him) would faine have made Philoxenus understand, but (as my servant since tolde me) the more Amphialus went back, the more he followed, calling him Traytor, and coward, yet never telling the cause of this strange alteration. Ah Philoxenus (saide Amphialus) I know I am no Traytor, and thou well knowest I am no coward: but I pray thee content thy selfe with this much, and let this satisfie thee, that I love thee, since I beare thus much of thee, but he leaving words drew his sworde, and gave Amphialus a great blow or two, which but for the goodnes of his armour would have slaine him: and yet so farre die Amphialus containe himselfe, stepping aside, and saying to him, Well Philoxenus, and thus much villany am I content to put up, not any longer for thy sake (whom I have no cause to love,
since thou dost injure me, and wilt not tell me the cause) but for thy vertuous fathers sake, to whom I am so much bound. I pray thee goe away, and conquer thy owne passions, and thou shalt make me soone yeeld to be thy servant.

But he would not attend his wordes, but still strake so fiercely at Amphialus, that in the end (nature prevailing above determination) he was faine to defend him selfe, and with all to offend him, that by an unluckye blow the poore Philoxenus fell dead at his feete; having had time onely to speake some wordes, whereby Amphialus knew it was for my sake: which when Amphialus sawe, he forthwith gave such tokens of true felt sorrow; that as my servant said, no imagination could conceive greater woe. But that by and by, an unhappie occasion made Amphialus passe himselfe in sorrow: for Philoxenus was but newly dead, when there comes to the same place, the aged and vertuous Timotheus, who (having heard of his sonnes sodaine and passionate manner of parting from my Court) had followed him as speedily as he could; but alas not so speedily, but that he foud him dead before he could over take him. Though my hart be nothing but a stage for Tragedies; yet I must confesse, it is even unable to beare the miserable representation thereof: knowing Amphialus and Timotheus as I have done. Alas what sorrow, what amasement, what shame was in Amphialus, when he saw his deere foster father, find him the killer of his onely sonne? In my hart I know, he wished mountaines had laine upon him, to keepe him from that meeting. As for Timotheus, sorrow of his sonne and (I thinke principally) unkindnes of Amphialus so devoured his vitall spirits that able to say no more but Amphialus, Amphialus, have I? he sancke to the earth, and presently dyed.

But not my tongue though daily used to complaints; no nor if my hart (which is nothing but sorrow) were turned to tongues, durst it under-take to shew the unspeakeablenes of his griefe. But (because this serves to make you know my fortune,) he threw away his armour, even this which you have now upon you, which at the first sight I vainely hoped, he had put on againe; and the (as ashamed of the light) he ranne into the thickest of the woods, lameting, & even crying out so pityfully, that my servant, (though of a fortune not used to much tendernes) could not refraine weeping when he tolde it
me. He once overtooke him, but Amphialus drawing his sword, which was the only part of his armes (God knowes to what purpose) he caried about him, threatened to kill him if he folowed him, and withall, bad him deliver this bitter message, that he wel inough foûd, I was the cause of al this mischiefe: & that if I were a man, he would go over the world to kill me: but bad me assure my selfe, that of all creatures in the world, he most hated me. Ah Sir knight (whose eares I think by this time are tyred with the rugged wayes of these misfortunes) now way my case, if at lest you know what love is. For this cause have I left my country, putting in hazard how my people wil in time deale by me, advêturing what perils or dishonors might ensue, only to folow him, who proclameth hate against me, and to bring my neck unto him, if that may redeem my trespas & assuage his fury. And now sir (said she) you have your request, I pray you take paines to guide me to the next town, that there I may gather such of my company againe, as your valor hath left me. Palladius willingly côdiscëd: but ere they began to go, there cam Clitophon, who having bene something hurt by one of them, had pursued him a good way: at length overtaking him, & ready to kill him, understood they were servants to the faire Queene Helen, and that the cause of this enterprise was for nothing, but to make Amphialus prisoner, who they knew their mistresse sought; for she concealed her sorow, nor cause of her sorow from no body.

But Clitophon (very sorie for this accident) came back to comfort the Queene, helping such as were hurt, in the best sort that he could, & framing frédly côstructiôs of this rashly undertaken enmitie, when in comes another (till that time unseen) all armed, with his bever downe, who first looking round about upon the companie, as soone as he spied Palladius, he drew his sword, and making no other prologue, let flie at him. But Palladius (sorie for so much harm as had alredy happened) sought rather to retire, and warde, thinking he might be some one that belonged to the faire Queene, whose case in his harte he pitied. Which Clitophon seeing, stept betweene them, asking the new come knight the cause of his quarrell; who answered him, that he woulde kill that theefe, who had stollen away his masters armour, if he did not restore it. With that Palladius lookt upon him, and sawe that he of the other side had Palladius
owne armour upon him: truely (said Palladius) if I have stolne this armour, you did not buy that: but you shall not fight with me upon such a quarrell, you shall have this armour willingly, which I did onely put on to doo honor to the owner. But Clitophon straight knewe by his words and voyce, that it was Ismenus, the faithfull & diligent Page of Amphialus: and therefore telling him that he was Clitophon, and willing him to acknowledge his error to the other, who deserved all honour, the yong Gentleman pulled of his head-peece, and (lighting) went to kisse Palladius hands; desiring him to pardon his follie, caused by extreame griefe, which easilie might bring foureth anger. Sweete Gentleman (saide Palladius) you shall onely make me this amends, that you shal cary this your Lords armour from me to him, and tell him from an unknowne knight (who admires his worthines) that he cannot cast a greater miste over his glory, the by being unkind to so excellët a princesse as this Queene is. Ismenus promised he would, as soone as he durst find his maister: and with that went to doo his dutie to the Queene, whom in all these encounters astonishment made hardy; but assoone as she saw Ismenus (looking to her picture) Ismenus (said she) here is my Lord, where is yours? or come you to bring me some sentence of death from him? if it be so, welcome be it. I pray you speake; and speake quickly. Alas Madame, said Ismenus, I haue lost my Lorde, (with that teares came unto his eyes) for assoone as the unhappie combate was concluded with the death both of father and sonne, my maister casting of his armour, went his way: forbidding me upô paine of death to follow him.

Yet divers daies I followed his steppes; till lastly I found him, having newly met with an excellent Spaniel, belonging to his dead companion Philoxenus. The dog streight fawned on my master for old knowledge: but never was there thing more pittifull then to heare my maister blame the dog for loving his maisters murtherer, renewing a fresh his coëplaints, with the dumbe counsellor, as if they might coëfort one another in their miseries. But my Lord having spied me, rase up in such rage, that in truth I feared he would kill me: yet as then he said onely, if I would not displease him, I should not come neere him till he sent for me: too hard a comaundement for me to disobey: I yeelded, leaving him onely waited on by his dog, and
as I thinke seeking out the most solitarie places, that this or any other country can graunt him: and I returning where I had left his armour, found an other in steed thereof, & (disdaining I must confesse that any should beare the armour of the best Knight living) armed my selie therein to play the foole, as evé now I did. Faire Ismenus (said the Queen) a fitter messenger could hardly be to unfold my Tragedie: I see the end, I see my ende.

With that (sobbing) she desired to be conducted to the next towne, where Palladius left her to be waited on by Clitophon; at Palladius earnest entreatie, who desired alone to take that melancholy course of seeking his friend: & therefore changing armours again with Ismenus (who went withal to a castle belonging to his master) he cotinued his quest for his friend Daiphantus.

CHAP. 12.

Palladius after long search of Daiphantus, lighteth on an Amazon Ladie. Her habite, and who she was. Objections of the one against women, and love of them. The answeres of the other for them both. Their passionate conclusion in relenting kindnesse.

So directed he his course to Laconia, aswell among the Helots, as Spartans. There indeed he found his fame flourishing, his monument engraved in Marble, and yet more durable in mens memories; but the universall lamenting his absented presence, assured him of his present absence. Thence into the Elean province, to see whether at the Olympian games (there celebrated) he might in such concourse blesse his eyes with so desired an encounter: but that huge and sportfull assemblie grewe to him a tedious lonelinesse, esteeming no bodie founde, since Daiphantus was lost. Afterward he passed through Achaia and Sicyonia, to the Corinthians, provde of their two Seas, to learne whether by the streight of that Isthmus, it was possible to know of his passage. But finding everie place more dumbe then other to his demaunds, and remembring that it was late-taken love, which had wrought this new course, he returned againe (after two months travaile in vaine) to make freshe searche in Arcadia; so much the more, as then first he
bethought him selfe of the picture of Philoclea (in resembling her he had once loved) might perhaps awake againe that sleeping passion. And hauing alreadie past over the greatest part of Arcadia, one day comming under the side of the pleasaunt mountaine Maenalus, his horse (nothing guiltie of his inquisitive-ness) with flat tiring taught him, that discrete stayes make speedie journeis. And therefore lighting downe, and unbrideling his horse, he him selfe went to repose him selfe in a little wood he sawe thereby. Where lying under the protection of a shadie tree, with intention to make forgetting sleepe comfort a sorrowfull memorie, he sawe a sight which persuad, and obteyned of his eyes, that they would abide yet a while open. It was the appearing of a Ladie, who because she walked with her side toward him, he could not perfectly see her face; but so much he might see of her, that was a suretie for the rest, that all was excellent.

Well might he perceave the hanging of her haire in fairest quætitie, in locks, some curled, & some as it were forgotten, with such a carelesse care, & an arte so hiding arte, that she seemed she would lay them for a paterne, whether nature simply, or nature helped by cunning, be more excellent: the rest whereof was drawne into a coronet of golde richly set with pearle, and so joyned all over with gold wiers, and covered with feathers of divers colours, that it was not unlike to an helmet, such a glittering shew it bare, & so bravely it was held up frō the head. Vpon her bodie she ware a doublot of skie colour sattin, covered with plates of gold, & as it were nailed with pretious stones, that in it she might seeme armed; the nether parts of her garment was so full of stuffe, & cut after such a fashion, that though the length of it reached to the ankles, yet in her going one might sometimes discern the smal of her leg, which with the foot was dressed in a short paire of crimson velvet buskins, in some places open (as the ancient manner was) to shew the fairenes of the skin. Over all this she ware a certaine mantell, made in such manner, that comming under the right arme, and covering most of that side, it had no fastning of the left side, but onely upon the top of the shoulder: where the two endes met, and were closed together with a very riche jewell: the devise wherof (as he after saw) was this: a Hercules made in little fourme, but a distaffe set within his hand as he
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

once was by Omphales commandement with a worde in Greeke, but thus to be interpreted, Never more valiant. On the same side, on her thigh shee ware a sword, which as it witnessed her to be an Amazon, or one following that profession, so it seemed but a needles weapon, since her other forces were without withstanding. But this Ladie walked out-right, till he might see her enter into a fine close arbour: it was of trees whose branches so lovingly interlaced one the other, that it could resist the strögest violence of eye-sight; but she went into it by a doore she opened; which moved him as warely as he could to follow her, and by and by he might heare her sing this song, with a voice no lesse beautifuU to his eares, then her goodlinesse was full of harmonie to his eyes.

3  
Transformd in shew, but more transformd in minde,
I cease to strive with double conquest foild:
For (woe is me) my powers all I finde
With outward force, and inward treason spoild.

For from without came to mine eyes the blowe,
Where to mine inward thoughts did faintly yeeld;
Both these conspird poore Reasons overthrowe;
False in my selfe, thus have I lost the field.

Thus are my eyes still Captive to one sight:
Thus all my thoughts are slaves to one thought still:
Thus Reason to his servants yeelds his right;
Thus is my power transformed to your will.

What marvaile then I take a womans hew,
Since what I see, thinke, know is all but you?

4  
The dittie gave him some suspition, but the voice gave him almost assurance, who the singer was. And therefore boldly thrusting open the dore, and entring into the arbour, he perceaved in deed that it was Pyrocles thus disguised, wherewith not receaving so much joy to have found him, as griefe so to have found him, amazedly looking upon him (as Apollo is painted when he saw Daphne sodainly turned into a Laurell) he was not able to bring forth a worde. So that Pyrocles (who had as much shame, as Musidorus had sorrow) rising to him, would have formed a substantiall excuse; but his insinua-
tion being of blushinge, and his division of sighes, his whole oration stood upon a short narration, what was the causer of this Metamorphosis? But by that time Musidorus had gathered his spirites together, and yet casting a gastfull countenaunce upon him (as if he would conjure some strange spirits) he thus spake unto him.

And is it possible, that this is Pyrocles, the onely yong Prince in the world, formed by nature, and framed by education, to the true exercise of vertue? or is it indeed some Amazon that hath counterfeited the face of my friend, in this sort to vexe me? for likelier sure I would have thought it, that any outwarde face might have bene disguised, then that the face of so excellët a mind could have bene thus blemished. O sweete Pyrocles, separate your selfe a little (if it be possible) from your selfe, and let your owne minde looke upon your owne proceedings: so shall my wordes be needlesse, and you best instructed. See with your selfe, how fitt it will be for you in this your tender youth, borne so great a Prince, and of so rare, not onely expectation, but proofe, desired of your olde Father, and wanted of your native countrie, now so neere your home, to divert your thoughts from the way of goodnesse; to loose, nay to abuse your time. Lastly to overthrow all the excellent things you have done, which have filled the world with your fame; as if you should drowne your ship in the long desired haven, or like an ill player, should marre the last act of his Tragedie. Remem-ber (for I know you know it) that if we wil be men, the reason-able parte of our soule, is to have absolute commaundement; against which if any sensuall weaknes arise, we are to yeld all our sounde forces to the overthrowing of so unnaturall a rebel-lion, wherein how can we wante courage, since we are to deale against so weake an adversary, that in it selfe is nothinge but weakenesse? Nay we are to resolve, that if reason direct it, we must doe it, and if we must doe it, we will doe it; for to say I cannot, is childish, and I will not, womanish. And see how extremely every waye you endauenger your minde; for to take this womannish habit (without you frame your behaviour accordingly) is wholy vaine: your behaviour can never come kindely from you, but as the minde is proportioned unto it. So that you must resolve, if you will playe your parte to any purpose, whatsoever peevish affections are in that sexe, soften
your hart to receive them, the very first downe-steppe to all wickednes: for doo not deceive your selfe, my deere cosin, there is no man sodainely excellentlylie good, or extremely evil, but growes either as hee holdes himselfe up in vertue, or lets himself slide to vitiousnes. And let us see, what power is the auucthor of all these troubles: forsooth love, love, a passion, and the basest and fruitlessest of all passions: feare breedeth wit, Anger is the cradle of courage: joy openeth and enhableth the hart: sorrow, as it closeth, so it draweth it inwarde to looke to the correcting of it selfe; and so all generally have power towards some good by the direction of right Reason. But this bastarde Love (for in deede the name of Love is most unworthy-lie applied to so hateful full a humour) as it is engendered betwixt lust and idlenes; as the matter it workes upon is nothing, but a certaine base weakenes, which some gentle fooles call a gentle hart; as his adjoynd companions be unquietnes, longings, fond comforts, faint discomforts, hopes, ielousies, ungrounded rages, causlesse yeeldings; so is the hiest ende it aspires unto, a little pleasure with much paine before, and great repentance after. But that end how endless it runs to infinite evils, were fit inough for the matter we speake of, but not for your eares, in whome indeede there is so much true disposition to vertue: yet thus much of his worthie effects in your selfe is to be seen, that (besides your breaking lawes of hospitality with Kalander and of friendship with me) it utterly subverts the course of nature, in making reason give place to sense, & man to woman. And truely I thinke heere-upon it first gatte the name of Love: for indeede the true love hath that excellent nature in it, that it doth transform the very essence of the lover into the thing loved, uniting, and as it were incorporating it with a secret & inward working. And herein do these kindes of love imitate the excellent; for as the love of heaven makes one heavenly, the love of vertue, vertuous; so doth the love of the world make one become worldly, and this effeminate love of a woman, doth so womanish a man, that (if he yeeld to it) it will not onely make him an Amazon; but a laudner, a distaff-spinner; or what so ever other vile occupation their idle heads ca imagin, & their weake hands performe. Therefore (to trouble you no longer with my tedious but loving words) if either you remember what you are, what you have bene, or what you must be: if you cō-
sider what it is, that moved you, or by what kinde of creature you are moved, you shall finde the cause so small, the effect so daungerous, your selfe so unworthy to runne into the one, or to be driue by the other, that I doubt not I shall quickly have occasion rather to praise you for having conquered it, then to give you further counsell, how to doo it.

But in Pyrocles this speech wrought no more, but that he, who before he was espied, was afraid; after, being perceived, was ashamed, now being hardly rubd upon, left both feare and shame, and was moved to anger. But the exceeding good will he bare to Musidorus striving with it, he thus, partly to satisfie him, but principally to loose the reines to his owne motions, made him answere. Cosin, whatsover good disposition nature hath bestowed upon me, or howsoever that disposition hath bene by bringing up co"firmed, this must I confesse, that I am not yet come to that degree of wisdome, to thinke light of the sexe, of whom I have my life; since if I be any thing (which your friendship rather finds, thē I acknowledge) I was to come to it, born of a womā, & nursed of a womā. And certēly (for this point of your speach doth neerest touch me) it is strāge to see the unman-like cruelty of mākind; who not cōtent with their tyrānous ābition, to have brought the others vertuous patience under them (like to childish maisters) thinke their masterhood nothing, without doing injury to them, who (if we will argue by reason) are framed of nature with the same parts of the minde for the exercise of vertue, as we are. And for example, even this estate of Amazons, (which I now for my greatest honor do seek to counterfaite) doth well witnes, that if generally the sweetnes of their dispositiōs did not make them see the vainnesse of these thinges, which we accōpt glorious, they nether want valor of mind, nor yet doth their fairnes take away their force. And truely we men, and praisers of men, should remember, that if we have such excellēcies, it is reason to thinke them excellent creatures, of whom we are: since a Kite never brought forth a good flying Hauke. But to tel you true, as I thinke it super- fluous to use any wordes of such a subject, which is so praised in it selfe, as it needes no praises; so withall I feare lest my conceate (not able to reach unto them) bring forth wordes, which for their unworthines may be a disgrace unto thē I so inwardly honor. Let this suffice, that they are capable of vertue: &
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

Vertue (ye your selves say) is to be loved, & I too truly: but this I willingly confess, that it likes me much better, when I finde vertue in a faire lodging, then when I am bound to sekke it in an ill favoured creature, like a pearle in a dounghill. As for my fault of being an uncivill guest to Kalander, if you could feele what an inward guest my selfe am host unto: ye would thinke it very excuseable, in that I rather performe the duties of an host, then the ceremonies of a guest. And for my breakeing the lawes of friendshipe with you, (which I would rather dye, then effectuallly doo) truely, I could finde in my hart to aske you pardon for it, but that your handling of me gives me reason to my former dealing. And here Pyrocles stayed, as to breath himselfe, having bene transported with a little vehemency, because it seemed him Musidorus had over-bitterly glaunsed against the reputation of woman-kinde: but then quieting his countenance (aswell as out of an unquiet mind it might be) he thus proceeded on: And poore Love (said he) deare cosin, is little beholding unto you, since you are not contented to spoile it of the honor of the highest power of the mind, which notable me have attributed unto it; but ye deject it below all other passions, in trueth somewhat strangely; since, if love receive any disgrace, it is by the company of these passions you preferre before it. For those kinds of bitter objections (as, that lust, idlenes, and a weak harte, shoulde be, as it were, the matter and forme of love) rather touch me, deare Musidorus, then love: But I am good witnesse of mine own imperfections, & therefore will not defende my selfe: but herein I must say, you deale contrary to your self: for if I be so weak, then can you not with reason stir me up as ye did, by remembrance of my own vertue: or if indeed I be vertuous, thē must ye confess, that love hath his working in a vertuous hart: & so no dout hath it, whatsoever I be: for if we love vertue, in whom shal we love it but in a vertuous creature? without your meaning be, I should love this word vertue, where I see it written in a book. Those troble-some effects you say it breedes, be not the faults of love, but of him that loves; as an unable vessel to beare such a licour: like evill eyes, not able to look on the Sun; or like an ill braine, soonest overthrowē with best wine. Even that heavenly love you speake of, is accompanied in some harts with hopes, griefs, longings, & dispaires. And in that heavēly love, since ther are 80
two parts, the one the love it self, th'other the excellency of the thing loved; I, not able at the first leap to frame both in me, do now (like a diligent workman) make ready the chiefe instrument, and first part of that great worke, which is love it self; which whē I have a while practised in this sort, then you shall see me turn it to greater matters. And thus gently you may (if it please you) think of me. Neither doubt ye, because I weare a womans apparell, I will be the more womannish, since, I assure you (for all my apparrel) there is nothing I desire more, then fully to prove my selfe a man in this enterprise. Much might be said in my defence, much more for love, and most of all for that divine creature, which hath joyned me and love together. But these disputations are fitter for quiet schooles, then my troubled braines, which are bent rather in deeds to performe, then in worde to defende the noble desire which possesseth me. O Lord (saide Musidorus) how sharp-witted you are to hurt your selfe? No (answered he) but it is the hurt you speake of, which makes me so sharp-witted. Even so (said Musidorus) as every base occupation makes one sharp in that practise, and foolish in all the rest. Nay rather (answered Pyrocles) as each excellent thing once well learned, serves for a measure of all other knowledges. And is that become (said Musidorus) a measure for other things, which never received measure in it selfe? It is counted without measure (answered Pyrocles) because the workings of it are without measure: but otherwise, in nature it hath measure, since it hath an end allotted unto it. The beginning being so excellent, I would gladly know the end. Enjoying, answered Pyrocles, with a great sigh. O (said Musidorus) now set ye foorth the basenes of it: since if it ende in enjoying, it shewes all the rest was nothing. Ye mistake me (answered Pyrocles) I spake of the end to which it is directed; which end ends not, no sooner then the life. Alas, let your owne braine dis-enchaunt you (said Musidorus,) My hart is too farre possessed (said Pyrocles.) But the head gives you direction. And the hart gives me life; aanswered Pyrocles.

But Musidorus was so greeved to see his welbeloved friend obstinat, as he thought, to his owne destruction, that it forced him with more then accustomed vehemency, to speake these words; Well, well, (saide he) you list to abuse your selfe; it was a very white and red vertue, which you could pick out of a
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

painterly gosse of a visage: Confesse the truth; and ye shall finde, the utmost was but beautie; a thing, which though it be in as great excellencye in your selfe as may be in any, yet I am sure you make no further reckoning of it, then of an outward fading benefite Nature bestowed upon you. And yet such is your want of a true grounded vertue, which must be like it selfe in all points, that what you wisely account a trifle in your selfe, you fondly become a slave unto in another. For my part I now protest, I have left nothing unsaid, which my wit could make me know, or my most enteri friendship to you requires of me; I do now beseech you even for the love betwixt us (if this other love have left any in you towards me) and for the remembrance of your olde careful father (if you can remeber him that forget your self) lastly for Pyrocles owne sake (who is now upon the point of falling or rising) to purge your selfe of this vile infection; other wise give me leave, to leave of this name of friendships[i]p, as an idle title of a thing which cannot be, where vertue is abolished. The length of these speaches before had not so much cloied Pyrocles, though he were very unpatient of long deliberations, as the last farewel of him he loved as his owne life, did wound his soule, thinking him selfe afflicte, he was the apter to conceive unkindnesse deeply: insomuch, that shaking his head, and delivering some shewe of teares, he thus uttered his grieues. Alas (said he) prince Musidurus, how cruelly you deale with me; if you seeke the victory, take it; and if ye liste, triumph. Have you all the reason of the world, and with me remaine all the imperfections; yet such as I can no more lay from me, then the Crow can be perswaded by the Swanne to cast of all his black fethers. But truely you deale with me like a Phision, that seeing his patient in a pestilent fever, should chide him, in steede of ministering helpe, and bid him be sick no more; or rather like such a friend, that visiting his friend condemned to perpetuall prison; and loaden with greevous fetters, should will him to shake of his fetters, or he wuld leave him. I am sicke, & sicke to the death; I am a prisoner, neither is any redresse, but by her to whom I am slave. Now if you list to leave him that loves you in the hiest degree: But remember ever to cary this with you, that you abandon your friend in his greatest extremity.

And herewith the deepe wound of his love being rubbed

82
afresh with this new unkindnes, bega (as it were) to bleed again, in such sort that he was not hable to beare it any longer, but gushing out abundance of teares, and crossing his armes over his woefull hart, as if his teares had beene out-flowing blood, his armes an over-pressing burthen, he suncke downe to the ground, which sodaine trauence went so to the hart of Musidorus, that falling down by him & kissing the weping eyes of his friend, he besought him not to make account of his speach; which if it had bene over vehement, yet was it to be borne withall, because it came out of a love much more vehement; that he had not thought fancie could have received so deep a wound: but now finding in him the force of it, hee woulde no further contrary it; but imploy all his service to medicine it, in such sort, as the nature of it required. But even this kindnes made Pyrocles the more melte in the former unkindnes, which his manlike teares well shewed, with a silent look upo Musidorus, as who should say, And is it possible that Musidorus should threaten to leave me? And this strooke Musidorus minde and senses so dumbe too, that for grieffe being not able to say any thing, they rested, with their eyes placed one upon another, in such sort, as might well paint out the true passion of unkindnes to be never aright, but betwixt them that most dearely love.

And thus remayned they a time; till at length, Musidorus embrasing him, said, And will you thus shake of your friend? It is you that shake me of (saide Pyrocles) being for my unperfectnes unworthie of your friendshipe. But this (said Musidorus) shewes you more unperfect, to be cruell to him, that submits himselfe unto you; but since you are unperfect (said he smiling) it is reason you be governed by us wise and perfect men. And that authoritie will I beginne to take upon me, with three absolute commande: The first, that you increase not your evill with further griefes: the second, that you love her with all the powers of your mind: & the last commande shall be, ye command me to do what service I can, towards the attaining of your desires. Pyrocles hart was not so oppressd with the mighty passiōs of love and unkindnes, but that it yeelded to some mirth at this commande:ment of Musidorus, that he should love: so that something cleering his face from his former shewes of grieffe; Wel (said he) deare cousin, I see by the well choosing
of your commandementes, that you are fitter to be a Prince, then a Counseller: and therefore I am resolved to implo[a]y all my endevour to obey you; with this condition, that the comande-mentes ye commaund me to lay upon you, shall onely be, that you continue to love me, and looke upon my imperfections, with more affection then judgment. Love you? (said he) alas, how can my hart be seperated from the true imbrasing of it, without it burst, by being too full of it? But (said he) let us leave of these flowers of newe begun freundship: and now I pray you againe tel me; but tell it me fully, omitting no circumstance, the storie of your affections both beginning, and proceeding: assuring your selfe, that there is nothing so great, which I will feare to ddo for you: nor nothing so small, which I will disdaine to ddo for you. Let me therefore receive a cleere understanding, which many times we misse, while those things we account small, as a speech, or a look are omitted, like as a whole sentence may faile of his congruitie, by wanting one particle. Therefore betweene friends, all must be layd open, nothing being superfluous, nor tedious. You shalbe obeyed (said Pyrocles) and here are we in as fitte a place for it as may be; for this arbor no body offers to come into but my selfe; I using it as my melancholy retiring place, and therefore that respect is born unto it; yet if by chace any should come, say that you are a servant sent from the Q. of the Amazons to seeke me, and then let me alone for the rest. So sate they downe, and Pyrocles thus said.

CHAP. 13.

1 How Pyrocles fell in love with Philoclea. 2 His counsell and course therein. 3 His disguising into Zelmane. 4 Her meeting with Damætas, 5 Basilius, 6 the Queene and her daughters, & their speaches. 7 Her abode there over entreated; 8 and the place thereof described.

1 C Ousin (saide hee) then began the fatall overthrowe of all my libertie, when walking among the pictures in Kalanders house, you your selfe delivered unto mee what you had understood of Philoclea, who much resembling (though I must say much surpassing) the Ladie Zelmane, whom too well I loved.
there were mine eyes infected, & at your mouth did I drinke my poison. Yet alas so sweete was it unto me, that I could not be contented, til Kalander had made it more and more strong with his declaratiō. Which the more I questioned, the more pittie I conceaved of her unworthie fortune: and when with pittie once my harte was made tender, according to the aptnesse of the humour, it receaved quickly a cruell impression of that wonderful passiō which to be definde is impossible, because no wordes reach to the strange nature of it: they onely know it, which inwardly feele it, it is called love. Yet did I not (poore wretch) at first know my disease, thinking it onely such a woonted kind of desire, to see rare sights; & my pitie to be no other, but the fruits of a gentle nature. But evē this arguing with my selfe came of further thoughts; & the more I argued, the more my thoughts encreased. Desirous I was to see the place where she remained, as though the Architectūre of the lodges would have bene much for my learning; but more desirous to see her selfe, to be judge, forsooth, of the painters cūning. For thus at the first did I flatter my selfe, as though my wound had bene no deeper: but when within short time I came to the degree of uncertaine wishes, and that the wishes grew to unquiet longings, when I could fix my thoughts upō nothing, but that within little varying, they should end with Philoclea: when each thing I saw, seemed to figure out some parts of my passions; whē even Parthenias faire face became a lecture to me of Philocleas imagined beautie; when I heard no word spoken, but that me thought it caried the sum of Philocleas name: then indeed, then I did yeeld to the burthen, finding my selfe prisoner, before I had leasure to arme my selfe; & that I might well, like the spaniel, gnaw upon the chaine that ties him, but I should sooner marre my teeth, then procure liberty.

Yet I take to witnesse the eternall spring of vertue, that I 2 had never read, heard, nor seene any thing; I had never any tast of Philosophy, nor inward feeling in my selfe, which for a while I did not call for my succour. But (alas) what resistance was there, when ere long my very reason was (you will say corrupted) I must needs confesse, conquered; & that me thought even reason did assure me, that all eies did degenerate from their creation, which did not honour such beautie? Nothing in trueth could holde any plea with it, but the reverent friend-
ship I bare unto you. For as it went against my harte to breake any way from you, so did I feare more then anie assault to breake it to you: finding (as it is indeed) that to a hart fully resolute, counseale is tedious, but reprehension is lothsome: & that there is nothing more terrible to a guilty hart, then the eie of a re-
spected frield. This made me determine with my self, (thinking it a lesse fault in frieldship to do a thing without your knowledge, then against your wil) to take this secret course: Which con-
ceit was most builded up in me, the last day of my parting and speaking with you; whē upō your speach with me, & my but naming love, (when els perchaunce I would have gone further) I saw your voice & coûtenance so chaunge, as it assured me, my revealing it should but purchase your griefe with my cumber: & therfore (deere Musidorus) evē ran away frō thy wel knowne chiding: for having writte a letter, which I know not whether you found or no, & taking my chiefe jewels with me, while you were in the middest of your sport, I got a time (as I think) un-
marked, to steale away, I cared not whether so I might scape you: & so came I to Ithonia in the province of Messenia; wher lying secret I put this in practise which before I had devised. For remēbring by Philanax his letter, & Kalāders speech, how obstinately Basilius was determined not to mary his daughters, & therfore fearing, lest any publike dealing should rather in-
crease her captivitie, then further my love; Love (the refiner of inventiō) had put in my head thus to disguise my self, that under that maske I might (if it were possible,) get accesse, and what accesse could bring forth, commit to fortune & industry: determining to beare the countenance of an Amazon. Therfore in the closest maner I could, naming my selfe Zelmane, for that deere Ladies sake, to whose memorie I am so much bound, I caused this apparell to be made, and bringing it neere the lodges, which are harde at hand, by night, thus dressed my selfe, resting till occasion might make me found by them, whom I sought: which the next morning hapned as well, as my owne plot could have laide it. For after I had runne over the whole petigree of my thoughts, I gave my selfe to sing a little, which as you know I ever delighted in, so now especially, whether it be the nature of this clime to stir up Poeticall fancies, or rather as I thinke, of love; whose scope being pleasure, will not so much as utter his griefes, but in some forme of pleasure.
But I had song very little, when (as I thinke displeased with my bad musike) comes master Dametas with a hedging bill in his hand, chafing, and swearing by the patable of Pallas, & such other othes as his rustical bravery could imagine; & when he saw me, I assure you my beauty was no more beholding to him then my harmony; for leaning his hands upon his bil, & his chin upon his hands, with the voice of one that plaeth Hercules in a play, but never had his fancie in his head, the first word he spake to me, was, am not I Dametas? why, am not I Dametas? he needed not name him selfe: for Kalanders description had set such a note upo him, as made him very notable unto me, and therefore the height of my thoughts would not descend so much as to make him any answer, but continued on my inward discourses: which (he perchaunce witnes of his owne unworthines, & therefore the aper to thinke him selfe contented) tooke in so hainous manner, that standing upo his tip-toes, and staring as though he would have a mote pulled out of his eie, Why (said he) thou woma, or boy, or both, what soever thou be, I tell thee here is no place for thee, get thee gone, I tell thee it is the Princes pleasure, I tell thee it is Dametas pleasure. I could not choose, but smile at him, seeing him looke so like an Ape that had newly taken a purgation; yet taking my selfe with the maner, spake these wordes to my selfe: O spirite (saide I) of mine, how canst thou receave anie mirth in the midst of thine agonies, and thou mirth how darest thou enter into a minde so growne of late thy professed enemie? Thy spirite (saide Dametas) doost thou thinke me a spirite? I tell thee I am Basilius officer, and have charge of him, and his daughters. O onely pearle (said I sobbing) that so vile an oyster should keepe thee? By the combecase of Diana (sware Dametas) this woman is mad: oysters, and pearles? doost thou thinke I will buie oysters? I tell thee once againe get thee packing, and with that lifted up his bill to hit me with the blunt ende of it: but indeede that put me quite out of my lesson, so that I forgat al Zelmanes-shiop, and drawing out my sworde, the basenesse of the villaine yet made me stay my hande, and he (who, as Klander tolde me, from his childehood ever feared the blade of a sword) ran backe, backward (with his hands above his head) at lest twentye paces, gaping and staring, with the verie grace (I thinke) of the clownes, that by Latonas prayers were turned into Frogs. At length staying, finding
himself without the compasse of blowes, he fell to a fresh
scolding, in such mannerlie manner, as might well shewe he had
passed through the discipline of a Taverne. But seeing me
walke up and downe, without marking what he saide, he went
his way (as I perceived after) to Basilius: for within a while he
came unto mee, bearing in deed shewes in his countenance of
an honest and well-minded gentleman, and with as much
courtesie, as Dametas with rudenesse saluting me, Faire Lady
(saide he) it is nothing strange, that such a solitary place as this
should receive solitary persons; but much do I marvaile, how
such a beauty as yours is, should be suffered to be thus alone. I
(that now knew it was my part to play) looking with a grave
majestie upon him, as if I found in my selfe cause to be rever-
enced. They are never alone (saide I) that are accompanied
with noble thoughts. But those thoughts (replied Basilius)
cannot in this your lonelines neither warrant you from suspition
in others, nor defend you from melancholy in your selfe. I then
shewing a mislike that he pressed me so farre, I seeke no better
warrant (saide I) then my owne conscience, nor no greater
pleasures, then mine owne contentation. Yet vertue seekes to
satisfie others, (saide Basilius.) Those that be good (saide I,)
and they will be satisfied as long as they see no evil. Yet will
the best in this country, (said Basilius) suspect so excellent a
beauty being so weakely garded. Then are the best but starke
nought, (answered I) for open suspecting others, comes of
secrete condemning themselves; But in my countrie (whose
manners I am in all places to maintaine and reverence) the
generall goodnes (which is nourished in our harts) makes
every one thinke the strength of vertue in an other, whereof
they finde the assured foundation in themselves. Excellent
Ladies (saide he) you praise so greatly, (and yet so wisely) your
country, that I must needs desire to know what the nest is, out
of which such Byrds doo flye. You must first deserve it (said I)
before you may obtaine it. And by what meanes (saide
Basilius) shall I deserve to know your estate? By letting me
first knowe yours (answered I.) To obey you (said he) I will
doe it, although it were so much more reason, yours should be
known first, as you doo deserve in all points to be preferd.
Know you (faire Lady) that my name is Basilius, unworthily
Lord of this coutry: the rest, either fame hath brought to your
eares, or (if it please you to make this place happie by your presence) at more leasure you shall understand of me. I that from the beginning assured my selfe it was he, but would not seeme I did so, to keepe my gravitie the better, making a peece of reverence unto him, Mighty Prince (said I) let my not knowing you serve for the excuse of my boldnes, and the little reverence I doe you, impute it to the manner of my countrey, wh[i]ch is the invincible Lande of the Amazons; My selfe neece to Senicia, Queene thereof, lineally descended of the famous Penthesilea, slaine by the bloody hand of Pyrrhus. I having in this my youth determined to make the worlde see the Amazons excellencies, aswell in private, as in publicke vertue, have passed some daungerous adventures in divers countries: till the unmercifull Sea deprived me of my company: so that shipwrack casting me not far hence, uncertaine wandring brought me to this place. But Basilius (who now began to tast that, which since he hath swallowed up, as I will tell you) fell to more cunning intreating my aboad, then any greedy host would use to well paying passingers. I thought nothing could shoot righter at the mark of my desires; yet had I learned alreadie so much, that it was against my womanhoode to be forward in my owne wishes. And therefore he (to prove whither intercessions in fitter mouths might better prevale) commanued Dametas to bring forth-with his wife and daughters thether; three Ladies, although of divers, yet all of excellent beauty.

His wife in grave Matronlike attire, with countenaunce and 6 gesture sutable, and of such fairnes (being in the streng of her age) as if her daughters had not bene by, might with just price have purchased admiration; but they being there, it was enough that the most dainty eye would thinke her a worthy mother of such children. The faire Pamela, whose noble hart I finde doth greatly disdaine, that the trust of her vertue is reposed in such a louts hands as Dametas, had yet to shew an obedience, taken on a shepearddish apparell, which was but of Russet cloth cut after their fashion, with a straight body, open brested, the nether parte ful of pleights, with long and wide sleeves: but beleeve me she did apparell her apparell, and with the pretiousnes of her body made it most sumptuous. Her haire at the full length, wound about with gold lace, onely by the comparison to see how farre her haire doth excell in colour: betwixt her breasts (which
sweetly rase up like two faire Mountainets in the pleaasunt valley of Tempe) there honge a very riche Diamond set but in a blacke horne, the worde I have since read is this; yet still my selfe. And thus particularly have I described them, because you may know that mine eyes are not so partiall, but that I marked them too. But when the ornament of the Earth, the modell of heaven, the Triumipe of Nature, the light of beauty, Queene of Love, youg Philoclea appeared in her Nimphe-like apparell, so neare nakednes, as one might well discerne part of her perfections; & yet so apparelled, as did shew she kept best store of her beauty to her self: her haire (alas too poore a word, why should I not rather call the her beames) drawe up into a net, able to take Jupiter when he was in the forme of an Eagle; her body (O sweet body) covered with a light taffeta garment, so cut, as the wrought smocke came through it in many places, inough to have made your restraind imaginatio have thought what was under it: with the cast of her blacke eyes; blacke indeed, whether nature so made them, that we might be the more able to behold & bear their wöderfull shining, or that she, (goddesse like) would work this miracle in her selfe, in giving blacknes the price above all beauty. Then (I say) indee the me thought the Lillies grew pale for envie, the roses me thought blushed to see sweeter roses in her cheekes, & the apples me thought, fell downe from the trees, to do hommage to the apples of her breast; Then the cloudes gave place, that the heaves might more freshly smile upo her; at the lest the cloudes of my thoughts quite vanished: and my sight (then more cleere and forcible then ever) was so fixed there, that (I imagine) I stood like a well wrought image, with some life in shew, but none in practise. And so had I beene like inough to have stayed long time, but that Gynecia stepping betweene my sight and the onely Philoclea, the chaunge of object made mee recover my senses: so that I coulde with reasonable good manner receive the salutation of her, and of the Princesse Pamela, doing the yet no further reverèce then one Prince useth to another. But when I came to the never-inough praised Philoclea, I could not but fall downe on my knees, and taking by force her hand, and kissing it (I must confesse) with more then womanly ardenency, Divine Lady, (saide I) let not the worlde, nor these great princes marvae, to see me (contrary to my manner) do this especiall honor unto you,
since all both men and women, do owe this to the perfection of your beauty. But she blushing (like a faire morning in Maye) at this my singularity, and causing me to rise, Noble Lady, (said she) it is no marvaile to see your judgement mistaken in my beauty, since you beginne with so great an errour, as to do more honour unto me then to them, whom I my selfe owe all service. Rather (answered I with a bowed downe countenaunce) that shewes the power of your beauty, which forced me to do such an errour, if it were an errour. *You are so well acquainted (saide she sweetely, most sweetely smiling,) with your owne beautie, that it makes you easilie fall into the discourse of beauty. Beauty in me? (said I truely sighing) alas if there be any, it is in my eyes, which your blessed presence hath imparted unto them.

But then (as I thinke) *Basilius* willing her so do, Well 7 (saide she) I must needs confesse I have heard that it is a great happines to be praised of them that are most praise worthie; And well I finde that you are an invincible *Amazon*, since you will overcome, though in a wrong matter. But if my beauty be any thing, then let it obtaine thus much of you, that you will remaine some while in this çópanie, to ease your owne travail, and our solitarines. First let me dye (said I) before any word spoken by such a mouth, should come in vaine.

And thus with some other wordes of entertaining, was my staying concluded, and I led among them to the lodge; truely a place for pleasantnes, not unfitte to flatter solitarinesse; for it being set upon such an unsensible rising of the ground, as you are come to a pretie height before almost you perceive that you ascend, it gives the eye lordship over a good large circuit, which according to the nature of the coutry, being diversified betwene hills and dales, woods and playnes, one place more cleere, and the other more darksome, it seemes a pleasant picture of nature, with lovely lightsonnes and artificiall shadowes. The Lodge is of a yellow stone, built in the forme of a starre; having round about a garden framed into like points: and beyond the gardein, ridings cut out, each aunswering the Angles of the Lodge: at the end of one of them is the other smaller Lodge, but of like fashion; where the gratious *Pamela* liveth: so that the Lodge seemeth not unlike a faire *Comete*, whose taile stretcheth it selfe to a starre of lesse greatnes.
CHAP. 14.

1 The devises of the first banquet to Zelmane. 2 Her crosses in love, 3 by the love of Basilius 4 and Gynecia 5 The conclusion between Musidorus and Zelmane.

SO Gynecia her selfe bringing me to my Lodging, anone after I was invited and brought downe to suppe with them in the gardein, a place not fairer in naturall ornaments, then artificiall inventions: wherein is a banqueting house among certaine pleasant trees, whose heads seemed curled with the wrappings about of Vine branches. The table was set neere to an excellent water-worke; for by the casting of the water in most cunning maner, it makes (with the shining of the Sunne upon it) a perfect rainbow, not more pleasant to the eye then to the mind, so sensibly to see the proof of the heavenly Iris. There were birds also made so finely, that they did not onely deceive the sight with their figure, but the hearing with their songs; which the watrie instruments did make their gorge deliver. The table at which we sate, was round, which being fast to the floore whereon we sate, and that devided from the rest of the buildings (with turning a vice, which Basilius at first did to make me sport) the table, and we about the table, did all turne rounde, by meanes of water which ranne under, and carried it about as a Mille. But alas, what pleasure did it to mee, to make divers times the full circle round about, since Philoclea (being also set) was carried still in equall distance from me, and that onely my eyes did overtake her; which when the table was stayed, and wee beganne to feede, dranke much more eagerlie of her beautie, then my mouth did of any other licour. And so was my common sense deceived (being chiefly bent to her) that as I dranke the wine, and withall stale a looke on her, me seemed I tasted her deliciousnesse. But alas, the one thirste was much more inflamed, then the other quenched. Sometimes my eyes would lay themselves open to receive all the dartes she did throwe, somtimes cloze up with admiration, as if with a contrary fancie, they woulde preserve the riches of that sight they had gotten, or cast my lidde as curtaines over the image of beautie, her
presence had painted in them. True it is, that my Reason (now
growen a servant to passion) did yet often tel his master, that he
should more moderatly use his delight. But he, that of a
rebell was become a Prince, disdayned almost to allow him the
place of a Counsellor: so that my senses delights being too
stróg for any other resolution, I did even loose the raines unto
them: hoping, that (going for a woman) my lookes would passe,
either unmarked, or unsuspected.

Now thus I had (as me thought) well playd my first acte, assuring
my selfe, that under that disguisment, I should find
opportunitie to reveal my self to the owner of my harte. But
who would thinke it possible (though I feele it true) that in
almost eight weekes space, I have lived here (having no more
companie but her parents, and I being familiar, as being a
woman, and watchfull, as being a lover) yet could never finde
opportunitie to have one minutes leasure of privie conference:
the cause whereof is as strange, as the effects are to me miser-
able. And (alas) this it is.

At the first sight that Basilius had of me (I think Cupid having
headed his arrows with my misfortune) he was striken
(taking me to be such as I professe) with great affectiò towards
me, which since is growen to such a doting love, that (till I was
faine to gette this place, sometimes to retire unto freely) I was
even choaked with his tediousnes. You never saw fourscore
yeares daunce up and downe more lively in a young Lover:
now, as fine in his apparrell, as if he would make me in love
with a cloake; and verse for verse with the sharpest-witted
Lover in Arcadia. Doo you not thinke that this is a sallet of
woormwood, while mine eyes feede upon the Ambrosia of
Philocleas beauty.

But this is not all; no this is not the worst; for he (good
man) were easy enough to be dealt with: but (as I thinke)
Love and mischeefe having made a wager, which should have
most power in me, have set Gynecia also on such a fire towards
me, as will never (I feare) be quenched but with my destruction.
For she (being a woman of excellent witte, and of strong work-
ing thoughts) whether she suspected me by my over-vehement
showes of affection to Philoclea (which love forced me unwisely to
utter, while hope of my maske foolishly incouraged me) or that
she hath takē some other marke of me, that I am not a woman:
or what devil it is hath revealed it unto her, I know not; but so it is, that all her countenances, words and gestures, are miserable portraiture of a desperate affection. Whereby a man may learne, that these avoydings of compancie, doo but make the passions more violent, when they meete with fitte subjects. Truely it were a notable dumb shew of Cupids kingdome, to see my eyes (languishing with over-vehement longing) direct themselves to Philoclea: & Basilus as busie about me as a Bee, & indeed as cumbersome; making such suits to me, who nether could if I would; nor would if I could, helpe him: while the terrible witte of Gynacia, carried with the beere of violent love, runnes thorow us all. And so jellous is she of my love to her daughter, that I could never yet beginne to open my mouth to the unevitable Philoclea, but that her unwished presence gave my tale a conclusion, before it had a beginning.

And surely if I be not deceived, I see such shewes of liking, and (if I bee acquainted with passions) of almost a passionate liking in the heavenly Philoclea, towards me, that I may hope her eares would not abhorre my discourse. And for good Basilus, he thought it best to have lodged us together, but that the eternall hatefulnes of my destinie, made Gynecias jellousie stoppe that, and all other my blessings. Yet must I confess, that one way her love doth me pleasure: for since it was my foolish fortune, or unfortunate follie, to be known by her, that keepes her from bewraying me to Basilus. And thus (my Musidorus) you have my Tragedie played unto you by my selfe, which I pray the gods may not in deede prove a Tragedie. And there he ended, making a full point of a hartie sigh.

Musidorus remendated to his best discourse, all which Pyrocles had told him. But therein he found such intricatenes, that he could see no way to lead him out of the maze; yet perceiving his affection so groinded, that striving against it, did rather anger then heale the wound, and rather call his friend-shippe in question, then give place to any friendly counsell. Well (said he) deare cosin, since it hath pleased the gods to mingle your other excellencies with this humor of love, yet happie it is, that your love is imploed upon so rare a woman: for certainly, a noble cause dooth ease much a grievous case. But as it stands now, nothing vexeth me, as that I cannot see wherein I can be servisable unto you. I desire no greater
service of you (answered Pyrocles) the that you remayn secretly in this country, & some-times come to this place; either late in the night, or early in the morning, where you shall have my key to enter, because as my fortune, eyther amendes or empaires. I may declare it unto you, and have your counsell and further- aunce: & hereby I will of purpose lead her, that is the prayse, and yet the staine of all womankind, that you may have so good a view, as to allowe my judgement: and as I can get the most convenient time, I will come unto you; for though by reason of yonder wood you cannot see the Lodge; it is harde at hande. But now, (said she) it is time for me to leave you, and towardes evening wee will walke out of purpose hether- ward, therefore keepe your selfe close in that time. But Musidorus bethinking him selfe that his horse might happen to bewray them, thought it best to returne for that day, to a village not farre of, and dispatching his horse in some sorte, the next day early to come a foote thither, and so to keepe that course afterward, which Pyrocles very well liked of. Now farewell deere cousin (said he) from me, no more Pyrocles, nor Daiphantus now, but Zelmane: Zelmane is my name, Zelmane is my title, Zelmane is the onely hope of my advauncement. And with that word going out, and seeing that the coast was cleare, Zelmane dismissed Musidorus, who departed as full of care to helpe his friend, as before he was to disswade him.

CHAP. 15.

1 The Labyrinth of Zelmanes love. 2 The Ladies exercises. 3 The challenge of Phalantus in paragon of Artexias beautie. 4 The description of their persons and affections: 5 and occasion of this challenge. 6 The successe thereof abroad.

Zelmane returned to the Lodge, where (inflamed by Philoclea, watched by Gynecia, and tired by Basilius) she was like a horse, desirous to runne, and miserablie spurred, but so short rainde, as he cannot stirre forward: Zelmane sought occasion to speake with Philoclea; Basilius with Zelmane; and Gynecia hindered them all. If Philoclea hapned to sigh (and sigh she
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

did often) as if that sigh were to be wayted on, Zelmane sighed also; whereto Basilius and Gynecia soon made up foure parts of sorow. Their affection increased their conversation; and their conversation increased their affection. The respect borne bredde due ceremonies; but the affection shined so through them, that the ceremonies seemed not ceremonious. Zelmanes eyes were (like children afore sweet meate) eager, but fearefull of their ill-pleasing governors. Time in one instant, seeming both short, and long unto them: short, in the pleasingnes of such presence: long, in the stay of their desires.

2 But Zelmane fayled not to intice them all many times abroad, because she was desirous her friend Musidorus (neere whom of purpose she ledde them) might have full sight of them. Sometimes angling to a little River neere hand, which for the moisture it bestowed upon rootes of some flourishing Trees, was rewarded with their shadowe. There would they sitte downe, & pretie wagers be made betwenee Pamela and Philoclea, which could soonest beguile silly fishes; while Zelmane protested, that the fitte pray for them was hارات of Princes. She also had an angle in her hand; but the taker was so taken, that she had forgotten taking. Basilius in the meane time would be the cooke him selfe of what was so caught, & Gynecia sit stil, but with no stil pensifnesse. Now she brought them to see a seeled Dove, who the blinder she was, the higher she strave. Another time a Kite, which having a gut cunningly pulled out of her, and so let flie, called all the Kites in that quarter, who (as oftentimes the worlde is deceived) thinking her prosperous when indeed she was wounded, made the poore Kite find, that opinion of riches may wel be dangerous.

3 But these recreations were interrupted by a delight of more gallant shew; for one evening as Basilius returned from having forced his thoughts to please themselves in such small conquests, there came a shepheard, who brought him word that a Gentleman desired leave to do a message from his Lord unto him. Basilius granted; wherupon the Gentleman came, and after the dutifull ceremonies observed, in his maisters name tolde him, that he was sent from Phalatus of Corinth, to crave licence, that as he had done in many other courts, so he might in his presence defie all Arcadian Knights in the behalfe of his mistres beautie, who would besides, her selfe in person be pre-
sent, to give evident proove what his launce should affirme. The conditions of his chalenge were, that the defendant should bring his mistresse picture, which being set by the image of Artesia (so was the mistresse of Phalantus named) who in six courses should have better of the other, in the judgement of Basilius, with him both the honors and the pictures should remaine. Basilius (though he had retired him selfe into that solitarie dwelling, with intention to avoid, rather then to accept any matters of drawing company; yet because he would enter-taine Zelmane, (that she might not think the time so gainefull to him, losse to her) graunted him to pitch his tent for three dayes, not farre from the lodge, and to proclayme his chalenge, that what Arcadian Knight (for none els but upon his perill was licensed to come) woulde defende what he honord against Phalantus, should have the like freedome of accesse and returne.

This obteyned and published, Zelmane being desirous to 4 learne what this Phalantus was, having never knowne him further then by report of his owne good, in somuch as he was commonly called, The faire man of armes, Basilius told her that he had had occasion by one very inward with him, to knowe in parte the discourse of his life, which was, that he was bastard-brother to the faire Helen Queene of Corinth, and deerly esteemed of her for his exceeding good parts, being honorablie courteous, and wronglesly valaunt, considerately pleasant in conversation, & an excellent courtier without un-faithfulness; who (finding his sisters unperswadeable melancholy, thorow the love of Amphialus) had for a time left her court, and gone into Laconia: where in the warre against the Helots, he had gottē the reputatiō of one, that both durst & knew. But as it was rather choise the nature, that led him to matters of armes, so as soon as the spur of honor ceased, he willingly rested in peaceable delightes, being beloved in all copanies for his lovely qualities, & (as a mā may terme it) cunning chere-fulnes, therby to the Prince & Court of Laconia, none was more agreable the Phalantus: and he not given greatly to struggle with his owne disposition, followed the gentle currant of it, having a fortune sufficient to content, & he content with a sufficient fortune. But in that court he sawe, and was acquainted with this Artesia, whose beautie he now defendes, became her servant, said him selfe, and perchaunce thought

S. A.  G  97
him selfe her lover. But certainly, (said Basilius) many times it falles out, that these young companions make themselves beleevve they love at the first liking of a likely beautie; loving, because they will love for want of other businesse, not because they feele indeed that divine power, which makes the heart finde a reason in passion: and so (God knowes) as inconstantly leane upon the next chaunce that beautie castes before them. So therefore taking love uppon him like a fashion, he courted this Ladie Artesia, who was as fit to paie him in his owne monie as might be. For she thinking she did wrong to her beautie if she were not prowde of it, called her disdain of him chastitie, and placed her honour in little setting by his honouring her: determining never to marrie, but him, whome she thought worthie of her: and that was one, in whome all worthinesse were harboured. And to this concept not onely nature had bent her, but the bringing up she receaved at my sister in lawe Cecropia, had confirmed her: who having in her widowhood taken this young Artesia into her charge; because her Father had bene a deare friend of her dead husbandes, and taught her to thinke that there is no wisdome but in including heaven & earth in ones self: and that love, courtesie, gratefulnesse, friendship, and all other vertues are rather to be taken on, then taken in ones selfe: And so good discipline she found of her, that liking the fruits of her owne planting, she was cõtent (if so her sonne could have liked of it) to have wished her in marriage to my Nephew Amphialus. But I thinke that desire hath lost some of his heate, since she hath knowne, that such a Queene as Helen is, doth offer so great a price as a kingdome, to buie his favour; for if I be not deceaved in my good sister Cecropia, shee thinks no face so beautifull, as that which lookes under a crowne. But Artesia indeede liked well of my Nephew Amphialus; for I ca never deeme that love, which in hauty harts proceeds of a desire onely to please, and as it were, peacock themselves; but yet she hath shewed vehemencie of desire that way, I thinke, because all her desires be vehemèt, in so much that she hath both placed her onely brother (a fine youth called Ismenus) to be his squire, and her selfe is content to waite upon my sister, till she may see the uttermost what she may worke in Amphialus: who being of a melancholie (though I must needes saye courteous and noble) mind, seems to love nothing lesse then
Love: & of late having through some adventure, or inwarde discontentment, withdrawne him selfe from any bodies knowledge, where he is: Artesia the easier condiscended to goe to the court of Laconia, whether she was sent for by the Kingses wife, to whome she is somewhat allied.

And there after the war of the Helots, this Knight Phalantus, (at least for tongue-delight) made him selfe her servaunt, and she so little caring, as not to shewe dislike thereof, was content onely to be noted to have a notable servaunt. For truely one in my court neerely acquainted with him, within these few dayes made me a pleasaut description of their love, while he with cheerefull looks would speake sorowfull words, using the phrase of his affection in so high a stile, that Mercurie would not have wooed Venus with more magnificent Eloquent: but els neyther in behaviour, nor action, accusing in him selfe anie great trouble in minde, whether he sped or no. And she of the other side, well finding howe little it was, and not caring for more, yet taught him, that often it falleth out but a foolishe wittinesse, to speake more then one thinkes.

For she made earnest benefite of his jest, forcing him in respect of his promise, to doo her suche service, as were both cumbersome and costly unto him, while he stil thought he went beyond her, because his harte did not commit the idolatrie. So that lastlie, she (I thinke) having in minde to make the fame of her beautie an oratour for her to Amphialus, (perswading her selfe perhaps, that it might fall out in him, as it dothe in some that have delightfull meate before them, and have no stomache to it, before other folkes praise it) she tooke the advantaoge one daye uppon Phalantus unconscionable praysinges of her, and certaine cast-awae vowes, howe much he would doo for her sake, to arrest his word assone as it was out of his mouth, and by the vertue thereof to charge him to goe with her thorow all the courts of Greece, & with the chalenge now made, to give her beauty the principality over all other. Phalantus was entrapped, and saw round about him, but could not get out. Exceedinglie perplexed he was (as he confess to him that tolde mee the tale) not for doubt hee had of him selfe (for indeede he had litle cause, being accounted, with his Launce especially (whereupon the challenge is to be tryed) as perfect as any that Greece knoweth; but because he feared to offend his sister
Helen, and with all (as he said) he could not so much beleevve
his love, but that he might thinke in his hart (whatsoever
his mouth affirmed) that both she, my daughters, and the
faire Parthenia (wife to a most noble Gentleman, my wives
neere kinsman) might far better put in their clayme for that
prerogative. But his promise had bound him prentice, and
therfore it was now better with willingnes to purchase thankes,
then with a discontented doing to have the paine, and not the
reward: and therefore went on, as his faith, rather then love,
did lead him.

6 And now hath he already passed the courts of Laconia, Elis,
Argos and Corinth: and (as many times it happēs) that a good
pleader makes a bad cause to prevaille; so hath his Lawnce
brought captives to the triumph of Artesias beauty, such, as
though Artesia be among the fairest, yet in that company were
to have the preheminence: for in those courts many knights
(that had bene in other far countries) defeded such as they had
seene, and liked in their travaile: but their defence had bene
such; as they had forfayted the picture of their Ladies, to give
a forced false testimonie to Artesias excellencie. And now
lastly is he come hether, where he hath leave to trye his fortune.
But I assure you, if I thought it not in dew & true côsideratiō an
injurious service & churlish curtesie, to put the danger of so
noble a title in the deciding of such a dāgerles cóbat, I would
make yong master Phalantus know, that your eyes can sharpe a
blūt Launce, and that age, which my graye haires (onely gotten
by the loving care of others) make seeme more then it is, hath
not diminished in me the power to protect an undeniable verity.
With that he bustled up himselfe, as though his harte would
faine have walked abroad. Zelmane with an inwarde smiling
gave him outward thanks, desiring him to reserve his force for
worthier causes.
CHAP. 16.

Phalantus and Artesias pompous entrance. The painted muster of an eleven conquered beauties.

So passing their time according to their woont, they wayted for the coming of Phalantus, who the next morning having already caused his tents to be pitched, neere to a faire tree hard by the Lodge, had uppon the tree made a shield to bee hanged up, which the defendant should strike, that woulde call him to the mainteyning his challengge. The Impresa in the shield; was a heaven full of starres, with a speech signifying, that it was the beauty which gave it the praise.

Himselfe came in next after a triumphant chariot, made of Carnatiō velvet inriched with purle & pearle, wherein Artesia sat, drawne by foure winged horses with artificiall flaming mouths, and fiery winges, as if she had newly borrowed them of Phæbus. Before her marched, two after two, certaine foote-mē pleasantly attired, who betweene them held one picture after another of them that by Phalantus well running had lost the prize in the race of beauty, and at every pace they stayed, turning the pictures to each side, so leasurely, that with perfect judgement they might be discerned.

The first that came in (folowing the order of the time wherein they had bene wonne) was the picture of Andromana, Queene of Iberia; whom a Laconian Knight having sometime (and with speciall favour) served, (though some yeares since retourned home) with more gratefulnes then good fortune defended. But therein Fortune had borrowed witte; for indeede she was not coparable to Artesia; not because she was a good deale elder (for time had not yet beene able to impoverish her store thereof) but an exceeding red haire with small eyes, did (like ill companions) disgrace the other assembly of most commendable beauties.

Next after her was borne the counterfaite of the princesse of Elis, a Lady that taught the beholders no other point of beauty, but this, that as lyking is, not alwaies the child of
beauty, so whatsoever liketh; is beautyfull; for in that visage there was nether Majestie, grace, favour, nor fairenesse; yet she wanted not a servaunt that woulde have made her fairer then the faire Artesia. But he wrote her praises with his helmet in the dust, and left her picture to be as true a witnes of his overthrow, as his running was of her beauty.

3. After her was the goodly Artaxia, great Q. of Armenia, a Lady upon whom nature bestowed, & wel placed her delight-ful colours; & withal, had proportioned her without any fault, quickly to be discovered by the senses, yet altogether seemed not to make up that harmony, that Cupid delights in; the reso wherof might seem a mannish countenance, which overthrow that lovely sweetnes, the noblest power of womankinde, farre fitter to prevale by parley, then by battell.

4. Of a farre contrary consideratiō was the representation of her that next followed, which was Erona Queene of Licia, who though of so browne a haire, as no man should have injured it to have called it blacke, and that in the mixture of her cheeks the white did so much overcome the redde (though what was, was very pure) that it came neare to palenes, and that her face was a thought longer then the exacte Symmetrians perhaps would allow; yet love plaid his part so well, in everie part, that it caught holde of the judgement, before it could judge, making it first love, & after acknowledge it faire, for there was a certaine delicacie, which in yeelding, conquered; & with a pitiful looke made one find cause to crave helpe himselfe.

5. After her came two Ladies, of noble, but not of royall birth: the former was named Baccha, who though very faire, and of a fatness rather to allure, then to mislike, yet her brests over-familiarly laide open, with a mad countenaunce about her mouth, betweene simpring & smyling, her head bowed som-what down, seemed to laguish with over-much idlenes, with an inviting look cast upward, disswareing with too much perswading, while hope might seem to overcome desire.

6. The other (whose name was written Leucippe) was of a fine daintines of beauty, her face carying in it a sober simplicitie; like one that could do much good, & ment no hurt, her eyes having in them such a cheerefulnes, as nature seemed to smile in them: though her mouth and cheekes obeyed that preti demurenes which the more one markes, the more one woulde
judge the poore soule apt to beleve; & therfore the more pitie to deceive her.

Next came the Queene of Laconia, one that seemed borne 7 in the confines of beauties kingdome: for all her lineamëts were neither perfect possessions thereof, nor absent strangers thereto: but she was a Queene, and therefore beautyfull.

But she that followed, conquered indeed with being 8 conquered; & might well have made all the beholders waite upö her triumph, while her selfe were led captive. It was the excellently-faire Queene Helen, whose Facinth haire curled by nature, & intercurled by arte (like a fine brooke through goldë sâds) had a rope of faire pearles, which now hiding, now hidden by the haire, did as it were play at fast or loose, each with other, mutually giving & receiving riches. In her face so much beautie & favour expressed, as if Helen had not bene knowë, some would rather have judged it the painters exercise, to shew what he could do, the couterfailing of any living patterne: for no fault the most fault finding wit could have fouëd, if it were not, that to the rest of the body the face was somewhat too little: but that little was such a sparke of beauty, as was able to enflame a world of love. For every thing was full of a choyce finenes, that if it wàted any thing in majestie, it supplied it with increase of pleasure; & if at the first it strake not admiration, it ravished with delight. And no indifferent soule there was, which if it could resist frõ subjecting it self to make it his princesse, that would not lög to have such a playfelow. As for her attire, it was costly and curious, though the look (fixt with more sadnes thë it seemed nature had bestowed to any that knew her fortune) bewraied, that as she used those ornamëts, not for her self, but to prevaiile with another, so she feared, that all would not serve.

Of a farre differing (though esteemed equall) beautie, was 9 the faire Parthenia, who next wayted on Artesias triumph, though farre better she might have sitte in the throne. For in her every thing was goodly, and stately; yet so, that it might seeme that great-mindednes was but the auncient-bearer to humblenes. For her great graie eye, which might seem full of her owne beauties, a large, and exceedingly faire forhead, with all the rest of her face and body, cast in the mould of Noblenes; was yet so attired, as might shew, the mistres thought it either
not to deserve, or not to need any exquisite decking, having no adorning but cleanliness; and so far from all art, that it was full of carelesnesse: unless that carelesnesse it selfe (in spite of it selfe) grew artificiall. But Basilius could not abstaine from praising Parthenia, as the perfect picture of a wamanly vertue, and wively faithfulness: telling withall Zelmane, how he had understooode, that when in the court of Laconia, her picture (maintained by a certaine Sycionian Knight) was lost, thorow want, rather of valour, then justice: her husband (the famous Argalus) would in a chafe have gone and redeemed it with a new triall. But she (more sporting then sorrowing for her undeserved champion) tolde her husbande, she desired to be beautifull in no bodies eye but his; and that she would rather marre her face as evill as ever it was, then that it should be a cause to make Argalus put on armour. Then would Basilius have tolde Zelmane, that which she alreadie knew, of the rare triall of their coupled affection: but the next picture made the mouth give place to their eyes.

It was of a young mayd, which sate pulling out a thorne out of a Lambs foote, with her looke so attentive uppon it, as if that little foote coulde have bene the circle of her thoughts; her apparell so poore, as it had nothing but the inside to adorne it; a shepheeke lying by her with a bottle upon it. But with al that povertie, beauty plaid the prince, and commanded as many harts as the greatest Queene there did. Her beautie and her estate made her quicklie to be knowne to be the faire shepheardesse, Urania, whom a rich knight called Lacemon, farre in love with her, had unluckily defended.

The last of all in place, because last in the time of her being captive, was Zelmane, daughter to the King Plexirtus: who at the first sight seemed to have some resembling of Philocelea, but with more marking (coparing it to the present Philocelea, who indeed had no paragon but her sister) they might see, it was but such a likenesse, as an unperfect glasse doth give; answerable enough in some feitures, & colors, but erring in others. But Zelmane sighing, turning to Basilius, Alas sir (said she) here be some pictures which might better become the tobes of their Mistresses, then the triumphe of Artesia. It is true sweetest Lady (saide Basilius) some of them be dead, and some other captive: But that hath happened so late, as it may
be the Knightes that defended their beauty, knew not so much: without we will say (as in some harts I know it would fall out) that death it selfe could not blot out the image which love hath engrave in the. But divers besides these (said Basilius) hath Phalantus woon, but he leaves the rest, carying onely such, who either for greatnes of estate, or of beauty, may justly glorifie the glory of Artesias triumph.

CHAP. 17.

1 The overthrow of five Arcadian knights. 2 The young shepeheards prettie challenge. 3 What passions the sixth knights foyle bredde in Zelmane. 4 Clitophon hardly overmatched by Phalantus. 5 The ill arayed, & the black knights contention for prioritie against Phalantus. 6 The halting knights complaint against the black knight. 7 Phalantus fall by the ill furnisht knight. 8 The crosse-parting of Phalantus with Artesia, 9 and who the victor was.

Thus talkt Basilius with Zelmane, glad to make any matter subject to speake of, with his mistresse, while Phalantus in this pompous manner, brought Artesia with her getlewome, into one Tent, by which he had another: where they both wayted who would first strike upon the shielde, while Basilius the Judge appointed sticklers, and trumpets, to whom the other should obey. But non that day appeared, nor the next, till already it had consumed halfe his allowance of light; but then there came in a knight, protesting himselfe as contrarie to him in minde, as he was in apparrell. For Phalantus was all in white, having in his bases, and caparison imbroidered a waving water: at each side whereof he had nettings cast over, in which were divers fishes naturally made, & so pretily, that as the horse stirred, the fishes seemed to strive, and leape in the nette.

But the other knight, by name Nestor, by birth an Arcadian, & in affection vowed to the faire Shepherdesse, was all in black, with fire burning both upō his armour, and horse. His impresā in his shield, was a fire made of Juniper, with this word, More...
easie, and more sweete. But this hote knight was cooled with a fall, which at the third course he received of Phalantus, leaving his picture to keepe companie with the other of the same stampe; he going away remedilessly chafing at his rebuke. The next was Polycetes, greatly esteemed in Arcadia, for deedes he had done in armes: and much spoken of for the honourable love he had long borne to Gynceia; which Basilius himselfe was content, not onely to suffer, but to be delighted with; he carried it in so honorable and open plainnes, setting to his love no other marke, then to do her faithfull service. But neither her faire picture, nor his faire running, could warrant him from overthrow, and her from becomming as then the last of Artesias victories: a thing Gynecias vertues would little have recked at another time, nor then, if Zelmane had not seene it. But her champion went away asmuch discomforted, as discomfited. Then Telamon for Polixena, & Eurimelo for Elpine, and Leon for Zoana; all brave Knights, all faire Ladies, with their going down, lifted up the ballance of his praise for activitie, and hers for fairenes.

Upon whose losse as the beholders were talking, there comes into the place where they ranne, a shepheard stripling (for his height made him more then a boy, & his face would not allow him a mā) brown of complexio (whether by nature, or by the Suns familiaritie) but very lovely withall; for the rest so perfectly proportioned, that Nature shewed, she dooth not like men who slubber up matters of meane account. And well might his proportion be judged; for he had nothing upon him but a paire of sloppes, and upon his bodie a Gote-skinne, which he cast over his shoulder, doing all things with so pretie grace, that it seemed ignorance could not make him do amisse, because he had a hart to do well, holding in his right hand a long staffe, & so com'ing with a looke ful of amiable fiercenes, as in whom choller could not take away the sweetnes, he came towards the king, and making a reverence (which in him was comely because it was kindly) My liege Lord (said he) I pray you heare a few words; for my hart wil break if I say not my minde to you. I see here the picture of Urania, which (I cannot tell how, nor why) these men when they fall downe, they say is not so faire as yonder gay woman. But pray God, I may never see my olde mother alive, if I think she be any more match to
Urania, then a Goate is to a fine Lambe; or then the Dog that keepses our flock at home, is like your white Greihounde, that pulled down the Stagge last day.

And therefore I pray you let me be drest as they be, and my hart gives me, I shall tumble him on the earth: for indeede he might aswell say, that a Couslip is as white as a Lillie: or els I care not let him come with his great staffe, and I with this in my hand, and you shall see what I can doo to him. Basilius sawe it was the fine shepheard Lalus, whom once he had afore him in Pastorall sportes, and had greatly delighted in his wit full of pretty simplicitie, and therefore laughing at his earnestnesse, he bad him be content, since he sawe the pictures of so great Queenes, were faine to follow their champions fortune. But Lalus (even weeping ripe) went among the rest, longing to see some bodie that would revenge Uranias wronge; and praying hartely for every bodie that ran against Phalantus, then began to feele poverty, that he could not set him selfe to that triall. But by and by, even when the Sunne (like a noble harte) began to shew his greatest countenaunce in his lowest estate, there came in a Knight, called Phebilus, a Gentleman of that coutry, for whom hatefull fortune had borrowed the dart of Love, to make him miserable by the sight of Philoclea. For he had even from her infancie loved her, and was striken by her, before she was able to knowe what quiver of arrowes her eyes caried; but he loved and dispaire; and the more he dispaire, the more he loved. He sawe his owne unworthines, and thereby made her excellencie have more terrible aspect upon him: he was so secrete therein, as not daring to be open, that to no creature he ever spake of it, but his hart made such silent complaints within it selfe, that while all his senses were attentive thereto, cunning judges might perceave his minde: so that he was knowne to love though he denied, or rather was the better knowne, because he denied it. His armour and his attire was of a Sea couler, his Impresa, the fishe called Sepia, which being in the nette castes a blacke inke about it selfe, that in the darkenesse thereof it may escape: his worde was, Not so. Philocleas picture with almost an idolatrous magnificence was borne in by him. But straitly jelousie was a harbinger for disdaine in Zelmanes harte, when she sawe any (but her selfe) should be avowed a champion for Philoclea: in somuch
that she wisht his shame, till she sawe him shamed: for at the second course he was striken quite from out of the saddle, so full of grief, and rage withall, that he would faine with the sworde have revenged it: but that being contrary to the order set downe, Basilius would not suffer; so that wishing him selfe in the bottome of the earth, he went his way, leaving Zelmane no lesse angry with his los, the she would have beene with his victory. For if she thought before a rivals prayse woulde have angred her, her Ladies disgrace did make her much more forget what she then thought, while that passion raigned so much the more, as she saw a pretie blush in Philocleas cheekes bewray a modest discontentment. But the night commaunded truce for those sportes, & Phalantus (though intreated) would not leave Artesia, who in no case would come into the house, having (as it were) suckte of Cecropias breath a mortall mislike against Basilius.

4 But the night measured by the short ell of sleepe, was soone past over, and the next morning had given the watchful stars leave to take their rest, when a trumpet summoned Basilius to play his judges parte: which he did, taking his wife & daughters with him; Zelmane having lockt her doore, so as they would not trouble her for that time: for already there was a Knight in the feld, readie to prove Helen of Corinth had receaued great injury, both by the erring judgement of the challenger, and the unlucky weaknesse of her former defender. The new Knight was quickly knowne to be Clitophon (Kaliders sonne of Basilius-his sister) by his armour, which al guilt, was so well hâldled, that it shewed like a glittering sande and gravell, interlaced with silver rivers: his device he had put in the picture of Helen which hee defended. It was the Ermion, with a speach that signified, Rather dead then spotted. But in that armour since he had parted frö Helen (who would no longer his companie, finding him to enter into termes of affection,) he had performed so honourable actiös, (stil seeking for his two friends by the names of Palladius and Daiphatus,) that though his face were covered, his being was discovered, which yet Basilius (which had brought him up in his court) would not seeme to do; but glad to see triall of him, of whom he had heard very well, he commaundd the trumpets to sound; to which the two brave Knights obeying, they performed their
courses, breaking their six staves, with so good, both skill in the hitting, \& grace in the maner, that it bred some difficulty in the judgement. But Basilius in the ende gave sentence against Clitophon, because Phalantus had broken more staves upō the head, \& that once Clitophon had received such a blowe, that he had lost the raines of his horse, with his head well nie touching the crooper of the horse. But Clitophon was so angry with the judgement, (wherin he thought he had received wrōg) that he omitted his duty to his Prince, \& uncle; and sodainly went his way, still in the quest of them, whom as then he had left by seeking: \& so yeelded the field to the next commer.

Who comming in about two houres after, was no lesse marked then al the rest before, because he had nothing worth the marking. For he had neither picture, nor device, his armour of as old a fashion (besides the rustie poornesse,) that it might better seeme a monument of his graundfathe[r]'s courage: about his middle he had in steede of bases, a long cloake of silke, which as unhandsomely, as it needes must, became the wearer: so that all that lookt on, measured his length on the earth alreadie, since he had to meete one who had bene victorous of so many gallants. But he went on towards the shielde, and with a sober grace strake it; but as he let his sworde fall upon it, another Knight, all in blacke came rustling in, who strake the shield almost assoone as he, and so strongly, that he brake the shield in two: the ill appointed Knight (for so the beholders called him) angrie with that, (as he accounted,) insolent injurie to himselfe, hit him such a sound blowe, that they that looked on saide, it well became a rudearme. The other aunswered him againe in the same case, so that Launces were put to silence, the swords were so busie.

But Phalantus angry of this defacing his shield, came upon the blacke Knight, and with the pommell of his sworde set fire to his eyes, which presently was revenged, not onely by the Blacke, but the ill appareled Knight, who disdained another should enter into his quarrell, so as, who ever sawe a matachin daunce to imitate fighting, this was a fight that did imitate the matachin: for they being but three that fought, everie one had adversaries, striking him, who strooke the third, and revenging perhaps that of him, which he had receaved of the other. But Basilius rising himselfe to parte them, the sticklers authoritie
scarslie able to perswade cholerike hearers; and parte them he did.

6 But before he could determine, comes in a fourth, halting on foote, who complained to Basilius, demaunding justice on the blacke Knight, for having by force taken away the picture of Pamela from him, whiche in little forme he ware in a Tablet, and covered with silke had fastened it to his Helmet, purposing for want of a bigger, to paragon the little one with Artesias length, not doubting but in that little quantitie, the excellencie of that would shine thorow the weakenesse of the other: as the smallest starre dothe thorow the whole Element of fire. And by the way he had met with this blacke Knight, who had (as he said) robbed him of it. The injurie seemed grievous, but when it came fully to be examined, it was found, that the halting Knight meeting the other, asking the cause of his going thetherward, and finding it was to defend Pamela's divine beautie against Artesias, with a prowde jolitie com-maunded him to leave that quarrell onely for him, who was onely worthy to enter into it. But the blacke Knight obeying no such cómamendments, they fell to such a bickering, that he gat a halting, & lost his picture. This understood by Basilius, he told him he was now fitter to looke to his owne bodie, then an others picture: & so (uncomforted therein) sent him away to learn of Æsculapius that he was not fit for Venus.

5 But then the question arising who should be the former against Phalantus, of the blacke, or the ill apparelled Knight (who now had gotten the reputation of some sturdy loute, he had so well defended himselfe) of the one side, was alleged the having a picture which the other wanted: of the other side, the first striking the shield; but the conclusion was, that the ill apparelled Knight should have the precedence, if he delivered the figure of his mistresse to Phalantus; who asking him for it, Certainly (said he) her liveliest picture, (if you could see it) is in my hart, & the best cóparison I could make of her, is of the Sunne & of all other the heavenly beauties. But because perhappes all eyes cannot taste the Divinitie of her beautie, and would rather be dazeled, then taught by the light, if it bee not crowded by some meainer thing; know you then, that I defend that same Ladie, whose image Phæblius so feebly lost yester-night, and in steede of an other (if you overcome mee) you
shall have me your slave to carrie that image in your mistresse triumpe. Phalantus easilie agreed to the bargaine, which alreadie he made his owne.

But when it came to the triall, the ill appareled Knight choosing out the greatest staves in all the store, at the first course gave his head such a remembraunce, that he lost almost his remembraunce, he him selfe receyving the incounter of Phalantus without any extraordinarie motion. And at the seconde gave him such a counterbuffe, that because Phalantus was so perfite a horseman, as not to be driven from the saddle, the saddle with broken girthes was driven from the horse: Phalantus remaining angrie and amazed, because now being come almost to the last of his promised enterprise, that disgrace befell him, which he had never before knowne.

But the victorie being by the judges given, and the trumpets witnessed to the ill appareled Knight; Phalantus disgrace was ingrieved in lieu of comforte by Artesia; who telling him she never lookt for other, bad him seeke some other mistresse. He excusing himselfe, and turning over the fault to Fortune, Then let that be your ill Fortune too (saide she) that you have lost me.

Nay truely Madame (saide Phalantus) it shall not be so: for I thinke the losse of such a Mistresse will proove a great gaine: and so concluded; to the sporte of Basilius, to see young folkes love, that came in maskt with so great pompe, goe out with so little constancie. But Phalantus first professing great service to Basilius for his curteous intermitting his solitary course for his sake, would yet conducç Artesia to the castle of Cecropia, whether she desired to goe: vowing in himselfe, that neither hart, nor mouth-love, should ever any more intangle him. And with that resolution he left the company.

Whence all being dismissed (among whom the black knight wët away repyning at his luck, that had kept him frö winning the honor, as he knew he shuld have don, to the picture of Pamela) the ill appareled knight (who was only desired to stay, because Basilius meant to shew him to Zelmane) puld of his Helmet, & then was knowë himselfe to be Zelmane: who that morning (as she told) while the others were busie, had stolne out to the Princes stable, which was a mile of frö the Lodge, had gotten a horse (they knowing it was Basilius pleasure she
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

should be obeyed) & borrowing that homely armour for want of a better, had come upon the spur to redeem Philocean picture, which she said, she could not beare, (being one of that little wildernesse-company) should be in captivitie, if the cunning she had learned in her coûtrye of the noble Amazons, could withstand it: & under that pretext faine she would have give a secret pasport to her affection. But this act painted at one instant rednesse in Philocean face, and palenesse in Gynecias, but brought forth no other couûtenâces but of admiratîo, no speches but of cômêdatîos: al these few (besides love) thinking they honoured them selves, in honouring so accomplished a person as Zelmane: whom dayly they sought with some or other sports to delight, for which purpose Basilius had in a house not farre of, servaunts, who though they came not uncalled, yet at call were redye.

CHAP. 18.

1 Musidorus disguised. 2 His song. 3 His love, 4 the cause thereof. 5 His course therein.

And so many daies were spent, and many waies used, while Zelmane was like one that stoode in a tree waiting a good occasiô to shoot, & Gynecia a blauncher, which kept the dearest deere from her. But the day being come, which according to an apointed course, the sheepheards were to assemble, & make their pastorall sports afore Basilius: Zelmane (fearing, lest many eyes, and comming divers waies, might hap to spy Musidorus) went out to warne him thereof.

But before she could come to the Arbour, she sawe walking from her-ward, a man in sheapperdish apparel who being in the sight of the Lodge it might seeme he was allowed there. A lôg cloke he had on, but that cast under his right arme, wherein he held a shephooke, so finely wrought, that it gave a bravery to poverty; & his rayments, though they were meane, yet received they hansomnes by the grace of the wearer; though he himselfe went but a kinde of languishing pace, with his eies somewhat cast up to heaven, as though his fancyes strave to mount higher; sometimes throwne downe to the
ground, as if the earth could not beare the burthens of his sorrowes; at length, with a lametablc tune, he songe these fewe verses.

Come shepheards weedes, become your masters minde:
Yeld outward shew, what inward chance he tryes:
Nor be abasht, since such a guest you finde,
Wbose strongest hope in your weake comfort lyes.

Come shepheards weedes, attend my woefull cryes:
Disue your selves from sweete Menalres voice:
For other be those tunes which sorrow tys,
From those cleere notes which freely may rejoyce.
Then power out plaint, and in one word say this:
Helples his plaint, who spoyles himselfe of blisse.

And having ended, he strake himselfe on the brest; saying, O miserable wretch, whether do thy destenies guide thee? The voice made Zelmane hasten her pace to overtake him: which having done, she plainly perceaved that it was her deare friend Musidorus, whereat marvailing not a little, she de- manded of him, whether the Goddesse of those woods had such a powre to trásforme every body, or whether, as in all enterprises else he had done, he meant thus to match her in this newe alteration.

Alas, (said Musidorus) what shall I say, who am loth to say, and yet faine would have said? I find indeed, that all is but lip-wisdom, which wants experience. I now (woe is me) do try what love can doo. O Zelmane, who will resist it, must either have no witte, or put out his eyes? can any man resist his creation? certainly by love we are made, and to love we are made. Beasts onely cannot discerne beauty, and let them be in the role of Beasts that doo not honor it. The perfect friendship Zelmane bare him, and the great pitie she (by good triall) had of such cases, coulde not keepe her from smiling at him, remembering how vehemently he had cryed out against the folly of lovers. And therefore a little to punish him, Why how now deere cousin (said she) you that were last day so hie in Pulpit against lovers, are you now become so meane an auditor? Remember that love is a passion; and that a woorthie
mans reason must ever have the masterhood. I recant, I recant (cryed Musidorus,) and withall falling downe prostrate, O thou celestial, or infernal spirit of Love, or what other heavely or hellish title thou list to have (for effect of both I finde in my selfe) have compassion of me, and let thy glory be as great in pardoning them that be submitted to thee, as in conquering those that were rebellious. No, no saide Zelmane, I see you well enough: you make but an enterlude of my mishaps, and doo but counterfaite thus, to make me see the de- formitie of my passions: but take heed, that this jest do not one day turne to earnest. Now I beseech thee (saide Musidorus taking her fast by the hand) even for the truth of our friend- ship, of which (if I be not altogether an unhappy man) thou hast some remembaunce, & by those sacred flames which (I know) have likewise neerely touched thee; make no jest of that, which hath so earnestly pearced me thorow, nor let that be light to thee, which is to me so burdenous, that I am not able to beare it. Musidorus both in words & behaviour, did so lively deliver out his inward grief, that Zelmane found indeede, he was thorowly woüded: but there rose a new jelousy in her minde, lest it might be with Philoclea, by whom, as Zelmane thought, in right all hartes and eyes should be inherited. And therefore desirous to be cleered of that doubt, Musidorus shortly (as in hast and full of passionate perplexednes,) thus recounted his case unto her.

4 The day (said he) I parted from you, I being in mind to returne to a towne, from whence I came hether, my horse being before tired, would scarce beare me a mile hence: where being benighted, the light of a candle (I saw a good way of) guided me to a young shepheardes house, by name Menaleas, who seing me to be a straying sträger, with the right honest hospitality which seemes to be harboured in the Arcadian brests, & though not with curious costlines, yet with cleanly sufficiencie, entertained me: and having by talke with him, found the manner of the countrie, something more in particular, then I had by Kalanders report, I agreed to sojourne with him in secret, which he faithfully promised to observe. And so hether to your arbour divers times repaired: & here by your meanes had the sight (O that it had never bene so, nay, O that it might ever be so) of a Goddesse, who in a definite compasse
can set forth infinite beauty. All this while Zelmane was
racked with jealousie. But he went on, For (saide he) I lying
close, and in truth thinking of you, and saying thus to my selfe,
O sweet Pyrocles, how art thou bewitched? where is thy
vertue? where is the use of thy reason? how much am I in-
ferior to thee in the state of the mind? And yet know I, that
all the heavens cannot bring me to such thraldome. Scarcely,
thinke I, had I spoken this word, when the Ladies came foorth;
at which sight, I thinke the very words returned back again to
strike my soule; at least, an unmeasurable sting I felt in my
selfe, that I had spoken such words. At which sight? said
Zelmane, not able to beare him any longer. O (sayd Musidorus)
I know your suspition; No, no, banish all such feare, it was, it
is, and must be Pamela. Then all is safe (sayd Zelmane)
proceede, deare Musidorus. I will not (said he) impute it to
my late solitarie life (which yet is prone to affections) nor, to
the much thinking of you (though that cald the consideratiō of
love into my mind, which before I ever negleced) nor to the
exaltation of Venus; nor revenge of Cupid; but even to her,
who is the Planet, nay, the Goddesse, against which, the onely
shielde must be my Sepulchre. When I first saw her, I was
presently striken, and I (like a foolish child, that when any
thing hits him, wil strike himselfe again upon it) would needs
looke againe; as though I would perswade mine eyes, that they
were deceived. But alas, well have I found, that Love to a
yeyelding hart is a king; but to a resisting, is a tyrant. The
more with arguments I shaked the stake, which he had
planted in the grounde of my harte, the deeper still it sanke
into it. But what meane I to speake of the causes of my love,
which is as impossible to describe, as to measure the backside of
heaven? Let this word suffice, I love.

And that you may know I doo so, it was I that came in 5
black armour to defende her picture, where I was both pre-
vented, and beaten by you. And so, I that waited here to do
you service, have now my self most need of succor. But
wherupon got you your self this aparrel? said Zelmane. I had
forgotten to tel you (said Musidorus) though that were one
principall matter of my speech; so much am I now master of
my owne minde. But thus it happened: being returned to
Menales house, full of tormenting desire, after a while faynting
under the weight, my courage stird up my wit to seeke for
some releefe, before I yeelded to perish. At last this came into
my head, that very evening, that I had to no purpose last used
my horse and armour. I tolde Menalca, that I was a Thes-
salian Gentle-man, who by mischaunce having killed a great
favorit of the Prince of that coutry, was pursued so cruelly,
that in no place, but either by favour, or corruption, they
would obtenye my destruction; and that therefore I was deter-
mined (till the fury of my persecutions might be asswaged) to
disguise my selfe among the shephards of Arcadia, & (if it were
possible) to be one of them that were allowed the Princes
presence; Because if the woorst should fall, that I were dis-
covered, yet having gotten the acquaintance of the Prince, it
might happen to move his hart to prote& me. Menalca (being
of an honest dispositio) pitted my case, which my face through
my inward torment made credible; and so (I giving him largely
for it) let me have this rayment, instructing me in all the
particularities, touching himselfe, or my selfe, which I desired
to know: yet not trusting so much to his constancie, as that I
would lay my life, and life of my life, upon it, I hired him to
goe into Thessalia to a friend of mine, & to deliver him a
letter fro me; conjuring him to bring me as speedy an answere
as he could, because it imported me greatly to know, whether
certaine of my friendes did yet possesse any favour, whose
intercessio I might use for my restitution. He willingly tooke
my letter, which being well sealed, indeed conteyned other
matter. For I wrote to my trustie servant Calodoulus (whom
you know) that assoone as he had delivered the letter, he should
keep him prisoner in his house, not suffering him to have con-
ference with any body, till he knewe my further pleasure: in all
other respeets that he should use him as my brother. And thus
is Menalca gone, and I here a poore shepheard; more pride
of this estate, the of any kingdom: so manifest it is, that the
highest point outward things can bring one unto, is the con-
tentmët of the mind: with which, no estate; without which,
all estates be miserable. Now have I chosen this day, because
(as Menalca tolde me) the other shepheards are called to make
their sports, and hope that you wil with your credite, finde
meanes to get me allowed among them. You neede not doubt
(answered Zelmane) but that I will be your good mistresse:
marrie the best way of dealing must be by Dametas, who since
his blunt braine hath perceived some favour the Prince dooth
bear unto me (as without doubt the most servile flatterie is
lodged most easilie in the grossest capacitie; for their ordinarie
conceite draweth a yeelding to their greaters, and then have
they not witte to learn the right degrees of duetie) is much
more serviceable unto me, then I can finde any cause to wish
him. And therefore dispaire not to winne him: for every
present occasion will catch his senses, and his senses are masters
of his sillie mind; onely reverence him, and reward him, and
with that bridle and saddle you shall well ride him. O heaven
and earth (said Musidorus) to what a passe are our mindes
brought, that from the right line of vertue, are wryed to these
crooked shifts? But ô Love, it is thou that doost it: thou
changest name upó name; thou disguisest our bodies, and
disfigurest our mindes. But in deed thou hast reason, for
though the wayes be foule, the journeys end is most faire and
honourable.

CHAP. 19.

1 The means of Musidorus his apprenticesage unto Dametas. 2 The
preparation and place of the Pastorals. 3 The Lyons assault
on Philoclea, and death by Zelmane. 4 The shee beares on
Pamela, and death by Dorus. 5 The Io Pæan of Dametas,
and his scape from the beare. 7 The victors praises. 8 Whence
those beasts were sent.

No more sweete Musidorus (said Zelmane) of these philo-
sophies; for here comes the very person of Dametas.
And so he did in deed, with a sword by his side, a forrest-bill
on his neck, and a chopping-knife under his girdle: in which
provided sorte he had ever gone, since the feare Zelmane had
put him in. But he no sooner sawe her, but with head and
armes he laid his reverence afore her; inough to have made
any man forsweare all courtesie. And then in Basilius name,
he did invite her to walke downe to the place, where that day
they were to have the Pastoralles.
But when he spied Musidorus to be none of the shepheards allowed in that place, he would faine have persuadde himselfe to utter some anger, but that he durste not; yet muttering, and champing, as though his cudde troubled him; he gave occasion to Musidorus to come neare him, and seene this tale of his owne life: That he was a younger brother of the shepheard Menalcas, by name Dorus, sent by his father in his tender age to Athens, there to learne some cunning more then ordinarie, that he might be the better liked of the Prince: and that after his fathers death, his brother Menalcas (latelie gone thether to fetch him home) was also deceased: where (upon his death) he had charged him to seek the service of Dametas, and to be wholy, and ever gudied by him; as one in whose judgement and integritie, the Prince had singular confidence. For token whereof, he gave to Dametas a good summe of golde in redy coine, which Menalcas had bequeathed unto him, upon condition he should receive this poore Dorus into his service, that his mind and manner might grow the better by his dayly example. Dametas, that of all manners of stile could best conceive of golden eloquence, being withall tickled by Musidorus prayses, had his brayne so turned, that he became slave to that, which he, that shewed to be his servant, offered to give him: yet for countenance sake, he seemed very squeimish, in respect of the charge he had of the Princesse Pamela. But such was the secrete operation of the golde, helped with the perswasion of the Amazon Zelmane, (who sayde it was pittie so handsome a young man should be any where els, then with so good a master) that in the ende he agreed (if that day he behaved himselfe so to the lyking of Basilius, as he might be cotented) that then he would receive him into his service.

And thus went they to the Lodge, where they foud Gynecia and her daughters ready to go to the field, to delight themselves there a while, untill the shepheards comming: whether also taking Zelmane with them, as they went, Dametas told them of Dorus, and desired he might be accepted there that day, in steed of his brother Menalcas. As for Basilius, he staied behind to bring the shepherds, with whom he meant to cofer, to breed the better Zelmanes liking (which he onely regarded) while the other beautifull band came to the faire field, appointed for the shepherdish pastimes. It was indeed a place of delight;
for thorow the middest of it, there ran a sweete brooke, which did both hold the eye open with her azure streams, & yet seeke to close the eie with the purling noise it made upon the pibble stones it ran over: the field it self being set in some places with roses, & in al the rest constantly preserving a florishing greene; the Roses added such a ruddy shew unto it, as though the field were bashfull at his owne beautie: about it (as if it had bene to inclose a Theater) grew such a sort of trees, as eyther excellency of fruit, statelines of groth, continuall greennes, or poetical lancies have made at any time famous. In most part of which there had bene framed by art such pleasant arbors, that (one tree to tree, answering another) they became a gallery aloft from almost round about, which below gave a perfect shadow, a pleasant refuge then from the cholerick looke of Phoebus.

In this place while Gynecia walked hard by them, carying 3 many unquiet cōtentions about her, the Ladies sate them downe, inquiring many questiōs of the shepheard Dorus; who (keeping his eie still upon Pamela) answered with such a trembling voice, & abashed coutenance, & oftentimes so far from the matter, that it was some sport to the young Ladies, thinking it want of education, which made him so discountenanced with unwoonted presence. But Zelmane that saw in him the glasse of her owne misery, taking the hande of Philoclea, and with burning kisses setting it close to her lips (as if it should stande there like a hand in the margin of a Booke, to note some saying worthy to be marked) began to speake these wordes. O Love, since thou art so changeable in mens estates, how art thou so constat in their torments? when sодainly there came out of a wood a monstrous Lion, with a she Beare not far from him, of litle lesse fiercenes, which (as they ghost) having bene hūted in Forests far of, were by chaüce come thether, where before such beastes had never bene seene. Then care, not feare; or feare, not for themselves, altered some thing the coutenances of the two Lovers, but so, as any man might perceive, was rather an assembling of powers, then dismaiednes of courage. Philoclea no sooner espied the Liō, but that obeying the cōmandement of feare, she lept up, & ran to the lodge-ward, as fast as her delicate legs could carrie her, while Dorus drew Pamela behind a tree, where she stood quaking like the Partridge, on which the Hawke is evē ready to seaze. But
the Lion (seeing Philoclea run away) bent his race to her-ward, & was ready to seaze him selfe on the pray, when Zelmane (to whome daunger then was a cause of dreadsnes, all the compositions of her elemëts being nothing but fierie) with swiftnesse of desire crost him, and with force of affection strake him such a blow upon his chine, that she opened al his body: wherwith the valiant beast turning upō her with open jawes, she gave him such a thrust thorow his brest, that al the Liö could do, was with his paw to teare of the mantle and sleeve of Zelmane, with a little scratch, rather then a wound; his death-blow having take away the effect of his force. But there withall he fell downe, & gave Zelmane leasure to take of his head, to carrie it for a present to her Ladie Philoclea: who all this while (not knowing what was done behind her) kept on her course, like Arethusa when she ran from Alpheus; her light apparell being carried up with the winde, that much of those beauties she would at another time have willingly hidden, was present to the sight of the twise wounded Zelmane. Which made Zelmane not folow her over hastily, lest she should too soone deprive her selfe of that pleasure: But carying the Lions head in her hand, did not fully overtake her, till they came to the presence of Basilius. Nether were they lög there, but that Gynecia came thether also: who had bene in such a traunce of musing, that Zelmane was fighting with the Lion, before she knew of any Lions cōming: but then affection resisting, and the soone ending of the fight preventing all extremitie of feare, she marked Zelmans fighting. And when the Lions head was of, as Zelman ran after Philoclea, so she could not find in her hart but run after Zelman: so that it was a new sight, Fortune had prepared to those woods, to see these great personages thus runne one after the other: each carried forward with an inwarde violence: Philoclea with such feare, that she thought she was still in the Lions mouth: Zelmane with an eager and impatient delight, Gynecia with wings of Love, flying they neither knew, nor cared to know whether. But now, being all come before Basilius amazed with this sight, and feare having such possessiō in the faire Philoclea, that her bloud durst not yet to come to her face, to take away the name of palenesse from her most pure whitenes, Zelmane kneeled down, and presented the Lions head unto her. Only Ladie (said she) here see you the
punishment of that unnatural beast, which contrary to her owne kind wold have wronged Princes bloud, guided with such traiterous eies, as durst rebell against your beauty. Happy am I, and my beautie both (answered the sweete Philoclea then blushing, for feare had bequeathed his roome to his kinsman bashfulnes) that you excellent Amazon, were there to teach him good manners. And even thankes to that beautie (answered Zelmane) which can give an edge to the bluntest swordes?

There Philoclea told her father, how it had hapned: but as she had turned her eyes in her tale to Zelmane she perceived some bloud upō Zelmanes shoulder, so that starting with the lovely grace of pitty, she shewed it to her Father and mother: who, as the nurse sometimes with over-much kissing may forget to give the babe sucke, so had they with too much delighting, in beholding and praysing Zelmane, left of to marke whether she needed succour. But then they ran both unto her, like a father and mother to an onely childe, and (though Zelmane assured them, it was nothing) would needes see it; Gynecia having skill in surgery, an arte in those daies much esteemed, because it served to vertuous courage, which evē Ladies would (evē with the contēpt of courage) seeme to cherish. But looking upon it (which gave more inward bleeding woūds to Zelmane, for she might sometimes feele Philocleas touch, whiles she helped her mother) she found it was indeed of no great importance: yet applied she a pretious baulme unto it, of power to heale a greater griefe.

But even then, & not before, they remēbred Pamela, & therefore Zelmane (thinking of her friend Dorus) was running back to be satisfied, whē they might all see Pamela coming between Dorus & Dametas, having in her hād the paw of a Beare, which the shepheard Dorus had newly presented unto her, desiring her to accept it, as of such a beast, which though she deserved death for her presumption, yet was her will to be esteemed, since she could make so sweet a choice. Dametas for his part came piping and dauncing, the meriest man in a parish. But whē he came so neere, as he might be heard of Basilius, he would needs breake thorow his eares with this joyfull song of their good successe.
Now thanked be the great God Pan, which thus preserves my loved life:
Thanked be I that keepe a man, who ended hath this fearefull strife:
For if my man must praises have, what then must I that keepe the knave?

For as the Moone the eies doth please, with gentle beames not hurting sight:
Yet hath sir Sunne the greatest praise, because from him doth come her light:
So if my man must praises have, what then must I that keepe the knave?

Being al now come together, & all desirous to know each others advetures, Pamela's noble hart would needs gratefully make knowne the valiat mean of her safety: which (directing her speach to her mother) she did in this maner. As soone (said she) as ye were all run away, and that I hoped to be in safetie, there came out of the same woods a foule horrible Beare, which (fearing belike to deale while the Lion was present, as soone as he was gone) came furiously towards the place where I was, and this young shepheard left alone by me; I truly (not guilty of any wisedome, which since they lay to my charge, because they say, it is the best refuge against that beast, but eve pure feare bringing forth that effect of wisedome) fell downe flat of my face, needing not couterfait being dead, for indeed I was little better. But this shepheard having no other weapon, but that knife you see, standing before the place where I lay, so behaved him selfe, that the first sight I had (when I thought my selfe nearer Charons ferry,) was the shepheard shewing me his bloody knife in token of victory. I pray you (saide Zelmane, speaking to Dorus, whose valour she was carefull to have manifested) in what sorte, so ill weaponed, could you atchieve this enterprise? Noble Ladie (saide Dorus) the manner of these beastes fighting with any man, is to stande up upon their hinder feete: and so this did, & being ready to give me a shrewd imbracement, I thinke, the God Pan, (ever carefull of the chiefe blessings of Arcadia) guided my hand so just to the hart of the beast, that neither she could once touch
me, nor (which is the only matter in this worthy remembrance) breed any danger to the Princesse. For my part, I am rather (with all subject humbleness) to thank her excellencies, since the duty thereunto gave me harte to save myselfe, then to receive thankes for a deede, which was her onely inspiring. And this Dorus spake, keeping affection as much as he could, backe from coming into his eyes and gestures. But Zelmane (that had the same Character in her heart) could easily discern it, and therefore to keepe him the longer in speach, desired to understand the conclusion of the matter; and how the honest Dametas was escaped.

Nay (said Pamela) none shall take that office from my selfe, being so much bound to him as I am, for my education. And with that word (scorne borrowing the countenance of myrth) somewhat she smiled, and thus spake on? When (said she) Dorus made me assuredly perceive, that all cause of feare was passed (the truth is) I was ashamed to finde myselfe alone with this shepheard: and therefore looking about me, if I could see any bodie; at length we both perceived the gentle Dametas, lying with his breast and head as farre as he could thrust himselfe into a bush: drawing up his legges as close unto him as hee could: for, like a man of a very kind nature, soone to take pittie of himselfe, he was full resolved not to see his owne death. And when this shepheard pushed him, bidding him to be of good cheere; it was a good while, ere we could perswade him, that Dorus was not the beare: so that he was faine to pull him out by the heeles, & shew him the beast, as deade as he could wish it: which you may believe me, was a very joyful sight unto him. But then he forgote al curtesie, for he fel upon the beast, giving it many a manfull wound: swearing by much, it was not wel such beasts shoulde be suffered in a common welth. And then my governour, as full of joy, as before of feare, came dauncing and singing before us as even now you saw him. Well wel (said Basilius) I have not chosen Dametas for his fighting, nor for his discoursing, but for his plainenesse and honestie, and therein I know he will not deceave me.

But then he told Pamela (not so much because she should know it, as because he would tell it) the wonderfull act Zelmane had perfourmed, which Gynelia likewise spake off, both in such extremity of praising, as was easie to be seen, the constructions
of their speach might best be made by the Grammer rules of affection. Basilius told with what a gallant grace shee ranne with the Lyons head in her hand, like another Pallas with the spoiles of Gorgon. Gynecia sware, shee sawe the face of the young Hercules killing the Nemean Lion, & all with a grateful assent confirmed the same praises: onely poore Dorus (though of equall desert, yet not proceeding of equall estate) should have bene left forgotten, had not Zelmane againe with great admiration, begun to speake of him; asking, whether it were the fashion or no, in Arcadia, that shepheardes should performe such valorous enterprises. This Basilius (having the quicke sense of a lover) tooke, as though his Mistres had given a secret reprehension, that he had not shewed more gratefulnesse to Dorus; and therefore (as nymblie as he could) enquired of his estate, adding promise of great rewards: among the rest, offering to him, if he would exercise his courage in souldierie, he would commit some charge unto him under his Lieutenant Philanax. But Dorus (whose ambition clymed by another stayre) having first answered touching his estate, that he was brother to the shepheard Menaleas; who among other, was wont to resort to the Princes presence, & excused his going to souldierie, by the unaptnesse he found in himselfe that way: he told Basilius, that his brother in his last testament had willed him to serve Dametas; and therefore (for due obedience thereunto) he would thinke his service greatly rewarded, if he might obtaine by that meane to live in the sight of his Prince, and yet practise his owne chosen vocation. Basilius (liking well his goodly shape and handsome manner) charged Dametas to receive him like a sonne into his house: saying, that his valour, and Dametas truth would be good bulwarkes against such mischiefes, as (he sticked not to say) were threatned to his daughter Pamela.

2 Dametas, no whit out of countenance with all that had bene said (because he had no worse to fal into then his owne) accepted Dorus: and with all, telling Basilius, that some of the shepheardes were come; demaunded in what place he would see their sports: who first curious to know whether it were not more requisite for Zelmanes hurt to rest, then sit up at those pastimes; and she (that felt no wound but one) earnestly desiring to have Pastorals, Basilius commanded it should be at
the gate of the lodge: where the throne of the Prince being
(according to the auncient manner) he made Zelmane sit
betweene him & his wife therin, who thought her selfe
betweene drowning and burning: and the two young Ladies of
either side the throne, and so prepared their eyes and eares to
bee delighted by the shepheards.

But before al of them were assembled to begin their sports, there came a fellow, who being out of breath (or seeming so to be for haste) with humble hastines told Basilius, that his Mistres, the Lady Cecropia, had sent him to excuse the mis-
chance of her beastes ranging in that dagerous sort, being
happened by the folly of the keeper; who thinking himself
able to rule them, had caried them abroad, & so was deceived:
whom yet (if Basilius would punish for it) she was readie to
deliver. Basilius made no other answere, but that his Mistres
if shee had any more such beastes, should cause them to be
killed: and then he told his wife & Zelmane of it, because they
should not feare those woods; as though they harbored such
beasts, where the like had never bene seen. But Gynecia
tooke a further conceit of it, mistrusting Cecropia, because shee
had heard much of the divellish wickednesse of her heart, and
that particularly she did her best to bring up her sonne
Amphialus (being brothers sonne to Basilius) to aspire to the
crowne, as next heire male after Basilius; and therefore saw no
reason, but that she might conjecture, it proceeded rather of
some mischievous practise, than of misfortune. Yet did she
onely utter her doubt to her daughters, thinking, since the
worst was past, shee would attend a further occasion, least over
much haste might seeme to proceeede of the ordinarie mislike
betweene sisters in Lawe: onely they marvelled, that Basilius
looked no further into it; who (good man) thought so much of
his late conceived common wealth, that all other matters were
but digressions unto him. But the shepheards were ready, and
with wel handling themselves, called their senses to attend
their pastimes.
The first Eclogues.

BASILIUS, because Zelmame so would have it, used the artificiall day of torches, to lighten the sports their inventions could minister. And yet because many more shepheards were newly come, then at the first; he did in a gentle manner chastise the cowardise of the fugitive shepheards: with making them (for that night) the Torch-bearers, and the others later come, he willed with all freedome of speech and behaviour, to keepe their accustomed method. Which while they prepared to do, Dametas, who much disdained (since his late authority) all his old companions, brought his servant Dorus in good acquaintance and allowance of the; & himselfe stood like a director over the, with nodding, gaping, winking, or stamping shewing how he did like, or mislike those things he did not understand. The first sports the shepheards shewed, were full of such leapes & gambols, as being accorded to the Pipe (which they bare in their mouthes, even as they daunced) made a right picture of their chiefe god Pan, and his companions the Satyres. Then would they cast away their Pipes; and holding hand in hand, daunce as it were in a braule, by the onely cadence of their voices, which they would use in singing some short coplets, whereto the one halfe beginning, the other halfe should answere. As the one halfe saying,

*We love, and have our loves rewarded.*

The others would aunswere.

*We love, and are no whit regarded.*

The first againe.

*We finde most sweete affections snare,*

With like tune it should be as in quire sent back againe.

*That sweete, but sower despairefull care.*

A third time likewise thus:

*Who can despaire, whom hope doth beare?*

The aunswere.

*And who can hope, that feeles despaire?*
Then all joyning their voyces, and dauncing a faster measure, they would conclude with some such words:

As without breath, no pipe doth move,
No musike kindly without love.

Having thus varied both their songs and daunces into divers sorts of inventions; their last sport was one of them to provoke another to a more large expressing of his passions: which Lalus (accounted one of the best singers amongst them) having marked in Dorus dauncing, no lesse good grace & hansombe behaviour, then extreame tokens of a travelled minde; began first with his Pipe, and then with his voice, thus to chalenge Dorus, and was by him answered in the underwritten sort.

**Lalus and Dorus.**

Come Dorus, come, let songs thy sorowes signifie:
And if for want of use thy minde ashamed is,
That verie shame with Loves high title dignifie.

No stile is held for base, where Love well named is:
Ech eare suckes up the words, a true love scattereth,
And plaine speach oft, then quaint phrase, better framed is.

Nightingales seldom sing, the Pie still chattereth:
The wood cries most, before it throughly kindled be,
Deadly wounds inward bleed, ech sleight sore mattereth.

Hardly they heard, which by good hunters singled be.
Shallow brookes murmure most, deep silent slide away;
Nor true love loves those loves with others mingled be.

If thou wilt not be seene, thy face goe hide away,
Be none of us, or els maintaine our fashion:
Who frownes at others feastes, dooth better bide away.

But if thou hast a Love, in that Loves passion,
I challenge thee by shew of her perfection,
Which of us two deserveth most compassion.

Thy challenge great, but greater my protection:
Sing then, and see (for now thou hast inflamed me)
Thy health too meane a match for my infection.
No, though the heav’ns for high attempts have blamed me,
Yet high is my attempt, O Muse historifie
Her praise, whose praise to learne your skill hath framed me.

Lalus. Muse hold your peace: but thou, my God Pan, glorifie
My Kalas giftes: who with all good gifts filled is.
Thy pipe, o Pan, shall helpe, though I sing sorilie.

To whom though she be no Bee, yet full of honie is:
A Lillie field, with plowe of Rose which tilled is.
Milde as a Lambe, more daintie then a Conie is;
Her eyes my eyesight is, her conversation
More gladde to me, then to a miser monie is.
What coye account she makes of estimation?
How nice to touch, how all her speeches peized be?

A Nimph thus turnde, but mended in translation.

Dorus. Such Kala is: but ah, my fancies raysed be
In one, whose name to name were high presumption,
Since vertues all, to make her title, pleased be.
O happie Gods, which by inward assumption
Enjoy her soule, in bodies faire possession,
And keep it joynde, fearing your seates consumption.

How oft with raine of teares skies make confession,
Their dwellers rapt with sight of her perfection
From heav’ny throne to her heav’n use digression?
Of best things then what world can yeeld confection
To liken her? Decke yours with your comparison:
She is her selfe, of best things the collection.

Lalus. How oft my dolefull Sire cried to me, tarrie sonne
When first he spied my love? how oft he said to me,
Thou art no souldier fitte for Cupids garrison?

My sonne, keepe this, that my long toyle hath laide to me:
Love well thine owne: me thinkes, woolles whitenes passeth all:
I never found long love such wealth hath paide to me.

This winde he spent: but when my Kala glaseth all
My sight in her faire limmes, I then assure my selfe,
Not rotten sheepe, but high crownes she surpasseth all.

Can I be poore, that her golde haire procure my selfe?
Want I white wooll, whose eyes her white skinne garnished?
Till I get her, shall I to keepe enure my selfe?
How oft, when reason saw, love of her harnised
With armour of my hart, he cried, O vanitie,
To set a pearle in steele so meanely varnished?
Looke to thy selfe; reach not beyond humanitie:
Her minde, beames, state farre from thy weake wings banished:
And Love, which lover hurts is inhumanitie.
Thus Reason said: but she came, Reason vanished;
Her eyes so maistering me, that such objection
Seemde but to spoyle the foode of thoughts long famished.
Her peerles height my minde to high erection
Drawes up; and if hope-fayling ende lives pleasure,
Of fayrer death how can I make election?

Once my well-waiting eyes espied my treasure,
With sleeves turnde up, loose baire, and brest enlarged,
Her fathers corne (moving her faire limmes) measure.
O cried I, of so meane worke be discharged:
Measure my case, how by thy beauties filling
With seede of woes my hart brimme-full is charged.
Thy father bids thee save, and chides for spilling.
Save then my soule, spill not my thoughts well heaped,
No lovely praise was ever got by killing.

These bolde words she did heare, this fruite I reaped,
That she, whose looke alone might make me blessed,
Did smile on me, and then away she leaped.

Once, 6 sweete once, I saw with dread oppressed
Her whom I dread; so that with prostrate lying
Her length the earth in Loves chiefe clothing dressed.
I saw that riches fall, and fell a crying;
Let not dead earth enjoy so deare a cover,
But deck therewith my soule for your sake dying.
Lay all your feare upon your fearefull lover:
Shine eyes on me, that both our lives be guarded;
So I your sight, you shall your selves recover.
I cried, and was with open rayes rewarded:
But straight they fledde, summond by cruell honor,
Honor, the cause, desart is not regarded.

This mayde, thus made for joyes, 6 Pan bemone her,
That without love she spends her yeares of love:
So faire a fielde would well become an owner.
And if enchantment can a harde hart move,
Teach me what circle may acquaint her sprite,
Affections charmes in my behalfe to prove.
The circle is my (round about her) sight:
The power I will invoke dwelles in her eyes:
My charme should be, she haunt me day and night.

Dorus. 
Farre other care, & Muse, my sorrow tries,
Bent to such one, in whom, my selfe must say,
Nothing can mend that point that in her lies.
What circle then in so rare force beares swaye?
Whose sprite all sprites can spoile, raise, damne, or save:
No charme holds her, but well possesse she may;
Possesse she doth, and makes my soule her slave:
My eyes the bandes, my thoughts the fatall knot.
No thralles like them that inward bondage have.

Lalus. 
Kala at length conclude my lingring lotte:
Disdaine me not, although I be not faire.
Who is an heire of many hundred sheep
Doth beauties keep, which never Sunne can burne,
Nor stormes doo turne: fairenes serves oft to wealth.
Yet all my health I place in your good-will.
Which if you will (o doo) bestow on me,
Such as you see, such still you shall me finde.
Constant and kind: my sheep your foode shall breed,
Their wooll your weede, I will you Musique yeeld
In flowerie fielde; and as the day begins
With twenty ginnes we will the small birds take,
And pastimes make, as Nature things hath made.
But when in shade we meet of mirtle bowes,
Then Love allowes, our pleasures to enrich,
The thought of which doth passe all worldly pelfe.

Dorus. 
Lady your selfe, whom nether name I dare,
And titles are but spots to such a worthie,
Hearre plaints come forth from dungeon of my minde.
The noblest kinde rejects not others woes.
I have no shewes of wealth: my wealth is you,
My beauties bewe your beames, my health your deeds;
My minde for weeds your vertues liverie weares.
My foode is teares; my tunes waymenting yeeld:
Despaire my fielde; the flowers spirits warrs:
My day newe cares; my ginnes my daily sight,
In which do light small birds of thoughts orethbrowne:
My pastimes none: time passeth on my fall:
Nature made all, but me of dolours made:
I finde no shade, but where my Sunne doth burne:
No place to turne; without, within it frys:
Nor helpe by life or death who living dyes.

But if my Kala this my suite denies,
Which so much reason beares,
Let crowes picke out mine eyes, which saw too much:
If still her minde be such,
My earthy moulde will melte in waetrie teares.

My earthy moulde doth melte in waetrie teares,
And they againe resolve
To aire of sighes, sighes to the hartes fire turne,
Which doth to ashes burne:
So doth my life within it selfe dissolve,

So doth my life within it selfe dissolve,
That I am like a flower
New plucked from the place where it did breed,
Life showing, dead indeed:
Such force bath Love above poore Natures power.

Such force bath Love above poore Natures power,
That I growe like a shade,
Which being nought seems somewhat to the eyen,
While that one body shine.
Oh he is mard that is for others made.

Oh he is mard that is for others made.
Which thought doth marre my piping declaration,
Thinking how it bath mard my shepheards trade.
Now my hoarse voice doth faile this occupation,
And others long to tell their loves condition:
Of singing take to thee the reputation.
Dorus. Of singing take to thee the reputation
New friend of mine; I yeeld to thy habilitie:
My soule doth seek another estimation.
But ah my Muse I would thou hadst agilitie,
To worke my Goddess so by thy invention,
On me to cast those eyes, where shine nobilitie.

Seen, and unknowne; heard, but without attention.

This Eclogue betwixt Lalus & Dorus, of every one of the beholders received great commendations. When Basilius called to a yong shepheard, who nether had daunced nor song with thē, but layne al this while upō the ground at the foot of a cypresse tree, in so deep a melancholy, as though his mind were banished from the place he loved, to be in prison in his body: & desired him he would begin some Eclogue, with some other of the shepheards, according to the accustomed guise: or els declare the discourse of his owne fortune, unknowne to him; as being a straunger in that coutry. But he praied the King to pardon him, the time being far too joyful to suffer the rehersall of his miseries. Yet, to satisfy Basilius some way, he sange this songe, he had learned before he had subjected his thoughts to acknowledge no maister, but a mistresse.

AS I my little flocke on Ister banke
(A little flocke; but well my pipe they couthe)
Did piping leade, the Sunne already sanke
Beyond our worlde, and ere I got my boote
Each thing with mantle black the night doth scothe;
Saving the glowe worme, which would curteous be
Of that small light oft watching shepheardes see.

The welkin had full niggardly enclosed
In cofer of dimme clowdes his silver groates,
Icleped starres; each thing to rest disposed:
The caves were full, the mountaines void of goates:
The birds eyes close close closed their chirping notes.
As for the Nightingale woodmusiques King,
It August was, he daynde not then to sing.
Amid my sheepe, though I sawe nought to feare
Yet (for I nothing sawe) I feared sore;
Then fonde I which thing is a charge to beare
As for my sheepe I dradded mickle more
Then ever for my selfe since I was bore:
I sate me downe: for see to goe ne could,
And sange unto my sheepe lest stray they should.

The sone I sange old Lanquet had me taught,
Lanquet, the shepheard best swift Ister knewe,
For clerkly reed, and hating what is naught,
For faithfull hart, cleane hands, and mouth as true:
With his sweet skill my skillesse youth he drewe,
To have a feeling tast of him that sitts
Beyond the heaven, far more beyond your witts.

He said, the Musique best thilke powers pleas'd
Was jumpe concorde betwene our wit and will:
Where highest notes to godlines are rais'd,
And lowest sinke not downe to jote of ill:
With old true tales he woont mine eares to fill,
How sheepheards did of yore, how now they thrive,
Spoiling their flock, or while twixt the they strive.

He liked me, but pitied lustfull youth:
His good strong staffe my slippry yeares upbore:
He still hop'd well, because he loved truth;
Till forste to parte, with harte and eyes even sore,
To worthy Coriden he gave me ore.
But thus in okes true shade recounted he
Which now in nights deepe shade sheep heard of me.

Such maner time there was (what time I n'ot)
When all this Earth, this damme or mould of ours
Was onely won'd with such as beastes begot:
Unknowne as then were they that builded towers:
The cattell wild, or tame, in natures bowers
Might freely rone, or rest, as seemed them:
Man was not man their dwellings in to hem.
The beastes had sure some beastly pollicie:
For nothing can endure where order n'is.
For once the Lion by the Lambe did lie;
The fearefull Hinde the Leopard did kisse:
Hurtles was Tygers pawe and Serpents hisse.
This thinke I well, the beasts with courage clad
Like Senators a harmeles empire had.

At which whether the others did repine,
(For envie harbreth most in feeblest hartes)
Or that they all to chaunging did encline,
(As even in beasts their daames leave chaunging parts)
The multitude to Jove a suite empartes,
   With neighing, blaying, braying, and barking,
   Roring, and bowling for to have a King.

A King, in language theirs they said they would:
(For then their language was a perfect speech)
The birdes likewise with chirpes, and puing could
Cackling, and chattering, that of Jove beseech.
Onely the owle still warnde them not to seech
   So hastily that which they would repent:
   But sawe they would, and be to deserts went.

Jove wisely said (for wisedome wisely sayes)
O beasts, take heed what you of me desire.
Rulers will thinke all things made them to please,
And soone forget the swincke due to their hire.
But since you will, part of my heav'ly fire
   I will you lende; the rest your selves must give,
   That it both scene and felte may with you live.

Full glad they were and tooke the naked sprite,
Which streight the Earth yclothed in his claye:
The Lion, harte; the Ounce gave active might;
The Horse, good shape; the Sparrow, lust to playe;
Nightingale, voice, entising songes to saye.
Elephant gave a perfect memorie:
   And Parot, ready tongue, that to applie.
The Foxe gave crafte; the Dog gave flatterie;
Asse, patience; the Mole, a working thought;
Eagle, high looke; Wolfe secrete crueltie:
Monkie, sweet breath; the Cow, her faire eyes brought;
The Ermion, whitest skinne, spotted with nought;
The sheep, mild-seeming face; climing, the Beare;
The Stagge did give the harme eschewing feare.

The Hare, her sleights; the Cat, his melancholie;
Ante, industrie; and Connie, skill to builde;
Cranes, order; Storkes, to be appearing bolie;
Cameleon, ease to chaunge; Ducke, ease to yelde;
Crocodile, teares, which might be falsely spilde:
Ape great thing gave, though be did mowing stand,
The instrument of instruments, the hand.

Ech other beast likewise his present brings:
And (but they drad their Prince they ought should want)
They all consented were to give him wings:
And aye more awe towards him for to plant,
To their owne worke this priviledge they graunt,
That from thenceforth to all eternitie,
No beast should freely speake, but onely be.

Thus Man was made; thus Man their Lord became:
Who at the first, wanting, or hiding pride,
He did to beastes best use his cunning frame;
With water drinke, herbes meate, and naked hide,
And fellow-like let his dominion slide;
Not in his sayings saying I, but we:
As if he meant his lordship common be.

But when his seate so rooted he had found,
That they now skilld not, how from him to wend;
Then gan in guiltlesse earth full many a wound,
Iron to seeke, which gainst it selfe should bend,
To teare the bowels, that good corne should send.
But yet the common Damme none did bemone;
Because (though hurt) they never heard her grone.
Then gan the factions in the beasts to breed;
Where helping weaker sort, the nobler beasts,
(As Tygers, leopards, beares, and Lions seed)
Disdain'd with this, in deserts sought their restes;
Where famine ravine taught their hungrie chestes,
That craftily he forst them to do ill,
Which being done he afterwards would kill.

For murthers done, which never erst was seen,
By those great beasts, as for the weaker good,
He chose themselves his guarders for to bene,
Gainst those of might, of whom in feare they stood,
As horse and dogge, not great, but gentle blood:
Blith were the commons cattell of the fielde,
Tho when they saw their foen of greatnes kilde.

But they or spent, or made of slender might,
Then quickly did the meaner cattell finde,
The great beames gone, the house on shoulders light:
For by and by the horse faire bitts did binde:
The dogge was in a coller taught his kinde.
As for the gentle birds like case might rewe
When falcon they, and gosheauke saw in mewe.

Worst fell to smallest birds, and meanest heard,
Whom now his owne, full like his owne he used.
Yet first but wooll, or fethers off he teard:
And when they were well us'de to be abused,
For hungrie teeth their flesh with teeth he brused:
At length for glutton taste he did them kill:
At last for sport their sillie lives did spill.

But yet o man, rage not beyond thy neede:
Deeme it no gloire to swell in tyrannie.
Thou art of blood; joy not to see things bleede:
Thou fearest death; thinke they are loth to die.
A plaint of guiltlesse hurt doth pierce the skie.
And you poore beasts, in patience bide your bell,
Or know your strengths, and then you shall do well.
Thus did I sing, and pipe eight sullen houres
To sheepe, whom love, not knowledge, made to heare,
Now fancies fits, now fortunes balefull stowers :
But then I homewards call'd my lambkins deare :
For to my dimmed eyes beganne t'appeare
The night growne old, her blacke head waxen gray,
Sure shepherds signe, that morn should soone fetch day.

A

ccording to the nature of diverse eares, diverse judgements streight followed: some praising his voice, others his words fit to frame a pastorall stile, others the strangenes of the tale, and scanning what he shuld meane by it. But old Geron (who had borne him a grudge ever since in one of their Eclogues he had taken him up over-bitterly) tooke hold of this occasion to make his revenge, and said, He never saw thing worse proportioned, then to bring in a tale of he knew not what beasts at such a sport-meeting, when rather some song of love, or matter for joyfull melody was to be brought forth. But, said he, This is the right concept of young men, who thinke, then they speake wiseliest, when they cannot understand themselves. But little did the melancholike shepherd regard either his dispraises, or the others praises, who had set the foundation of his honour there; where he was most despised. And therefore he returning againe to the traine of his desolate pensivenesse, Geron invited Histor to answere him in Eclogue-wise; who indeed having bene long in love with the faire Kala, and now by Lalus overgone; was growne into a detestation of marriage. But thus it was.

Geron. Histor.

IN faith, good Histor, long is your delay,
From holy marriage sweete and surest meane:
Our foolish lust in honest rules to stay.
I pray thee doo to Lalus sample leane:
Thou seest, how friske, and jolly now he is,
That last day seem'd, he could not chew a beane.
Believe me man, there is no greater blisse,
Then is the quiet joy of loving wife;
Which who so wants, halfe of himselfe doth misse.
Friend without change, playfellow without strife,
Food without fulnes, counsaile without pride,
Is this sweet doubling of our single life.

No doubt to whom so good chance did betide,
As for to finde a pasture strawed with golde,
He were a foole, if there he did not bide.
Who would not have a Phœnix if he could?
The humming Waspe, if it had not a stinge,
Before all flies the Waspe accept I would.
But this bad world, few golden fieldes doth bring,
Phœnix but one, of Crowes we millions have:
The Waspe seems gay, but is a combrous thing.
If many Kalaes our Arcadia gave,
Lalus example I would soone ensue,
And think, I did my selfe from sorrow save.
But of such wives we finde a slender crew;
Shrewdnes so stirres, pride so puffs up the hart,
They seldom ponder what to them is due.
With meager looks, as if they still did smart;
Puelling, and whimpring, or else scolding flat,
Make home more paine then following of the cart.
Ether dull silence, or eternall chat;
Still contrarie to what her husband sayes;
If he do praise the dog, she likes the cat.
Austere she is, when he would honest playes;
And gamesome then, when he thinkes on his sheepe;
She bids him goe, and yet from jorney stayes.
She warre doth ever with his kinsfolke keepe,
And makes them fremb'd, who frinds by nature are,
Envying shallow toyes with malice deepe.
And if forsooth there come some new found ware,
The little coine his sweating browes have got.
Must goe for that, if for her lowres he care:
Or els; Nay faith, mine is the lucklest lot,
That ever fell to honest woman yet:
No wife but I hath such a man, God wot.
Such is their speech, who be of sober wit;
But who doo let their tongues shew well their rage,
Lord, what bywords they speake, what spite they spit?
The house is made a very lothsome cage,
Wherein the birde doth never sing but cry;
With such a will as nothing can asswage.

Dearly the servants doo their wages buy,
Revil'd for ech small fault, sometimes for none:
They better live that in a gaile doo lie.

Let other fowler spots away be blowne;
For I seeke not their shame, but still me thinkes,
A better life it is to lye alone.

Who for ech fickle feare from vertue shrinkes,
Shall in his life embrace no worthy thing:
No mortall man the cuppe of suretie drinkes.

The heav'ns doo not good haps in handfuls bring,
But let us pike our good from out much bad:
That still our little world may know his king.

But certainly so long we may be glad,
While that we doo what nature doth require,
And for th'event we never ought be sad.

Man oft is plag'de with aire, is burnt with fire,
In water round, in earth his buriall is;
And shall we not therefore their use desire?

Nature above all things requireth this,
That we our kind doo labour to maintaine;
Which drawne-out line doth hold all humane blisse.

Thy father justly may of thee complaine,
If thou doo not repay his deeds for thee,
In granting unto him a grandsires gaine.

Thy common-wealth may rightly greewed be,
Which must by this immortall be preserved,
If thus thou murther thy posteritie.

His very being he hath not deserved,
Who for a selfe-conceipt will that forbeare,
Whereby that being aye must be conserved.

And God forbid, women such cattell were,
As you paint them: but well in you I finde,
No man doth speake aright, who speaks in feare.

Who onely sees the ill is worse then blind.
These fiftie winters maried have I beene;
And yet finde no such faults in womankind.
I have a wife worthie to be a Queene,
So well she can command, and yet obey;
In ruling of a house so well shee's scene.
And yet in all this time, betwixt us tway,
We beare our double yoke with such consent,
That never past foule word, I dare well say.
But these be your love-toyes, which still are spent
In lawlesse games, and love not as you should,
But with much studie learne late to repent.
How well last day before our Prince you could
Blinde Cupids workes with wonder testifie?
Yet now the roote of him abase you would.
Goe to, goe to, and Cupid now applie
To that where thou thy Cupid maist avove,
And thou shalt finde, in women vertues lie.
Sweete supple mindes which soone to wisdome bowe
Where they by wisdomes rule directed are,
And are not forst fonde thraldome to allow.
As we to get are fram'd, so they to spare:
We made for paine, our paines they made to cherish:
We care abroad, and they of home have care.
O Histor, seeke within thy selfe to flourish:
Thy house by thee must live, or els be gone:
And then who shall the name of Histor nourish?
Riches of children passe a Princes throne;
Which touch the fathers hart with secret joy,
When without shame he saith, these be mine owne.
Marrie therefore; for marriage will destroy
Those passions which to youthfull head doo clime
Mothers and Nurses of all vaine annoy.

All the assemblie laught at the lustines of the old fellowe, and
easilie perceived in Histor, he liked Lalus fortune better,
then he loved his person. But Basilius to entermixe with these
light notes of libertie, some sadder tune, set to the key of his
own passion, not seeing there Strephon or Klaius, (who called
thence by Uranias letter, were both gone to continue their suite,
like two true runners, both employing their best speed, but not
one hindring the other) he called to one Lamō of their acquaint-
ance, and willed him to sing some one of their songs; which he redily performed in this doble Sestine.

Strephon. Klaius.

You Gote-heard Gods, that love the grassie mountaines,
You Nimphes that haunt the springs in pleasant vallies,
You Satyrs joyde with free and quiet forrests,
Vouchsafe your silent eares to playning musique,
Which to my woes gives still an early morning:
And drawes the dolor on till wery evening.

O Mercurie, foregoer to the evening,
O heavenlie huntresse of the savage mountaines,
O lovelie starre, entitled of the morning,
While that my voice doth fill these wofull vallies,
Vouchsafe your silent eares to playning musique,
Which oft hath Echo tir'd in secrete forrests.

I that was once free-burges of the forrests,
Where shade from Sunne, and sports I sought at evening,
I that was once esteem'd for pleasant musique,
Am banisht now among the monstrous mountaines
Of huge despaire, and foule afflictions vallies,
Am growne a shrich-owle to my selfe each morning.

I that was once delighted every morning,
Hunting the wilde inhabiteres of forrests,
I that was once the musique of these vallies,
So darkened am, that all my day is evening,
Hart-broken so, that molebilles seeme high mountaines,
And fill the vales with cries in steed of musique.

Long since alas, my deadly Swannish musique
Hath made it selfe a crier of the morning,
And hath with wailing strength clim'd highest mountaines:
Long since my thoughts more desert be then forrests:
Long since I see my joyes come to their evening,
And state thrown downe to over-troden vallies.
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

Klauus. Long since the happie dwellers of these vallies,
    Have praid me leave my strange exclaiming musique,
    Which troubles their dayes worke, and joyes of evening:
Long since I hate the night, more hate the morning:
    Long since my thoughts chase me like beasts in forrests,
    And make me wish my selfe layd under mountaines.

Stephon. Me seemes I see the high and stately mountaines,
    Transforme themselves to lowe dejected vallies:
Me seemes I heare in these ill-changed forrests,
The Nightingales doe learne of Owles their musique:
    Me seemes I feele the comfort of the morning
    Turnde to the mortall serene of an evening.

Klauus. Me seemes I see a filthie clowdie evening,
    As soon as Sunne begins to clime the mountaines:
Me seemes I feele a noysome sent, the morning
    When I doo smell the flowers of these vallies:
Me seemes I heare, when I doo heare sweete musique,
The dreadfull cries of murdred men in forrests.

Stephon. I wish to fire the trees of all these forrests;
    I give the Sunne a last farewell each evening;
I curse the fidling finders out of Musick:
    With envie I doo hate the loftie mountaines;
And with despite despise the humble vallies:
    I doo detest night, evening, day, and morning.

Klauus. Curse to my selfe my prayer is, the morning:
    My fire is more, then can be made with forrests;
My state more base, then are the basest vallies:
    I wish no evenings more to see, each evening;
Shamed I have my selfe in sight of mountaines,
    And stoppe mine eares, lest I growe mad with Musick.

Stephon. For she, whose parts maintainde a perfect musique,
    Whose beautie shin’d more then the blushing morning,
Who much did passe in state the stately mountaines,
In straightnes past the Cedars of the forrests,
    Hath cast me wretch into eternall evening,
By taking her two Sunnes from these darke vallies.
For she, to whom compar'd, the Alpes are vallies,
She, whose lest word brings from the sphæares their musique,
At whose approach the Sunne rose in the evening,
Who, where she went, bare in her forhead morning,
Is gone, is gone from these our spoyle'd forrests,
Turning to desarts our best pastur'de mountaines.

These mountaines witnesse shall, so shall these vallies,
These forrests eke, made wretched by our musique,
Our morning hymne is this, and song at evening.

Elmane seing no body offer to fill the stage, as if her long restrained conceits had new burst out of prison, she thus desiring her voice should be accorded to nothing but Philocleas eares, laying fast holde on her face with her eyes, she sange these Sapphiques, speaking as it were to her owne Hope.

If mine eyes can speake to doo harty errande,
Or mine eyes language she doo hap to judge of,
So that eyes message be of her receaved,
Hope we do live yet.

But if eyes faile then, when I most doo need them,
Or if eyes language be not unto her knowne,
So that eyes message doo returne rejectted,
Hope we doo both dye.

Yet dying, and dead, doo we sing her honour;
So become our tombes monuments of her praise;
So becomes our losse the triumph of her gayne;
Hers be the glory.

If the sphæares senselesse doo yet hold a musique,
If the Swannes sweet voice be not heard, but at death,
If the mute timber when it hath the life lost,
Yeldeth a lutes tune.

Are then humane mindes priviledg'd so meanly,
As that hatefull death can abridge them of powre,
With the vowe of truth to recorde to all worldes,
That we be her spoiles?
Thus not ending, endes the due praise of her praise;
Fleshly vaile consumes; but a soule hath his life,
Which is helde in love, love it is, that hath joyned
Life to this our soule.

But if eyes can speake to doo barty errande,
Or mine eyes language she doo hap to judge of,
So that eyes message be of her receaved,
Hope we doo live yet.

What exclaiming praises Basilius gave to Zelmanes songe,
any man may ghesse, that knowes love is better then a
paire of spectacles to make every thing seeme greater, which is
seen through it: and then is it never tongue-tied, where fit
commendation (whereof womankind is so licorous) is offered
unto it. Yea, he fel prostrate on the ground, and thanked the
Gods, they had preserved his life so long, as to heare the very
musique they themselves used, in an earthly body. But the
wasting of the torches served as a watch unto them, to make
them see the time waste; and therefore the King (though un-
willing) rose from the seate, which he thought excellently setled
on the one side: and considering Zelmanes late hurte, persuwaded
her to take that farre-spent nights rest. And so of all sides
they went to recommend themselves to the elder brother of
death.

The end of the first Booke.
THE SECOND BOOKE
OF THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

CHAP. I.

The love-complaintes of Gynecia, Zelmane, and Basilius.

Her, and his wooing of Zelmane, and her shifting of both, to bemone her selfe.

In these pastorall pastimes a great number of dayes were sent to follow their flying predecessours, while the cup of poison (which was deeply tasted of this noble companie) had left no sinewe of theirs without mortally searching into it; yet never manifesting his venomous worke, till once, that the night (parting away angerly, that she could distill no more sleepe into the eies of lovers) had no sooner given place to the breaking out of the morning light, and the Sunne bestowed his beames upon the tops of the mountaines, but that the wofull Gynecia (to whom rest was no ease) had left her loathed lodging, and gotten her selfe into the solitary places those deserts were full of, going up and downe with such unquiet motions, as a griefed & hopeles mind is wont to bring forth. There appeered unto the eies of her judgement the evils she was like to run into, with ougly infamie waiting upon them: she felt the terrou[r]s of her owne conscience: she was guilty of a long exercised vertue, which made this vice the fuller of deformatie. The uttermost of the good she could aspire unto, was a mortall wound to her vexed spirits: and lastly no small part of her evils was, that she was wise to see her evils. In so much, that having a great while throwne her coûtenaunce ghastly about her (as if she had called all the powers of the worlde to witnesse of her wretched estate) at length casting up her warrie eyes to heaven, O Sunne (said she) whose unsploted light directs the steps of mortall mankind, art thou not ashamed to impart the clearnesse of thy presence to such a dust-creeping worme as I am? O you heavens (which continually keepe the course allotted unto you) can none of
your influences prevale so much upon the miserable Gynecia, as to make her preserve a course so lōg embraced by her? O deserts, deserts, how fit a guest am I for you, since my hart can people you with wild ravenous beastes, which in you are wanting? O Vertue, where doost thou hide thy selfe? or what hideous thing is this which doth eclips thee? or is it true that thou weart never but a vaine name, and no essentiall thing, which hast thus left thy professed servant, when she had most need of thy lovely presence? O imperfect proportiō of reason, which cā too much forsee, & too little prevent. Alas, alas (said she) if there were but one hope for all my paines, or but one excuse for all my faultinesse. But wretch that I am, my torment is beyond all succour, & my evill deserving doth exceed my evill fortune. For nothing els did my husband take this straunge resolutiō to live so solitarily: for nothing els have the winds delivered this straunge guest to my country: for nothing els have the destinies reserved my life to this time, but that only I (most wretched I) should become a plague to my selfe, and a shame to womankind. Yet if my desire (how unjust so ever it be) might take effect, though a thousand deaths followed it, and every death were followed with a thousand shames; yet should not my sepulcher receive me without some contentment. But alas, though sure I am, that Zelmane is such as can answere my love; yet as sure I am, that this disguising must needs come for some foretakē cocept. And then, wretched Gynecia, where cāst thou find any smal groūd-plot for hope to dwel upon? No, no, it is Philoclea his hart is set upon: it is my daughter I have borne to supplant me. But if it be so, the life I have given thee (ungratefull Philoclea) I will sooner with these handes bereave thee of, then my birth shall glory, she hath bereaved me of my desires. In shame there is no cofort, but to be beyond all bounds of shame.

Having spoke thus, she began to make a piteous war with hir faire haire, when she might heare (not far frō her) an extremely doleful voice, but so suppressed with a kind of whispering note, that she could not conceive the wordes distinctly. But "(as a lamentable tune is the sweetest musicke to a wofull mind) she drewe thether neere-away, in hope to find some cōpaniō of her misery. And as she passed on, she was stopped with a nüber of trees, so thickly placed together, that she was afraid

146
she should (with rushing thorow) stop the speach of the lamentable partie, which she was so desirous to understand. And therefore setting her downe as softly as she could (for she was now in distaunce to heare) she might first perceave a Lute excellently well played upon, and then the same dolefull voice accompanying it with these verses.

_In vaine, mine Eyes, you labour to amende_
_with flowing teares your fault of hasty sight:
Since to my hart her shape you so did sende;
That her I see, though you did lose your light.

_In vaine, my Hart, now you with sight are burnd,_
_With sighes you seeke to coole your botte desire:_
_Since sighes (into mine inward fornace turnd)_
_For bellowes serve to kindle more the fire._

_Reason, in vaine (now you have lost my hart)_
_My head you seeke, as to your strongest forte:_
_Since there mine eyes have played so false a parte,_
_That to your strength your foes have sure resorte._
_Then since in vaine I find were all my strife,_
_To this strange death I vainely yeeld my life._

The ending of the song served but for a beginning of new plaints, as if the mind (oppressed with too heavy a burthe of cares) was faine to discharge it self of al sides, & as it were, paint out the hideousnes of the paine in al sortes of coulours. For the wofull person (as if the lute had evill joined with the voice) threw it to the ground with such like words: Alas, poore Lute, how much art thou deceiv’d to think, that in my miseries thou couldst ease my woes, as in my careles times thou was wont to please my fancies? The time is changed, my Lute, the time is changed; and no more did my joyfull minde then receive every thing to a joyful consideration, then my carefull mind now makes echa thing tast like the bitter juyce of care. The evill is inward, my Lute, the evill is inward; which all thou doost doth serve but to make me thinke more freely off, and the more I thinke, the more cause I finde of thinking, but lesse of hoping. And alas, what is then thy harmony, but the sweete meats of sorrow? The discord of my thoughts, my Lute, doth
ill agree to the concord of thy strings; therefore be not ashamed to leave thy master, since he is not atraide to forsake himselfe.

And thus much spoke (in steed of a conclusion) was closed up with so harty a groning, that Gynecia could not refraine to shew her selfe, thinking such griefes could serve fitly for nothing, but her owne fortune. But as she came into the little Arbour of this sorrowfull musicke, her eyes met with the eyes of Zelmane, which was the party that thus had indited her selfe of miserie: so that either of them remained confused with a sodaine astonishment. Zelmane fearing, least shee had heard some part of those complaints, which shee had risen up that morning of purpose, to breath out in secret to her selfe. But Gynecia a great while stoode still, with a kind of dull amasement, looking stedfastly upon her: at length returning to some use of her selfe, shee began to aske Zelmane, what cause carried her so early abroad? But as if the opening of her mouth to Zelmane, had opened some great flood-gate of sorrow (wereth her heart could not abide the violat issue) she sanke to the ground, with her hands over her face, crying vehemently, Zelmane helpe me, O Zelmane have pittie on me. Zelmane ranne to her, marvelling what sodaine sicknesse had thus possessed her: and beginning to aske her the cause of her paine, and offering her service to be impoyled by her: Gynecia opening her eyes wildly upon her, pricked with the flames of love, and the torments of her owne conscience: O Zelmane, Zelmane, (said she) doost thou offer me phisicke, which art my onely poysone? Or wilt thou doo me service, which hath alredie brought me into eternall slaverie? Zelmane then knowing well at what marke she shot, yet loth to enter into it; Most excellent Ladie (said she) you were best retire your selfe into your lodging, that you the better may passe this sodaine fitte. Retire my selfe? (said Gynecia) If I had retyred my selfe into my selfe, when thou to me (unfortunate guest) canest to draw me from my selfe; blessed had I beene, and no neede had I had of this counsaile. But now alas, I am forced to flie to thee for succour, whom I accuse of all my hurt; and make thee judge of my cause, who art the onely author of my mischiefe. Zelmane the more astonished, the more she understood her, Madam (said she) whereof do you accuse me, that I will not cleere my selfe? Or wherein may I steed you, that you may not command me? Alas, answered Gynecia, what
shall I say more? Take pitty of me, O Zelmane, but not as Zelmane, and disguise not with me in words, as I know thou doost in apparell.

Zelmane was much troubled with that word, finding her selve brought to this streight. But as she was thinking what to answere her; they might see olde Basilius passe harde by them, without ever seeing them: complaing likewise of love verie freshly; and ending his complaint with this song, Love having renewed both his invention, and voyce.

Let not old age disgrace my high desire,
O heavenly soule, in humaine shape conteind:
Old wood inflam'de, doth yeld the bravest fire,
When yonger dooth in smoke his vertue spend.

Ne let white haires, which on my face doo grow,
Seeme to your eyes of a disgracefull bewe:
Since whitenesse doth present the sweetest show,
Which makes all eyes doo honour unto you.

Old age is wise and full of constant truth;
Old age well stayed from raunging humor lives:
Old age hath knowne what ever was in youth:
Old age orecome, the greater honour gives.
And to old age since you your selfe aspire,
Let not old age disgrace my high desire.

Which being done, he looked verie curiously upon himselfe, sometimes fetching a little skippe, as if he had said, his strength had not yet forsaken him. But Zelmane having in this time gotten leasure to thinke for an answere; looking upon Gynecia, as if she thought she did her some wrong: Madam (said she) I am not acquainted with those words of disguising, neither is it the profession of an Amazon, neither are you a partie with whom it is to be used. If my service may please you, impoy it, so long as you do me no wrong in misjudgeing of me. Alas Zelmane (said Gynecia) I perceive you know ful little, how percing the eyes are of a true lover. There is no one beame of those thoughts you have planted in me, but is able discerne a greater cloud then you doo goe in. Seeke not to conceale your selfe further from me, nor force not the passion of love into violent
extremities. Nowe was Zelmane brought to an exigent, when the king, turning his eyes that way thorow the trees, perceived his wife and mistres togethier: so that framing the most lovely countenance he could, he came straightway towards them; and at the first word (thanking his wife for having entertained Zelmane,) desired her she would now returne into the lodge, because hee had certaine matters of estate to impart to the Ladie Zelmane. The Queene (being nothing troubled with jelousie in that point) obeyed the kings commaundement; full of raging agonies, and determinatly bent, that as she would seeke all loving meanes to winne Zelmane, so she would stirre up terrible tragedies, rather then faile of her entent. And so went she from them to the lodge-ward, with such a battaile in her thoughts, and so deadly an overthrow given to her best resolutions, that even her bodie (where the fielde was fought) was oppressed withall: making a languishing sickness waite upon the triumph of passion; which the more it prevailed in her, the more it made her jelousie watchfull, both over her daughter, and Zelmane; having ever one of them entrusted to her owne eyes.

But as soone as Basilius was ridde of his wives presence, falling downe on his knees, O Lady (said he) which hast onely had the power to stirre up againe those flames which had so long layn deade in me; see in me the power of your beautie; which can make old age come to aske counsaille of youth; and a Prince uncoquered, to become a slave to a stranger. And whè you see that power of yours, love that at lest in me, since it is yours, although of me you see nothing to be loved. Worthy Prince (answered Zelmane, taking him up from his kneeling) both your manner, and your speech are so straunge unto me, as I know not how to answere it better then with silence. If silence please you (said the king) it shal never displease me, since my heart is wholly pledged to obey you: otherwise if you would vouchsafe mine eares such happinesse, as to heare you, they shall convoy your words to such a mind, which is with the humblest degree of reverèce to receive them. I disdaine not to speake to you (mightie Prince said Zelmane,) but I disdaine to speake to any matter which may bring my honor into question. And therewith, with a brave counterfeited scorne she departed from the king; leaving him not so sorie for his short answere, as proud in
himself that he had broken the matter. And thus did the king (feeding his minde with those thoughts) passe great time in writing verses, & making more of himselfe, then he was wont to doo: that with a little helpe, he would have growne into a prettie kind of dotage.

But Zelmane being ridde of this loving, but little-loved company, Alas (said she) poore Pyrocles, was there ever one, but I, that had received wrong, and could blame no body? that having more then I desire, am still in want of that I woulde? Truly Love, I must needes say thus much on thy behalfe; thou hast implored my love there, where all love is deserved; and for re-compence hast sent me more love then ever I desired. But what wilt thou doo Pyrocles? which way canst thou finde to rid thee of thy intricate troubles? To her whom I would be knowne to, I live in darkenesse: and to her am revealed, from whom I would be most secreat. What shift shall I finde against the diligent love of Basilius? what shield against the violent passions of Gynecia? And if that be done, yet how am I the neerer to quench the fire that consumes me? Wel, well, sweete Philoclea, my whole confidence must be builded in thy divine spirit, which cannot be ignorant of the cruell wound I have received by you.

CHAP. 2.

1Dametas-his enstrueting of Dorus. 2Zelmanes discourse to Dorus of her difficulties; 3& his to her of his successe in love. 4His love-suits made to Mopsa, meant to Pamela: with their answeres.

But as sicke folkes, when they are alone, thinke companie would relieve them, & yet having company do find it noysome; changing willingly outward objects, when indeed the evill is inward: So poore Zelmane was no more weery of Basilius, then she was of her selfe, when Basilius was gone: and ever the more, the more she turned her eyes to become her owne judges. Tyred wherewith, she longed to meete her friende Dorus; that upon the shoulders of friendship she might lay the burthen of
sorrow: and therefore went toward the other lodge: where among certaine Beeches she found Dorus, appareled in flanen, with a goats skin cast upon him, & a garland of Laurell mixt with Cypres leaves on his head, wayting on his master Dametas, who at that time was teching him how with his sheepooke to catch a wanton Lambe, & with the same to cast a little clod at any one that strayed out of cōpanie. And while Dorus was practising, one might see Dametas hold his hand under his girdle behind him, nodding from the wast upwards, & swearing he never knew man go more aukewardly to worke: & that they might talke of booke-learning what they would; but for his part, he never saw more unfeatlie fellowes, then great clearks were.

2 But Zelmanes comming saved Dorus from further chiding. And so she beginning to speake with him of the number of his masters sheepe, and which Province of Arcadia bare the finest wooll, drewe him on to follow her in such countrie discourses, till (being out of Dametas hearing) with such vehemencie of passion, as though her harte would clime into her mouth, to take her tongues office, she declared unto him, upon what briers the roses of her affections grew: how time still seemed to forget her, bestowing no one houre of comfort upon her; she remaining stil in one plight of ill fortune, saving so much worse, as continuance of evill dooth in it selfe increase evill. Alas my Dorus (said she) thou seest how long and languishingly the weekes are paste over us since our laste talking. And yet am I the same, miserable I, that I was: onely stronger in longing, and weaker in hoping. Then fell she to so pitifull a declaration of the insupportablenes of her desires, that Dorus eares (not able to shew what wounds that discourse gave unto them) procured his eyes with teares to give testimonie, how much they suffered for her suffering: till passion (a most cumbersome guest to it selfe) made Zelmane (the sooner to shake it of) earnestly intreate Dorus, that he also (with like freedome of discourse) would bestow a Mappe of his little worlde, upon her; that she might see, whether it were troubled with such unhabitable climes of colde despaire, and hotte rages, as hers was. And so walking under a fewe Palme trees, (which being loving in their own nature, seemed to give their shadow the willinglier, because they held discourse of love) Dorus thus entred to the description of his fortune.

152
ARCADIA. LIB. 2.

Alas (said he) deare Cosin, that it hath pleased the high powers to throwe us to such an estate, as the onely entercourse of our true friendshipe, must be a bartring of miseries. For my parte, I must confesse indeede, that from a huge darkenes of sorrowes, I am crept (I cannot say to a lightsomnes, but) to a certain dawning, or rather, peeping out of some possibilitie of comfort: But woe is me, so farre from the marke of my desires, that I rather thinke it such a light, as comes through a small hole to a dungeon, that the miserable caitife may the better re-member the light, of which he is deprived: or like a scholler, who is onely come to that degree of knowledge, to finde him selfe utterly ignorant.

But thus stands it with me: After that by your meanes I was exalted to serve in yonder blessed lodge, for a while I had, in the furnace of my agonies, this refreshing; that (because of the service I had done in killing of the Beare) it pleased the Princesse (in whom indeede statelines shines through courtesie) to let fall some gratious looke upon me. Sometimes to see my exercises, sometimes to heare my songs. For my parte, my harte woulde not suffer me to omitte any occasion, whereby I might make the incomparable Pamela, see how much extraordi-narie devotion I bare to her service: and withall, strive to appeare more worthy in her sight; that small desert, joyned to so great affection, might prevale something in the wisest Ladie. But too well (alas) I founde, that a shepheards service was but considered of as from a shepearde, and the acceptation limited to no further proportion, then of a good servant. And when my countenance had once given notice, that there lay affection under it, I sawe straight, Majesty (sitting in the throne of Beautie) draw foorth such a sworde of just disdaine, that I remayned as a man thunder-striken; not daring, no not able, to beholde that power. Now, to make my estate knowne, seemed againe impossible, by reason of the suspitiousnes of Dametas, Miso, and my young Mistresse, Mopsa. For, Dametas (according to the constitution of a dull head) thinkes no better way to shewe him selfe wise, then by suspecting every thing in his way. Which suspition Miso (for the hoggish shrewdnesse of her braine) and Mopsa (for a very unlikely envie she hath stumbled upon, against the Princesses unspeakeable beautie) were very gladde to execute. So that I (finding my service by this meanes lightlie
regarded, my affection despised, and my selfe unknown) remained no fuller of desire, then voyde of comfort how to come to my desire. Which (alas) if these trees could speak, they might well witnesse. For, many times have I stoode here, bewailing my selfe unto them: many times have I, leaning to yonder Palme, admired the blessednes of it, that could beare Love without sence of paine. Many times, when my masters cattle came hether to chewe their cudde, in this fresh place, I might see the young Bull testifie his love. But how? with proud lookes, and joyfulnes. O wretched mankind (said I then to my selfe) in whom witte (which should be the governor of his welfare) becomes the traitor to his blessednes. These beasts, like children to nature, inherit her blessings quietly; we, like bastards, are layd abroad, even as foundlinges to be rayned up by griefe and sorrow. Their mindes grudge not their bodies comfort, nor their sences are letted from enjoying their objects: we have the impediments of honor, and the torments of conscience. Truely in such cogitatiōs have I somtimes so long stood, that me thought my feete began to grow, into the ground, with such a darkenes and heavines of minde, that I might easilie have bene perswaded to have resigned over my very essence. But Love, (which one time layth burthens, another time giveth wings) when I was at the lowest of my downward thoughts, pulled up my harte to remēber, that nothing is atchieved before it be throughlie attempted; and that lying still doth never goe forward: and that therefore it was time, now or never, to sharpen my invention, to pearce thorow the hardnes of this enterprise; never ceasing to assemble al my conceites, one after the other; how to manifest both my minde and estate. Till at last, I lighted and resolved on this way, which yet perchaunce you will think was a way rather to hide it.

4 I began to counterfeite the extremest love towards Mopsa, that might be: and as for the love, so lively it was indeed within me, (although to another subject) that litle I needed to counterfeit any notable demonstrations of it: and so making a contrariety the place of my memory, in her fowlnes I beheld Pamela's fayrenesse, still looking on Mopsa, but thinking on Pamela; as if I saw my Sunne shine in a puddled water: I cryed out of nothing but Mopsa: to Mopsa my attendance was directed: to Mopsa the best fruites I coulde gather were
brought: to Mopsa it seemed still that mine eye conveyed my tongue. So that Mopsa was my saying; Mopsa was my singing; Mopsa, (that is only suitable in laying a foule complexion upon a filthy favour, setting foorth both in sluttishnesse) she was the load-starre of my life, she the blessing of mine eyes, she the overthrowe of my desires, and yet the recompence of my overthrowe; she the sweetnesse of my harte, even sweetning the death, which her sweetnesse drew upon me. In summe, what soever I thought of Pamela, that I saide of Mopsa; whereby as I gatte my maisters good-will, who before spited me, fearing lest I should winne the Princesse favour from him, so did the same make the Princesse be better content to allow me her presence: whether indeede it were, that a certaine sparke of noble indignation did rise in her, not to suffer such a baggage to winne away any thing of hers, how meanely soever she reputed of it; or rather (as I thinke) my words being so passionate; and shooting so quite contrarie from the markes of Mopsaes worthinesse, she perceived well enough, whither they were directed: and therefore being so masked, she was contented, as a sporte of witte to attend them. Whereupon one day determining to find some means to tel (as of a third person) the tale of mine owne love, and estate, finding Mopsa (like a Cuckoo by a Nightingale) alone with Pamela, I came in unto them, and with a face (I am sure) full of cloudly fancies, tooke a harpe, and songe this songe.

Since so mine eyes are subject to your sight,
That in your sight they fixed have my braine;
Since so my harte is filled with that light,
That onely light doth all my life maintaine;

Since in sweete you all goods so richly raigne,
That where you are no wished good can want;
Since so your living image lives in me,
That in my selfe your selfe true love doth plant;
How can you him unworthy then decree,
In whose chiefe parte your worthes implanted be?

The song being ended, which I had often broken of in the middest with grievous sighes, which overtooke every verse I sange, I let fall my harpe fro me; & casting my eie sometime
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

upon Mopsa, but setting my sight principally upon Pamela, And is it the onely fortune most bewtiful Mopsa (said I) of wretched Dorus, that fortune should be measure of his mind? Am I onely he that because I am in miserie, more miserie must be laid upon me? must that which should be cause of compassion, become an argument of crueltie against me? Alas excellent Mopsa, consider, that a vertuous Prince requires the life of his meanest subject, and the heavenly Sunne disdaines not to give light to the smallest worme. O Mopsa, Mopsa, if my hart could be as manifest to you, as it is uncomfortable to me, I doubt not the height of my thoughts should well countervail the lownesse of my qualitie. Who hath not heard of the greatnes of your estate? who seeth not, that your estate is much excelled with that sweet uniting of al beauties, which remaineth & dwelleth with you? who knowes not, that al these are but ornamëts of that divine sparke within you, which being descëded from heaven could not els-where picke out so sweete a mansion? But if you will knowe what is the bande that ought to knit all these excellencies together, it is a kinde of mercyfulnesse to such a one, as is in his soule devoted to those perfections. Mopsa (who already had had a certaine smackring towards me) stood all this while with her hand sometimes before her face, but most cōmonly with a certaine speciall grace of her owne, wagging her lips, and grinning in steede of smiling: but all the wordes I could get of her, was, wringing her waste, and thrusting out her chinne, In faith you jest with me: you are a merry man indeede. But the ever-pleasing Pamela (that well found the Comedie would be marred, if she did not helpe Mopsa to her parte) was cōtent to urge a little further of me. Maister Dorus (said the faire Pamela) me thinks you blame your fortune very wrongfully, since the fault is not in Fortune, but in you that cannot frame your selffe to your fortune: and as wrongfully do require Mopsa to so great a disparagement as to her Fathers servaunt; since she is not worthy to be loved, that hath not some feeling of her owne worthines. I staied a good while after her words, in hope she would have continued her speech (so great a delight I receaved in hearing her) but seeing her say no further, (with a quaking all over my body) I thus answered her. Ladie, most worthie of all dutie, how falles it out that you in whom all vertue shines, will take the patronage of fortune, the onely
rebellious handmaide against vertue? Especially, since before your eyes, you have a pittifull spectacle of her wickednesse, a forlorn creature, which must remaine not such as I am, but such as she makes me, since she must be the ballance of worthinesse or disparagement. Yet alas, if the condemned man (even at his death) have leave to speake, let my mortall wound purchase thus much consideration; since the perfections are such in the partie I love, as the feeling of them cannot come into any unnable hart; shall that harte, which doth not onely feele them, but hath all the working of his life placed in them, shall that hart I saie, lifted up to such a height, be counted base? O let not an excellent spirit doo it selfe such wrong, as to thinke, where it is placed, imbraced, and loved; there can be any unworthinesse, since the weakest mist is not easlier driven away by the Sunne, then that is chased away with so high thoughts. I will not denie (answered the gratious Pamela) but that the love you beare to Mopsa, hath brought you to the consideration of her vertues, and that consideration may have made you the more vertuous, and so the more worthie: But even that then (you must confesse) you have received of her, and so are rather gratefully to thanke her, then to presse any further, till you bring something of your owne wherby to claime it. And truely Dorus, I must in Mopsaes behalfe say thus much to you, that if her beauties have so overtaken you, it becomes a true Love to have your harte more set upon her good then your owne, and to beare a tenderer respect to her honour, then your satisfaction. Now by my hallidame, Madame (said Mopsa, throwing a great number of sheeps eyes upon me) you have even touched mine owne minde to the quicke, forsooth. I (finding that the policie that I had used, had at lest wise procured thus much happinesse unto me, as that I might even in my Ladies presence, discover the sore which had deeply festered within me, and that she could better conceive my reasons applied to Mopsa, then she would have vouchsafed them, whilst her selfe was a partie) thought good to pursue on my good beginning, using this fit occasion of Pameleas wit, and Mopsaes ignorance. Therfore with an humble pearcing eye, looking upon Pamela, as if I had rather bene cödemned by her mouth, then highly exalted by the other, turning my selfe to Mopsa, but keeping mine eye where it was, faire Mopsa (said I) well doo I finde by
the wise knitting together of your answere, that any disputatio
I can use is asmuch too weake, as I unworthy. I find my love
shalbe proved no love, without I leve to love, being too unfit a
vessell in whō so high thoughts should be engraved. Yet since
the Love I beare you, hath so joyned it self to the best part of
my life, as the one cānot depart, but that th’other will follow,
before I seeke to obey you in making my last passage, let me
know which is my unworthines, either of mind, estate, or both?
Mopsa was about to say, in neither; for her hart I thinke tūbled
with over much kindnesse, when Pamela with a more favour-
able countenance thē before (finding how apt I was to fall into
dispare) told me, I might therein have answered my selfe; for
besides that it was graunted me, that the inward feeling of
Mopsaes perfectiōs had greatly beautified my minde, there was
none could denie, but that my minde and bodie deserved great
allowance. But Dorus (sayd she) you must be so farre maister
of your love, as to consider, that since the judgement of the
world stands upon matter of fortune, and that the sexe of
womankind of all other is most bound to have regardfull eie to
mens judgements, it is not for us to play the philosophers, in
seeking out your hidden vertues: since that, which in a wise
prince would be coūted wisdome, in us wil be taken for a light-
grounded affectiō: so is not one thing, one, done by divers
persons. There is no man in a burning fever feeleth so great
contentmēt in cold water greedily received (which assoone as
the drinke ceaseth, the rage reneweth) as poore I found my soule
refreshed with her sweetly pronounced words; & newly, & more
violetly againe enflamed, assoone as she had closed up her
delightfull speach, with no lesse wel graced silence. But re-
mebring in my self that aswell the Souldier dieth which
standeth still, as he that gives the bravest onset: & seeing
that to the making up of my fortune, there wanted nothing so
much as the making knowne of mine estate, with a face wel wit-
nessing how deeply my soule was possessed, & with the most
submissive behavior, that a thralled hart could expresse, evē as
my words had bene too thicke for my mouth, at lēgh spake to
this purpose. Alas, most worthy Princesse (said I) & do not then
your owne sweet words sufficiētly testifie, that there was never
mā could have a juster actiō against filthy fortune, thē I, since
all other things being granted me, her blindnesse is my onely let?
O heavenly God, I would either she had such eyes as were able to discerne my deserts, or I were blind not to see the daily cause of my misfortune. But yet (said I) most honoured Lady, if my miserable speeches have not already cloied you, & that the verie presence of such a wretch become not hatefull in your eyes; let me reply thus much further against my mortall sentence, by telling you a storie, which happened in this same country long since (for woes make the shortest time seeme long) whereby you shall see that my estate is not so contemptible, but that a Prince hath bene content to take the like upon him, and by that onely hath aspired to enjoy a mightie Princesse. Pamela gratiously harkened, and I told my tale in this sort.

CHAP. 3.

Dorus—his tale of his owne education, travaile, enamoring, metamorphosing, saving from sea, and being Musidorus. His octave. Pamela and Mopsas answere to his suit. His present to them; and perplexitie in himselfe.

IN the countrie of Thessalia, (alas why name I that accursed country, which brings forth nothing, but matters for tragedies? but name it I must) in Thessalia (I say) there was (well may I say, there was) a Prince (no, no Prince, who bondage wholly possessed; but yet accounted a Prince, and) named Musidorus. O Musidorus, Musidorus; but to what serve exclamations, where there are no eares to receive the sounde? This Musidorus, being yet in the tendrest age, his worthy father paiied to nature (with a violent death) her last dueties, leaving his childe to the faith of his friends, and the proofe of time: death gave him not such pangs as the foresight-fulle care hee had of his silly successour. And yet if in his foresight he could have seene so much, happie was that good Prince in his timely departure, which barred him from the knowledge of his sonnes miseries, which his knowledge could neither have prevented, nor relieved. The young Musidorus (being thus, as for the first pledge of the destinies good will, deprived of his principall stay) was yet for some yeares after (as if the starres would breath themselves for a
greater mischiefe) lulled up in as much good luck, as the heedful love of his dolefull mother, and the florishing estate of his country could breed unto him.

But when the time now came, that miserie seemed to be ripe for him, because he had age to know misery, I thinke there was a conspiracy in all heavenly & earthly things, to frame fit occasion to leade him unto it. His people (to whom all forraine matters in fortime were odious) beganne to wish in their beloved Prince, experience by travaile: his deare mother (whose eyes were held open, onely with the joy of looking upon him) did now dispense with the comfort of her widowhead life, desiring the same her subjectes did, for the increase of her sonnes worthinesse. And here-to did Musidorus owne vertue (see how vertue can be a minister to mischiefe) sufficiently provoke him: for indeed thus much I must say for him, although the likenesse of our mishaps makes me presume to patterne my selfe unto him) that well-doing was at that time his scope, from which no faint pleasure could with-hold him. But the present occasion which did knit all this togither, was his uncle the king of Macedon; who having lately before gottē such victories, as were beyond expectation, did at this time send both for the Prince his sonne (brought up togither, to avoid the warres, with Musidorus) and for Musidorus himselfe, that his joy might be the more full, having such partakers of it. But alas, to what a sea of miseries my plaintfull toong doth lead me; and thus out of breath, rather with that I thought, then that I said, I stayed my speech, till Pamela shewing by countenance that such was her pleasure, I thus continued it. These two young Princes to satisfie the king, tooke their way by sea, towards Thrace, whether they would needs go with a Navie to succour him: he being at that time before Byzantium with a mighty Army beseeing it; where at that time his court was. But when the conspired heavens had gotten this Subject of their wrath upon so fit a place as the sea was, they straighth began to breath out in boystrous windes some part of their malice against him; so that with the losse of all his Navie, he onely with the Prince his cosin, were cast a land, farre off from the place whether their desires would have guided them. O cruell winds in your unconsiderate rages, why either beganne you this furie, or why did you not end it in his end? But your cruelty was such, as you would spare his life
for many deathfull torments. To tel you what pittiful mishaps fell to the young Prince of Macedon his cosen, I should too much fill your eares with strange horrors; neither will I stay upon those laborsome advêtures, nor loathsome misadventures, to which, & through which his fortune and courage conducted him; My speach hastneth it self to come to the ful-point of Musidorus his infortunes. For as we finde the most pestilët diseases do gather into themselves al the infectio, with which the body before was annoyed; so did his last misery embrace in the extremitie of it self all his former mischiefes.

Arcadia, Arcadia was the place prepared to be the stage of his endlesse overthrow. Arcadia was, (alas well might I say it is) the charmed circle, where all his spirits for ever should be enchanted. For here (and no where els) did his infected eyes make his minde know, what power heavenly beauty hath to throw it downe to hellish agonies. Here, here did he see the Arcadian Kings eldest daughter, in whom he forthwith placed so all his hopes of joy, and joyfull parts of his heart, that he left in himselfe nothing, but a maze of longing, and a dungeon of sorrow. But alas what can saying make them beleive, whom seeing cannot perswade? Those paines must be felt before they ca be understood; no outward utterance can command a conceit. Such was as then the state of the King, as it was no time by direct meanes to seeke her. And such was the state of his captived wil, as he could delay no time of seeking her.

In this intangled case, he cloathed himselfe in a shepherds weede, that under the basenesse of that forme, he might at lest have free accesse to feed his eyes with that, which should at length eate up his hart. In which doing, thus much without doubt he hath manifested, that this estate is not always to be rejected, since under that vaile there may be hidden things to be esteemed. And if he might with taking on a shepherds look cast up his eyes to the fairest Princesse Nature in that time created; the like, nay the same desire of mine need no more to be disdained, or held for disgracefull. But now alas mine eyes waxe dimme, my toong beginnes to falter, and my hart to want force to help, either with the feeling remembrance I have, in what heape of miseries the caitife Prince lay at this time buried. Pardon therfore, most excellent Princesse, if I cut off the course of my dolorous tale, since if I be understood, I have said enough,
for the defence of my basenesse; and for that which after might befall to that patterne of ill fortune, (the matters are monstrous for my capacitie) his hatefull destinies must best declare their owne workemanship.

Thus having delivered my tale in this perplexed manner, to the end the Princesse might judge that he ment himselle, who spake so feelingly; her aunswere was both strange, and in some respect comfortable. For would you thinke it? she hath heard heretofore of us both, by meanes of the valiant prince Plangus, and particularly of our casting away: which she (following my owne stile) thus delicately brought foorth. You have told (said she) Dorus, a prettie tale; but you are much deceived in the latter end of it. For the prince Musidorus with his cosen Pyrocles did both perish upon the coast of Laconia; as a noble gentleman, called Plangus (who was well acquainted with the historie) did assure my father. O how that speach of hers did poure joyes in my hart? ò blessed name (thought I) of mine, since thou hast bene in that toong, and passed through those lips, though I can never hope to approch them. As for Pyrocles (said I) I will not denie it, but that he is perished: (which I said, least sooner suspition might arise of your being, then your selfe would have it) and yet affirmed no lye unto her, since I onely said, I would not deny it. But for Musidorus (said I) I perceive indeed you have neither heard or read the story of that unhappy Prince; for this was the verie objection, that which peerelesse Princesse did make unto him, whè he sought to appeare such as he was before her wisdome: and thus as I have read it faire written in the certaintie of my knowledge he might answere her, that indeed the ship wherein he came, by a treason was perished, and therfore that Plangus might easily be deceaved: but that he himselle was cast upon the coast of Laconia, where he was taken up by a couple of shepheards, who lived in those dayes famous; for that both loving one faire maide, they yet remained constant friends; one of whose songs not long since was song before you by the sheheard Lamon, and brought by them to a noble-mans house, neere Mantinea, whose sonne had a little before his mariadge, bene taken prisoner, and by the helpe of this Prince, Musidorus (though naming himselle by another name) was delivered. Now these circumlocutions I did use, because of the one side I
knewe the Princesse would knowe well the parties I ment; and of the other, if I should have named Strephon, Claius, Kalander, and Clitophon, perhappes it would have rubd some conjecture into the heavie heade of Mistresse Mopsa.

And therfore (said I) most divine Lady, he justly was to argue against such suspitions; that the Prince might easily by those parties be satisfied, that upon that wrack such a one was taken up: and therefore that Plangus might well erre, who knew not of anyes taking up againe: that he was so preserved, brought good tokens to be one of the two, chiefe of that wracked companie: which two since Plangus knew to be Musidorus and Pyrocles, he must needes be one of them, although (as I said) upon a foretakenn vowe, he was otherwise at that time called. Besides, the Princesse must needes judge, that no lesse than a Prince durst undertake such an enterprise, which (though he might gette the favour of the Princesse) he could never defend with lesse the a Princes power, against the force of Arcadia. Lastly, (said he) for a certain demonstration, he presumed to shew unto the Princesse a marke he had on his face, as I might (said I) shew this of my neck to the rare Mopsa: and withall, shewed my necke to them both, where (as you know) there is a redde spotte, bearing figure (as they tell me) of a Lyons pawe, that she may ascertaine her selfe, that I am Menalcas brother. And so did he, beseeching her to send some one she might trust, into Thessalia, secretly to be advertised, whether the age, the complexion, and particularly that notable signe, did not fully agree with this Prince Musidorus. Doo you not know further (saide she, with a setled countenance, not accusing any kind of inwarde motion) of that storie. Alas no, (said I) for even here the Historiographer stopped, saying, The rest belonged to Astrologie. And therewith, thinking her silent imaginations began to worke upon somewhat, to mollifie them (as the nature of Musick is to do) and withal, to shew what kind of shepheard I was, I took up my Harpe, and sang these few verses.

My sheepe are thoughts, which I both guide and serve: 7
Their pasture is faire billes of fruitlesse Love:
On barren sweetes they feeede, and feeding sterve:
I waile their lotte, but will not other prove.
My sheepebooke is wanne hope, which all upholdes:
My weedes, Desire, cut out in endlesse foldes.
What woull my sheepe shall beare, whiles thus they live,
In you it is, you must the judgement give.

And then, partly to bring Mopsa againe to the matter (lest she should too much take heed to our discourses) but principally, if it were possible, to gather some comfort out of her answares, I kneeled downe to the Princesse, and humblie besought her to move Mopsa in my behalfe, that she would unarme her hart of that steely resistâence against the sweet blowes of Love: that since all her parts were decked with some particular ornamet; her face with beautie, her head with wisdome, her eyes with majestie, her countenance with gracefulness, her lippes with lovelines, her tongue with victorie; that she woulde make her hart the throne of pitie, being the most excellent rayment of the most excellent part.

Pamela, without shew either of favour or disdaine, either of heeding or neglecting what I had said, turned her speech to Mopsa, and with such a voice and action, as might shewe she spake of a matter which little did concerne her, Take heede to your selfe (saide she) Mopsa, for your shepheard can speake well: but truely, if he doo fully proove himselfe such as he saith, I mean, the honest shepheard Menalchus his brother, and heire, I know no reason why you shoulde thinke scorne of him. Mopsa though (in my conscience) she were even then farre spent towards me, yet she answered her, that for all my queint speeches, she would keepe her honestie close inough: And that as for the highe way of matrimony, she would steppe never a foote further, till my maister her father had spoken the whole word him selfe, no she would not. But ever and anon turning her muzzell toward me, she threwe such a prospect upon me, as might well have given a surfet to any weake lovers stomacke. But Lord what a foole am I, to mingle that drivels speeches among my noble thoughts? but because she was an Actor in this Tragedie, to geve you a ful knowledge, and to leave nothing (that I can remember) unrepealed.

Now the Princesse being about to withdrawe her selfe from us, I tooke a Jewell, made in the figure of a Crab-fish, which, because it lookes one way and goes another, I thought it did
fitly patterne out my looking to Mopsa, but bending to Pamela: The word about it was, By force, not choice; and still kneeling, besought the Princesse that she would vouchsafe to give it Mopsa, and with the blessednes of her hande to make acceptable unto her that toye which I had founde, followinge of late an acquaintaunce of mine at the plowe. For (sayd I) as the earth was turned up, the plow-share lighted upon a great stone: we puld that up, & so found both that, and some other pretty things which we had devided betwixt us.

Mopsa was benummed with joy when the Princesse gave it to her: but in the Princesse I could finde no apprehension of what I either said or did, but with a calme carelesnesse letting each thing slide, justly as we doo by their speeches, who neither in matter nor person doo any way belong unto us) which kind of colde temper, mixt with that lightning of her naturall majestie, is of all others most terrible unto me: for yet if I found she contemned me, I would desperatly labour both in fortune and vertue to overcome it; if she onely misdoubted me, I were in heaven; for quickly I woulde bring sufficient assurance: lastly, if she hated me, yet I should know what passion to deale with; and either with infinitenes of desert I would take away the fewell from that fire; or if nothing would serve, then I would give her my hart-bloud to quench it. But this cruel quietenes, neither retiring to mislike, nor proceeding to favour; gratious, but gratious still after one maner; all her courtesies having this engraven in them, that what is done, is for vertues sake, not for the parties; ever keeping her course like the Sun, who neither for our prayses, nor curses, will spare or stoppe his horses. This (I say) heavenlines of hers, (for how so ever my miserie is I cannot but so entitle it) is so impossible to reach unto, that I almost begin to submitte my selfe to the tyrannie of despaire, not knowing any way of perswasiō, where wisdome seemes to be unsensible. I have appeared to her eyes, like my selfe, by a device I used with my master, perswading him, that we two might put on a certaine rich apparel I had provided, and so practise some thing on horsback before Pamela, telling him, it was apparell I had gotten for playing well the part of a King in a Tragedie at Athens: my horse indeed was it I had left at Menalca's house, and Dametas got one by friendship out
of the Princes stable. But how soever I show, I am no base bodie, all I doo is but to beate a rocke and get some.

CHAP. 4.

1 Basilius his hauking. 2 Gynecias hurte by Dametas overturning her coache. 3 Her jelousie over Zelmane. Philocleas 4 love-passions, 5 vowe of chastitie, 6 revocation, 7 lamentation.

But as Dorus was about to tell further, Dametas (who came whistling, & counting upon his fingers, how many loade of hay his seventeen fat oxen eat up in a yeare) desired Zelmane from the King that she would come into the lodge, where they stayed for her. Alas (said Dorus, taking his leave) the sum is this, that you may wel find you have beate your sorrow against such a wall, which with the force of rebound may wel make your sorrow ströger. But Zelmane turning her speach to Dametas, I shall grow (said she) skilfull in country matters, if I have often conference with your servaunt. In sooth (answered Dametas with a gracelesse skorne) the Lad may prove wel enough, if he oversoon thinke not too well of himselfe, and will beare away that he heareth of his elders. And therewith as they walked to the other lodge, to make Zelmane find she might have spēt her time better with him, he began with a wilde Methode to runne over all the art of husbandrie: especially imploying his tongue about well dunging of a fielde: while poore Zelmane yeelded her eares to those tedious strokes, not warding them so much as with any one answere, till they came to Basilius, and Gynecia, who attēded for her in a coach to carry her abroad to see some sportes prepared for her. Basilius and Gynecia sitting in the one ende, placed her at the other, with her left side to Philoclea. Zelmane was moved in her minde, to have kissed their feete for the favour of so blessed a seate: for the narrownes of the coach made them joine from the foote to the shoulders very close together; the truer touch wherof though it were barred by their envious apparell, yet as a perfect Magnes, though put in an ivorie boxe, will
thorow the boxe send forth his imbraced vertue to a beloved needle; so this imparadised neighbourhood made Zelmanes soule cleave unto her, both thorow the ivory case of her body, and the apparell which did over-clowd it. All the bloud of Zelmanes body stirring in her, as wine will do when suger is hastely put into it, seeking to sucke the sweetnes of the beloved guest; her hart, like a lion new imprisoned, seeing him that restraines his libertie, before the grate; not panting, but striving violently (if it had bene possible) to have leapt into the lappe of Philoclea. But Dametas, even then proceeding from being maister of a carte, to be doctor of a coach, not a little proud in himselfe, that his whippe at that time guided the rule of Arcadia, drave the coach (the cover whereof was made with such joints, that as they might (to avoid the weather) pull it up close when they listed, so when they would they might put each ende downe, and remaine as discovered & open sighted as on horsebacke) till upon the side of the forrest they had both greyhounds, spaniels, and hounds: whereof the first might seeme the Lords, the second the Gentlemen, and the last the Yeomen of dogges; a cast of Merlins there was besides, which flying of a gallant height over certaine bushes, would beate the birdes (that rose) downe unto the bushes, as Faulcons will doo wilde-foule over a river. But the sporte which for that daie Basilius would principallie shewe to Zelmane, was the mountie at a Hearne, which getting up on his wagling winges with paine, till he was come to some height, (as though the aire next to the earth were not fit for his great bodie to flie thorow) was now growen to diminish the sight of himself, & to give example to great persons, that the higher they be, the lesse they should show: whē a Jerfaulcon was cast of after her, who straight spyng where the pray was, fixing her eie with desire, & guiding her wing by her eie, used no more strength then industry. For as a good builder to a hie tower will not make his stayre upright, but wending almost the ful cōpasse about, that the steepnes be the more unsensible: so she, seing the towring of her pursued chase, went circkling, & cōpasseing about, rising so with the lesse sence of rising; & yet finding that way scantly serve the greedines of her hast, as an ambitious body wil go far out of the direct way, to win to a point of height which he desires; so would she (as it were) turne taile to the Heron, & flie quite
out another way, but all was to returne in a higher pitche; which once gotten, she would either beate with cruell assaults the Heron, who now was driven to the best defence of force, since flight would not serve; or els claspig with him, come downe together, to be parted by the overpartial beholders.

Divers of which flights Basilius shewing to Zelmane, thus was the richesse of the time spent, and the day deceased before it was thought of, till night like a degenerating successour made his departure the better remembred. And therefore (so constrained) they willed Dametas to drive homeward, who (halfe sleeping, halfe musing about the mending of a vine-presse) guided the horses so ill, that the wheele comming over a great stub of a tree, it overturned the coach. Which though it fell violently upon the side where Zelmane & Gynecia sat, yet for Zelmanes part, she would have bene glad of the fall, which made her beare the sweete burthen of Philoclea, but that she feared she might receave some hurt. But indeede neither she did, nor any of the rest, by reason they kept their armes and legs within the coach, saving Gynecia, who with the onely bruze of the fall had her shoulder put out of joint; which though by one of the Faulkeners cunning, it was set well againe, yet with much paine was she brought to the lodge; and paine (fetching his ordinary companion, a fever with him) drave her to entertaine them both in her bedde.

But neither was the fever of such impatient heate, as the inwarde plague-sore of her affection, nor the paine halfe so noysome, as the jealousie she conceaved of her daughter Philoclea, lest this time of her sicknesse might give apt occasion to Zelmane, whom she misdoubted. Therefore she called Philoclea to her, and though it were late in the night, commaunded her in her eare to go to the other lodge, and send Miso to her, with whom she would speake, and she lie with her sister Pamela. The meane while Gynecia kepe Zelmane with her, because she would be sure, she should be out of the lodge, before she licenced Zelmane. Philoclea not skild in any thing better then obedience, went quietly downe; and the Moone then full (not thinking skorne to be a torche-bearer to such beautie) guided her steppes, whose motions bare a minde, which bare in it selfe farre more stirring motions. And alas (sweete Philoclea) how hath my penne till now forgot thy passions, since to thy
memorie principally all this long matter is intended? pardon the slacknes to come to those woes, which having caused in others, thou didst feele in thy selve.

The sweete minded Philoclea was in their degree of well 4 doing, to whom the not knowing of evill serveth for a ground of vertue, and hold their inward powers in better forme with an unspotted simplicitie, then many, who rather cunningly seeke to know what goodnes is, then willingly take into themselves the following of it. But as that sweet & simple breath of heavenly goodnesse, is the easier to be altered, because it hath not passed through the worldlie wickednesse, nor feelingly found the evill, that evill caries with it; so now the Ladie Philoclea (whose eyes and senses had receaved nothing, but according as the naturall course of each thing required; which frō the tender youth had obediently lived under her parents behests, without framing out of her own wil the fore-chosing of any thing) whē now she came to appoint, wherein her judgemēt was to be practized, in knowing faultines by his first tokēs, she was like a yong faune, who cōming in the wind of the hunters, doth not know whether it be a thing or no to be eschewed; whereof at this time she began to get a costly experience. For after that Zelmane had a while lived in the lodge with her, and that her onely being a noble straunger had bred a kind of heed-full attention; her cōming to that lonely place (where she had no body but her parents) a willingnes of conversatiō; her wit & behaviour, a liking & silent admiration; at length the excellency of her natural gifts, joined with the extreme shewes she made of most devout honouring Philoclea, (carying thus in one person the only two bāds of good will, lovelines & lovingnes) brought forth in her hart a yeelding to a most friēdly affecltiō; which when it had gotten so ful possession of the keies of her mind, that it would receave no message frō her senses, without that affecltion were the interpreter; thē streight grew an exceeding delight stil to be with her, with an unmeasurable liking of al that Zelmane did: maters being so turned in her, that where at first, liking her manners did breed good-wil, now good-wil became the chiefe cause of liking her manners: so that within a while Zelmane was not prized for her demeanure, but the demeanure was prized because it was Zelmanes. Thē followed that most natural effecl of cōforming
ones self to that, which she did like, and not onely wishing to be her selfe such an other in all thinges, but to ground an imitation upon so much an esteemed authoritie: so that the next degree was to marke all Zelmanes dooings, speeches, and fashions, and to take them into her selfe, as a patterne of worthy proceeding. Which when once it was enacted, not onely by the comminaltie of Passions, but agreed unto by her most noble Thoughts, and that by Reason it self (not yet experienced in the issues of such matters) had granted his royall assent; then Friendship (a diligent officer) tooke care to see the statute thorowly observed. Then grew on that not onely she did imitate the sobernes of her countenance, the gracefulness of her speech, but even their particular gestures: so that as Zelmane did often eye her, she would often eye Zelmane; & as Zelmanes eyes would deliver a submissive, but vehement desire in their looke, she, though as yet she had not the desire in her, yet should her eyes answere in like pearcing kindnesse of a looke. Zelmane as much as Gynecias jealousy would suffer, desired to be neere Philoclea; Philoclea, as much as Gynecias jealousy would suffer, desired to be neere Zelmane. If Zelmane tooke her hand, and softly strained it, she also (thinking the knots of friendship ought to bee mutuall) would (with a sweete fastnes) shew she was loth to part from it. And if Zelmane sighed, she would sigh also; whē Zelmane was sad, she deemed it wisdome, and therefore she would be sad too. Zelmanes laguishing coutenāce with crost armes, and sometimes cast-up eyes, she thought to have an excellent grace: and therefore she also willingly put on the same countenāce: til at the last (poore soule, ere she were aware) she accepted not onely the band, but the service; not only the signe, but the passion signified. For whether it were, that her wit in coutinuāce did finde, that Zelmanes friendship was full of impatient desire, having more then ordinarie limits, & therfore shee was content to second Zelmane, though her selfe knew not the limits; or that in truth, true-love (well considered) have an infective power. At last she fell in acquaintance with loves harbinger, wishing. First she would wish, that they two might live all their lives together, like two of Dianas Nymphes. But that wish, she thought not sufficient, because she knew, there would be more Nymphes besides them, who also would have their part in Zelmane. Thē would she
wish, that she were her sister, that such a natural band might make her more speciall to her. But against that, she considered, that though being her sister, if she happened to be married, she should be robbed of her. Then growne bolder, she would wish either her selfe, or Zelmane a man, that there might succeed a blessed marriage betwixt them. But when that wish had once displaied his ensigne in her minde, then followed whole squadrons of longings, that so it might be, with a maine battaile of mislikings, and repynings against their creation, that so it was not. Then dreames by night beganne to bring more unto her, then she durst wish by day, whereout making did make her know her selfe the better by the image of those fancies. But as some diseases when they are easie to be cured, they are hard to be knowne, but when they grow easie to be knowne, they are almost impossible to be be cured: so the sweete Philoclea, while she might prevent it, she did not feel it, now she felt it, when it was past preventing; like a river, no rampiers being built against it, till alreadie it have overflowed. For now indeed, Love puld of his maske, and shewed his face unto her, and told her plainly, that shee was his prisoner. Then needed she no more paint her face with passions; for passions shone thorow her face; Then her rosie couler was often encreased with extraordinarie blushing: and so another time, perfect whitenesse ascended to a degree of palenesse; now hot, then cold, desiring she knew not what, nor how, if she knew what. Then her minde (though too late) by the smart was brought to thinke of the disease, and her owne proofe taught her to know her mothers minde; which (as no error gives so strong assault, as that which comes armed in the authoritie of a parent, so) greatly fortified her desires, to see, that her mother had the like desires. And the more jealous her mother was, the more she thought the Jewell precious, which was with so many lookses garded. But that prevailing so far, as to keepe the two lovers from private conference, then began she to feele the sweetnesse of a lovers solitarinesse, when freely with words and gestures, as if Zelmane were present, shee might give passage to her thoughts, and so as it were utter out some smoke of those flames, wherewith else she was not only burned, but smothered. As this night, that going from the one lodge to the other by her mothers commande-
ment, with dolefull gestures and uncertaine paces, shee did willingly accept the times offer, to be a while alone: so that going a little aside into the wood; where manie times before she had delighted to walke, her eyes were saluted with a tuft of trees, so close set togither, as with the shade the moone gave thorow it, it might breede a fearefull kinde of devotion to looke upon it. But true thoughts of love banish all vaine fancie of superstition. Full well she did both remember and like the place; for there had she often with their shade beguiled Phœbus of looking upon her: There had she enjoyed her selfe often, while she was mistresse of her selfe, and had no other thoughts, but such as might arise out of quiet senses.

But the principall cause that invited her remembrance, was a goodly white marble stone, that should seeme had bene dedicated in ancient time to the Silvan gods: which she finding there a fewe dayes before Zelmanes comming, had written these words upon it, as a testimonie of her mind, against the suspition her captivitie made her thinke she lived in. The writing was this.

You living powres enclosed in stately shrine
Of growing trees; you rurall Gods that wield
Your scepters here, if to your eares divine
A voice may come, which troubled soule doth yeld:
This vowe receave, this vowe ô Gods maintaine;
My virgin life no spotted thought shall staine.

Thou purest stone, whose purenesse doth present
My purest minde; whose temper hard doth showe
My tempred hart; by thee my promise sent
Unto my selfe let after-livers know.
No fancy mine, nor others wronge suspect
Make me, ô vertuous Shame, thy lawes negle^t.

O Chastitie, the chiefe of heavenly lightes,
Which makst us most immortall shape to weare,
Holde thou my hart, establish thou my sprights:
To onely thee my constant course I beare.
Till spotlesse soule unto thy bosome flye,
Such life to leade, such death I vow to dye.
But now that her memorie served as an accuser of her change, and that her own hand-writing was there, to beare testimony against her fall; she went in among those few trees, so closed in the toppes togethier, as they might seeme a little chappell: and there might she by the help of the moone-light perceiue the goodly stone, which served as an altar in that woeddie devotion. But neither the light was enough to reade the words, and the inke was alreadie foreworne, and in many places blotted: which as she perceaved, Alas (said she) faire Marble, which never receivedst spot but by my writing, well do these blots become a blotted writer. But pardon her which did not dissemble then, although she have chaunged since. Enjoy, enjoy the glorie of thy nature, which can so constantly beare the markes of my inconstancie. And herewith hiding her eyes with her soft hand, there came into her head certaine verses, which if she had had present commoditie, she would have adjoyned as a retractation to the other. They were to this effect.

MY words, in hope to blaze my stedfast minde,
This marble chose, as of like temper knowne:
But loe, my words defaste, my fancies blinde,
Blots to the stone, shame to my selfe I finde:
And witnesse am, how ill agree in one,
A womans hand with constant marble stone.

My words full weake, the marble full of might;
My words in store, the marble all alone;
My words blacke inke, the marble kindly white;
My words unseene, the marble still in sight,
May witnesse beare, how ill agree in one,
A womans hand, with constant marble stone.

But seeing she could not see meanes to joyne as the this recantation to the former vow, (laying all her faire length under one of the trees) for a while she did nothing but turne up and downe, as if she had hoped to turne away the fancie that mastred her, and hid her face, as if she could have hidden her selfe from her owne fancies. At length with a whispring note to her selfe; O me unfortunate wretch (said she) what poysonous heates be these, which thus torment me? How hath
the sight of this strange guest invaded my soule? Alas, what entrance found this desire, or what strength had it thus to conquer me? Then, a cloud passing betweene her sight and the moone, O Diana (said she) I would either the cloud that now hides the light of my vertue would as easily passe away, as you will quickly overcome this let; or els that you were for ever thus darkned, to serve for an excuse of my outrageous folly. Then looking to the starres, which had perfitly as then beautified the cleere skie: My parets (said she) have told me, that in these faire heavenly bodies, there are great hiddē deities, which have their working in the ebbing & flowing of our estates. If it be so, then (O you Stars) judge rightly of me, & if I have with wicked intēt made my selfe a pray to fancie, or if by any idle lustes I framed my harte fit for such an impression, then let this plague dayly encrease in me, till my name bee made odious to womankind. But if extreame and irresistible violence have oppressed me, who will ever do any of you sacrifice (ô you Starres) if you do not succour me. No, no, you will not help me. No, no, you cannot helpe me: Sinne must be the mother, and shame the daughter of my affection. And yet are these but childish objections (simple Philocelea) it is the impossibilitie that dooth torment me: for, unlawfull desires are punished after the effect of enjoying; but unpossible desires are punished in the desire it selfe. O then, ô tenne times unhappie that I am, since where in all other hope kindleth love; in me despair should be the bellowes of my affection: and of all despaires the most miserable, which is drawn from impossibilitie. The most covetous man longs not to get riches out of a groūd which never can beare any thing; Why? because it is impossible. The most ambitious wight vexeth not his wittes to clime into heaven; Why? because it is impossible. Alas then, ô Love, why doost thou in thy beautifull sampler sette such a worke for my Desire to take out, which is as much impossible? And yet alas, why doo I thus condemne my Fortune, before I heare what she can say for her selfe? What doo I, sillie wench, knowe what Love hath prepared for me? Doo I not see my mother, as well, at lest as furiouslie as my selfe, love Zelmane? And should I be wiser then my mother? Either she sees a possibilitie in that which I think impossible, or els impossible loves neede not
misbecome me. And doo I not see Zelmane (who doth not thinke a thought which is not first wayed by wisdome and vertue) doth not she vouchsafe to love me with like ardour? I see it, her eyes depose it to be true; what then? and if she can love poore me, shall I thinke scorne to love such a woman as Zelmane? Away then all vaine examinations of why and how. Thou lovest me, excellent Zelmane, and I love thee: and with that, embracing the very grounde whereon she lay, she said to her selfe (for even to her selfe she was ashamed to speake it out in words) O my Zelmane, governe and direct me: for I am wholy given over unto thee.

CHAP. 5.

1 The bedfellow communication of Philoclea and Pamela. 2 Pamela's narration of her shepheardes making love, 3 of Dorus and Dametas horsemanshippe, 4 of his hate pursuite, and her colde acceptance. 5 His letter. 6 Her relenting, 7 and Philocleas sole complaint.

In this depth of muzes, and divers sorts of discourses, would I she have ravingly remained, but that Dametas and Miso (who were rounde about to seeke her, understanding she was to come to their lodge that night) came hard by her; Dametas saying, That he would not deale in other bodies matters; but for his parte, he did not like that maides should once stirre out of their fathers houses, but if it were to milke a cow, or save a chicken from a kites foote, or some such other matter of importance. And Miso swearing that if it were her daughter Mopsa, she woulde give her a lesson for walking so late, that should make her keepe within dores for one fortnight. But their jangling made Philoclea rise, and pretending as though she had done it but to sport with them, went with them (after she had willed Miso to waite upon her mother) to the lodge; where (being now accustomed by her parents discipline, as well as her sister, to serve her selfe) she went alone up to Pamela's chamber: where meaning to delight her eies, and joy her thoughts with the sweet conversation of her beloved sister, she found her (though it were in the time that the wings of night doth blow

175
sleep most willingly into mortall creatures) sitting in a chaire, lying backward, with her head almost over the back of it, & looking upon a wax-câdle which burnt before her; in one hand holding a letter, in the other her hand-kerchiefe, which had lately dronk up the teares of her eyes, leaving in steed of them, crimsen circles, like redde flakes in the element, when the weather is hottest. Which Philoclea finding (for her eyes had learned to know the badges of sorowes) she earnestlie intreated to knowe the cause thereof, that either she might comforte, or accompanie her dolefull humor. But Pamela, rather seeming sorie that she had perceived so much, then willing to open any further, O my Pamela (said Philoclea) who are to me a sister in nature, a mother in counsell, a Princesse by the law of our coûtrey, and which name (me thinke) of all other is the dearest, a friend by my choice and your favour, what meanes this banishing me from your counsels? Do you love your sorrowe so well, as to grudge me part of it? Or doo you thinke I shall not love a sadde Pamela, so well as a joyfull? Or be my eares unworthe, or my tongue suspected? What is it (my sister) that you should conceale from your sister, yea and servant Philoclea? These wordes wanne no further of Pamela, but that telling her they might talke better as they lay together, they impoverished their cloathes to inriche their bed, which for that night might well scape the shrine of Venus: and there cherishing one another with deare, though chaste embracements; with sweet, though cold kisses; it might seeme that Love was come to play him there without darte; or that weerie of his owne fires, he was there to refreshe himselfe betweene their sweete-breathing lippes. But Philoclea earnestly againe intreated Pamela to open her griefe; who (drawing the curtain, that the candle might not complaine of her blushing) was ready to speake: but the breath almost formed into words, was againe stopt by her, and turned into sighes. But at last, I pray you (said she) sweete Philoclea, let us talke of some other thing: & tell me whether you did ever see any thing so amèded as our Pastoral sports be, since that Dorus came hether? O Love, how farre thou seest with blind eyes? Philoclea had straight found her, and therefore to draw out more, In deed (said she) I have often wondred to my selfe how such excellencies could be in so meane a person; but belike Fortune was atraide
ARCADIA. LIB. 2.

to lay her treasures, where they should be staind with so many perfections: onely I marvaile how he can frame himselfe to hide so rare giftes under such a block as Dametas. Ah (said Pamela) if you knew the cause: but no more doo I neither; and to say the trueth: but Lord, how are we falne to talke of this fellow? and yet indeed if you were sometimes with me to marke him, while Dametas reades his rusticke lecture unto him (how to feede his beastes before noone, where to shade them in the extreame heate, how to make the manger hansome for his oxen, when to use the goade, & when the voice: giving him rules of a heardma, though he preted to make him a shepheard) to see all the while with what a grace (which seems to set a crowne upon his base estate) he can descend to those poore matters, certainly you would: but to what serves this? no doubt we were better sleepe then talke of these idle matters. Ah my Pamela (said Philoclea) I have caught you, the constantnes of your wit was not wont to bring forth such disjointed speeches: you love, dissemble no further. It is true (said Pamela) now you have it; and with lesse adoo should, if my hart could have thought those words suteable for my mouth. But indeed (my Philoclea) take heed: for I thinke Vertue it self is no armour of profe against affection. Therfore learne by my example. Alas thought Philoclea to her selfe, your sheeres come to late to clip the birds wings that already is flowne away.

But then Pamela being once set in the streame of her Love, 2 went away a maine withall, telling her how his noble qualities had drawne her liking towards him; but yet ever waying his meanenes, & so held continually in due limits; till seeking many meanes to speake with her, & ever kept from it (as wel because she shund it, seing and disdaining his mind, as because of her jealous jaylours) he had at length used the finest pollicie that might be in counterfating love to Mopsa, & saying to Mopsa what soever he would have her know: and in how passionate manner he had told his owne tale in a third person, making poore Mopsa beleve, that it was a matter fallen out many ages before. And in the end, because you shal know my teares come not, neither of repeteance nor misery, who thinke you, is my Dorus fallen out to be? even the Prince Musidorus, famous over all Asia, for his heroical enterprises, of whom you remember how much good the straunger Plangus told my

S. A.  M    177
father; he not being drowned (as Plangus thought) though his cousin Pyrocles indeed perished. Ah my sister, if you had heard his words, or scene his gestures, when he made me know what, and to whom his love was, you would have matched in your selfe (those two rarely matched together) pittie and delight. Tell me deare sister (for the gods are my witnesses I desire to doo vertuously) can I without the detestable staine of ungratefulnesse abstaine from loving him, who (far exceeding the beautifulnesse of his shape with the beautifulnesse of his minde, and the greatnesse of his estate with the greatnesse of his actes) is content so to abase him selfe, as to become Dametas servaunt for my sake? you will say, but how know I him to be Musidorus, since the handmaid of wisdome is slow belief? That consideratiõ did not want in me, for the nature of desire it selfe is no easier to receive belief, then it is hard to ground belief. For as desire is glad to embrace the first shew of comfort, so is desire desirous of perfect assurance: and that have I had of him, not onely by necessary arguments to any of common sense, but by sufficient demonstrations. Lastly he would have me send to Thessalia: but truly I am not as now in mind to do my honorable Love so much wrong, as so far to suspect him: yet poor soule knowes he no other, but that I doo both suspect, neglect, yea & detest him. For every day he finds one way or other to set forth him selfe unto me, but all are rewarded with like coldnesse of acceptation.

3 A few daies since, he & Dametas had furnished theõselves very richly to run at the ring before me. O how mad a sight it was to see Dametas, like rich Tissew furd with lambe skins? But ŏ how well it did with Dorus, to see with what a grace he presented him selfe before me on horseback, making majestie wait upon humblenes? how at the first, standing stil with his eies bent upõ me, as though his motiõs were chained to my looke, he so staide till I caused Mopsa bid him doo something upon his horse: which no sooner said, but (with a kinde rather of quick gesture, then shew of violéce) you might see him come towards me, beating the groûd in so due time, as no daunce can observe better measure. If you remember the ship we saw once, whê the Sea went hie upon the coast of Argos; so went the beast: But he (as if Cêtaurlike he had bene one piece with the horse) was no more moved, then one is with the going of
his owne legges: and in effect so did he command him, as his owne limmes, for though he had both spurres and wande, they seemed rather markes of soveraintie, then instruments of punishment; his hand and legge (with most pleasing grace) commading without threatenings, & rather remebring then chastising, at lest if sometimes he did, it was so stolen, as neyther our eyes could discerne it, nor the horse with any chaunce did coplaine of it, he ever going so just with the horse, either foorth right, or turning, that it seemed as he borrowed the horses body, so he lent the horse his minde: in the turning one might perceive the bridle-hand somthing gently stir, but indeed so gently, as it did rather distill vertue, then use violence. Him self (which me thinkes is straunge) shewing at one instant both steadines & nimblenes; somtimes making him turne close to the groud, like a cat, when scratchingly she wheeles about after a mouse: sometimes with a little more rising before, now like a Raven leaping from ridge to ridge, then like one of Dametas kiddes bound over the hillocks: and all so done, as neither the lustie kinde shewed any roughnesse, nor the easier any idlenesse: but still like a well obeyed maister, whose beck is enough for a discipline, ever concluding ech thing he did with his face to me-wards, as if thence came not onely the beginning, but ending of his motions. The sporte was to see Dametas, how he was tost from the sadle to the mane of the horse, and thence to the ground, giving his gay apparell almost as foule an outside, as it had an inside. But as before he had ever said, he wanted but horse & apparell to be as brave a courtier as the best, so now brused with prove, he proclaimed it a folly for a man of wisedome, to put himselfe under the tuition of a beast; so as Dorus was fayne alone to take the Ringe. Wherein truely at lest my womanish eyes could not discerne, but that taking his staffe from his thigh, the descending it a little downe, the getting of it up into the rest, the letting of the point fall, and taking the ring was but all one motion, at lest (if they were divers motions) they did so stealingly slippe one into another, as the latter parte was ever in hande, before the eye could discerne the former was ended. Indeed Dametas found fault that he shewed no more strength in shaking of his staffe: but to my conceite the fine cleernes of bearing it was exceeding delightfull.
But how delightfull soever it was, my delight might well be in my soule, but it never went to looke out of the window to doo him any comfort. But how much more I found reason to like him, the more I set all the strength of mind to suprresse it, or at lest to conceale it." Indeed I must confesse, as some Physitions have tolde me, that when one is cold outwardly, he is not inwarldly; so truly the colde ashes layed upon my fire, did not take the nature of fire from it. Full often hath my brest swollen with keeping my sighes imprisoned; full often have the teares, I drave backe from mine eyes, turned backe to drowne my harte. But alas what did that helpe poore Dorus? whose eyes (being his diligent intelligencers) coulde carrie unto him no other newes, but discomfortable. I thinke no day past, but by some one invention he would appeare unto me to testifie his love. One time he daunced the Matachine daunce in armour (O with what a gracefull dexteritie?) I thinke to make me see, that he had bene brought up in such exercises: an other time he perswaded his maister (to make my time seeme shorter) in manner of a Dialogue, to play Priamus while he plaide Paris. Thine (sweet Philoclea) what a Priamus we had: but truely, my Paris was a Paris, and more then a Paris: who while in a savage apparell, with naked necke, armes, and legges, he made love to Oenone, you might wel see by his chaunged countenance, and true teares, that he felte the parte he playde. Tell me (sweet Philoclea) did you ever see such a shepheard? tell me, did you ever heare of such a Prince? And then tell me, if a small or unworthy assaulte have conquered me. Truely I would hate my life, if I thought vanitie led me. But since my parents deale so cruelly with me, it is time for me to trust something to my owne judgement. Yet hetherto have my lookes bene as I told you, which continuing after many of these his fruities trials, have wrought such change in him, as I tell you true (with that worde she laid her hand upon her quaking side) I doo not a little feare him. See what a letter this is (then drewe she the curtaine and tooke the letter from under the pillow) which to daie (with an afflicted humblenessse) he delivered me, pretending before Mopsa, that I should read it unto her, to mollifie (forsooth) her iron stomache; with that she read the letter containing thus much.

180
Ost blessed paper, which shall kisse that hâd, where to al blessednes is in nature a servât, do not yet disdain to Cary with thee the woful words of a miser now despairing: neither be afraid to appeare before her, bearing the base title of the sender. For no sooner shal that divine hande touch thee, but that thy basenesse shall be turned to most hie preferment. Therefore mourn boldly my Inke; for while she lookes upô you, your blacknes wil shine: crie out boldly my Lamêtatiô; for while she reads you, your cries wil be musicke. Say then (O happy messenger of a most unhappy message) that the too soone borne, too late dying creature, which dares not speake, no not looke, no not scarcely thinke (as from his miserable selfe, unto her heavenly highnesse) onely presumes to desire thee (in the time that her eyes and voice doo exalt thee) to say, and in this manner to say, not from him, O no, that were not fit, but of him. Thus much unto her sacred judgement: O you, the onely, the onely honour to women, to men the onely admiration, you that being armed by Love, defie him that armed you, in this high estate wherein you have placed me, yet let me remember him to whom I am bound for bringing me to your presence; and let me remember him, who (since he is yours, how meane so ever it be) it is reasô you have an account of him. The wretch (yet your wretch) though with languishing steppes runnes fast to his grave, and will you suffer a temple (how poorely-built soever, but yet a temple of your deitie) to be rased? But he dyeth: it is most true, he dyeth; and he in whom you live, to obey you, dieth. Whereof though he plaine, he doth not complaine: for it is a harme, but no wrong, which he hath received. He dyes, because in wofull language all his senses tell him, that such is your pleasure: for since you will not that he live, alas, alas, what followeth, what followeth of the most ruined Dorus, but his ende? Ende then, evill destined Dorus, ende; and ende thou wofull letter, end; for it suffiseth her wisedome to know, that her heavenly will shalbe accomplished.

O my Philoclea, is hee a person to write these words? and are these words lightly to be regarded? But if you had seene, when with trembling hand he had delivered it, how hee went away, as if he had beene but the coffin that carried himselfe to his sepulcher. Two times I must confesse I was about to take
curtesie into mine eyes; but both times the former resolution stopt the entrie of it: so that he departed without obtaining any further kindnesse. But he was no sooner out of the doore, but that I looked to the doore kindly; and truly the feare of him ever since hath put me into such perplexitie, as now you found me. Ah my Pamela (said Philoclea) leave sorrow. The river of your teares will soone loose his fountaine; it is in your hand as well to stitch up his life againe, as it was before to rent it. And so (though with self-grieved mind) she comforted her sister, till sleepe came to bath himselfe in Pamelaes faire weeping eyes.

Which when Philoclea found, wringing her hands, O me (said she) indeed the onely subject of the destinies displeasure, whose greatest fortunatenes is more unfortunate, then my sisters greatest unfortunatenesse. Alas shee weepes because she would be no sooner happy; I weepe because I can never be happie; her teares flow from pittie; mine from being too farre lower then the reach of pittie. Yet doo I not envie thee, deare Pamela, I do not envy thee: onely I could wish that being thy sister in nature, I were not so farre off a kin in fortune.

CHAP. 6.

1 The Ladies uprising, 2 and interrogatories to Dorus concerning Pyrocles and Euarchus. 3 His historiologie of Euarchus kingly excellencies, 4 his entry on a most corrupt estate, 5 and reformation thereof by royall arts and actions. 6 His, and Dorilaus crosse-mariage to ech others sister, having by ech a sonne; their mutuall defence, with Dorilaus death.

But the darkenesse of sorrow overshadowing her mind, as the night did her eyes, they were both content to hide themselves under the wings of sleepe, till the next morning had almost lost his name, before the two sweet sleeping sisters awaked frō dreames, which flattered them with more comfort, then their waking could, or would consent unto. For then they were called up by Miso; who having bene with Gynecia, had received commandement to be continually with her
daughters, and particularly not to let Zelmane and Philoclea have any private coference, but that she should be present to heare what passed. But Miso having now her authoritie encreased, came with skowling eyes to deliver a slavering good morrow to the two Ladies, telling them, it was a shame for them to marre their complexions, yea and conditions to, with long lying a bedde: & that, when she was of their age, she trowed, she would have made a handkerchiefe by that time of the day. The two sweete Princes with a smiling silence answered her entertainement, and obeying her direction, covered their daintie beauties with the glad clothes. But as soone as Pamela was readie (& sooner she was then her sister) the agony of Dorus giving a fit to her selfe, which the words of his letter (lively imprinted in her minde) still remembred her of, she called to Mopsa, and willed her to fetch Dorus to speake with her: because (she said) she would take further judgement of him, before she would move Dametas to graunt her in mariage unto him. Mopsa (as glad as of sweete-meate to goe of such an arrant) quickly returned with Dorus to Pamela, who entended both by speaking with him to give some comfort to his passionate harte, and withall to heare some part of his life past; which although fame had alreadie delivered unto her, yet she desired in more particular certainties to have it from so beloved an historian. Yet the sweetnesse of vertues disposition jealous, even over it selfe, suffred her not to enter abruptlie into questions of Musidorus (whom she was halfe ashamed she did love so well, and more then halfe sorie she could love no better) but thought best first to make her talke arise of Pyrocles, and his vertuous father: which thus she did.

Dorus (said she) you told me the last day, that Plangus was deceeded in that he affirmed the Prince Musidorus was drowned: but withall, you confessed his cosen Pyrocles perished; of whom certainly in that age there was a great losse, since (as I have heard) he was a young Prince, of whō al mē expected as much, as mans power could bring forth, & yet vertue promised for him, their expectation should not be deceived. Most excellent Ladie (said Dorus) no expectatiō in others, nor hope in himself could aspire to a higher mark, thē to be thought worthy to be praised by your judgement, & made worthy to be praised by your mouth. But most sure it is, that as his fame could by no
means get so sweete & noble an aire to flie in, as in your breath, so could not you (leaving your selfe aside) finde in the world a fitter subject of commendation; as noble, as a long succession of royall ancestors, famous, and famous of victories could make him: of shape most lovely, and yet of mind more lovely; valiant, curteous, wise, what should I say more? sweete Pyrocles, excellent Pyrocles, what can my words but wrong thy perfections, which I would to God in some small measure thou hadst bequethed to him that ever must have thy vertues in admiration; that masked at least in them, I might have found some more gratious acception? with that he imprisoned his looke for a while upon Mopsa, who thereupon fell into a verie wide smiling. Truely (said Pamela) Dorus I like well your minde, that can raise it selfe out of so base a fortune, as yours is, to thinke of the imitating so excellent a Prince, as Pyrocles was. Who shootes at the mid-day Sunne, though he be sure he shall never hit the marke; yet as sure he is, he shall shoote higher, then who aymes but at a bush. But I pray you Dorus (said she) tell me (since I perceave you are well acquainted with that storie) what Prince was that Euarchus father to Pyrocles, of whom so much fame goes, for his rightly royall vertues, or by what wayes he got that opinion. And then so descend to the causes of his sending first away from him, and then to him for that excellent sonne of his, with the discourse of his life and losse; and therein you may (if you list) say something of that same Musidorus his cosen, because, they going togither, the story of Pyrocles (which I onely desire) may be the better understood.

3 Incomparable Lady (said he) your commandement doth not onely give me the wil, but the power to obey you, such influence hath your excellencie. And first, for that famous King Euarchus, he was (at this time you speake off) King of Macedon, a kingdome, which in elder time had such a soveraintie over all the provinces of Greece, that evē the particular kings therin did acknowledge (with more or lesse degrees of homage) some kind of fealty thereunto: as among the rest, even this now most noble (and by you ennobled) kingdome of Arcadia. But he, whē he came to his crowne, finding by his later ancestors either negligece, or misfortune, that in some ages many of those duties had bin intermitted, would never stirre up old
titles (how apparant soever) whereby the publike peace (with the losse of manie not guiltie soules) should be broken; but contenting himselfe to guide that shippe, wherein the heavens had placed him, shewed no lesse magnanimitie in daungerlesse despising, then others in daungerous affecting the multiplying of kingdomes: for the earth hath since borne now bleeding witnesses, that it was no want of true courage. Who as he was most wise to see what was best, and most just in the perfourming what he saw, & temperate in abstaining from any thing any way contrary: so thinke I, no thought can imagine a greater harte to see and contemne daunger, where daunger would offer to make any wrongfull threatning upon him. A Prince, that indeed especially measured his greatnesse by his goodnesse: and if for any thing he loved greatnesse, it was, because therein he might exercise his goodnes. A Prince of a goodly aspect, and the more goodly by a grave majestie, wherewith his mind did decke his outward graces; strong of body, and so much the stronger, as he by a well disciplined exercise taught it both to do, and suffer. Of age, so as he was about fiftie yeares when his Nephew Musidorus tooke on such shepherdish apparell for the love of the worlds paragon, as I now weare.

This King left Orphan both of father and mother, (whose 4 father & grandfather likewise had dyed yong) he found his estate, when he came to age (which allowed his authoritie) so disjoynted even in the noblest & strongest lims of governmet, that the name of a King was growne evê odious to the people, his authoritie having bin abused by those great Lords, & litle kings: who in those betweenes-times of raigning (by unjust favouring those that were partially theirs, & oppressing them that woulde defende their libertie against them had brought in (by a more felt then scene maner of proceeding) the worst kind of Oligarchie; that is, whë men are governed in deedee by a fewe, and yet are not taught to know what those fewe be, to whom they should obey. For they having the power of kingses, but not the nature of kings, used the authority as men do their farms, of which they see within a yeere they shal goe out: making the Kingses sworde strike whom they hated, the Kings purse reward whom they loved: and (which is worst of all) making the Royall countenance serve to undermine the Royall soveraintie. For the Subjectes could taste no sweeter fruites of
having a King, then grievous taxations to serve vaine purposes; Lawes made rather to finde faults, then to prevent faultes: the Court of a Prince rather deemed as a priviledged place of unbrideled licentiousnes, then as a biding of him, who as a father, should give a fatherly example unto his people. Hence grew a very dissolution of all estates, while the great men (by the nature of ambition never satisfied) grew factious among themselves: and the underlings, glad indeede to be underlings to them they hated lest, to preserve them from such they hated most. Men of vertue suppressed, lest their shining should discover the others filthines; and at length vertue it selfe almost forgotten, when it had no hopefull end whereunto to be directed; olde men long nusled in corruption, scorning them that would seeke reformacion; yong men very fault-finding, but very faultie: and so to new-fanglenes both of manners, apparrell, and each thing els, by the custome of selfe-guiltie evill, glad to change though oft for a worse; marchandise abused, and so townes decayed for want of just and naturall libertie; offices, even of judging soules, solde; publique defences neglected; and in summe, (lest too long I trouble you) all awrie, and (which wried it to the most wrie course of all) witte abused, rather to faine reason why it should be amisse, then how it should be amended.

5 In this, and a much worse plight then it is fitt to trouble your excellent eares withal, did the King Euarchus finde his estate, when he tooke upon him the regimen: which by reason of the long streame of abuse, he was forced to establish by some even extreme severitie, not so much for the very faultes themselves, (which he rather sought to prevent then to punish) as for the faultie ones; who strong, even in their faultes, scorned his youth, and could not learne to digest, that the man which they so long had used to maske their owne appetites, should now be the reducer of them into order. But so soone as some fewe (but in deede notable) examples, had thundred a duetie into the subjects hartes, he soone shewed, no basenes of suspition, nor the basest basenes of envie, could any whit rule such a Ruler. But then shined foorth indeede all love among them, when an awfull feare, ingendred by justice, did make that love most lovely: his first & principall care being to appeare unto his people, such as he would have them be, & to be such as he appeared; making his life the example of his lawes, as it were, his actions arising
out of his deedes. So that within small time, he wanne a singular love in his people, and engraffed singular confidence. For how could they chuse but love him, whom they found so truely to love the? He even in reason disayning, that they that have charge of bestes, should love their charge, and care for them; and that he that was to governe the most excellent creature, should not love so noble a charge. And therefore, where most Princes (seduced by flatterie to builde upon false grounds of government) make themselves (as it were) another thing from the people; and so count it gaine what they can get from them: and (as if it were two counter-ballances, that their estate goes hiest when the people goes lowest) by a fallacie of argument thinking themselves most Kinges, when the subject is most basely subjected: he contrariwise, vertuouslie and wisely acknowledging, that he with his people made all but one politike bodie, whereof himselfe was the head; even so cared for them, as he woulde for his owne limmes: never restringing their liberty, without it stretched to licenciousnes, nor pulling from them their goods, which they found were not employed to the purchase of a greater good: but in all his actions shewing a delight to their welfare, brought that to passe, that while by force he tooke nothing, by their love he had all. In summe (peeerelesse Princesse) I might as easily sette downe the whole Arte of governement, as to lay before your eyes the picture of his proceedings. But in such sorte he flourished in the sweete comforte of dooing much good, when by an action of leaving his Countrie, he was forced to bring forth his vertue of magnanimitie, as before he had done of justice.

He had onely one sister, a Ladie (lest I should too easilie fall to partiall prayses of her) of whom it may be justly said, that she was no unfit brach to the noble stock wherof she came. Her he had given in mariadge to Dorilaus, Prince of Thessalia, not so much to make a freddship, as to confirm the freddship betwixt their posteritie, which betwene them, by the likenes of vertue, had been long before made: for certainly, Dorilaus could neede no amplifiers mouth for the highest point of praise. Who hath not heard (said Pamela) of the valiat, wise, and just Dorilaus, whose unripe death doth yet (so many yeares since) draw teares fro vertuous eyes? And indeede, my father is wont to speak of nothing with greater admiration, then of the
notable friendship (a rare thing in Princes, more rare betwene Princes) that so holily was observed to the last, of those two excellent men. But (said she) goe on I pray you. Dorilaus (said he) having maried his sister, had his mariage in short time blest (for so are folke woont to say, how unhappie soever the children after grow) with a sonne, whom they named Musidorus: of whom I must needes first speake before I come to Pyrocles; because as he was borne first, so upon his occasion grew (as I may say accidentally) the others birth. For scarcely was Musidorus made partaker of this oft-blinding light, when there were found numbers of Southsayers, who affirmed strange & incredible things should be performed by that childe; whether the heavens at that time listed to play with ignorant mankind, or that flatterie be so presumptuous, as even at times to borow the face of Divinitie. But certainly, so did the boldnes of their affirmation accompanie the greatnes of what they did affirme (even descending to particularities, what kingdomes he should overcome) that the King of Phrygia (who over-superstitiously thought him selfe touched in the matter) sought by force to destroy the infant, to prevent his after-expectations: because a skilful man (having compared his nativity with the child) so told him. Foolish mā, either vainly fearing what was not to be feared, or not considering, that if it were a worke of the superiour powers, the heavens at length are never children. But so he did, & by the aid of the Kings of Lydia and Crete (joining together their armes) invaded Thessalia, & brought Dorilaus to some behind-hand of fortune, when his faithfull friend & brother Euarchus came so mightily to his succour, that with some enterchanging changes of fortune, they begat of a just war, the best child, peace. In which time Euarchus made a crosse mariage also with Dorilaus his sister, & shortly left her with child of the famous Pyrocles, driven to returne to the defence of his owne countrie, which in his absence (helped with some of the ill contented nobilitie) the mighty King of Thrace, & his brother, King of Pannonia, had invaded. The sucsesse of those warres was too notable to be unknowne to your eares, to which it seemes all worthy fame hath glory to come unto. But there was Dorilaus (valiantly requiting his friëds helpe) in a great battaile deprived of his life, his obsequies being no more solënised by the teares of his par-
takers, the the bloud of his enimies; with so pearcing a sorrow to the constant hart of Euarchus, that the newes of his sons birth could lighten his countenance with no shew of comfort, although al the comfort that might be in a child, truth it selfe in him forthwith delivered. For what fortune only southsayers fore-told of Musidorus, that all men might see prognosticated in Pyrocles; both Heavens & Earth giving tokës of the comming forth of an Heroicall vertue. The senate house of the planets was at no time to set, for the decreeing of perfeftiō in a man, as at that time all folkes skilful therin did acknowledge: onely love was threatened, and promised to him, and so to his cousin, as both the tempest and haven of their best yeares. But as death may have prevented Pyrocles, so unworthinesse must be the death to Musidorus.

CHAP. 7.

The education of Pyrocles & Musidorus. Their friendship, navigation, and first shipwracke. The straunge gratitude of two brothers to them, upon their liberalitie to those two brothers.

But the mother of Pyrocles (shortly after her childe-birth) dying, was cause that Euarchus recommended the care of his only son to his sister; doing it the rather because the warre continued in cruell heat, betwixt him & those evil neighbours of his. In which meane time those young Princes (the only comforters of that vertuous widow) grewe on so, that Pyrocles taught admiration to the hardest conceats: Musidorus (per-chaunce because among his subjectes) exceedingly beloved: and by the good order of Euarchus (well perfourmed by his sister) they were so brought up, that all the sparkes of vertue, which nature had kindled in the, were so blowne to give forth their uttermost heate that justly it may be affirmed, they en-flamed the affections of all that knew the. For almost before they could perfectly speake, they began to receave cœcits not unworthy of the best speakers: excellent devises being used, to make even their sports profitable; images of battailes, & fortifi-
catis being then delivered to their memory, which after, their stronger judgements might dispens, the delight of tales being coverted to the knowledge of all the stories of worthy Princes, both to move them to do nobly, & teach them how to do nobly; the beautie of vertue still being set before their eyes, & that taught them with far more diligent care, then Gramatical rules, their bodies exercised in all abilities, both of doing and suffring, & their mindes acquainted by degrees with daungers; & in sum, all bent to the making up of princely mindes: no servile feare used towards them, nor any other violent restraint, but stil as to Princes: so that a habite of commundyng was naturalized in them, and therefore the farther from Tyrannie: Nature having done so much for them in nothing, as that it made them Lords of truth, whereon all the other goods were builded.

2 Among which I nothing so much delight to recount, as the memorable friendship that grewe betwixt the two Princes, such as made them more like then the likenesse of all other vertues, and made them more neer one to the other, then the neerenes of their bloud could aspire unto; which I think grew the faster, and the faster was tied betweene them, by reason that Musidorus being elder by three or four yeares, it was neither so great a difference in age as did take away the delight in societie, and yet by the difference there was taken away the occasion of childish contentions; till they had both past over the humour of such contentions. For Pyrocles bare reverèce ful of love to Musidorus, & Musidorus had a delight full of love in Pyrocles. Musidorus, what he had learned either for body or minde, would teach it to Pyrocles; and Pyrocles was so glad to learne of none, as of Musidorus: till Pyrocles, being come to sixtene yeares of age, he seemed so to overrun his age in growth, strength, and al things following it, that not Musidorus, no nor any man living (I thinke) could performe any action, either on horse, or foote, more strongly, or deliver that strength more nimbly, or become the delivery more gracefully, or employ al more vertuously. Which may well seeme wonderfull: but wonders are no wonders in a wonderfull subject.

3 At which time understanding that the King Euarchus, after so many yeares warre, and the conquest of all Pannonia, and almost Thrace, had now brought the conclusion of all to the siege of Bizantium (to the raising of which siege great forces were
made) they would needs fall to the practise of those vertues, which they before learned. And therefore the mother of Musidorus nobly yeelding over her owne affects to her childrens good (for a mother she was in effect to the both) the rather that they might helpe her beloved brother, they brake of all delayes; which Musidorus for his parte thought already had devoured too much of his good time, but that he had once graunted a Boone (before he knew what it was) to his deere friend Pyrocles; that he would never seeke the adventures of armes, until he might go with him: which having fast bound his hart (a true slave to faith) he had bid a tedious delay of following his owne humour for his friends sake, till now finding him able every way to go thorow with that kinde of life, he was as desirous for his sake, as for his owne, to enter into it. So therefore preparing a navie, that they might go like themselves, and not onely bring the comfort of their presence, but of their power to their deere parent Euarchus, they recommended themselves to the Sea, leaving the shore of Thessalia full of teares and vowes; and were received thereon with so smooth and smiling a face, as if Neptune had as then learned falsely to fawne on Princes. The winde was like a servant, wayting behind them so just, that they might fill the sailes as they listed; and the best saylers shewing themselves lesse covetous of his liberalitie, so tempered it, that they all kept together like a beautifull flocke, which so well could obey their maisters pipe: without sometimes, to delight the Princes eies, some two or three of them would strive, who could (either by the cunning of well spending the windes breath, or by the advantageous building of their mooving houses) leave their fellowes behind them in the honour of speed: while the two Princes had leasure to see the practise of that, which before they had learned by bookes: to consider the arte of catching the winde prisoner, to no other ende, but to runne away with it; to see how beautie, and use can so well agree together, that of all the trinkets, where with they are attired, there is not one but serves to some necessary purpose. And (O Lord) to see the admirable power & noble effects of Love, whereby the seeming insensible Loadstone, with a secret beauty (holding the spirit of iron in it) can draw that hard-harted thing unto it, and (like a vertuous mistresse) not onely make it bow it selfe, but with it make it aspire to so high a Love, as of the heavenly Poles; and
thereby to bring foorth the noblest deeds, that the children of
the Earth can boast of. And so the Princes delighting their
cœcets with confirming their knowledge, seing wherein the Sea-
discipline differed from Land-service, they had for a day & almost
a whole night, as pleasing entertainement, as the falsest hart
could give to him he means worst to.

4 But by that the next morning began a little to make a guil
deshew of a good meaning, there arose even with the Sun, a vaile
of darke cloudes before his face, which shortly (like inck powred
into water) had blacked over all the face of heaven; preparing
(as it were) a mournefull stage for a Tragedie to be plaied on.
For forthwith the windes began to speake lowder, and as in a
tumultuous kingdome, to thinke themselves fittest instruments
of commaundement; and blowing whole stormes of hayle and
raine upon them, they were sooner in daunger, then they
coulde almost bethinke themselves of chaunge. For then the
traiterous Sea began to swell in pride against the affected Navie,
under which (while the heaven favoured them) it had layne so
calmely, making mountaines of it selfe, over which the tossed
and tottering ship shoulde clime, to be straight caried carried
gaine to a pit of hellish darkenesse; with such cruell blowes
against the sides of the shippe (that which way soever it went,
was still in his malice) that there was left neither power to stay,
nor way to escape. And shortly had it so dissevered the loving
companie, which the daie before had tarried together, that
most of them never met againe, but were swallowed up in
his never-satisfied mouth. Some indeed (as since was knowne)
after long wandring returned into Thessalia; other recovered
Bizantium, and served Euarchus in his warre. But in the ship
wherein the Princes were (now left as much alone as proud
Lords be when fortune fails them) though they employed all
industrie to save themselves, yet what they did was rather for
dutie to nature, then hope to escape. So ougly a darkenesse, as
if it would prevent the nights comming, usurped the dayes
right: which (accompanied sometimes with thunders, alwayes
with horrible noyses of the chafing winds) made the masters
and pilots so astonished, that they knew not how to direct, and
if they knew they could scarcely (when they directed) heare their
owne whistle. For the sea strave with the winds which should
be lowder, & the shrouds of the ship with a ghastful noise to

192
them that were in it, witnessed, that their ruine was the wager of the others contention, and the heaven roaring out thunders the more amazed them, as having those powers for enimies. Certainly there is no daunger carries with it more horror, then that which growes in those flowing kingdomes. For that dwelling place is unnaturall to mankind, and then the terriblenesse of the continuall motion, the dissolutio of the fare being from comfort, the eye and the eare having ougly images ever before it, doth still vex the minde, even when it is best armed against it. But thus the day past (if that might be called a day) while the cunningest mariners were so conquered by the storme, as they thought it best with striking sailes to yeelde to be governed by it: the valiantest feeling inward dismayednesse, and yet the fearefullest ashamed fully to shew it, seeing that the Princes (who were to parte from the greatest fortunes) did in their countenances accuse no point of feare, but encouraging them to doo what might be done (putting their handes to everie most painefull office) taught them at one instant to promise themselves the best, and yet not to despise the worst. But so were they carryed by the tyrannie of the winde, and the treason of the sea, all that night, which the elder it was, the more wayward it shewed it selfe towards them: till the next morning (knowne to be a morning better by the houre-glasse, then by the day cleerenesse) having runne fortune as blindly, as it selfe ever was painted, lest the conclusion should not aunswere to the rest of the play, they were driven upon a rocke: which hidden with those outrageous waves, did, as it were, closely dissemble his cruel mind, till with an unbeleeved violence (but to them that have tried it) the shippe ranne upon it; and seeming willinger to perish then to have her course stayed, redoubled her blowes, till she had broken her selfe in peces; and as it were tearing out her owne bowels to feede the seas greedinesse, left nothing within it but despaire of safetie, and expectation of a loathsome end. There was to be seene the diverse manner of minds in distresse: some sate upon the toppe of the poupe weeping and wailing, till the sea swallowed them; some one more able to abide death, then feare of death, cut his owne throate to prevent drowning; some prayed, and there wanted not of them which cursed, as if the heavens could not be more angrie then they were. But a monstrous crie begotten of manie
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

roaring vowes, was able to infect with feare a minde that had not prevented it with the power of reason.

But the Princes using the passions of fearing evill, and desiring to escape, onely to serve the rule of vertue, not to abandon ones selfe, kept to a ribbe of the shippe, which broken from his fellowes, floted with more likelyhood to doo service, then any other limme of that ruinous bodie; upon which there had gotten alreadie two brethren, well knowne servants of theirs; and straignt they foure were carryed out of sight, in that huge rising of the sea, from the rest of the shippe. But the peece they were on sinking by little and little under them, not able to support the weight of so manie, the brethren (the elder whereof was Leucippus, the younger Nelsus) shewed themselves right faithfull and gratefull servants unto them; gratefull (I say) for this cause: Those two gentlemen had bene taken prisoners in the great warre the king of Phrygia made upon Thessalia, in the time of Musidorus his infancie; and having beene solde into another countrie (though peace fell after betweene these Realmes) could not be delivered, because of their valor knowne, but for a farre greater summe, then either all their friends were able, or the Dowager willing to make, in respect of the great expences her selfe and people had bene put to in those warres; and so had they remained in prison about thirteene yeares, when the two young Princes (hearing speaches of their good deserts) found meanes both by selling all the Jewels they had of great price, and by giving under their hands great estates when they should come to be Kings (which promises their vertue promised for them should be kept) to get so much treasure as redeemed them from captivitie. This remembred, and kindly remembred by these two brothers, perchance helped by a naturall dutie to their Princes blood, they willingly left holde of the boord, committing themselves to the seas rage, & even when they went to dye, themselves praying for the Princes lives. It is true, that neither the paine nor daunger, so moved the Princes hartes as the tendernesse of that loving part, farre from glorie, having so few lookers on; farre from hope of reward, since themselves were sure to perish.
CHAP. 8.

1Pyrocles cast on the shore of Phrygia 2led prisoner to the King.  
3That suspicious tyrant naturalized.  4His intent to kill Pyrocles.  5Musidorus—his escape from sea, and offer to dye for his friend.  6Their contention for death.  7Preparation for Musidorus execution.  8His strange deliverie by Pyrocles,  9and a sodaine mutinie.  10Their killing the bad King,  11and creating a better.

But now of all the royal Navie they had left but one piece of one ship, whereon they kept themselves in all trueth, having enterchaunged their cares, while either cared for other, ech comforting and counselling how to labour for the better, and to abide the worse. But so fell it out, that as they were carried by the tide (which there seconded by the storme ran exceedingly swiftly) Musidorus seeing (as he thought) Pyrocles not well upon the boord, as he would with his right hand have helped him on better, he had no sooner unfastned his hold, but that a wave forcibly spoiled his weaker hand of hold; and so for a time parted those friends, each crying to the other, but the noise of the sea drowned their farewell. But Pyrocles (then careless of death, if it had come by any means, but his owne) was shortly brought out of the seas furie to the lands comfort; when (in my conscience I know) that comfort was but bitter unto him. And bitter indeed it fell out even in it selfe to be unto him.  

For being cast on land much brused & beaten both with the seas hard farewell, and the shores rude welcome; and even almost deadly tired with the length of his uncomfortable labour, as he was walking up to discover some bodie, to whom he might goe for reliefe, there came streight running unto him certaine, who (as it was after knowne) by appointment watched (with manie others) in diverse places along the coast: who laide handes of him, and without either questioning with him, or shewing will to heare him, (like men fearefull to appeare curious) or which was worse having no regard to the hard plight he was in (being so wette and weake) they carried him some miles thence,
to a house of a principall officer of that countrie. Who with no more civilitie (though with much more busines then those under-fellowes had shewed) beganne in captious manner to put interrogatories unto him. To which he (unused to such entertainment) did shortlie and plainely aunswere, what he was, and how he came thither.

But that no sooner knowne, with numbers of armed men to garde him (for mischiefe, not from mischiefe) he was sent to the Kings court, which as then was not above a dayes journey off, with letters from that officer, containing his owne serviceable diligence in discovering so great a personage; adding with all more then was true of his conjectures, because he would endeare his owne service.

This country whereon he fell was Phrygia, and it was to the King thereof to whom he was sent, a Prince of a melancholy constitution both of bodie and mind; wickedly sad, ever musing of horrible matters; suspecting, or rather condemning all men of evill, because his minde had no eye to espie goodnesse: and therefore accusing Sycophantes, of all men did best sort to his nature; but therefore not seeming Sycophantes, because of no evill they said, they could bring any new or doubtfull thing unto him, but such as alreadie he had bene apt to determine; so as they came but as proofs of his wisedome: fearefull and never secure; while the feare he had figured in his minde had any possibilitie of event. A tode-like retyrednesse, and closenesse of minde; nature teaching the odiousnesse of poysnon, and the daunger of odiousnesse. Yet while youth lasted in him, the exercises of that age, and his humour (not yet fullie discovered) made him something the more frequentable, and lesse daugenerous. But after that yeares beganne to come on with some, though more seldom shewes of a bloudie nature, and that the prophecie of Musidorus destinie came to his eares (delivered unto him, and received of him with the hardest interpretation, as though his subiectes did delight in the hearing thereof.) Then gave he himselfe indeede to the full currant of his disposition, espetially after the warre of Thessalia, wherein (though in trueth wrongly) he deemed, his unsussuccings proceeded of their unwillingnes to have him prosper: and then thinking him selfe contemned, (knowing no countermine against contempt, but terror) began to let nothing passe which might beare the colour of a fault,
without sharpe punishment: & when he wanted faults, excellency grew a fault; and it was sufficient to make one guiltie, that he had power to be guiltie. And as there is no honor, to which impudent povertie cannot make it selse serviceable, so were there enow of those desperate ambitious, who would builde their houses upon others ruins, which after shoulde fall by like practises. So as servitude came mainly upon that poore people, whose deedes were not onely punished, but words corrected, and even thoughts by some meane or other puld out of the: while suspition bred the mind of crueltie, and the effectes of crueltie stirred a new cause of suspition. And in this plight (ful of watchfull fearefulness) did the storme deliver sweete Pyrocles to the stormie minde of that Tyrant, all men that did such wrong to so rare a stranger (whose countenance deserved both pitie and admiration) condemning the selves as much in their hearts, as they did brag in their forces.

But when this bloody King knew what he was, and in what order he and his cosin Musidorus (so much of him feared) were come out of Thessalia, assuredly thinking (because ever thinking the worst) that those forces were provided against him; glad of the perishing (as he thought) of Musidorus, determined in publique sort to put Pyrocles to death. For having quite loste the way of noblenes, he strave to clime to the height of terriblenes; and thinking to make all men adread, to make such one an enemie, who would not spare, nor feare to kill so great a Prince; and lastly, having nothing in him why to make him his friend, thought, he woulde make him away, for being his enemie. The day was appointed, and all things appointed for that cruell blow, in so solemne an order, as if they would set foorth tyrany in most gorgeous decking. The Princely youth of invincible valour, yet so unjustly subjecket to such outrageous wrong, carrying himselfe in all his demeanour so constantly, abiding extremitie, that one might see it was the cutting away of the greatest hope of the world, and destroying vertue in his sweetest growth.

But so it fell out that his death was prevented by a rare ample of friendship in Musidorus: who being almost drowned, had bene taken up by a Fisherman belonging to the kingdome of Pontus; and being there, and understanding the full discourse (as Fame was very prodigall of so notable an accident) in what case
THE COUTTESSE OF PEMBROKES

Pyrocles was; learning withall, that his hate was farre more to him then to Pyrocles, he founde means to acquaint him selfe with a noble-man of that Countrie, to whom largely discovering what he was, he found him a most fitte instrument to effectuate his desire. For this noble-man had bene one, who in many warres had served Euarchus, and had bene so mind-striken by the beautie of vertue in that noble King, that (though not borne his Subject) he even profeste himselfe his servaunt. His desire therefore to him was, to keepe Musidorus in a strong Castle of his, and then to make the King of Phrygia understande, that if he would deliver Pyrocles, Musidorus woulde willingly put him selfe into his handes: knowing well, that how thirstie so ever he was of Pyrocles bloud, he woulde rather drinke that of Musidorus.

The Nobleman was loath to preserve one by the losse of another, but time urging resolution: the importunitie of Musidorus (who shewed a minde not to over-live Pyrocles) with the affection he bare to Euarchus, so prevayled, that he carried this strange offer of Musidorus, which by that Tyrant was greedelie accepted.

And so upon securitie of both sides, they were enterchaged. Where I may not omitte that worke of friendshipp in Pyrocles, who both in speache and countenance to Musidorus, well shewed, that he thought himselfe injured, and not releived by him: asking him, what he had ever seene in him, why he could not beare the extremeties of mortall accidentes as well as any man? and why he should envie him the glorie of suffering death for his friendes cause, and (as it were) robbe him of his owne possession? But in this notable contention, (where the conquest must be the conquerers destruction, and safetie the punishment of the conquered) Musidorus prevayled: because he was a more welcome prize to the unjuste King, that wisht none well, to them worse then others, and to him worste of all: and as chearefully going towards, as Pyrocles went frowardly fromwarde his death, he was delivered to the King, who could not be inough sure of him, without he fed his owne eies upon one, whom he had begun to feare, as soone as the other began to be.

Yet because he would in one acte, both make ostentation of his owne felicitie (into whose hands his most feared enemie was fallen) and withal cut of such hopes from his suspected subjects (when they should knowe certainly he was dead) with much
more skilful cruelty, and horrible solemnitie he caused each thing to be prepared for his triumph of tyrannie. And so the day being come, he was led foorth by many armed men (who often had bee the fortifiers of wickednes) to the place of execution: where comming with a mind comforted in that he had done such service to Pyrocles, this strange encounter he had.

The excelling Pyrocles was no sooner delivered by the kings 8 servants to a place of liberty, then he bent his witte and courage, (and what would not they bring to passe?) how ether to deliver Musidorus, or to perish with him. And (finding he could get in that countrie no forces sufficient by force to rescue him) to bring himselfe to die with him, (little hoping of better event) he put himselfe in poore rayment, and by the helpe of some few crownes he tooke of that noble-man, (who full of sorrow, though not knowing the secrete of his intent, suffered him to goe in such order from him) he (even he, born to the greatest expectation, and of the greatest bloud that any Prince might be) submitted himselfe to be servant to the executioner that should put to death Musidorus: a farre notabler profe of his friendship, considering the height of his minde, then any death could be. That bad officer not suspecting him, being araithed fit for such an estate, & having his beautie hidden by many foule spots he artificially put upon his face, gave him leave not onely to weare a sworde himselfe, but to beare his sworde prepared for the justified murther. And so Pyrocles taking his time, when Musidorus was upon the scaffold (separated somewhat from the rest, as allowed to say something) he stept unto him, & putting the sworde into his hande not bound (a point of civility the officers used towards him, because they doubted no such enterprise) Musidorus (said he) die nobly. In truth, never ma betweene joy before knowledge what to be glad of, and feare after considering his case, had such a confusion of thoughts, as I had, when I saw Pyrocles, so neare me. But with that Dorus blushed, and Pamela smiled: and Dorus the more blushed at her smiling, and she the more smiled at his blushing; because he had (with the remembraunce of that plight he was in) forgotten in speaking of him selfe to use the third person. But Musidorus turned againe her thoughts from his cheekes to his tongue in this sorte: But (said he) when they were with swordes in handes, not turning backs one to the other (for there they knew was no place
of defence) but making that a preservation in not hoping to be preserved, and now acknowledging themselves subject to death, meaning onely to do honour to their princely birth, they flew amongst the all (for all were enimies) & had quickly either with flight or death, left none upon the scaffolde to annoy them. Wherein Pyrocles (the excellent Pyrocles) did such wonders beyond believe, as was hable to leade Musidorus to courage, though he had bene borne a coward. But indeed, just rage & desperate vertue did such effects, that the popular sorte of the beholders began to be almost superstitiously amazed, as at effectes beyond mortall power. But the King with angry threatnings from-out a window (where he was not ashamed, the worlde should behold him a beholder) comaundered his garde, and the rest of his souldiers to hasten their death. But many of them lost their bodies to loose their soules, when the Princes grew almost so weary, as they were ready to be conquered with conquering.

But as they were stil fighting with weake armes, and strong harts, it happened, that one of the souldiers (comaundered to go up after his fellowes against the Princes) having received a light hurt, more wouïde in his hart, went backe with as much diligence, as he came up with modestie: which another of his fellowes seeing, to pike a thanke of the King, strake him upon the face, reviling him, that so accompanied, he would runne away from so fewe. But he (as many times it falls out) onely valiant, when he was angrie, in revenge thrust him through: which with his death was streight revenged by a brother of his: and that againe requited by a fellow of the others. There began to be a great tumult amongst the souldiers; which scene, and not understood by the people (used to feares but not used to be bolde in them) some began to crie treason; and that voice streight multiplying it selfe, the King (O the cowardise of a guiltie conscience) before any man set upon him, fled away. Where-with a bruit (either by arte of some well meaning men, or by such chaunce as such thinges often fall out by) ran from one to the other, that the King was slaine; wherwith certaine yong men of the bravest minds, cried with lowde voice, Libertie; and encouraging the other Citizens to follow them, set upon the garde, and souldiers as chiefe instruments of Tyran-nie: and quickly, aided by the Princes, they had left none
of them alive, nor any other in the cittie, who they thought had in any sorte set his hand to the worke of their servitude, and (God knowes) by the blindnesse of rage, killing many guiltles persons, either for affinity to the Tyrant, or enmitie to the tyrant-killers. But some of the wisest (seeing that a popular licence is indeede the many-headed tyranny) prevailed with the rest to make Musidorus their chiefe: choosing one of them (because Princes) to defende them, and him because elder and most hated of the Tyrant, and by him to be ruled: whom foorthwith they lifted up, Fortune (I thinke) smiling at her worke therein, that a scaffold of execution should grow a scaffold of coronation.

But by and by there came newes of more certaine truth, that the King was not dead, but fled to a strong castle of his, neere hand, where he was gathering forces in all speed possible to suppress this mutinie. But now they had run themselves too farre out of breath, to go backe againe the same career; and too well they knew the sharpnesse of his memorie to forget such an injury; therefore learning vertue of necessitie, they continued resolute to obey Musidorus. Who seing what forces were in the citie, with them issued against the Tyrant, while they were in this heat; before practises might be used to dis- sever them: & with them met the King, who likewise hoping little to prevale by time, (knowing and finding his peoples hate) met him with little delay in the field: where him selfe was slaine by Musidorus, after he had seene his onely sonne (a Prince of great courage & beautie, but fostred in bloud by his naughty Father) slaine by the hand of Pyrocles. This victory obtained, with great, and truly not undeserved honour to the two Princes, the whole estates of the country with one consent, gave the crowne and all other markes of soveraigntie to Musidorus; desiring nothing more, then to live under such a government, as they promised themselves of him.

But he thinking it a greater greatnes to give a kingdome, then get a kingdome; understanding that there was left of the bloud Roiall, & next to the successiö, an aged Gentleman of approved goodnes (who had gotten nothing by his cousins power, but danger frö him, and odiousnes for him) having past his time in modest secrecy, & asmuch from entermedling in matters of government, as the greatnesse of his bloud would suffer him,
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

did (after having received the full power to his owne hands) resigne all to the noble-men: but with such conditions, & cautions of the conditions, as might assure the people (with asmuch assurance as worldly matters beare) that not onely that governour, of whom indeed they looked for al good, but the nature of the government, should be no way apt to decline to Tyrany.

CHAP. 9.

1 The two brothers escape to the shore of Pontus. 2 Incostancy, 3 and envie purtraied in the King & his Counsellor. 4 The advancement & overthrow by them of those two brothers. 5 The revenge thereof by the two Princes. 6 The cruelties of two revengefull Gyants, and their death by the Princes. 7 Their honours, and their honourable mindes.

1 This dooing set forth no lesse his magnificece, then the other act did his magnanimitie: so that greatly praysed of all, and justly beloved of the newe King, who in all both wordes and behaviour protested him selfe their Tenaunt, or Liegeman, they were drawne thence to revenge those two servats of theirs, of whose memorable faith, I told you (most excellët Princesse) in willingly giving themselves to be drowned for their sakes: but drowned indeed they were not, but gat with painefull swimming upon a rocke: from whence (after being come as neere famishing, as before drowning) the weather breaking up, they were brought to the maine lande of Pontus; the same coutry upon which Musidorus also was fallen, but not in so luckie a place.

2 For they were brought to the King of that country, a Tyrant also, not thorow suspition, greedines, or unrevégefulnes, as he of Phrygia, but (as I may terme it) of a wanton crueltie: inconstant of his choise of friends, or rather never having a friëd, but a playfellow; of whom when he was wearie, he could not otherwise rid himself, the by killing the: giving somtimes prodigally, not because he loved them to whom he gave, but because he lusted to give: punishing, not so much for hate or anger, as because he felt not the smart of punishment: delighted to be flattered, at first for those vertues which

202
were not in him, at length making his vices vertues worthy the flattering: with like judgement glorying, when he had happened to do a thing well, as when he had performed some notable mischiefe.

He chauced at that time (for indeed long time none lasted with him) to have next in use about him, a mâ of the most envious dispositio, that (I think) ever infected the aire with his breath: whose eies could not looke right upon any happie mâ, nor eares beare the burthen of any bodies praise: contrary to the natures of al other plagues, plagued with others well being; making happines the ground of his unhappinesse, & good newes the argumet of his sorrow: in sum, a man whose favour no man could winne, but by being miserable.

And so, because these two faithfull servants of theirs came in miserable sorte to that Courte, he was apte inough at first to favour them; and the King understanding of their adventure, (wherein they had shewed so constant a faith unto their Lordes) suddainly falles to take a pride in making much of them, extolling them with infinite prayses, and praying him selfe in his harte, in that he prayed them. And by and by were they made great courtiers, and in the way of minions, when advancement (the most mortall offence to envy) stirred up their former friend, to overthrow his owne worke in them; taking occasion upon the knowledge (newly come to the court) of the late King of Phrygia destroied by their two Lordes, who having bene a neere kinsman to this Prince of Pontus, by this envious Couccellour, partly with suspition of practise, partly with glory of in-part revêging his cousins death, the King was suddainly turned, (and every turne with him was a downe-fall) to Locke them up in prison, as servaunts to his enemies, whom before he had never knowne, nor (til that time one of his own subjects had entertained and dealt for them) did ever take heed of. But now earnest in every present humour, and making himselfe brave in his liking, he was content to give them just cause of offence, when they had power to make just revenge. Yet did the Princes send unto him before they entred into war, desiring their servants liberty. But he swelling in thier hübleness, (like a bubble swollen up with a small breath, broken with a great) forgetting, or never knowing humanitie, caused their heads to be striken off, by the advice of his envious Councillor.
(who now hated them so much the more, as he foresaw the
happines in having such, and so fortunate masters) and sent
them with unroyall reproches to *Musidorus* and *Pyrocles*, as
if they had done traiterously, and not heroically in killing his
tyrrannicall Cosen.

5 But that injurie went beyond al degree of reconcilement;
so that they making forces in *Phrygia* (a kingdome wholy at
their commandement, by the love of the people, and gratefulnesse
of the King) they entred his country; and wholy conquering
it (with such deeds as at lest Fame said were excellent) tooke
the King; and by *Musidorus* commaundement (*Pyrocles* hart
more enclined to pitie) he was slaine upon the tombe of their
two true Servants; which they caused to be made for them
with royall expences, and notable workmanship to preserve their
deade lives. For his wicked Servant he should have felt the
like, or worse, but that his harte brake even to death with the
beholding the honour done to the deade carcasses? There
might *Pyrocles* quietly have enjoyed that crowne, by all the
desire of that people, most of whom had revolted unto him:
but he, finding a sister of the late Kings (a faire and well
esteemed Ladie) looking for nothing more, then to be oppressd
with her brothers ruines, gave her in marriage to the noble man
his fathers old friend, and endowed them with the crowne of that
kingdome. And not content with those publike actions, of
princely, and (as it were) governing vertue, they did (in that
kingdome and some other neere about) divers acts of particular
trials, more famous, because more perilous. For in that time
those regions were full both of cruell monsters, & monstrous
men: all which in short time by private combats they delivered
the countries of.

6 Among the rest, two brothers of huge both greatnesse &
force, therefore commonly called giants, who kept thêselves in
a castle seated upon the top of a rocke, impregnable, because
there was no comming unto it, but by one narrow path, where
one mans force was able to keepe downe an armie. These
brothers had a while served the King of *Pontus*, and in all his
affaires (especially of war, wherunto they were onely apt) they
had shewed, as uncoquered courage, so a rude faithfulness:
being men indeed by nature apter to the faults of rage, then of
deceit; not greatly ambitious, more then to be well and

204
uprightly dealt with; rather impatient of injury, then delighted with more then ordinary curtesies; and in injuries more sensible of smart or losse, then of reproch or disgrace. These men being of this nature (and certainly Jewels to a wise man, considering what indeed wonders they were able to performe) yet were discarded by that unworthy Prince, after many notable deserts, as not worthy the holding. Which was the more evident to them; because it sodainly fell from an exesse of favor, which (many examples having taught them) never stopt his race till it came to an headlong overthrow: they full of rage, retyred themselves unto this castle. Where thinking nothing juster thē revenge, nor more noble then the effects of anger, that (according to the nature) ful of inward bravery and fierce-nes, scarcely in the glasse of Reason, thinking it self faire, but when it is terrible, they immediately gave themselves to make all the countrie about them (subject to that King) to smart for their Lords folly: not caring how innocent they were, but rather thinking the more innocent they were, the more it testifiied their spite, which they desired to manifest. And with use of evill, growing more and more evill, they tooke delight in slaughter, and pleasing themselves in making others wracke the effect of their power: so that where in the time that they obeyed a master, their anger was a serviceable power of the minde to doo publike good; so now unbridled, and blinde judge of it selfe, it made wickednesse violent, and praised it selfe in excellencie of mischiefe; almost to the ruine of the countrie, not greatly regarded by their carelesse and lovelesse king. Till now these Princes finding them so fleshed in crueltie, as not to be reclaimed, secreatly untertooke the matter alone: for accompanied they would not have suffered them to have mounted; and so those great fellowes scornfully receiving them, as foolish birds falne into their net, it pleased the eternall justice to make thē suffer death by their hands: So as they were manifoldly acknowledged the savers of that countrie.

It were the part of a verie idle Orator to set forth the numbers of wel-devised honors done unto them: But as high honor is not onely gotten and borne by paine, and daunger, but must be nurst by the like, or els vanisheth as soone as it appeares to the world: so the naturall hunger thereof (which was in Pyrocles) suffered him not to account a resting seate of that,
which ever either riseth, or falleth, but still to make one action beget another; whereby his doings might send his praise to others mouthes to rebound againe true contentment to his spirite. And therefore having well established those kingdomes, under good governours, and rid them by their value of such giants and monsters, as before time armies were not able to subdue, they determined in unknowne order to see more of the world, & to imploy those gifts esteemed rare in them, to the good of mankinde; and therefore would themselves (understanding that the King Euarchus was passed all the cumber of his warres) goe privately to seeke exercises of their vertue ; thinking it not so worthy, to be brought to heroycall effe6l by fortune, or necessitie (like Ulysses and Aeneas) as by ones owne choice, and working. And so went they away from verie unwilling people to leave them, making time haste it selfe to be a circumstance of their honour, and one place witnesse to another of the truth of their doings. For scarcely were they out of the coffines of Pontus, but that as they ridde alone armed, (for alone they went, one serving the other) they mette an adventure; which though not so notable for any great effect they perfourmed, yet worthy to be remembred for the un-used examples therein, as well of true natural goodnes, as of wretched ungratefulnesse.

CHAP. 10.

1 The pitifull state, and storie of the Paphalgonian unkinde King, and his kind sonne, 2 first related by the son, 3 then by the blind father. 4 The three Princes assaulted by Plexirtus and his traine: 5 assisted by their King of Pontus and his troupes. 6 Plexirtus succoured and saved by two brothers, that vertuously loved a most vicious man. 7 Beseeged by the new King, 8 he submitteth, 9 he is pardoned. 9 The two Princes depart to aide the Queene of Lycia.

IT was in the kingdome of Galacia, the season being (as in the depth of winter) very cold, and as then sodainely growne to so extreame and foule a storme, that never any
winter (I thinke) brought foorth a fowler child: so that the Princes were even compelled by the haile, that the pride of the winde blew into their faces, to seeke some shrowding place within a certaine hollow rocke offering it unto them, they made it their shield against the tempests furie. And so staying there, till the violence thereof was passed, they heard the speach of a couple, who not perceiving them (being hidde within that rude canapy) helde a straunge and pitifull disputacion which made them steppe out; yet in such sort, as they might see unseene. There they perceived an aged man, and a young, scarcely come to the age of a man, both poorely arayed, extremely weather-beaten; the olde man blinde, the young man leading him: and yet through all those miseries, in both these seemed to appeare a kind of noblenesse, not sutable to that affliction. But the first words they heard, were these of the old man. Well Leonatus (said he) since I cannot perswade thee to lead me to that which should end my grieue, & thy trouble, let me now entreat thee to leave me: feare not, my misery cannot be greater then it is, & nothing doth become me but misery; feare not the danger of my blind steps, I cannot fall worse then I am. And doo not I pray thee, doo not obstinately continue to infect thee with my wretchednes. But flie, flie from this region, onely worthy of me. Deare father (answered he) doo not take away from me the onely remnant of my happinesse: while I have power to doo you service, I am not wholly miserable. Ah my sonne (said he, and with that he groned, as if sorrow strave to breake his harte,) how evill fits it me to have such a sonne, and how much doth thy kindnesse upbraide my wickednesse? These dolefull speeches, and some others to like purpose (well shewing they had not bene borne to the fortune they were in,) moved the Princes to goe out unto them, and aske the younger what they were? Sirs (answered he, with a good grace, and made the more agreable by a certaine noble kinde of pitiousnes) I see well you are straungers, that know not our miserie so well here knowne, that no man dare know, but that we must be miserable. In deede our state is such, as though nothing is so needfull unto us as pittie, yet nothing is more daungeroous unto us, then to make our selves so knowne as may stirre pittie. But your presence promiseth, that cruelty shall not over-runne
hate. And if it did, in truth our state is soncke below the
degree of feare.

2 This old man (whom I leade) was lately rightfull Prince of
this countrie of Papblagonia, by the hard-harted ungratefulnes
of a sonne of his, deprived, not onely of his kingdome (whereof
no forraigne forces were ever able to spoyle him) but of his
sight, the riches which Nature graûts to the poorest creatures.
Whereby, & by other his unnaturall dealings, he hath bin
driven to such grieve, as even now he would have had me to
have led him to the toppe of this rocke, thêce to cast himselfe
headlong to death: and so would have made me (who received
my life of him) to be the worker of his destruction. But noble
Gentlemen (said he) if either of you have a father, and feele
what duetifull affection is engrafted in a sonnes hart, let me
intreate you to convey this afflicted Prince to some place of
rest & securitie. Amongst your worthie aëtes it shall be none
of the least, that a King, of such might and fame, and so
unjustly oppressed, is in any sort by you relieved.

3 But before they could make him answere, his father began
to speake, Ah my sonne (said he) how evill an Historian are
you, that leave out the chiefe knotte of all the discourse? my
wickednes, my wickednes. And if thou dost it to spare my
eares, (the onely sense nowe left me proper for knowledge)
assure thy selfe thou dost mistake me. And I take wittes of
that Sunne which you see (with that he cast up his blinde eyes,
as if he would hunt for light,) and wish my selfe in worse case
then I do wish my selfe, which is as evill as may be, if I speake
untruely; that nothing is so welcome to my thoughts, as the
publishing of my shame. Therefore know you Gentlemen (to
whom from my harte I wish that it may not prove ominous
foretökè of misfortune to have mette with such a miser as I
am) that whatsoever my sonne (ô God, that trueith binds me to
reproch him with the name of my sonne) hath said, is true.
But besides those truthes, this also is true, that having had in
lawful mariage, of a mother fitte to beare royall children, this
sonne (such one as partly you see, and better shall knowe by
my shorte declaration) and so enjoyed the expectations in the
world of him, till he was growè to justifie their expectations (so
as I needed envie no father for the chiefe comfort of mortalitie,
to leave an other ones-selufe after me) I was caried by a bastarde
sonne of mine (if at least I be bounde to beleve the words of that base woman my concubine, his mother) first to dislike, then to hate, lastly to destroy, to doo my best to destroy, this sonne (I thinke you thinke) undeserving destruction. What waies he used to bring me to it, if I should tell you, I should tediously trouble you with as much poysonous hypocrisie, desperate fraude, smoothe malice, hidden ambition, & smiling envie, as in any living person could be harbored. But I list it not, no remembrance, (no, of naughtines) delights me, but mine own; & me thinks, the accusing his trains might in some manner excuse my fault, which certainly I loth to doo. But the conclusion is, that I gave order to some servants of mine, whom I thought as apte for such charities as my selfe, to leade him out into a forrest, & there to kill him.

But those theeves (better natured to my sonne then my selfe) spared his life, letting him goe, to learne to live poorely: which he did, giving himselfe to be a private souldier, in a countrie here by. But as he was redy to be greatly advaunced for some noble pieces of service which he did, he hearde newes of me: who (dronke in my affection to that unlawfull and unnaturall sonne of mine) suffered my self so to be governed by him, that all favors and punishments passed by him, all offices, and places of importance, distributed to his favourites; so that ere I was aware, I had left my self nothing but the name of a King: which he shortly wearie of too, with many indignities (if any thing may be called an indignity, which was laid upon me) threw me out of my seat, and put out my eies; and then (proud in his tyrannie) let me goe, nether imprisoning, nor killing me: but rather delighting to make me feele my miserie; miserie indeed, if ever there were any; full of wretchednes, fuller of disgrace, and fullest of guiltines. And as he came to the crowne by so unjust meanes, as unjustlie he kept it, by force of stranger souldiers in Cittadel, the nestes of tyranny, & murderers of libertie; disarming all his own countrimen, that no man durst shew himself a wel-willer of mine: to say the trueth (I think) few of the being so (considering my cruell follie to my good sonne, and foolish kindnes to my unkinde bastard:) but if there were any who fell to pitie of so great a fall, and had yet any sparkes of unstained duety lefte in them towards me, yet durst they not shewe it, scarcely with giving
me almes at their doores; which yet was the onelie sustenaunce of my distressed life, no bodie daring to shewe so much charitie, as to lende me a hande to guide my darke steppes: Till this sonne of mine (God knowes, woorthie of a more vertuous, and more fortunate father) forgetting my abhominable wrongs, not recking danger, & negleeting the present good way he was in doing himselfe good, came hether to doo this kind office you see him performe towards me, to my unspeakable grieue; not onely because his kindnes is a glasse eve to my blind eyes, of my naughtines, but that above all griefes, it greeves me he should desparatly adventure the losse of his soul-deserving life for mine, that yet owe more to fortune for my deserts, as if he would cary mudde in a chest of christall. For well I know, he that now raigneth, how much soever (and with good reason) he despiseth me, of all men despised; yet he will not let slippe any advantage to make away him, whose just title (en-nobled by courage and goodnes) may one day shake the seate of a never secure tyrannie. And for this cause I craved of him to leade me to the toppe of this rocke, indeede I must confesse, with meaning to free him from so Serpentine a companion as I am. But he finding what I purposed, onely therein since he was borne, shewed himselfe disobedient unto me. And now Gentlemen; you have the true storie, which I pray you publish to the world, that my mischievous proceedinges may be the glorie of his filiall pietie, the onely reward now left for so great a merite. And if it may be, let me obtaine that of you, which my sonne denies me: for never was there more pity in saving any, then in ending me; both because therein my agonies shall ende, and so shall you preserve this excellent young man, who els wilfully followes his owne ruine.

The matter in it self lamentable, lamentably expressed by the old Prince (which needed not take to himselfe the gestures of pitie, since his face could not put of the markes thereof) greatly moved the two Princes to compassion, which could not stay in such harts as theirs without seeking remedie. But by and by the occasion was presented: for Plexirtus (so was the bastard called) came thether with fortie horse, onely of purpose to murder this brother; of whose comming he had soone advertisement, and thought no eyes of sufficient credite in such a matter, but his owne; and therefore came him selfe to be
actor, and spectator. And as soone as he came, not regarding the weake (as he thought) garde of but two men, commaunded some of his followers to set their handes to his, in the killing of Leonatus. But the young Prince (though not otherwise armed but with a sword) how falsely soever he was dealt with by others, would not betray him selue: but bravely drawing it out, made the death of the first that assaulted him, warne his fellows to come more warily after him. But then Pyrocles and Musidorus were quickly become parties (so just a defence deserving as much as old friendship) and so did behave them among that copanie (more injurious, then valiant) that many of them lost their lives for their wicked maister.

Yet perhaps had the number of them at last prevailed, if the King of Pontus (lately by them made so) had not come unlooked for to their succour. Who (having had a dreame which had fixt his imagination vehemently upon some great daunger, presently to follow those two Princes whom he most dearfully loved) was come in all hast, following as well as he could their tracke with a hundreth horses in that countrie, which he thought (considering who then raigned) a fit place inough to make the stage of any Tragedie.

But then the match had ben so ill made for Plexirtus, that his ill-led life, & worse gotten honour should have tumbled together to destru6li6; had there not come in Tydeus & Telenor, with fortie or fiftie in their suit, to the defence of Plexirtus. These two were brothers, of the noblest house of that country, brought up frõ their infancie with Plexirtus: men of such provessse, as not to know feare in themselves, and yet to teach it others that should deale with them: for they had often made their lives triumph over most terrible daungers; never dismayed, and ever fortunate; and truely no more setled in their valure, then disposed to goodnesse and justice, if either they had lighted on a better friend, or could have learned to make friendship a child, and not the father of Vertue. But bringing up (rather then choise) having first knit their minds unto him, (indeed craftie inough, eyther to hide his faultes, or never to shew them, but when they might pay home) they willingly held out the course, rather to satisfie him, then al the world; and rather to be good friendes, then good men: so as though they did not like the evill he did, yet they liked him that did
the evill; and though not counsellors of the offence, yet protectors of the offender. Now they having heard of this sodaine going out, with so small a company, in a country full of evil-wishing minds toward him (though they knew not the cause) followed him; till they found him in such case as they were to venture their lives, or else he to loose his: which they did with such force of minde and bodie, that truly I may justly say, Pyrocles & Musidorus had never till then found any, that could make them so well repeate their hardest lesson in the seates of armes. And briefly so they did, that if they overcame not; yet were they not overcome, but caried away that ungratfulfull maister of theirs to a place of securitie; howsoever the Princes laboured to the cőtrary. But this matter being thus far begun, it became not the constācie of the Princes so to leave it; but in all hast making forces both in Pontus and Phrygia, they had in fewe dayes, lefte him but only that one strong place where he was. For feare having bene the onely knot that had fastned his people unto him, that once untied by a greater force, they all scattered from him; like so many birdes, whose cage had bene broken.

7 In which season the blind King (having in the chief cittie of his Realme, set the crowne upō his sonne Leonatus head) with many teares (both of joy and sorrow) setting forth to the whole people, his owne fault & his sonnes vertue, after he had kist him, and forst his sonne to accept honour of him (as of his newe-become subjɛct) evɛ in a moment died, as it should seeme: his hart broken with unkindnes & affliction, stretched so farre beyond his limits with this excesse of côfort, as it was able no longer to keep safe his roial spirits. But the new King (having no lesse lovingly performed all duties to him dead, then alive) pursued on the siege of his unnatural brother, asmuch for the revenge of his father, as for the establishing of his owne quiet. In which siege truly I cannot but acknowledge the prowesse of those two brothers, then whom the Princes never found in all their travell two men of greater habilitie to per-forme, nor of habler skill for conduft.

8 But Plexirtus finding, that if nothing els, famin would at last bring him to destrucțiō, thought better by hüblenes to creepe, where by pride he could not march. For certainly so had nature formed him, & the exercise of craft conformed him
to all turnings of sleights, that though no mā had lesse goodnes in his soule then he, no man could better find the places whence argumēts might grow of goodnesse to another: though no man felt lesse pitie, no man could tel better how to stir pitie: no mā more impudēt to deny, where prooves were not manifest; no man more ready to confessē with a repenting manner of aggravating his owne evil, where denial would but make the fault fowler. Now he tooke this way, that having gotten a pasport for one (that pretended he would put Plexirtus alive into his häds) to speak with the King his brother, he him selfe (though much against the minds of the valiant brothers, who rather wished to die in brave defence) with a rope about his necke, barefooted, came to offer himselfe to the discretion of Leonatus. Where what submission he used, how cunningly in making greater the faulte he made the faultines the lesse, how artificially he could set out the torments of his owne coscience, with the burdensome comber he had found of his ambitious desires, how finely seeming to desire nothing but death, as ashamed to live, he begd life, in the refusing it, I am not cunning inough to be able to expresse: but so fell out of it, that though at first sight Leonatus saw him with no other eie, then as the murderer of his father; & anger already began to paint revenge in many colours, ere long he had not only gotten pitie, but pardon, and if not an excuse of the fault past, yet an opinion of a future amēdment: while the poore villaines (chiefe ministers of his wickednes, now betraied by the author therof,) were delivered to many cruell sorts of death; he so handling it, that it rather seemed, he had rather come into the defence of an unremediable mischiefe already cōmitten, then that they had done it at first by his consent.

In such sort the Princes left these recōciled brothers 9 (Plexirtus in all his behaviour carifying him in far lower degree of service, then the ever-noble nature of Leonatus would suffer him) & taking likewise their leaves of their good friend the King of Pontus (who returned to enjoy their benefite, both of his wife and kingdome) they privately went thence, having onely with them the two valiant brothers, who would needs accōpanie them, through divers places; they foure dooing actes more daungerous, though lesse famous, because they were but privat chivalries: till hearing of the faire and vertuous Queene

213
Erona of Lycia, besieged by the puissant King of Armenia, they bent themselves to her succour, both because the weaker (& weaker as being a Ladie,) & partly because they heard the King of Armenia had in his company three of the most famous men living, for matters of armes, that were knowne to be in the worlde. Whereof one was the Prince Plangus, (whose name was sweetened by your breath, peerlesse Ladie, when the last daie it pleased you to mention him unto me) the other two were two great Princes (though holding of him) Barzanes and Euardes, men of Giant-like both hugenes and force: in which two especially, the trust the King had of victorie, was reposed. And of them, those two brothers Tydeus and Telenor (sufficient judges in warlike matters) spake so high commendations, that the two yong Princes had even a youthfull longing to have some triall of their vertue. And therefore as soone as they were entred into Lycia they joyned theselves with them that faithfully served the poore Queene, at that time besieged: and ere long animated in such sort their almost overthrowne harts, that they went by force to relieve the towne, though they were deprived of a great part of their strength by the parting of the two brothers, who were sent for in all hast to returne to their old friend and maister, Plexirtus: who (willingly hoodwinking themselves from seeing his faultes, and binding themselves to beleve what he said) often abused the vertue of courage to defend his fowle vice of injustice. But now they were sent for to advaunce a conquest he was about; while Pyrocles and Musidorus pursued the deliverie of the Queene Erona.

CHAP. II.

1 Dorus his suite to Pamela interrupted by Mopsas waking. 2 The sisters going with Zelmane to wash themselves. 3 The pleasantnes of the river. 4 The pleasure Zelmane had in seeing them, uttered 5 in speach, 6 and song. 7 She led by a spaniel, to know, and hurte her noble rivall. 8 The parting of that fraye.

I Have heard (said Pamela) that parte of the story of Plangus whe he passed through this country: therfore you may (if you list) passe over that warre of Eronaes quarrell, lest if you
speake too much of warre matters, you should wake Mopsa, which might happily breed a great broile. He looked, and saw that Mopsa indeed sat swallowing of sleepe with open mouth, making such a noise withal, as no bodie could lay the stealing of a nappe to her charge. Whereupon, willing to use that occasion, he kneeled downe, and with humble-hartednesse, & harty earnestnes printed in his graces, Alas (said he) divine Lady, who have wrought such miracles in me, as to make a Prince (none of the basest) to thinke all principalities base, in respect of the sheephouke, which may hold him up in your sight; vouchsafe now at last to heare in direct words my humble sute, while this dragh sleeper, that keepes the golden fruite. If in my desire I wish, or in my hopes aspire, or in my imagination faine to my selfe any thing which may be the lest spot to that heavenly vertue, which shines in all your doings; I pray the eternal powers, that the words I speak may be deadly poysons, while they are in my mouth, and that all my hopes, all my desires, all my imaginations, may onely worke their owne confusion. But if love, love of you, love of your vertues, seeke onely that favour of you, which becommeth that gratefulnes, which cannot misbecome your excellencie, O doo not: He would have said further, but Pamela calling aloud Mopsa, she sodainly start up, staggering, and rubbing her eies, ran first out of the doore, and then backe to them, before she knew how she went out, or why she came in againe: till at length, being fully come to her little selfe, she asked Pamela, why she had called her. For nothing (said Pamela) but that you might heare some tales of your servants telling: and therefore now (said she) Dorus go on.

But as he (who found no so good sacrifice, as obedience) was returning to the story of himselfe, Philoclea came in, & by and by after her, Miso; so as for that time they were faine to let Dorus depart. But Pamela (delighted evé to preserve in her memory, the words of so wel a beloved speaker) repeated the whole substance to her sister, till their sober dinner being come and gone, to recreate themselves something, (even tyred with the noysomnes of Misos conversation) they determinyed to goe (while the heate of the day lasted) to bath themselves (such being the maner of the Arcadian nymphes often to doo) in the river of Ladon, and take with them a Lute, meaning to delight
them under some shadow. But they could not stir, but that Miso with her daughter Mopsa was after them: and as it lay in their way to passe by the other lodge, Zelmane out of her window espied them, and so stale downe after them: which she might the better doo because that Gynecia was sicke, and Basilius (that day being his birth-day) according to his maner, was busie about his devotions; and therefore she went after, hoping to finde some time to speake with Philoclea: but not a word could she beginne, but that Miso would be one of the audience; so that she was driven to recommend thinking, speaking, and all, to her eyes, who diligently perfourmed her trust, till they came to the rivers side; which of all the rivers 3 of Greece had the price for excellent purenesse and sweetenesse, in so much as the verie bathing in it, was acouët exceeding healthfull. It ranne upon so fine and delicate a ground, as one could not easely judge, whether the River did more wash the gravell, or the gravel did purifie the River; the River not running forth right, but almost continually winding, as if the lower streames would returne to their spring, or that the River had a delight to play with it selfe. The banckes of either side seeming armes of the loving earth, that faine would embrace it; and the River a wanton nymph which still would stirre from it: either side of the bancke being fringed with most beautifull trees, which resisted the sunnes dartes from overmuch pearcing the naturall coldnes of the River. There was the

the rest a goodly Cypres, who bowing her faire head over the water, it seemed she looked into it, and dressed her greene lockes, by that running River. There the Princesses determining to bath themselves, though it was so priviledged a place, upon paine of death, as no bodie durst presume to come thither, yet for the more surety, they looked round about, and could see nothing but a water spaniell, who came downe the river, shewing that he hunted for a duck, & with a snuffling grace, disdaining that his smelling force coulde not as well prevale thorow the water, as thorow the aire; & therefore wayting with his eye, to see whether he could espie the duckes getting up againe: but then a little below them failing of his purpose, he got out of the river, & shaking off the water (as great men
do their friends, now he had no further cause to use it) in-
weeded himselfe so, as the Ladies lost the further marking his
sportfulness: and inviting Zelmane also to wash her selfe with
them, and she excusing her selfe with having taken a late cold,
they began by preece-meale to take away the eclipsing of their
apparel.

Zelmane would have put to her helping hand, but she was taken
with such a quivering, that she thought it more wise-
dome to leane her selfe to a tree and looke on; while Miso and
Mopsa (like a couple of foreswat melters) were getting the
pure silver of their bodies out of the ure of their garments.
But as the rayments went of to receive kisses of the ground, Zelmane
envied the happinesse of all, but of the smocke was even jealous, and when that was taken away too, and that Philoclea remained (for her Zelmane onely marked) like a Dyamond taken from out the rocke, or rather like the Sun getting from under a cloud, and shewing his naked beames to the full vew, then was the beautie too much for a patient
sight, the delight too strong for a stayed coniect: so that Zelmane
could not choose but runne, to touch, embrace, and kisse her; But conscience made her come to her selfe, & leave Philoclea, who blushing, and withall smiling, making shamefast-
nesse pleasant, and pleasure shamefast, tenderly moved her
feete, unwonted to feel the naked ground, till the touch of the
cold water made a prettie kinde of shrugging come over her
bodie, like the twinkleing of the fairest among the fixed stars.
But the River it selfe gave way unto her, so that she was straignt
brest high; which was the deepest that there-about she could be: and when cold Ladon had once fully imbraced them, him-
selfe was no more so cold to those Ladies, but as if his cold
complexion had bene heated with love, so seemed he to play
about every part he could touch.

Ah sweete, now sweetest Ladon (said Zelmane) why dost thou not stay thy course to have more full tast of thy happines? But the reason is manifest, the upper streames make such haste to have their part of embracing, that the nether (though lothly) must needs give place unto them. O happie Ladon, within whom she is, upon whom her beautie fals, thorow whom her eye perceth. O happie Ladon, which art
now an unperfect mirror of al perfection, canst thou ever forget
the blessednes of this impression? if thou do, then let thy bed be turned from fine gravel, to weeds & mudde; if thou doo, let some unjust niggards make wereis to spoile thy beauty; if thou do, let some greater river fal into thee, to take away the name of Ladon. Oh Ladon, happie Ladon, rather slide then run by her, lest thou shouldest make her legs slippe from her; and then, O happy Ladon, who would then cal thee, but the most cursed Ladon? But as the Ladies plaid them in the water, somtimes striking it with their hands, the water (making lines in his face) seemed to smile at such beating, and with twentie bubbles, not to be content to have the picture of their face in large upon him, but he would in eech of those bubbles set forth the miniature of them.

But Zelmane, whose sight was gaine-said by nothing but the transparent vaile of Ladon, (like a chamber where a great fire is kept, though the fire be at one stay, yet with the continuance continually hath his heate encreased) had the coales of her affection so kindled with wonder, and blowne with delight, that noe all her parts grudged, that her eyes should doo more homage, then they, to the Princesse of them. In somuch that taking up the Lute, her wit began to be with a divine furie inspired; her voice would in so beloved an occasion second her wit; her hands accorded the Lutes musicke to the voice; her panting hart daunced to the musicke; while I thinke her feete did beate the time; while her bodie was the roome where it should be celebrated; her soule the Queene which shoulde be delighted. And so toegither went the utterance and the invention, that one might judge, it was Philocleas beautie which did speedily write it in her eyes; or the sense thereof, which did word by word endite it in her minde, whereto she (but as an organ) did onely lend utterance. The song was to this purpose.

What toong can her perfections tell
In whose each part all pens may dwell?
Her haire fine threeds of finest gould
In curled knots mans thought to hold:
But that her fore-head sayes in me
A whiter beautie you may see.
Whiter indeed; more white then snow,
Which on cold winters face doth grow.

218
That doth present those even browses,
Whose equall line their angles bowes,
Like to the Moone when after chaunce
Her horned head abroad doth raungeth:
And arches be to heavenly lids,
Whose winke ech bold attempt forbids.
For the blacke starres those Spheares containe,
The matchlesse paire, even praise doth staine.
No lampe, whose light by Art is got,
No Sunne, which shines, and seeth not,
Can liken them without all peere,
Save one as much as other cleere:
Which onely thus unhappie be,
Because themselves they cannot see.
Her cheekes with kindly claret spread.
Aurora like new out of bed,
Or like the fresh Queene-apples side,
Blushing at sight of Phæbus pride.
Her nose, her chinne pure ivorie weares:
No purer then the pretie eares.
So that therein appeares some blood,
Like wine and milke that mingled stood
In whose Incirclets if ye gaze,
Your eyes may tread a Lovers maze.
But with such turnes the voice to stray,
No talke untaught can finde the way.
The tippe no jewell needes to weare:
The tippe is jewell of the eare.
But who those ruddie lippes can misse?
Which blessed still themselues doo kisse.
Rubies, Cherries, and Roses new,
In worth, in taste, in perfitte hewe:
Which never part but that they showe
Of pretious pearle the double rowe,
The second sweetly-fenced warde,
Her heav'ny-dewed tongue to garde.
Whence never word in vaine did flowe.
Faire under these doth stately growe,
The handle of this pretious worke,
The neck, in which strange graces lurke.
Such be I thinke the sumptuous towers
Which skill dooth make in Princes bowers.
So good a say invites the eye,
A little downward to espie,
The livelie clusters of her brests,
Of Venus babe the wanton nests:
Like pomels round of Marble cleere:
Where azurde veines well mixt appeere.
With dearest tops of porphyrie.
Betwixt these two a way doth lie,
A way more worthie beauties fame,
Then that which beares the Milkie name.
This leades into the joyous field,
Which onely still doth Lillies yeeld:
But Lillies such whose native smell
The Indian odours doth excell.
Waste it is calde, for it doth waste
Mens lives, untill it be imbraste.
There may one see, and yet not see
Her ribbes in white all armed be.
More white then Neptunes fomie face,
When strugling rocks he would imbrace.
In those delights the wandring thought
Might of each side astray be brought,
But that her navel doth unite,
In curious circle, busie sight:
A daintie seale of virgin-waxe,
Where nothing but impression lackses.
Her bellie then gladde sight doth fill,
Justly entitiled Cupids hill.
A hill most fitte for such a master,
A spotlesse mine of Alablaster.
Like Alablaster faire and sleeke,
But soft and supple satten like.
In that sweete seate the Boy doth sport:
Loath, I must leave his chiefe resort.
"For such a use the world hath gotten,
"The best things still must be forgotten.
Yet never shall my song omitte
Thighes, for Ovids song more fitte;
Which flanked with two sugred flankes,
Lift up their stately swelling bankes;
That Albion clives in whitenes passe:
With hanches smooth as looking glasse.
   But bow all knees, now of her knees
My tongue doth tell what fancie sees.
The knottes of joy, the gemmes of love,
Whose motion makes all graces move.
Whose bought incav'd doth yeeld such sight,
Like cunning Painter shadowing white.
The garrting place with child-like signe,
Shewes easte print in mettall fine.
But then againe the flesh doth rise
In her brave calves, like christall skies.
Whose Atlas is a smallest small,
More white then whitest bone of all.
   Thereout steales out that round cleane foote
This noble Cedars pretious roote:
In shewe and sent pale violets,
Whose steppe on earth all beautie sets.
   But back unto her back, my Muse,
Where Ledas swanne his feathers mewes,
Along whose ridge such bones are met,
Like comfits round in marchpane set.
   Her shoulders be like two white Doves,
Pearthing within square royall rooves,
Which leaded are with silver skinne,
Passing the hate-sport Ermelin.
And thence those armes derived are;
The Phoebus wings are not so rare
For faultlesse length, and stainelesse hewe,
   Ah woe is me, my woes renewe;
Now course doth leade me to her hand,
Of my first love the fatall band.
Where whitenes doth for ever sitte:
Nature her selfe enameld it.
For there with strange compait dooth lie
Warne snow, moyst pearle, softe ivorie.
There fall those Saphir-coloured brookes,
Which conduit-like with curious crookes,
Sweete Ilands make in that sweete land.
As for the fingers of the hand,
The bloudy shaftes of Cupids warre,
With amatists they headed are.

Thus hath each part his beauties part,
But how the Graces doo impart
To all her limmes a spetiall grace,
Becoming every time and place.
Which doth even beautie beautifie,
And most bewitch the wretched eye.
How all this is but a faire Inne
Of fairer guestes, which dwell within.
Of whose high praise, and praisefull blisse,
Goodnes the penne, heaven paper is.
The inke immortall fame dooth lende:
As I began, so must I ende.
No tongue can her perfections tell,
In whose each part all tongues may dwell.

But as Zelmane was co ming to the latter end of her song, she might see the same water-spaniell which before had hited, come and fetch away one of Philocleas gloves; whose fine proportion, shewed well what a daintie guest was wont there to be lodged. It was a delight to Zelmane, to see that the dogge was therewith delighted, and so let him goe a little way withall, who quickly caried it out of sight among certaine trees and bushes, which were very close together. But by & by he came againe, & amongst the raiments (Miso and Mopsa being preparing sheets against their comming out) the dog lighted upon a little booke of foure or five leaves of paper, & was bearing that away to. But then Zelmane (not knowing what importace it might be of) ran after the dog, who going streight to those bushes, she might see the dog deliver it to a Gentleman who secretly lay there. But she hastily co ming in, the Gentleman rose up, & with a courteous (though sad) countenance presented himselfe unto her. Zelmanes eies streight willed her mind to marke him: for she thought, in her life she had never seen a ma of a more goodly presence, in whom strong making tooke not away delicacie, nor beautie fiercenesse: being indeed such a right manlike man, as Nature often erring, yet shewes
she would faine make. But when she had a while (not without admiration) vewed him, she desired him to deliver backe the glove & paper, because they were the Ladie Philocleas; telling him withall, that she would not willingly let the know of his close lying in that prohibited place, while they were bathing theselves; because she knew they would be mortally offended withall. Faire Ladie (answered he) the worst of the complaint is already passed, since I feele of my fault in my self the punishment. But for these things I assure you, it was my dogs wanton boldnesse, not my presumption. With that he gave her backe the paper: But for the glove (said he) since it is my Ladie Philocleas, give me leave to keepe it, since my hart cannot persuade it selfe to part from it. And I pray you tell the Lady (Lady indeed of all my desires) that owes it, that I will direct my life to honour this glove with serving her. O villain (cried out Zelmane, madded with finding an unlooked-for Rivall, and that he would make her a messenger) dispatch (said she) and deliver it, or by the life of her that owes it, I wil make thy soul (though too base a price) pay for it. And with that drewe out her sworde, which (Amazon-like) she ever ware about her. The Gentleman retired himself into an open place frō among the bushes; & the drawing out his too, he offered to deliver it unto her, saying withall, God forbid I should use my sworde against you, since (if I be not deceived) you are the same famous Amazon, that both defended my Ladys just title of beautie against the valiant Phalantus, & saved her life in killing the Lion: therfore I am rather to kisse your hands, with acknowledging my selfe boūd to obey you. But this courtesie was worse then a bastonado to Zelmane: so that againe with ragefull eyes she bad him defend himselfe, for no lesse then his life should answere it. A hard case (said he) to teach my sworde that lesson, which hath ever used to turne it self to a shield in a Ladys presence. But Zelmane harkening to no more wordes, began with such wittie furie to pursue him with blowes & thrusts, that Nature & Vertue commanded the Gentleman to looke to his safetie. Yet stil courtesie, that seemed incorporate in his hart,would not be persuaded by daunger to offer any offence, but only to stand upon the best defensive gard he could; somtimes going backe, being content in that respeckt to take on the figure of cowardise; sometime with strong and well-met
wards; sometime cunning avoidings of his body; and sometimes faining some blowes, which himself puld backe before they needed to be withstood. And so with play did he a good while fight against the fight of Zelmane, who (more spited with that curtesie, that one that did nothing should be able to resist her) burned away with choller any motions, which might grow out of her owne sweet dispositio, determining to kill him if he fought no better; & so redoubling her blowes, drave the stranger to no other shift, then to warde, and go backe; at that time seeming the image of innocencie against violence. But at length he found, that both in publike and private respeftes, who stands onely upon defence, stands upon no defence: For Zelmane seeming to strike at his head, and he going to warde it, withall stept backe as he was accustomed, she stopt her blow in the aire, and suddenly turning the point, ranne full at his breast; so as he was driven with the pommell of his sworde (having no other weapon of defence) to beate it downe: but the thrust was so strong, that he could not so wholly beate it awaie, but that it met with his thigh, thorow which it ranne. But Zelmane retiring her sworde, and seeing his bloud, victorious anger was conquered by the before-conquered pittie; and hartily sorie, and even ashamed with her selfe she was, considering how little he had done, who well she found could have done more. In so much that she said, truly I am sorie for your hurt, but your selfe gave the cause, both in refusing to deliver the glove, and yet not fighting as I knowe you could have done. But (saide shee) because I perceave you disdayne to fight with a woman, it may be before a yeare come about, you shall meete with a neere kinsman of mine, Pyrocles Prince of Macedon, and I give you my worde, he for me shall maintaine this quarell against you. I would (answered Amphialus) I had many more such hurtes to meete and know that worthy Prince, whose vertue I love & admire, though my good destiny hath not bene to see his person.

But as they were so speaking, the yong Ladies came, to whô Mopsa (curious in any thing, but her own good behaviour) having followed & seene Zelmane fighting, had cried, what she had seene, while they were drying themselves, & the water (with some drops) seemed to weepe, that it should parte from such bodies. But they carefull of Zelmane (assuring themselves
that any Arcadian would beare reverence to them) Pamela with a noble mind, and Philoclea with a loving (hastily hiding the beauties, whereof Nature was prowde, and they ashamed) they made quicke worke to come to save Zelmane. But already they found them in talke, & Zelmane careful of his wound. But whe they saw him they knew it was their cousin germain, the famous Amphialus; whom yet with a sweete-graced bitternes they blamed for breaking their fathers commaundement, especially while themselves were in such sort retired. But he craved pardon, protesting unto them that he had onely bene to seeke solitary places, by an extreme melancholy that had a good while possest him, and guided to that place by his spaniell, where while the dog hunted in the river, he had withdrawne himselfe to pacifie with sleepe his over-watched eyes: till a dreame waked him, and made him see that whereof he had dreamed, & withall not obscurely signified that he felt the smart of his owne doings. But Philoclea (that was even jealous of her self for Zelmane) would needs have her glove, and not without so mighty a loure as that face could yeeld. As for Zelmane when she knew, it was Amphialus, Lord Amphialus (said she) I have lög desired to know you, heretofore I must confess with more good will, but still with honoring your vertue, though I love not your person: & at this time I pray you let us take care of your wound, upon condiotion you shal hereafter promise, that a more knightly combat shalbe performed betweene us. Amphialus answered in honorable sort, but with such excusing himselfe, that more and more accused his love to Philoclea, & provoked more hate in Zelmane. But Mopsa had already called certaine shepheards not far of (who knew & wel observed their limits) to come and helpe to Carrie away Amphialus, whose wound suffered him not without daunger to straine it: and so he leaving himselfe with them, departed from them, faster bleeding in his hart, then at his wound: which bound up by the sheetes, wherewith Philoclea had bene wrapped, made him thanke the wound, and bless the sword for that favour.
How Basilius found Plangus: his lamentation. Philoclea entreated by Zelmane to relate the storie of Erona.

He being gone, the Ladies (with mery anger talking, in what naked simplicitie their cousin had scene the) returned to the lodge-warde: yet thinking it too early (as long as they had any day) to breake of so pleasing a company, with going to performe a cûbersome obediënce, Zelmane invited them to the little arbour, only reserved for her, which they willingly did: and there sitting, Pamela having a while made the lute in his lăguage, shew how glad it was to be touched by her fingers, Zelmane delivered up the paper, which Amphialus had at first yeelded unto her: and seeing written upon the backside of it, the complaint of Plangus, remembring what Dorus had told her, and desiring to know how much Philoclea knew of her estate, she tooke occasion in the presenting of it, to aske whether it were any secret, or no. No truely (answered Philoclea) it is but even an exercise of my fathers writing, upon this occasion: He was one day (somwhile before your comming hether) walking abroade, having us two with him, almost a mile hence; and crossing a hie way, which comes from the cittie of Megalopolis, he saw this Gentleman, whose name is there written, one of the propret and best-graced men that ever I sawe, being of middle age, and of a meane stature. He lay as then under a tree, while his servaunts were getting fresh post-horses for him. It might seeme he was tired with the extreme travaile he had taken, and yet not so tyred, that he forced to take any rest; so hasty he was upon his journey: and withall so sorrowfull, that the very face thereof was painted in his face; which with pitifull motions, even groanes, teares, and passionate talking to him selfe, moved my Father to fall in talke with him: who at first not knowing him, answered him in such a desperate phrase of griefe, that my Father afterward tooke a delight to set it downe in such forme as you see: which if you read, what you doubt of, my sister and I are hable to declare unto you. Zelmane willingly opened the leaves, and read it, being written Dialogue-wise in this manner.
Las how long this pilgrimage doth last?
What greater ills have now the heavens in store,
To couple comming harms with sorrowes past?
Long since my voice is boarse, and throte is sore,
With cries to skies, and curses to the ground,
But more I plaine, I feele my woes the more.

Ah where was first that cruel cunning found,
To frame of Earth a vessell of the minde,
Where it should be to selfe-destruSion bound?

What needed so high sprites such mansions blind?
Or wrapt in flesh what do they here obtaine,
But glorious name of wretched humaine-kind?

Balles to the starres, and thralles to Fortunes raigne;
Turnd from themselves, infected with their cage,
Where death is feared, and life is held with paine.

Like players pla'st to fill a filthy stage,
Where chaunge of thoughts one foole to other shewes,
And all but jests, save onely sorrowes rage.

The child feeles that; the man that feeling knowes,
With cries first borne, the presage of his life,
Where wit but serves, to have true tast of woes.

A Shop of shame, a Booke where blots be rife
This bodie is: this bodie so composed,
As in it selfe to nourish mortall strife.

So divers be the Elements disposed
In this weake worke, that it can never be
Made uniforme to any state reposed.

Griefe onely makes his wretched state to see
(Even like a topppe which nought but whipping moves)
This man, this talking beast, this walking tree.

Griefe is the stone which finest judgement proves:
For who grieves not hath but a blockish braine,
Since cause of grieue no cause from life removes.

How long wilt thou with monefull musicke staine
The cheerefull notes these pleasant places yeeld,
Where all good haps a perfect state maintaine?
Curst be good haps, and curst be they that build
Their hopes on haps, and do not make despaire
For all these certaine blowes the surest shield.
Shall I that saw Eronaes shining haire
Torne with her hands, and those same hands of snow
With losse of purest blood themselves to teare?
Shall I that saw those brests, where beauties flow,
Swelling with sighes, made pale with mindes disease,
And saw those eyes (those Sonnes) such shoures to shew,
Shall I, whose eares her mournefull words did seaze,
Her words in syrup laid of sweetest breath,
Relent those thoughts, which then did so displease?
No, no: Despaire my dayly lesson saith,
And saith, although I seeke my life to flie,
Plangus must live to see Eronaes death.
Plangus must live some helpe for her to trie
Though in despaire, so Love enforceth me;
Plangus doth live, and must Erona dye?
Erona dye? O heaven (if heaven there be)
Hath all thy whirling course so small effect?
Serve all thy starrie eyes this shame to see?
Let doltes in haste some altars faire ereSi
To those high powers, which idly sit above,
And vertue do in greatest need negle«el.

O man, take heed, how thou the Gods do move
To irefull wrath, which thou canst not resist.
Blasphemous words the speaker vaine do prove.
Alas while we are wrapt in foggie mist
Of our selfe-love (so passions do deceave)
We thinke they hurt, when most they do assist.
To harme us wormes should that high Justice leave
His nature nay, himselfe? for so it is.
What glorie from our losse can he receave?
But still our dazeled eyes their way do misse,
While that we do at his sweete scourge repine,
The kindly way to beate us to our blisse.
If she must dye, then bath she past the line
Of lothesome dayes, whose losse how canst thou mone,
That doost so well their miseries define?
But such we are with inward tempest blowne
Of mindes quite contrarie in waves of will;
We mone that lost, which had we did bemone.

And shall shee dye? shall cruell fier spill
Those beames that set so many harts on fire?
Hath she not force even death with love to kill?
Nay even cold Death enflamde with hot desire
Her to enjoy, where joy it selfe is thrall,
Will spoile the earth of his most rich attire.

Thus Death becomes a rivall to us all,
And hopes with foule embracements her to get,
In whose decay Vertues faire shrine must fall.

O Vertue weake, shall death his triumph set
Upon thy spoiles, which never should lye waste?
Let Death first dye; be thou his worthy let.

By what eclipse shall that Sonne be defaste?
What myne hath erst threwne downe so faire a tower?
What sacriledge hath such a saint disgra'st?

The world the garden is, she is the flower
That sweetens all the place; she is the guest
Of rarest price, both heav'n and earth her bower.

And shall (o me) all this in ashes rest?
Alas, if you a Phœnix new will have
Burnt by the Sunne, she first must build her nest.
But well you know, the gentle Sunne would save
Such beames so like his owne, which might have might
In him, the thoughts of Phaëtons damme to grave.

Therefore, alas, you use vile Vulcans spight,
Which nothing spares, to melt that Virgin-waxe
Which while it is, it is all Asias light.

O Mars, for what doth serve thy armed axe?
To let that wit-old beast consume in flame
Thy Venus child, whose beautie Venus lackes?

O Venus (if her praise no envy frames,
In thy high minde) get her thy husbands grace.
Sweete speaking oft a currish hart reclames.

O eyes of mine, where once she saw her face,
Her face which was more lively in my hart;
O braine, where thought of her hath onely place;
O hand, which toucht her hand when she did part;
O lippes, that kist her hand with my teares sprent;
O toonge, then dumbe, not daring tell my smart;
O soule, whose love in her is onely spent,

What ere you see, thinke, touch, kisse, speake, or love,
Let all for her, and unto her be bent.

Thy wailing words do much my spirits move,
They uttred are in such a feeling fashion,
That sorrowes worke against my will I prove.

Me-thinkes I am partaker of thy passion,
And in thy case do glasse mine owne debilitie:
Selfe-guiltie folke most prone to feele compassion.

Yet Reason saith, Reason should have abilitie,
To hold these worldly things in such proportion,
As let them come or go with even facilitie.

But our Desires tyrannicall extortion
Doth force us there to set our chiefe delightfulnes,
Where but a bating place is all our portion.

But still, although we faile of perfect rightfulnes,
Seeke we to tame the childish superfluities:
Let us not winke though void of purest sightfulnes.

For what can breed more peevish incongruities,
Then man to yeeld to female lamentations?
Let us some grammar learne of more congruities.

If through mine eares pearce any consolation
By wise discourse, sweete tunes, or Poets fiction;
If ought I cease these bideous exclamations,
While that my soule, she, she lives in affliction;
Then let my life long time on earth maintained be,
To wretched me, the last worst malediction.

Can I, that know her sacred parts restrained be,
For any joy, know fortunes vile displacing her,
In morall rules let raging woes contained be?

Can I forget, when they in prison placing her,
With swelling hart in spite and due disdainfulnes
She lay for dead, till I helpt with unlasing her?

Can I forget, from how much mourning plainfulnes
With Diamond in window-glasse she graved,
Erona dye, and end thy ougly painefulnes?
Can I forget in how strange phrase she craved
That quickly they would her burne, drowne, or smother,
As if by death she onely might be saved?
Then let me eke forget one hand from other:
Let me forget that Plangus I am called:
Let me forget I am sonne to my mother,
But if my memory must thus be thralled
To that strange stroke which conquer'd all my senses,
Can thoughts still thinking so rest unappalled?

Who still doth seeke against himselfe offences,
What pardon can availe? or who employs him
To hurt himselfe, what shields can be defenses?
Woe to poore man: ech outward thing annoyes him
In divers kinds; yet as he were not filled,
He heapes in inward grieue, which most destroyes him.
Thus is our thought with paine for thistles tilled:
Thus be our noblest parts dryed up with sorrow:
Thus is our mind with too much minding spilled.
One day lays up stuffe of grieue for the morrow:
And whose good haps do leave him unprovided,
Condoling cause of friendship he will borrow.
Betwixt the good and shade of good divided,
We pittie deeme that which but weakenes is:
So are we from our high creation slide.
But Plangus lest I may your sicknesse misse
Or rubbing hurt the sore, I here doo end.
The asse did hurt when he did thinke to kisse.

When Zelmane had read it over, marveyling verie much of the speeche of Eronas death, and therefore desirous to know further of it, but more desirous to heare Philoclea speake, Most excellent Ladie (said she) one may be little the wiser for reading the Dialogue, since it nether sets foorth what this Plangus is, nor what Erona is, nor what the cause should be which threatens her with death, and him with sorow: therefore I wolde humbly crave to understand the particular discourse thereof: because (I must confesse) some thing in my travaile I have heard of this strange matter, which I would be glad to find by so sweet an authoritie confirmed. The trueth is (answered Philoclea) that
after he knew my father to be Prince of this countrie, while he hoped to prevale something with him in a great request he made unto him, he was content to open fully unto him the estate both of himselfe, and of that Ladie; which with my sisters help (said she) who remembers it better then I, I will declare unto you: and first of Erona, (being the chiefe Subject of this discourse) this storie (with more teares and exclamations then I liste to spende about it) he recounted.

CHAP. 13.

Erona irreligious against Love, must love the base Antiphilus, is loved, pursued, and beleaguered by the great Tiridates. The two Greeke Princes ayde her. They combatte with two Kings; Antiphilus with Plangus; they conquerors, he prisoner. Eronas hard-choice to redeeme him. Tiridates slaine, Antiphilus delivered, Artaxia chased by the two Princes, and her hate to them.

Of late there raigned a King in Lycia, who had for the blessing of his mariahe, this onely daughter of his, Erona; a Princesse worthie for her beautie, as much praise, as beautie may be praise-worthy. This Princesse Erona, being 19. yeres of age, seeing the countrie of Lycia so much devoted to Cupid, as that in every place his naked pictures & images were superstitionly adored (ether moved theruto, by the esteeming that could be no Godhead, which could breed wickednes, or the shamefast consideration of such nakednes) procured so much of her father, as utterly to pull downe, and deface all those statues and pictures. Which how terriblie he punished (for to that the Lycians impute it) quickly after appeared.

For she had not lived a yeare longer, when she was striken with most obstinate Love, to a yong man but of mean parentage, in her fathers court, named Antiphilus: so meane, as that he was but the sonne of her Nurse, & by that means (without other desert) became knowen of her. Now so evill could she conceale her fire, and so wilfully persevered she in it, that her father offering her the mariage of the great Tiridates, king of Armenia
(who desired her more then the joyes of heaven) she for Antiphilus sake refused it. Many ways her father sought to withdrawe her from it; sometimes perswasions, sometimes threatnings; once hiding Antiphilus, & giving her to understand that he was fled the countrie: Lastly, making a solemne execution to be done of another, under the name of Antiphilus, whom he kept in prison. But nether she liked perswasions, nor feared threatenings, nor changed for absence: and when she thought him dead, she sought all meanes (as well by poyson as by knife) to send her soule, at least, to be maried in the eternall church with him. This so brake the tender fathers hart, that (leaving things as he found them) he shortly after died. Then forthwith Erona (being seazed of the crowne, and arming her will with authoritie) sought to advance her affeccion to the holy title of matrimonia.

But before she could accöplish all the solēnitie, she was 3 overtakē with a war the King Tiridates made upon her, only for her person; towards whom (for her ruine) Love had kindled his cruel hart; indeed cruell & tyrannous: for (being far too strög in the field) he spared not man, woman, and child, but (as though there could be found no foile to set forth the extremitie of his love, but extremity of hatred) wrote (as it were) the sonets of his Love, in the bloud, & tuned the in the cries of her subjects; although his fair sister Artaxia (who would accöpany him in the army) sought all meanes to appease his fury: till lastly, he besieged Erona in her best citie, vowing to winne her, or lose his life. And now had he brought her to the point ether of a wofull consent, or a ruinous deniall; whē there came thether (following the course which Vertue & Fortune led the) two excellent yoüg Princes, Pyrocles and Musidorus, the one Prince of Macedō, the other of Thessalia: two princes, as Plagus said, (and he witnessed his saying with sighes & teares) the most accomplished both in body & mind, that the Sun ever lookt upon. While Philoclea spake those words, O sweete wordes (thought Zelmane to her self) which are not onely a praise to me, but a praise to praise it selfe, which out of that mouth issueth.

These 2. princes (said Philoclea) aswel to help the weaker 4 (especially being a Ladie) as to save a Greeke people from being ruined by such, whom we call and count Barbarous, gathering together such of the honestest Lycians, as woulde venture their lives to succour their Princesse: giving order by a secreat
message they sent into the Citie, that they should issue with all force at an appointed time; they set upon Tiridates campe, with so well-guided a fiercenes, that being of both sides assaulted, he was like to be overthrown: but that this Plangus (being Generall of Tiridates hors-men) especially ayed by the two mightie men, Euardes and Barzanes, rescued the foot-men, even almost defeated: but yet could not barre the Princes (with their succoures both of men and victuall) to enter the Citie.

5 Which when Tiridates found would make the war long, (which length seemed to him worse then a languishing consumption) he made a challenge of three Princes in his retinue, against those two Princes and Antiphilus: and that thereupon the quarrell should be decided; with compact, that neither side should helpe his fellow: but of whose side the more overcame, with him the victorie should remaine. Antiphilus (though Erona chose rather to bide the brunt of warre, then venture him, yet) could not for shame refuse the offer, especially since the two strangers that had no interest in it, did willingly accept it: besides that, he sawe it like enough, that the people (werie of the miseries of war) would rather give him up, if they saw him shrinke, then for his sake venture their ruine: considering that the challengers were farre of greater worthinesse then him selffe. So it was agreed upon; and against Pyrocles was Euardes, King of Bithinia; Barzanes of Hircania, against Musidorus, two men, that thought the world scarce able to resist them: & against Antiphilus he placed this same Plangus, being his own cousin germain, & sonne to the King of Iberia. Now so it fell out that Musidorus slewe Barzanes, & Pyrocles Euardes; which victory those Princes esteemed above all that ever they had: but of the other side Plagus tooke Antiphilus prisoner: under which colour (as if the matter had bene equal, though indeed it was not, the greater part being overcome of his side) Tiridates continued his war: & to bring Erona to a copeled yeelding, sent her word, that he would the third morrow after, before the walles of the towne strike of Antiphilus head; without his suite in that space were granted: adding withall (because he had heard of her desperate affectio) that if in the meane time she did her selfe any hurt, what tortures could be devised should be layed upon Antiphilus.

6 Then lo if Cupid be a God, or that the tyranny of our own
thoughts seeme as a God unto us. But whatsoever it was, then it did set foorth the miserablenes of his effects: she being drawne to two contraries by one cause. For the love of him commanded her to yeeld to no other: the love of him commanded him to preserve his life: which knot might well be cut, but untied it could not be. So that Love in her passions (like a right makebate) whispered to both sides arguments of quarrell. What (said he of the one side) doost thou love Antiphilus, or Erona? and shall Tiridates enjoy thy bodie? with what eyes wilt thou looke upon Antiphilus, when he shall know that another possesseth thee? But if thou wilt do it, canst thou do it? canst thou force thy hart? Thinke with thy selfe, if this man have thee, thou shalt never have more part of Antiphilus the if he were dead. But thus much more, that the affectio shalbe gnawing, & the remorse still present. Death perhaps will coole the rage of thy affection: where thus, thou shalt ever love, and ever lacke. Thinke this beside, if thou marrie Tiridates, Antiphilus is so excellent a man, that long he cannot be from being in some high place maried: canst thou suffer that too? If an other kill him, he doth him the wrong: if thou abuse thy body, thou doost him the wrong. His death is a worke of nature, and either now, or at another time he shall die. But it shalbe thy worke, thy shamefull worke, which is in thy power to shun, to make him live to see thy faith falsified, and his bed defiled. But when Love had well kindled that parte of her thoughts, then went he to the other side. What (said he) O Erona, and is thy Love of Antiphilus come to that point, as thou doost now make it a question, whether he shall die, or no? O excellent affection, which for too much love, will see his head of. Marke well the reasons of the other side, and thou shalt see, it is but love of thy selfe which so disputeth. Thou canst not abide Tiridates: this is but love of thy selfe: thou shalt be ashamed to looke upon him afterward; this is but feare of shame, & love of thy selfe: thou shalt want him as much then; this is but love of thy selfe: he shalbe married; if he be well, why should that grieve thee, but for love of thy selfe? No, no, pronounce these wordes if thou canst, let Antiphilus die. Then the images of each side stood before her understanding; one time she thought she saw Antiphilus dying: an other time she thought Antiphilus saw her by Tiridates enjoyed: twenty times calling for a servaunt to carry message
of yeelding, but before he came the minde was altered. She blusht when she considered the effect of granting; she was pale, whè she remèbred the fruits of denial. As for weeping, sighing, wringing her hāds, & tearing her haire, were indifferēt of both sides. Easily she wold have agreed to have broken al disputatiōs with her owne death, but that the feare of *Antiphilus* furder torments staied her. At lēgh, evē the evening before the day apointed of his death, the determinatiō of yeelding prevailed, especially, growing upō a message of *Antiphilus*; who with all the conjuring termes he could devise, besought her to save his life, upon any cōdition. But she had no sooner sent her messenger to *Tiridates*, but her mind changed, and she went to the two yong Princes, *Pyrocles* & *Musidorus*, & falling downe at their feets, desired thē to trie some way for her deliverance; shewing her selfe resolved, not to over-live *Antiphilus*, nor yet to yeeld to *Tiridates*.

7 They that knew not what she had done in private, prepared that night accordingly: & as sometimes it fals out, that what is incōstancy, seemes cūning; so did this chāge indeed stand in as good steed as a witty dissimulatiō. For it made the King as reckles, as them diligēt: so that in the dead time of the night, the Princes issued out of the towne; with whō she would needs go, either to die her self, or reskew *Antiphilus*, having no armour, nor weapon, but affection. And I cannot tell you how, by what devise (though *Plangus* at large described it) the conclusion was, the wonderfull valour of the two Princes so prevailed, that *Antiphilus* was succoured, and the King slaine. *Plangus* was then the chiefe man left in the campe; and therefore seeing no other remedie, cōveied in safety into her country *Artaxia*, now

8 Queene of *Armenia*; who with true lamētations, made known to the world, that her new greatnes did no way cōfort her in respect of her brothers lossse, whō she studied all meanes possible to revenge upon every one of the occasioners, having (as she thought) overthowne her brother by a most abominable treason. In somuch, that being at home, she proclaimed great rewards to any private man, and her selfe in mariage to any Prince, that would destroy *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*. But thus was *Antiphilus* redeemed, and (though against the consent of all her nobility) married to *Erona*; in which case the two Greeke Princes (being called away by an other adventure) left them.
**Philocleas narration broken of by Miso.**  
**Her old-wives tale,**  
**and ballad against Cupid.**  
**Their drawing cuts for tales.**  
**Mopsas tale of the old cut:**  
**cut of by the Ladies to returne to their stories.**

But now me thinkes as I have read some Poets, who when they intred to tell some horrible matter, they bid men shun the hearing of it: so if I do not desire you to stop your eares frō me, yet may I well desire a breathing time, before I am to tell the execrable treason of Antiphilus, that brought her to this misery; and withall wish you al, that frō al mankind indeed you stop your eares. O most happy were we, if we did set our loves one upon another. (And as she spake that worde, her cheekes in red letters writ more, then her tongue did speake.) And therefore since I have named Plangus, I pray you sister (said she) helpe me with the rest, for I have helde the stage long inough; and if it please you to make his fortune knowne, as I have done Eronas, I will after take hart againe to go on with his falshood; & so betweene us both, my Ladie Zelmane shall understand both the cause and parties of this Lamentation. Nay I beshrow me then (said Miso) I wil none of that, I promise you, as lōg as I have the governmēt, I will first have my tale, & thē my Lady Pamela, my Lady Zelmane, & my daughter Mopsa (for Mopsa was then returned frō Amphialius) may draw cuts, & the shortest cut speake first. For I tell you, and this may be suffred, when you are married you wil have first, and last word of your husbands. The Ladies laughed to see with what an eger earnestnesse she looked, having threatning not onely in her Ferret eies, but while she spake, her nose seeming to threaten her chin, & her shaking lims one to threaten another. But there was no remedy, they must obey: & Miso (sitting on the groūd with her knees up, & her hands upon her knees) tuning her voice with many a quavering cough, thus discoursed unto thē. I tel you true (said she) whatsoever you thinke of me, you will one day be as I am; & I, simple though I sit here, thought once my pennie as good silver, as some of you do: and if my father had not plaid the hasty foole (it is no lie I tell you) I might have
had an other-gaines husbâd, the Dametas. But let that passe, God amend him: and yet I speake it not without good cause. You are ful of your tittle tattling of Cupid: here is Cupid, & there is Cupid. I will tell you now, what a good old womâ told me, what an old wise mâ told her, what a great learned clerke told him, and gave it him in writing; and here I have it in my praier booke. I pray you (said Philoclea) let us see it, & read it. No hast but good (said Miso) you shal first know how I came by it. I was a young girle of a seven and twenty yeare old, & I could not go thorow the streate of our village, but I might heare the young mâ talke; O the pretie little eies of Miso; O the fine thin lips of Miso; O the godtly fat hands of Miso: besides, how well a certaine wrying I had of my necke, became me. Then the one would wincke with one eye, & the other cast daiseys at me: I must côfesse, seing so many amorous, it made me set up my peacocks tayle with the hiest. Which when this good old womâ perceived (O the good wold woman, well may the bones rest of the good wold womâ) she cald me to her into her house. I remember full well it stood in the lane as you go to the Barbers shop, all the towne knew her, there was a great losse of her: she called me to her, and taking first a soppe of wine to comfort her hart (it was of the same wine that comes out of Candia, which we pay so deere for now a daies, and in that good worlde was very good cheape) she cald me to her; Minion said she, (indeed I was a pretie one in those daies though I say it) I see a nüber of lads that love you; Wel (said she) I say no more: doo you know what Love is? With that she brought me into a corner, where ther was painted a foule fiëd I trow: for he had a paire of horns like a Bull, his feete cloven, as many eies upon his bodie, as my gray-mare hath dappels, & for all the world so placed. This môster sat like a hâgman upô a paire of gallowes, in his right hand he was painted holding a crowne of Laurell, in his left hand a purse of mony, & out of his mouth honge a lace of two faire pictures, of a mâ & a womâ, & such a coutenance he shewed, as if he would perswade folks by those allurements to come thither & be hanged. I, like a têder harted wench, skried out for feare of the divell. Well (sayd she) this same is even Love: therefore do what thou list with all those fellows, one after another; & it recks not much what they do to thee, so it be in secreat; but upon my charge, never
love none of them. Why mother (said I) could such a thing come from the belly of the faire Venus? for a few days before, our (priest between him & me) had told me the whole storie of Venus. Tush (said she) they are all deceived: and therewith gave me this Booke, which she said a great maker of ballets had given to an old painter, who for a little pleasure, had bestowed both booke and picture of her. Reade there (said she) & thou shalt see that his mother was a cowe, and the false Argus his father. And so she gave me this Booke, & there now you may reade it. With that the remembrance of the good old woman, made her make such a face to weep, as if it were not sorrow, it was the carcasse of sorrow that appeared there. But while her tears came out, like rain falling upon durtie furrowes, the latter end of her prayer booke was read among these Ladies, which contained this.

Poor Painters oft with silly Poets joyne,
To fill the world with strange but vaine conceits:
One brings the stuffe, the other stamps the coine,
Which breeds nought else but gloses of deceits.
Thus Painters Cupid paint, thus Poets do
A naked god, young blind, with arrowes two.
Is he a God, that ever flies the light?
Or naked he, disguis'd in all untruth?
If he be blind, how hitte, howse right?
How is he young, that tam'de old Phoebus youth?
But arrowes two, and tipt with gold or leade:
Some hurt accuse a third with horny head.
No, nothing so; an old false knave he is.
By Argus got on Io, then a cow:
What time for her Juno her Jove did misse,
And charge of her to Argus did allow.
Mercury kill'd his false sire for this act,
His damme a beast was pardon'd beastly fact.
With fathers death, and mothers guiltie shame,
With Joves disdaine at such a rivals seed,
The wretch compell'd a runnagate became,
And learn'd what ill a miser state doth breed,
To lye, faine, gloze, to steale, pry, and accuse,
Naught in himselfe ech other to abuse.
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

Yet beares he still his parents stately gifts,
A horned head, cloven foote, and thousand eyes,
Some gazing still, some winking wilye shiftes,
With long large eares where never rumour dyes.

His horned head doth seeme the heaven to spight:
His cloven foote doth never treade aright.
Thus halfe a man, with man he dayly haunts,
Cloth'd in the shape which soonest may deceave:
Thus halfe a beast, ech beastly vice he plants,
In those weake harts that his advice receave.

He proules ech place stil in new colours deckt,
Sucking ones ill, another to infeSl.
To narrow brests he comes all wrapt in gaine:
To swelling harts he shines in honours fire:
To open eyes all beauties he doth raine;
Creeping to ech with flattering of desire.

But for that Loves desire most rules the eyes,
Therein his name, there his chiefe triumph lye.

Millions of yeares this old drivell Cupid lives;
While still more wretch, more wicked he doth prove:
Till now at length that Jove him office gives,
(At Junos suite who much did Argus love)
In this our world a hang-man for to be,
Of all those fooles that will have all they see.

4 These Ladies made sport at the description and storie of Cupid. But Zelmane could scarce suffer those blasphemies (as she tooke them) to be read, but humbly besought Pamela she would perfourme her sisters request of the other part of the storie. Noble Lady (answered she, beautifying her face with a sweete smiling, and the sweetnes of her smiling with the beautie of her face) since I am borne a Princes daughter, let me not give example of disobedience. My governesse will have us draw cuts, and therefore I pray you let us do so: and so perhaps it will light upon you to entertaine this company with some storie of your owne; and it is reason our eares should be willinger to heare, as your tongue is abler to deliver. I will thinke (answered Zelmane) excellent Princesse my tongue of some value, if it can procure your tongue thus much to favour me. But Pamela pleasantly persisting to have fortune their
judge, they set hands, and Mopsa (though at the first for squeamishnes going up & downe, with her head like a boate in a storme) put to her golden gols among them, and blind Fortune (that saw not the coulor of them) gave her the preheminence: and so being her time to speake (wiping her mouth, as there was good cause) she thus tumbled into her matter. In time past (sayd she) there was a King, the mightiest man in all his country, that had by his wife, the fairest daughter that ever did eate pappe. Now this King did keepe a great house, that every body might come and take their meat freely. So one day, as his daughter was sitting in her window, playing upon a harpe, as sweete as any Rose; and combing her head with a combe all of precious stones, there came in a Knight into the court, upõ a goodly horse, one haire of gold, & the other of silver; and so the Knight casting up his eyes to the window, did fall into such love with her, that he grew not worth the bread he eate; till many a sorry day going over his head, with Dayly Diligence and Grisly Grones, he wan her affection, so that they agreed to run away togither. And so in May, when all true hartes rejoice, they stale out of the Castel, without staying so much as for their breakfast. Now forsooth, as they went togither, often all to kissing one another, the Knight told her, he was brought up among the water Nymphes, who had so bewitched him, that if he were ever askt his name, he must presently vanish away: and therefore charged her upon his blessing, that she never aske him what he was, nor whether he would. And so a great while she kept his commandement; til once, passing through a cruell wildernes, as darke as pitch; her mouth so watred, that she could not choose but aske him the question. And then, he making the greevousest cóplaints that would have melted a tree to have heard them, vanisht quite away: & she lay down, casting forth as pitifull cries as any shriek-owle. But having laien so, (wet by the raine, and burnt by the Sun) five dayes, & five nights, she gat up and went over many a high hil, & many a deepe river; till she came to an Aunts house of hers; and came, & cried to her for helpe: and she for pittie gave her a Nut, and bad her never open her Nut, til she was come to the extremest misery that ever tongue could speake of. And so she went, & she went, & never rested the evening, wher she wët in the morning; til she came to a second Aunt; and she gave her another Nut.
Now good Mopsa (said the sweete Philoclea) I pray thee at my request keepe this tale, till my marriage day, & I promise thee that the best gowne I weare that day shalbe thine. Mopsa was very glad of the bargaine, especially that it shuld grow a festival Tale: so that Zelmane, who desired to finde the uttermost what these Ladies understood touching her selfe, and having understood the danger of Erona (of which before she had never heard) purposing with her selfe (as soone as this pursuit she now was in, was brought to any effect) to succour her, entreated againe, that she might know as well the story of Plangus, as of Erona. Philoclea referred it to her sisters perfect remembrance, who with so sweet a voice, and so winning a grace, as in themselves were of most forcible eloquence to procure attention, in this maner to their earnest request soone condiscended.

CHAP. 15.

1 Plangus—his parentage. 2 His trick of youth, 3 espied, 4 turned over by, and to his old father. 5 An inveagling—womans arts. 6 A guilty stepmothers divellish practises against Plangus. 7 Her ministers false informations. 8 Plangus perplexities. 9 His fathers jealousies. The Queenes complots 10 to feede the ones suspicion, 11 & work the others overthrow. 12 Plangus taken; 13 delivered fieth: 14 is pursued with old hate, & new treason. 15 Yet must he serve abroad, while a new heire is made at home. 16 This story broken off by Basilius.

The father of this Prince Plangus as yet lives, and is King of Iberia: a man (if the judgement of Plangus may be accepted) of no wicked nature, nor willingly doing evill, without himselfe mistake the evill, seeing it disguised under some forme of goodnesse. This Prince, being married at the first to a Princesse (who both from her auncestres, and in her selfe was worthy of him) by her had this son, Plangus. Not long after whose birth, the Queene (as though she had perfourmed the message for which she was sent into the world) returned again unto her maker. The King (sealing up al thoughts of
love under the image of her memorie) remained a widdower many yeares after; recompencing the griefe of that disjoyning from her, in conjoyning in himselfe both a fatherly and a motherly care toward her onely child, Plangus. Who being growne to mans age, as our owne eies may judge, could not but fertilly requite his fathers fatherly education.

This Prince (while yet the errors in his nature were excused 2 by the greenenes of his youth, which tooke all the fault upon it selfe) loved a private mans wife of the principal Citie of that Kingdome, if that may be called love, which he rather did take into himselfe willingly. then by which he was takë forcibly. It sufficeth, that the yong man perswaded himself he loved her: she being a woman beautiful enough, if it be possible, that the outside onely can justly entitle a beauty. But finding such a chase as onely fledde to be caught, the young Prince broght his affectiõ with her to that point, which ought to engrave remorse in her harte, & to paint shame upon her face. And so possesst he his desire without any interruption; he constantly favouring her, and she thinking, that the enameling of a Princes name, might hide the spots of a broken wedlock. But as I have seene one that was sick of a sleeping disease, could not be made wake, but with pinching of him: so out of his sinfull sleepe his minde (unworthie so to be loste) was not to be cald to it selfe, but by a sharpe accident.

It fell out, that his many-times leaving of the court (in 3 undue times) began to be noted; and (as Princes eares be manifolde) from one to another came unto the King; who (carefull of his onely sonne) sought, and found by his spies (the necessarie evill servauntes to a King) what it was, whereby he was from his better delights so diverted.

Whereupon, the King (to give his fault the greater blow) 4 used such meanes, by disguising himselfe, that he found them (her husband being absent) in her house together: which he did, to make him the more feelingly ashamed of it. And that way he tooke, laying threatnings upon her, and upon him reproaches. But the poore young Prince (deceived with that young opinion, that if it be ever lawfull to lie, it is for ones Lover,) employed all his witte to bring his father to a better opinion. And because he might bende him from that (as he counted it) crooked conceit of her, he wrested him, as much as

Q 2 243
he coulde possible, to the other side: not sticking with prodigall protestations to set foorth her chastitie; not denying his own attempts, but thereby the more extolling her vertue. His Sophistrie prevayled, his father beleeved; and so beleeved, that ere long (though he were alredy stept into the winter of his age) he founde himselfe warme in those desires, which were in his sonne farre more excusable. To be short, he gave himselfe over unto it; and (because he would avoide the odious comparison of a yong rivall) sent away his sonne with an armie, to the subduing of a Province lately rebelled against him, which he knewe could not be a lesse worke, the of three or foure yeares. Wherein he behaved him so worthilie, as even to this country the fame therof came, long before his own coming: while yet his father had a speedier succes, but in a far unnobler conquest. For while Plangus was away, the old man (growing onely in age & affectio) followed his suite with all meanes of unhonest servants, large promises, and each thing els that might help to countervaille his owne unlovelines.

And she (whose husband about that time died) forgetting the absent Plangus, or at lest not hoping of him to obtenie so aspiring a purpose, lefte no arte unused, which might keepe the line from breaking, wherat the fishe was alredy taken; not drawing him violently, but letting him play himself upon the hooke, which he had greedely swalowed. For, accompanying her mourning with a dolefull countenance, yet neither forgetting hansomnes in her mourning garments, nor sweetenes in her dolefull countenance; her wordes were ever seasoned with sighes; and any favour she shewed, bathed in teares, that affection might see cause of pity; and pity might perswade cause of affection. And being growen skilfull in his humors, she was no lesse skilfull in applying his humors: never suffering his feare to fall to a despaire, nor his hope to hasten to an assurance: she was content he should thinke that she loved him; and a certaine stolne looke should sometimes (as though it were against her will) bewray it: But if thereupon he grewe bolde, he straight was encountered with a maske of vertue. And that which seemeth most impossible unto me, (for as neere as I can I repeate it as Plangus tolde it) she could not onely sigh when she would, as all can doo; & weep when she would, as (they say) some can doo; but (being most impudent in her
hart) she could, when she would, teach her chekes blushing, and make shamefastnes the cloake of shamelesnes. In summe, to leave out many particularities which he recited, she did not onely use so the spurre, that his Desire ran on, but so the bit, that it ran on, evê in such a careere as she would have it; that within a while, the king, seeing with no other eyes but such as she gave him, & thinking no other thoughts but such as she taught him; having at the first liberall measure of favors then shortned of thê, when most his Desire was inflamed; he saw no other way but mariage to satisfie his longing, and her mind (as he thought) loving, but chastly loving. So that by the time Plangus returned from being notably victorious of the Rebels, he foûd his father, not only maried, but alredy a father of a sonne & a daughter by this womâ. Which though Plagus (as he had every way just cause) was grieved at; yet did his grief never bring forth ether côtemning of her, or repining at his father. But she (who besides she was grown a mother, and a stepmother, did read in his eies her owne fault, and made his conscience her guiltines) thought still that his presence caried her condênation: so much the more, as that she (unchastly attempting his wôted fâcies) foûd (for the reverêce of his fathers bed) a bitter refusall: which breeding rather spite then shame in her, or if it were a shame, a shame not of the fault, but of the repulse, she did not onely (as hating him) thirst for a revenge, but (as fearing harm from him) endeavoured to doo harme unto him. Therefore did she trie the uttermost of her wicked wit, how to overthrow him in the foundation of his strength, which was, in the favour of his father: which because she saw strong both in nature and desert, it required the more cûning how to undermine it. And therfore (shunning the ordinary trade of hireling sycophants) she made her praises of him, to be accusations; and her advauncing him, to be his ruine. For first with words (neerer admiration then liking) she would extoll his excellêcies, the goodlines of his shape, the power of his witte, the valiantnes of his courage, the fortunatenes of his successes: so as the father might finde in her a singular love towards him: nay, she shunned not to kindle some fewe sparkes of jelousie in him. Thus having gotten an opinion in his father, that she was farre from meaning mischiefe to the sonne, then fell she to praise
him with no lesse vehemencie of affection, but with much more cunning of malice. For then she sets forth the liberty of his mind, the high flying of his thoughts, the fitnesse in him to beare rule, the singular love the Subjects bare him; that it was doubtfull, whether his wit were greater in winning their favors, or his courage in employing their favours: that he was not borne to live a subject-life, each action of his bearing in it Majestie, such a Kingly entertainement, such a Kingly magnificence, such a Kingly harte for enterprises: especially remembring those vertues, which in a successor are no more honoured by the subjects, then suspected of the Princes. Then would she by putting-off objedtions, bring in objedtions to her husbands head, alredy infected with suspition. Nay (would she say) I dare take it upon my death, that he is no such sonne, as many of like might have bene, who loved greatnes so well, as to build their greatnes upon their fathers ruine. Indeed Ambition, like Love, can abide no lingring, & ever urgeth on his own successes; hating nothing, but what may stop the. But the Gods forbid, we should ever once dreame of any such thing in him, who perhaps might be content, that you & the world should know, what he can do: but the more power he hath to hurt, the more admirable is his praise, that he wil not hurt. Then ever remembring to strengthen the suspition of his estate with private jelousie of her love, doing him excessive honour when he was in presence, and repeating his pretie speaches and graces in his absence; besides, causing him to be imployed in all such dangerous matters, as ether he should perish in them, or if he prevailed, they should increase his glory: which she made a weapon to wou’d him, untill she found that suspition began already to speake for it selfe, and that her husbands eares were growne hungry of rumours, and his eies prying into every accident.

Then tooke she help to her of a servant neere about her husband, whom she knew to be of a hasty ambitiō, and such a one, who wanting true sufficiencie to raise him, would make a ladder of any mischiefe. Him she useth to deale more plainely in alleaging causes of jealousie, making him know the fittest times when her husband already was stirred that way. And so they two, with divers wayes, nourished one humour, like Musitians, that singing divers parts, make one musicke. He
sometime with fearefull countenaunce would desire the King to looke to himselfe; for that all the court and Cittie were full of whisperings, and expectation of some suddaine change, upon what ground himselfe knew not. Another time he would counsell the King to make much of his sonne, and holde his favour, for that it was too late now to keepe him under. Now seeming to feare himselfe, because (he said) Plangus loved none of them that were great about his father. Lastly, breaking with him directly (making a sorrowful countenance, & an humble gesture beare false wittesse for his true meaning) that he foúd, not only sooldiery, but people weary of his government, & al their affections bent upon Plangus. Both he and the Queene concurring in strange dreames, & each thing else, that in a mind (already perplexed) might breed astonishment: so that within a while, all Plangus actions began to be translated into the language of suspicion.

Which though Plangus foúd, yet could he not avoid, even 8 cotraries being driven to draw one yoke of argumé: if he were magnificé, he spent much with an aspiring intent: if he spared, he heaped much with an aspiring intent: if he spake curteously, he angled the peoples harts: if he were silent, he mused upon some daenerous plot. In summe, if he could have turned himself to as many formes as Proteus, every forme should have bene made tedious.

But so it fell out, that a meere trifle gave the occasion of 9 further proceeding. The King one morning, going to a vineyard that lay a long the hill where his castle stood, he saw a vine-labourer, that finding a bowe broken, tooke a branch of the same bowe for want of another thing, and tied it about the place broken. The King asking the fellow what he did, Marry (said he) I make the sonne binde the father. This word (finding the King alredy supersticious through suspitio) amazed him streight, as a presage of his owne fortune: so that, returning, and breaking with his wife how much he misdoubted his estate, she made such gaine-saying answeres, as while they strave, strave to be overcome. But even while the doubtes most boiled, she thus nourished them.

She under-hand dealt with the principall mé of that coutry, 10 that at the great Parliamé (which was then to be held) they should in the name of all the estates perswade the King (being
now stept deeply into old age) to make Plangus, his associate in governmēt with him: assuring thē, that not only she would joine with them, but that the father himself would take it kindly; chargeing thē not to acquaint Plangus withal; for that perhaps it might be harmful unto him, if the King should find, that he were a party. They (who thought they might do it, not only willingly, because they loved him, & truly, because such indeed was the minde of the people, but safely, because she who ruled the King was agreed therto) accōplished her cousell: she indeed keeping promise of vehement persuading the same: which the more she & they did, the more she knew her husbād would fear, & hate the cause of his feare. Plangus foūd this, & hüly protested against such desire, or wil to accept. But the more he protested, the more his father thought he dissebled, accoūting his integritie to be but a cunning face of falshood: and therefore delaying the desire of his subject, attended some fit occasion to lay hands upon his sonne: which his wife thus brought to passe.

She caused that same minister of hers to go unto Plāgus, & (enabling his words with great shew of faith, & endearing them with desire of secrecie) to tell him, that he found his ruine conspired by his stepmother, with certain of the noble men of that countrē, the King himselfe giving his consent, and that few daies should passe, before the putting it in practice: with all discovering the very truth indeed, with what cunning his stepmother had proceeded. This agreeing with Plangus his owne opinio, made him give him the better credit: yet not so far, as to fly out of his country (according to the naughty fellowes persuasion) but to attend, and to see further. Wherupon the fellow (by the direction of his mistresse) told him one day, that the same night, about one of the clocke, the King had appointed to have his wife, & those noble mē together, to deliberate of their manner of proceeding against Plangus: & therefore offered him, that if himselfe would agree, he would bring him into a place where he should heare all that passed; & so have the more reason both to himselfe, and to the world, to seeke his safetie. The poore Plāgus (being subject to that only disadvantage of honest harts, credulitie) was persuadedy by him: & arming himself (because of his late going) was closely conveyed into the place appointed. In the meanet time his stepmother
making all her gestures cunningly counterfeit a miserable affectiō, she lay almost groveling on the flower of her chāber, not suffering any body to comfort her; untill they calling for her husband, and he held of with long enquiry, at length, she told him (even almost crying out every word) that she was wery of her life, since she was brought to that plunge, either to conceale her husbāds murther, or accuse her sonne, who had ever bene more deare, then a sonne unto her. Then with many interructions and exclamations she told him, that her sonne Plangus (soliciting her in the old affeccion betweene them) had besought her to put her helping hand to the death of the King; assuring her, that though all the lawes in the world were against it, he would marrie her when he were King.

She had not fully said thus much, with many pitifull digressiōs, when in comes the same fellow, that brought Plāgus: & running himself out of breath, fell at the Kings feet, beseeching him to save himself, for that there was a man with sword drawnen in the next roome. The King affrighted, went out, & called his gard, who entring the place, found indeed Plangus with his sword in his hand, but not naked, but stading suspiciously enough, to one already suspicius. The King (thinking he had put up his sworde because of the noise) never took pleasure to heare his answer, but made him prisoner, meaning the next morning to put him to death in the market place.

But the day had no sooner opened the eies & eares of his friends & followers, but that there was a little army of them, who came, and by force delivered him; although nūbers on the other side (abused with the fine framing of their report) tooke armes for the King. But Plangus, though he might have used the force of his friends to revenge his wrong, and get the crowne; yet the naturall love of his father, and hate to make their suspition seeme just, caused him rather to choose a volūtarie exile, the to make his fathers death the purchase of his life: & therefore went he to Tiridates, whose mother was his fathers sister, living in his Court eleven or twelve yeares, ever hoping by his intercession, and his owne desert, to recover his fathers grace. At the end of which time, the warre of Erona happened, which my sister with the cause thereof discursd unto you.

But his father had so deeply engraven the suspicion in his
hurt, that he thought his flight rather to proceed of a fearefull guiltines, then of an humble faithfulnes; & threfore continued his hate, with such vehemencie, that he did ever hate his Nephew Tiridates, and afterwards his niece Artaxia, because in their Court he received countenance, leaving no meanes unattested of destroying his son; among other, employing that wicked servant of his, who undertooke to empoyson him. But his cunning disguised him not so well, but that the watchful servaunts of Plagus did discover him. Wherupone the wretch was taken, & (before his wel-deserved execution) by torture forced to confesse the particularities of this, which in generall I have told you.

15 Which confession autentically set downe (though Tiridates with solemne Embassage sent it to the King) wrought no effect. For the King having put the reines of the government into his wives hande, never did so much as reade it; but sent it straignt by her to be considered. So as they rather heaped more hatred upon Plagus, for the death of their servant. And now finding, that his absence, and their reportes had much diminished the wavering peoples affection towards Plagus, with advancing fit persons for faction, and graunting great immunities to the commons, they prevailed so farre, as to cause the sonne of the second wife, called Palladius, to be proclaymed successour, and Plagus quite excluded: so that Plagus was driven to continue his serving Tiridates, as he did in the warre against Erona, and brought home Artaxia, as my sister tolde you; when Erona by the treason of Antiphilus, But at that word she stopped. For Basilius (not able longer to abide their absence) came sodainly among them, and with smiling countenance (telling Zelmane he was affraid she had stollen away his daughters) invited them to follow the Sunnes counsel in going then to their lodging; for indeed the Sun was readie to set. They yeelded, Zelmane meaning some other time to understand the storie of Antiphilus treason, and Eronas daunger, whose case she greatly tendred. But Miso had no sooner espied Basilius, but that as spitefully, as her rotten voice could utter it, she set forth the sawcinesse of Amphialus. But Basilius onely attended what Zelmanes opinion was, who though she hated Amphialus, yet the nobilitie of her courage prevailed over it, and she desired he might be pardoned that youthfull error;
considering the reputation he had, to be one of the best knights in the world; so as hereafter he governed himselfe, as one remembring his fault. *Basilius* giving the infinite tearmes of praises to *Zelmanes* both valour in conquering, and pittifulnesse in pardoning, commanded no more words to be made of it, since such he thought was her pleasure.

**CHAP. 16.**

1 The cumber of Zelmanes love and lovers. 2 Gynecias love-lamentations. 3 Zelmanes passions 4 & sonet. 5 Basilius-his wooing, and Zelmanes answeres. 6 Philoclea feed attourney to plead her fathers cause.

So brought he them up to visite his wife, where betweene her, & him, the poore Zelmane receaved a tedious entertainemēt; oppressed with being loved, almost as much, as with loving. *Basilus* not so wise in covering his passion, could make his toong go almost no other pace, but to runne into those immoderate praises, which the foolish Lover thinkes short of his Mistres, though they reach farre beyond the heavens. But *Gynecia* (whome womanly modestie did more outwardly bridle) yet did oftentimes use the advantage of her sexe in kissing *Zelmane*, as she sate upon her bedde-side by her; which was but still more and more sweete incense, to cast upon the fire wherein her harte was sacrificed: Once *Zelmane* could not stirre, but that, (as if they had bene poppets, whose motion stoode onely upon her pleasure) *Basilius* with serviceable steppes, *Gynecia* with greedie eyes would follow her. *Basilius* mind *Gynecia* well knew, and could have found in her hart to laugh at, if mirth could have borne any proportion with her fortune. But all *Gynecias* actions were interpreted by *Basilius*, as proceeding from jealouzie of his amorousnesse. *Zelmane* betwixt both (like the poore childe, whose father while he beates him, will make him beleeve it is for love; or like the sicke man, to whom the Phisition sweares, the ill-tasting wallowish medicine he profers, is of a good taste) their love was hatefull, their courtesie troublesome, their presence cause of her absence
thence, where not onely her light, but her life consisted. Alas (thought she to her selfe) deare Dorus, what ods is there betweene thy destiny & mine? For thou hast to doo in thy pursuite but with shepherdish folkes, who trouble thee with a little envious care, and affected diligence. But I (besides that I have now Miso, the worst of thy divel, let loose upon me) am waited on by Princes, and watched by the two wakefull eyes of Love and Jealousie. Alas, incomparable Philoclea, thou ever seest me, but dost never see me as I am: thou hearest willingly all that I dare say, and I dare not say that which were most fit for thee to heare. Alas who ever but I was imprisoned in libertie, and banished being still present? To whom but me have lovers bene jailours, and honour a captivitie?

2 But the night comming on with her silent steps upon the, they parted ech from other (if at lest they could be parted, of whom every one did live in another) and went about to flatter sleepe with their beds, that disdained to bestow it selfe liberally upon such eies which by their will would ever be looking: and in lest measure upon Gynectia, who (when Basilius after long tossing was gotten a sleepe, and the cheereful comfort of the lights removed from her) kneeling up in her bed, began with a soft voice, and swolne hart, to renue the curses of her birth; & the in a maner embracing her bed; Ah chastest bed of mine (said she) which never heretofore couldst accuse me of one defiled thought, how canst thou now receave this desastred changeling? Happie, happie be they onely which be not: and thy blessednes onely in this respect thou maist feele, that thou hast no feeling. With that she furiously tare off great part of her faire haire: Take here o forgotten vertue (said she) this miserable sacrifice; while my soule was clothed with modestie, that was a comely ornament: now why should nature crowne that head, which is so wicked, as her onely despaire is, she cannot be enough wicked? More she would have said, but that Basilius (awaked with the noise) tooke her in his armes, & bega to cofort her; the good-man thinking, it was all for a jealous love of him: which humor if she would a litle have maintained, perchance it might have weakened his new conceaved fancies. But he finding her answeres wandring fro the purpose, left her to her selfe (glad the next morning to take the advatage of a sleepe, which a litle before day, overwatched

252
with sorrow, her tears had as it were sealed up in her eyes) to have the more conference with Zelmane, who baited on this fashion by these two lovers, & ever kept from any mean to declare herself, found in her selfe a dayly encrease of her violent desires; like a river the more swelling, the more his current is stopped.

The chiefe recreation she could find in her anguish, was somtime to visite that place, where first she was so happy as to see the cause of her unhap. There would she kisse the ground, and thanke the trees, blisse the aier, & do dutifull reverence to every thing that she thought did accompany her at their first meeting: then returne again to her inward thoughts; somtimes despaire darkning all her imaginations, somtimes the active passion of Love cheering and cleering her invention, how to unbar that combersome hinderance of her two ill-matched lovers. But this morning Basilius himself gave her good occasion to go beyond them. For having combd and trickt himself more curiously, then any time fortie winters before, comming where Zelmane was, he found her given over to her musicall muses, to the great pleasure of the good old Basilius, who retired himselfe behinde a tree, while she with a most sweete voice did utter these passionate verses.

Loved I am, and yet complaine of Love:
As loving not, accus’d, in Love I die.
When pittie most I crave, I cruell prove:
Still seeking Love, love found as much I flie.
Burnt in my selfe, I muse at others fire:
What I call wrong, I do the same, and more:
Bard of my will, I have beyond desire:
I waile for want, and yet am chokte with store.
This is thy worke, thou God for ever blinde:
Though thousands old, a Boy entit’led still.
Thus children doo the silly birds they finde,
With stroking hurt, and too much cramming kill.
Yet thus much Love, O Love, I crave of thee:
Let me be lov’d, or els not loved be.

Basilius made no great haste from behind the tree, till he perceaved she had fully ended her musick. But then loth to
loose the preitious fruite of time, he presented himselfe unto her, falling downe upon both his knees, and holding up his hands, as the old governesse of Danae is painted, when she sodainly saw the goldé shoure, O heavēly womā, or earthly Goddesse (said he) let not my presence be odious unto you, nor my humble suit seeme of small weight in your eares. Vouchsafe your eies to descend upon this miserable old-mā, whose life hath hitherto bene maintained but to serve as an encrease of your beautiful triumphs. You only have over throwne me, & in my bondage cōsis my glory. Suffer not your owne worke to be desped of you: but looke upon him with pittie, whose life serves for your praise. Zelmane (keeping a cōtenāce ascanses she understood him not) told him, It became her evil to suffer such excessive reverence of him, but that it worse became her to correçt him, to whom she owed dutie: that the opinion she had of his wisedome was such, as made her esteeme greatly of his words; but that the words themselves sounded so, as she could not imagine what they might intend. Intend? (said Basilius, proud that that was brought in question) what may they intend, but a refreshing of my soule, and a swaging of my heat, and enjoying those your excellencies, wherein my life is upheld, and my death threatned? Zelmane lifting up her face as if she had receaved a mortall injurie of him, And is this the devotion your ceremonies have bene bent unto? said she: Is it the disdaine of my estate, or the opinion of my lightnesse, that have emboldned such base fancies towards me? enjoying quoth you? now little joy come to them that yeeld to such enjoying. Poore Basilius was so appalled, that his legges bowed under him; his eyes lookt as though he would gladly hide himself; and his old blood going to his hart, a generall shaking all over his bodie possessed him. At length with a wanne mouth; he was about to give a stammering answere, when it came into Zelmanes head by this devise to make her profite of his folly; and therefore with a relented countenance, thus said unto him. Your words (mightie Prince) were unfit either for me to heare, or you to speake: but yet the large testimonie I see of your affection makes me willing to suppressse a great number of errors. Onely thus much I thinke good to say, that the same words in my Ladie Philocleas mouth, as from one woman to another (so as there were no other bodie by)
ARCADIA. LIB. 2.

might have had a better grace; and perchance have found a gentler receipt.

_Basilius_ (whose senses by Desire were held open, and con-cept was by Love quickned) heard scarcely halfe her answere out, but that (as if speedie flight might save his life) he turned away, and ran with all the speede his bodie would suffer him, towards his daughter _Philoclea_ : whom he found at that time duetifuly watching by her mother, and _Miso_ curiouslie watching her; having left _Mopsa_ to doo the like service to _Pamela_. _Basilius_ forthwith calling _Philoclea_ aside, (with all the conjuring words which Desire could endite, and authoritie utter) besought her she would preserve his life, in whö her life was begonne; she would save his graye haires from rebuke, and his aged mind from despaire; that if she were not cloyed with his companie, and that she thought not the earth over-burdened with him, she would coole his fierie griefe, which was to be done but by her breath. That in fine, whatsoever he was, he was nothing but what it pleased _Zelmane_; all the powers of his spirite depending of her: that if she continued cruell, he could no more sustaine his life, then the earth remaine fruitefull in the Sunnes continuall absence. He concluded, she should in one payment requite all his deserts: and that she needed not disdaine any service (though never so meane) which was warranted by the sacred name of a father. _Philoclea_ more glad then ever she had knowen her selfe, that she might by this occasion, enjoy the private conference of _Zelmane_, yet had so sweete a feeling of vertue in her minde, that she would not suffer a vile colour to be cast over her faire thoughts; but with humble grace answered her father: That there needed nether promise nor perswasion to her, to make her doo her uttermost for her fathers service. That for _Zelmanes_ favour, she would in all vertuous sort seeke it towards him: and that as she woulde not pearce further into his meaning, then himselfe should declare, so would she interprete all his doings to be accomplished in goodnes: and therfore desired, (if otherwise it were) that he woulde not imparte it to her, who then should be forced to beginne (by true obedience) a shew of disobedience: rather perfourming his generall commandement, which had ever beene, to embrace vertue, then any new particular, sprong out of passion, and contrarie to the former. _Basilius_ content to
take that, since he could have no more (thinking it a great point, if by her meanes, he could get but a more free accesse unto Zelmane) allowed her reasons, & took her proffer thãkfully, desiring onely a speedy returne of comfort. Philoclea was parting, and Miso streight behind her, like Alesio following Proserpina. But Basilius forced her to stay, though with much a doo, she being sharp-set upon the fulfilling of a shrewde office, in over-looking Philoclea: and so said to Basilius, that she did as she was comanded, and could not answere it to Gynecia, if she were any whitte from Philoclea: telling him true, that he did evill to take her charge from her. But Basilius, (swearing he would put out her eyes, if she stird a foote to trouble his daughter) gave her a stoppe for that while.

**CHAP. 17.**

1 Zelmane's teares, 2 and tearefull dittie. 3 Philoclea enters conference with her. 4 She shues, and shewes her selfe Prince Pyrocles. 5 Philoclea feares much, but loves more. 6 Their conclusion, 7 with reentrie to their intermitted historiologie.

SO away departed Philoclea, with a new field of fancies for her travayling mind. For well she sawe, her father was growen her adverse partie, and yet her fortune such, as she must favour her Rivall; and the fortune of that fortune such, as neither that did hurt her, nor any contrarie meane helpe her.

1 But she walkt but a little on, before she saw Zelmane lying upon a banke, with her face so bent over Ladon, that (her teares falling into the water) one might have thought, that she began meltingly to be metamorphosed to the under-running river. But by and by, with speech she made known, as well that she lived, as that she sorrowed. Faire streames (said she) that do vouchsafe in your cleerenes to represent unto me my blubbered face, let the tribute-offer of my teares unto you, procure your stay a while with me, that I may beginne yet at last, to finde some thing that pities me: and that all things of comfort and pleasure doo not flie away from me. But if the
violence of your spring command you to haste away, to pay
your dueties to your great prince, the Sea, yet carry with you
these fewe wordes, and let the uttermost ends of the world
know them. A Love more cleer then you selves, dedicated to
a Love (I feare) more cold then your selves, with the cleerenes
layes a night of sorow upon me; and with the coldenes en-
flames a worlde of fire within me. With that she tooke a
willowe stick, and wrote in a sandie banke these fewe verses.

_Some text_
whom I owe my self, & therefore, When Zelmane (making a womanish habite to be the Armour of her boldnesse, giving up her life to the lippes of Philoclea, and taking it againe by the sweetenesse of those kisses) humbly besought her to keepe her speach for a while within the Paradise of her minde. For well she knew her fathers errād, who should soon receive a sufficient answere. But now she demaunded leave not to loose this long sought-for commoditie of time, to ease her harte thus farre, that if in her agonies her destinie was to be condemned by Philocleas mouth, at lest Philoclea might know, whom she had condemned. Philoclea easily yeelded to graunt her owne desire: and so making the greene banke the situation, and the river the prospect of the most beautiful buildings of Nature, Zelmane doubting how to beginne, though her thoughts already had runne to the ende, with a minde fearing the unworthinesse of every worde that should be presented to her eares, at length brought it forth in this manner.

4. Most beloved Ladie, the incomparable excellencies of your selfe, (waited-on by the greatnesse of your estate) and the importaunce of the thing (whereon my life consisteth) doth require both many ceremonies before the beginning, and many circumstaunces in the uttering my speech, both bolde, and fearefull. But the small opportunitie of envious occasion (by the malicious eie hateful Love doth cast upon me) and the extreme bent of my affection (which will eyther breake out in wordes, or breake my harte) compell me, not onely to embrace the smallest time, but to passe by respects due unto you, in respect of your poore caitifes life, who is now, or never to be preserved. I doo therefore vowe unto you, hereafter never more to omit all dutifull forme: doo you onely now vouchsafe to heare the matter of a minde most perplexed. If ever the sound of Love have come to your eares, or if ever you have understood, what force it hath had to conquer the strongest hartes, and change the most setled estates: receive here an example of those straunge Tragedies; one, that in him selfe conteineth the particularities of all those misfortunes: and from hencefoorth beleeve that such a thing may be, since you shall see it. You shall see (I say) a living image, and a present storie of what Love can doo, when he is bent to ruine.

But alas, whether goest thou my tongue? or how doth my
harte consent to adventure the revealing his neerest touching secrete? But peace Feare, thou commest too late, when already the harme is taken. Therefore I say againe, O onely Princesse, attend here a miserable miracle of affection. Behold here before your eyes Pyrocles, Prince of Macedon, whome you onely have brought to this game of Fortune, and unused Metamorphosis: whome you onely have made negrof his countrie, forget his Father, and lastly, forsake to be Pyrocles: the same Pyrocles, who (you heard) was betrayed by being put in a ship, which being burned, Pyrocles was drowned. O most true presage: for these traytors, my eyes, putting me in a shippe of Desire, which dayly burneth, those eyes (I say) which betrayed me, will never leave till they have drowned me. But be not, be not, (most excellent Lady) you that Nature hath made to be the Load-starre of comfort, be not the Rocke of shipwracke: you whome vertue hath made the Princesse of felicitie, be not the minister of ruine: you, whom my choyse hath made the Goddessse of my safetie, O let not, let not, from you be powred upon me destruction. Your faire face hath manie tokens in it of amazement at my wordes: thinke then what his amazement is, from whence they come: since no wordes can carry with them the life of the inward feeling. I desire, that my desire may be waied in the ballances of Honour, and let Vertue hold them. For if the highest Love in no base person may aspire to grace, then may I hope your beautie will not be without pittie. If otherwise you be (alas but let it never be so) resolved, yet shall not my death be comfortles, receiving it by your sentence.

The joy which wrought into Pygmalions mind, while he found his beloved image was softer, & warmer in his folded armes, till at length it accoplished his gladnes with a perfect womans shape (still beautified with the former perfections) was even such, as by each degree of Zelmanes wordes creepingly entred into Philoclea: till her pleasure was fully made up with the manifesting of his being; which was such as in hope did over-come Hope. Yet Doubt would faine have playd his parte in her minde, and cald in question, how she should be assured that Zelmane was Pyrocles. But Love streight stood up & deposed, that a lie could not come from the mouth of Zelmane. Besides, a certain sparke of honour, which rose in her well-
disposed minde, made her feare to be alone with him, with whom alone she desired to be (with all the other contradictions growing in those minds, which nether absolutely clime the rocke of Vertue, nor freely sinke into the sea of Vanitie) but that sparke soone gave place, or at lest gave no more light in her mind, then a cadle doth in the Sunnes presence. But even sicke with a surfeit of joy, and fearefull of she knewe not what (as he that newly findes huge treasures, doubtes whether he sleepe or no; or like a fearfull Deere, which then looks most about, when he comes to the best feede) with a shrugging kinde of tremor through all her principall partes, she gave these affectionate wordes for answere. Alas, how painefull a thing it is to a devided minde to make a wel-joyned answere? how harde it is to bring inwarde shame to outward confession? and what handsomnes trow you can be observed in that speecche, which is made one knowes not to whom? Shall I say ô Zelmane? Alas your wordes be against it. Shall I say Prince Pyrocles? wretch that I am, your shew is manifest against it. But this, this I may well say; If I had continued as I ought, Philoclea, you had either never bene, or ever bene Zelmane: you had either never attempted this change, set on with hope, or never discovered it, stopt with desire. But I feare me, my behaviour ill governed, gave you the first comfort: I feare me, my affection ill hid, hath giue you this last assurance: I feare indeed, the weakenesse of my government before, made you thinke such a maske would be gratefull unto me: & my weaker governmët since, makes you to pull of the visar. What shall I doo then? shall I seeke far-fetched inventions? shall I labour to lay marble coulours over my ruinous thoughts? or rather, though the purenes of my virgin-minde be stained, let me keepe the true simplicitie of my word. True it is, alas, too true it is, ô Zelmane (for so I love to call thee, since in that name my love first began, and in the shade of that name my love shall best lie hidden,) that even while so thou wert, (what eye bewitchted me I know not) my passions were fitter to desire, then to be desired. Shall I say then, I am sory, or that my love must be turned to hate, since thou art turned to Pyrocles? how may that wel be, since when thou wert Zelmane, the despaire thou mightest not be thus, did most torment me. Thou hast then the victorie: use it with vertue. Thy vertue

260
wan me; with vertue preserve me. Doost thou love me? keepe me then still worthy to be beloved.

Then held she her tongue, and cast downe a self-accusing looke, finding, that in her selfe she had (as it were) shot out of the bow of her affectiō, a more quick opening of her minde, then she minded to have done. But Pyrocles so caried up with joy, that he did not envy the Gods felicitie, presented her with some jewels of right princely value, as some little tokens of his love, & qualitie: and withall shewed her letters from his father King Euarchus, unto him, which even in the Sea had amongst his jewels bene preserved. But little needed those proofes to one, who would have fallen out with her selfe, rather then make any contrarie conjectures to Zelmanes speeches; so that with such imbracements, as it seemed their soules desired to meeete, and their harts to kisse, as their mouthes did: which faine Pyrocles would have sealed with the chiefe armes of his desire, but Philoclea commanded the contrary; and yet they passed the promise of mariage.

And then at Philocleas entreaty, who was willing to pur- loine all occasions of remayning with Zelmane, she tolde her the storie of her life, from the time of their departing from Erona, for the rest she had already understood of her sister. For (saide she) I have understood, how you first in the companie of your Noble cousin Musidorus parted from Thessalia, and of divers adventures, which with no more daunger then glory you passed through, till your comming to the succour of the Queene Erona; and the ende of that warre (you might perceive by my selfe) I had understood of the Prince Plangus. But what since was the course of your doings, until you came, after so many victories, to make a conquest of poore me, that I know not, the fame thereof having rather shewed it by pieces; then delivered any full forme of it. Therefore, deere Pyrocles (for what can mine eares be so sweetly fed with as to heare you of you) be liberall unto me of those things which have made you indeede pretious to the worlde, and now doubt not to tell of your perils; for since I have you here out of them, even the remembrance of them is pleaasunt. Pyrocles easily perceived she was content with kindnesse, to put of occasion of further kindnesse; wherein Love shewed himselfe a cowardly boy, that durst not attempt for feare of offending. But rather Love prooved him selse
valiant, that durst with the sword of reverent dutie gaine-stand the force of so many enraged desires. But so it was, that though he knewe this discourse was to entertaine him from a more streight parley, yet he durst not but kisse his rod, and gladly make much of the entertainement which she allotted unto him: and therefore with a desirous sigh chastning his brest for too much desiring, Sweete Princesse of my life (said he) what Trophees, what Triumph, what Monuments, what Histories may ever make my fame yeeld so sweete a Musick to my eares, as that it pleaseth you to lend your minde to the knowledge of any thing touching Pyrocles, onely therefore of value, because he is your Pyrocles? And therefore grow I now so proud, as to think it worth the hearing, since you vouchsafe to give it hearing. Therefore (onely height of my hope) vouchsafe to know, that after the death of Tiridates, and settling Erona in her governement; for setled we left her, howsoever since (as I perceived by your speech the last day) the ungrateful treason of her ill-chosen husband overthrew her (a thing in trueth never till this time by me either heard, or suspected) for who could thinke without having such a minde as Antiphilus, that so great a beautie as Eronas (indeed excellent) could not have held his affection? so great goodnes could not have bound gratefulnesse? and so high advancement could not have satisfied his ambition? But therefore true it is, that wickednesse may well be compared to a bottomlesse pit, into which it is farre easier to keepe ones selfe from falling, then being fallen, to give ones selfe any stay from falling infinitely. But for my Cosen, and me, upon this cause we parted from Erona.

CHAP. 18.

1 Anaxius—his surcuidrie; 2 and challenge to Pyrocles, accepted. 3 The execution of Ladies done on a Light-of-love. 4 Pyrocles—his intercession in the cause. 5 The lewd parts of that light lecher. 6 His scoffing excuses. 7 Didos revenge on him stopped, 8 and his revenge on her stayed by Pyrocles.

E Vardes (the brave & mighty Prince, whom it was my fortune to kill in the combat for Erona) had three Nephewes, sonnes to a sister of his; all three set among the
foremost räcks of Fame for great minds to attëpt, and great force to perfourme what they did attempt; especially the eldest, by name Anaxius; to whom al men would willingly have yeelded the height of praise, but that his nature was such, as to bestow it upon himselfe, before any could give it. For of so unsupportable a pride he was, that where his deeede might well stirre envie, his demeanor did rather breed disdain. And if it be true that the Gyants ever made war against heaven, he had bene a fit ensigne-bearer for that company. For nothing seemed hard to him, though impossible; and nothing unjust, while his liking was his justice. Now he in these wars had flatly refused his aid; because he could not brooke, that the worthy Prince Plägus was by hisosen Tiridates preferred before him. For allowing no other weights, but the sword & speare in judging of desert, how-much he esteemed himselfe before Plangus in that, so much would he have had his allowance in his service.

But now that he understood that his uncle was slaine by 2 me, I thynke rather scorne that any should kil his uncle, then any kindnesse (an un-used guest to an arrogant soule) made him seeke his revenge; I must confesse in manner gallant enough. For he sent a challenge to me to meete him at a place appointed, in the confines of the kingdome of Lycia; where he would prove upon me, that I had by some trecherie overcome his uncle, whom els many hundreds such as I, could not have withstood. Youth & successe made me willing enough to accept any such bargaine; especially, because I had heard that yourosen Amphialus (who for some yeares hath universally borne the name of the best Knight in the world) had divers times fought with him, & never bene able to master him; but so had left him, that every man thought Anaxius in that one vertue of curtesie far short of him, in al other his match; Anaxius stil deeming himselfe for his superiour. Therefore to him I would goe, and I would needs goe alone, because so I understood for certaine, he was; and (I must confesse) desirous to do something without the company of the incomparable Prince Musidorus, because in my hart I acknowledge that I owed more to his presence, then to any thing in my self, whatsoever before I had done. For of him indeed (as of any worldly cause) I must grant, as received, what ever there is, or
may be good in me. He taught me by word, and best by example, giving me in him so lively an Image of vertue, as ignorance could not cast such mist over mine eyes, as not to see, and to love it, and all with such deare friendship and care, as (ō heavens) how can my life ever requite unto him? which made me indeed find in my selfe such a kind of depending upon him, as without him I found a weakenes, and a mis-trustfulnes of my selfe, as one strayed from his best strength, when at any time I mist him. Which humour perceiving to over-rule me, I strave against it; not that I was unwilling to depend upon him in judgemēt, but by weakenesse I would not; which though it held me to him, made me unworthy of him. Therfore I desired his leave, and obtained it: such confidence he had in me, preferring my reputation before his owne tender-nesse; and so privately went from him, he determining (as after I knew) in secreat maner, not to be far from the place, where we appointed to meete, to prevent any foule play that might be offered unto me. Full loth was Erona to let us depart from her, (as it were) forefeeling the harmes which after fell to her. But I, (ridde fully from those combers of kind-nesse, and halfe a dayes journey in my way toward Anaxius) met an adventure, (though in it selfe of small importance) I will tell you at large, because by the occasion thereof I was brought to as great comber and danger, as lightly any might escape.

3 As I past through a Laund (ech side whereof was so bordred both with high tymber trees, and copses of farre more humble growth, that it might easily bring a solitarie minde to looke for no other companions then the wild burgesses of the forrest) I heard certaine cries, which comming by pawses to mine eares from within the wood of the right hand, made me well assured by the greatnesse of the crie, it was the voice of a man, though it were a verie unmanlike voice, so to crie. But making mine eare my guide, I left not many trees behind me, before I saw at the bottome of one of them a gentle-man bound (with many garters) hand & foot, so as well he might tomble and tosse, but neither runne nor resist he could. Upō him (like so many Eagles upon an Oxe) were nine Gentle-women; truely such, as one might well enough say, they were hansome. Each of them helde bodkins in their handes, wherewith they continually pricked him, having bene before-hand unarmed of
any defence from the wast upward, but onely of his shirte: so as the poore man wept and bled, cryed and prayed, while they sported themselves in his paine, and delighted in his prayers, as the arguments of their victorie.

I was moved to compassion, and so much the more that he straight cald to me for succour, desiring me at lest to kill him, to deliver him from those tormenters. But before my-self could resolve, much lesse any other tell what I would resolve, there came in cholerick hast towards me about sevē or eight knights; the foremost of which willed me to get me away, and not to trouble the Ladies, while they were taking their due revenge, but with so over-mastring a maner of pride, as truly my hart could not brooke it: & therfore (answering them, that how I would have defended him from the Ladies I knew not, but from them I would) I began a combate first with him particularly, and after his death with the others (that had lesse good maners) joyntly. But such was the end of it, that I kept the fielde with the death of some, and flight of others. In so much as the women (afraid, what angie victorie would bring forth) ranne away; saving onely one; who was so flesht in malice, that neither during, nor after the fight, she gave any truce to her crueltie, but still used the little instrument of her great spight, to the well-witnest paine of the impatient patient: and was now about to put out his eies, which all this while were spared, because they should do him the discomfort of seeing who prevailed over him. When I came in, and after much ado, brought her to some conference, (for some time it was before she would harken, more before she would speake; & most, before she would in her speech leave off that remembrance of her bodkin) but at length whe I puld off my head-peece, and humbly entreated her pardon, or knowledge why she was cruell; out of breath more with choller (which increased in his owne exercise) the with the paine she tooke, much to this purpose she gave her griefe unto my knowledge. Gentleman (said she) much it is against my will to forbeare any time the executing of my just revege upon this naughtie creature, a man in nothing, but in deceaving women; But because I see you are young, and like enough to have the power (if you would have the mind) to do much more mischiefe, then he,
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

I am content upon this bad subject to reade a lecture to your vertue.

5 This man called Pamphilus, in birth I must confess is noble (but what is that to him, if it shalbe a staine to his deade auncestors to have left such an off[s]pring?) in shape as you see not uncomely (indeed the fit maske of his disguised falshood) in conversation wittily pleasant, and pleasantly gamesome; his eyes full of merie simplicitie, his words of hartie companable-nesse; and such a one, whose head one would not think so stayed, as to thinke mischievously: delighted in al such things, which by imparting their delight to others, makes the user therof welcome; as, Musicke, Dausing, Hunting, Feasting, Riding, & such like. And to conclude, such a one, as who can keepe him at armes ende, neede never wish a better copaniō. But under these qualities lies such a poysonous addar as I will tell you. For by those gifts of Nature and Fortune (being in all places acceptable) he creepes, nay (to say truely) he flies so into the favour of poore sillie women, that I would be too much ashamed to confess, if I had not revenge in my hande, as well as shame in my cheekes. For his hart being wholly delighted in deceiving us, we could never be warned, but rather, one bird caught, served for a stale to bring in more. For the more he gat, the more still he shewed, that he (as it were) gave away to his new mistresse, whē he betrayed his promises to the former. The cunning of his flatterie, the readines of his teares, the infinitenes of his vowes, were but among the weakest threedes of his nette. But the stirring our owne passions, and by the entrance of them, to make himselfe Lord of our forces; there lay his Masters part of cunning, making us now jealous, now envious, now proud of what we had, desirous of more; now giving one the triumph, to see him that was Prince of many, Subject to her; now with an estranged looke, making her feare the losse of that minde, which indeede could never be had: never ceasing humblenes and diligence, till he had imbarked us in some such disadvantage, as we could not return dry-shod; and then suddenly a tyrant, but a craftie tyrant. For so would he use his imperiousnes, that we had a delightfull feare, and an awe which made us loath to lose our hope. And, which is strangest (when sometimes with late repentance I thinke of it)
I must confesse, even in the greatest tempest of my judgemēt was I never driven to think him excellent, and yet so could set my minde, both to gette and keepe him, as though therein had lain my felicitie: like them I have seene play at the ball, growe extremely earnest, who shoulde have the ball, and yet every one knew it was but a ball. But in the end, the bitter sauce of the sport was, that we had ether our hартes broken with sorrow, or our estates spoyled with being at his direction, or our honours for ever lost, partly by our owne faults, but principally by his faultie using of our faults. For never was there man that could with more scornfull eyes beholde her, at whose feete he had lately laine, nor with a more unmanlike braverie use his tongue to her disgrace, which lately had song Sonets of her praies: being so naturally inconstant, as I marvell his soule findes not some way to kill his bodie, whereto it had beene so long united. For so hath he dealt with us (unhappie fooles,) as we could never tell, whether he made greater haste after he once liked, to enjoy, or after he once enjoyed, to forsake. But making a glorie of his own shame, it delighted him to be challenged of unkindnesse: it was a triumph unto him to have his mercie called for: and he thought the fresh colours of his beautie were painted in nothing so well, as in the ruines of his Lovers: yet so farre had we engaged our selves, (unfortunate soules) that we listed not complaine, since our complaintes could not but carrie the greatest accusation to our selves. But everie of us (each for her selfe,) laboured all meanes how to recover him, while he rather daily sent us companions of our deceit, then ever returned in any sound and faithfull manner. Till at length he concluded all his wronges with betrothing himselfe to one (I must confesse) worthie to be liked, if any worthinesse might excuse so unworthie a changeablenesse; leaving us nothing but remorse for what was past, and desaire of what might followe. Then indeede, the common injurie made us all joyne in friendshipe, who till that time, had employed our endeavours one against the other. For, we thought nothing was a more condemning of us, then the justifying of his love to her by mariage: then Despaire made Feare valiant, and Revenge gave Shame countenance: whereupon, we (that you saw here) devised how to get him among us alone: which he (suspecting no such matter of them,
whom he had by often abuses he thought made tame to be still abused) easiliy gave us opportunitie to doo.

6 And a man may see, even in this, how soone Rulers growe proude, and in their pride foolish: he came with such an authoritie among us, as if the Planets had done inough for us, that by us once he had beeene delighted. And when we began in courteous manner, one after the other, to lay his unkindnesse unto him, he seeing himselfe confronted by so many (like a resolute Orator,) went not to deniall, but to justifie his cruell falsheede, and all with such jestes, and disdainfull passages, that if the injurie could not be made greater, yet were our conceiptes made the apter to apprehende it.

Among other of his answeres (forsooth) I shall never forgette, how he woulde proove it was no inconstancie to chaunge from one Love to an other, but a great constancie; and contrarie, that which we call constancie, to be most changeable. For (said he) I ever loved my Delight, & delighted alwayes in what was Lovely: and where-soever I found occasion to obtaine that, I constantly followed it. But these constant fooles you speak of, though their Mistres grow by sicknes foule, or by fortune miserable, yet stil will love her, and so committe the absurdest inconstancie that may be, in changing their love from fairenes to foulenesse, and from lovelines to his contrarie; like one not content to leave a friend, but will straitly give over himself to his mortall enemie: where I (whom you call inconstant) am ever constant; to Beautie, in others; and Delight in my self. And so in this jollie scoffing braverie he went over us all, saying, He left one, because she was over-waiwarde; another, because she was too soone woon; a third, because she was not merie inough; a fourth, because she was over-game-some; the fifth, because she was growen with griefe subject to sicknesse; the sixt, because she was so foolish, as to be jelous of him; the seventh, because she had refused to carie a letter for him, to another that he loved; the eight, because she was not secrete; the ninth, because she was not liberall: but to me, who am named Dido, (and indeede have mette with a false Æneas) to me, I say, (to the ungratefull villaine) he could finde no other fault to object, but that (perdie) he met with many fayrer.

7 But when he had thus plaide the carellesse Prince, we
(having those servants of ours in readiness, whom you lately so
manfully overcame) laide holde of him; beginning at first but
that trifling revenge, in which you found us busie; but meaning
afterwardes to have mangled him so, as should have lost his
credit for ever abusing more. But as you have made my
fellowes fly away, so for my part the greatnesse of his wrong
overshadowes in my judgement the greatnesse of any daunger.
For was it not inough for him, to have deceived me, & through
the deceipt abused me, & after the abuse forsaken me, but that
he must now, of al the company, & before all the company lay
want of beautie to my charge? Many fairer? I trow evē in
your judgemēt, Sir, (if your eies do not beguile me) not many
fairer; & I know (whosoever saies the cotrary) there are not
many fairer. And of whom should I receive this reproch, but
of him, who hath best cause to know there are not many
fairer? And therefore how-soever my fellowes pardon his
injuries, for my parte I will ever remember, & remember to
revenge this scorne of al scornes. With that she to him
afresh; & surely would have put out his eies (who lay muet
for shame, if he did not sometimes crie for feare) if I had not
lept from my horse, & mingling force with intreaty, staied her
furie.

But, while I was perswading her to meekenes, comes a 8
number of his friends, to whom he forthwith cried, that they
should kill that womā, that had thus betraied and disgraced
him. But then I was faine to forsake the ensigne; under
which I had before served, and to spend my uttermost force in
the protecting of the Ladie; which so well prevailed for her,
that in the ende there was a faithfull peace promised of all
sides. And so I leaving her in a place of securitie (as she
thought) went on my journey towards Anaxius, for whom I
was faine to stay two daies in the apointed place, he disdaining
to waite for me, till he was sure I were there.
Did patientlie abide his angrie pleasure, till about that space of time he came (indeede, according to promise) alone: and (that I may not say too little, because he is wont to say too much) like a man, whose courage was apt to clime over any daunger. And assoone as ever he came neere me, in fit distaunce for his purpose, he with much fury, (but with fury skilfully guided) ran upon me; which I (in the best sort I could) resisted, having kept my selfe ready for him, because I had understood, that he observed but few complements in matters of armes, but such as a proud anger did indite unto him. And so putting our horses into a full careere, we hit ech other upon the head with our Launces: I think he felte my blowe; for my parte (I must confess) I never received the like: but I thinkne though my senses were astonished, my minde forced them to quicken themselves, because I had learned of him, how little favour he is woont to show in any matter of advantage. And indeede he was turned, and comming upon me with his sworde drawne, both our staves having bene broken at that encounter. But I was so ready to answere him, that truely I know not who gave the first blowe. But whosoever gave the first, it was quickly seconded by the second. And indeed (excellentest Ladie) I must say truely, for a time it was well fought betweene us; he undoubtedly being of singular valour, (I would to God, it were not abased by his too much lostinesse) but as by the occasion of the combate, winning and loosing ground, we chaunged places, his horse happened to come upon the point of the broken speare, which fallen to the ground chaunced to stand upward; so as it lighting upon his hart, the horse died. He driven to dismount, threatned, if I
did not the like, to doo as much for my horse, as Fortune had done for his. But whether for that, or because I would not be beholding to Fortune for any part of the victorie, I descended.

So began our foote-fight in such sort, that we were well entred to bloud of both sides, when there comes by, that unconstant Pamphilus, whom I had delivered (easie to be knowne, for he was bare faced) with a dozen armed men after him; but before him he had Dido (that Ladie, who had most sharply punished him) riding upon a palfrey, he following her with most unmanlike crueltie; beating her with wandes he had in his hande, she crying for sense of payne, or hope of succour: which was so pittifull a sight unto me, that it mooved me to require Anaxius to deferre our combate, till an other day, and now to perfourme the duties of Knighthood in helping this distressed Ladie. But he that disdaines to obey any thing but his passion (which he cals his mind) bad me leave of that thought; but when he had killed me, he would then (perhaps) go to her succour. But I well finding the fight would be long betweene us (longing in my hart to deliver the poore Dido) giving him so great a blowe, as somewhat staied him, (to terme it a right) I flatly ran away from him toward my horse, who trotting after the cópanie, in mine armour I was put to some paine, but that use made me nimble unto it. But as I followed my horse, Anaxius followed me: but his prowde harte did so disdaine that exercise, that I had quickly over-run him, & over-taken my horse; being (I must còfesse) ashamed to see a number of country folks, who happened to passe thereby, who hallowed & howted after me as at the arrantest coward, that ever shewed his shoulders to his enemie. But when I had leapt on my horse (with such speedy agility, that they all cried, Ơ see how feare gives him wings) I turned to Anaxius, & aloud promised him to returne thether again, as soone as I had relieved the injured Ladie. But he railing at me, with all the base wordes angry contempt could endite; I said no more, but, Anaxius, assure thy self, I nether feare thy force, nor thy opinion. And so using no weapon of a Knight as at that time, but my spurres, I ranne in my knowledge after Pamphilus, but in al their concepts from Anaxius, which as far as I could heare, I might well heare testified with such laughters and games, that I was some few times moved to turne backe againe.

ARCADIA. LIB. 2.
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

3 But the Ladies misery over-balanced my reputation so that after her I went, & with six houres hard riding (through so wild places, as it was rather the cunning of my horse sometimes, then of my selfe, so rightly to hit the way) I overgat the a little before night, neere to an old ill-favoured castle, the place where I perceived they meant to perfourme their unknighthly errand. For there they began to strip her of her clothes, when I came in among them, & running through the first with a lauice, the justnesse of the cause so enabled me against the rest (falsharted in their owne wrong doing) that I had, in as short time almost as I had bene fighting with only Anaxius, delivered her from those injurious wretches: most of whom carried newes to the other world, that amongst men secret wronges are not alwaies left unpunished. As for Pamphilus, he having once seene, & (as it should seeme) remembred me, even from the beginning began to be in the rereward, and before they had left fighting, he was too far of to give them thanks for their paines. But when I had delivered to the Ladie a ful libertie, both in effect, & in opinion, (for some time it was before she could assure her selfe she was out of their handes, who had layd so vehement apprehension of death upon her) she then tolde me, how as she was returning toward her fathers, weakely accompanied (as too soone trusting to the falshood of reconcile-ment) Pamphilus had set upon her, and killing those that were with her, carried her selfe by such force, and with such maner as I had seene, to this place, where he meant in cruell and shamefull manner to kill her, in the sight of her owne Father; to whom he had already sent worde of it, that out of his castle windowe (for this castle, she said, was his) he might have the prospect of his onely childes destruction, if my comming, whom (she said) he feared (as soone as he knew me by the armour) had not warraunted her from that neere approching crueltie. I was glad I had done so good a deede for a Gentlewoman not unhandsome, whome before I had in like sorte helped. But the night beginning to perswade some retiring place, the Gentlewoman, even out of countenaunce before she began her speach, much after this manner invited me to lodge that night with her father.

4 Sir (said she) how much I owe you, can be but abased by wordes, since the life I have, I holde it now the second time of
you: and therefore neede not offer service unto you, but onely to remember you, that I am your servaunt: and I would, my being so, might any way yeeld any small contentment unto you. Now onely I can but desire you to harbour your selfe this night in this castle; because the time requires it; and in truth this countrie is very daungerous for murthering theeves, to trust a sleeping life among them. And yet I must confesse, that as the love I beare you makes me thus invite you, so the same love makes me ashamed to bring you to a place, where you shalbe so (not spokē by ceremonie but by truth) miserably entertained. With that she tolde me, that though she spake of her father (whom she named Chremes) she would hide no truth from me, which was in summe, that as he was of all that region the man of greatest possessions, and riches, so was he either by nature, or an evill received opinion, given to sparing, in so unmeasurable a sorte, that he did not onely barre him selfe from the delightfull, but almost from the necessarie use thereof; scarcely allowing him selfe fitte sustenancie of life, rather then he would spende of those goods, for whose sake onely he seemed to joye in life. Which extreame dealing (descending from himselfe upon her) had driven her to put her selfe with a great Lady of that countrie, by which occasion she had stumbled upon such mischance, as were little for the honour either of her, or her familie. But so wise had he shewed himselfe therein, as while he found his daughter maintained without his cost, he was content to be deafe to any noise of infamie: which though it had wronged her much more then she deserved, yet she could not denye, but she was driven thereby to receave more then decent favours. She concluded, that there at lest I should be free from injuries, & should be assured to her-wards to abound as much in the true causes of welcomes, as I should want of the effects thereof.

I, who had acquainted my selfe to measure the delicacie of foode and rest, by hunger and wearinesse, at that time well stored of both, did not abide long entretiae; but went with her to the Castle: which I found of good strength, having a great mote rounde about it; the worke of a noble Gentleman, of whose unthriftie sonne he had bought it. The bridge drawne up, where we were faine to crie a good while before we coulde have answere, and to dispute a good while before answearre

S. A. 5

273
would bee brought to acceptance. At length a willingnesse, rather then a joy to receave his daughter, whome hee had lately seene so neere death, and an opinion rather brought into his heade by course, because he heard himselfe called a father; rather then any kindnesse that hee found in his owne harte, made him take us in; for my part by that time growne so wearie of such entertainement, that no regard of my selfe, but onely the importunitie of his daughter made me enter. Where I was met with this Chremes, a driveling old fellow, leane, shaking both of head and hands, alredie halfe earth, and yet then most greedie of Earth: who scarcely would give me thankes for that I had done, for feare I suppose, that thankefulnesse might have an introduction of reward. But with a hollow voice, giving me a false welcome, I might perceave in his eye to his daughter, that it was hard to say, whether the displeasure of her company did not over-way the pleasure of her owne comming. But on he brought me, into so bare a house, that it was the picture of miserable happinesse, and rich beggerie (served onely by a company of rusticall villains, full of sweate and dust, not one of them other, then a labourer) in summe (as he counted it) profitable drudgerie: and all preparations both for foode and lodging such, as would make one detest nigardnesse, it is so sluttish a vice. His talke nothing but of his povertie, for feare belike lest I should have proved a young borrower. In summe, such a man, as any enemy could not wish him worse, then to be himselfe. But there that night bidde I the burthen of being a tedious guest to a loathsome host; over-hearing him sometimes bitterly warne his daughter of bringing such costly mates under his rooфе: which she grieving at, desired much to know my name, I thinke partly of kindnesse to remember who had done some-thing for her, and partly because she assured her selfe I was such a one as would make even his miser-minde contented, with what he had done. And accordingly she demaunded my name, and estate, with such earnestnesse, that I whom Love had not as then so robbed me of my selfe, as to be another then I am, told her directly my name and condition: whereof she was no more gladde then her father, as I might well perceave by some ill-favoured cheerefulnessse, which then first began to wrinckle it selfe in his face.

274
But the causes of their joyes were farre different; for as the shepheard and the butcher both may looke upon one sheepe with pleasing concepts, but the shepheard with minde to profite himselfe by preserving, the butcher with killing him: So she rejoyced to finde that mine owne benefits had tyed me to be her friend, who was a Prince of such greatnesse, and lovingly rejoyced: but his joy grew, (as I to my danger after perceived) by the occasion of the Queene Artaxias setting my head to sale, for having slaine her brother Tiridates; which being the summe of an hundreth thousand crownes (to whosoever brought me alive into her hands) that old wretch, (who had over-lived all good nature) though he had lying idly by him much more then that, yet above all things loving money, for monies owne sake determined to betray me, so well deserving of him, for to have that which he was determined never to use. And so knowing that the next morning I was resolved to go to the place where I had left Anaxius, he sent in all speed to a Captaine of a Garrison hard by; which though it belonged to the King of Iberia, (yet knowing the Captaines humor to delight so in riotous spending; as he cared not how he came by the meanes to maintaine it) doubted not, that to be halfe with him in the gaine, he would play his quarters part in the treason. And therefore that night agreeing of the fittest places where they might surprise me in the morning, the old caitiffe was growne so ceremonious, as he would needs accompanie me some myles in my way; a sufficient token to me, if Nature had made me apte to suspect; since a churles curtesie rathely comes but either for gaine, or falshood. But I suffered him to stumble into that point of good manner: to which purpose he came out with all his clownes, horst upon such cart-jades, and so furnished, as in good faith I thought with my selfe, if that were thrift, I wisseth none of my friends or subjectes ever to thrive. As for his daughter (the gentle Dido) she would also (but in my conscience with a farre better minde) prolong the time of farewell, as long as he.

So we went on togethre: he so old in wickednes, that he could looke me in the face, and freely talke with me, whose life he had alreadie contraacted for: till comming into the falling of a way which ledde us into a place, of each-side whereof men might easily keepe themselves undiscovered, I was encompassed
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

sodainly by a great troupe of enimies, both of horse and foote, who willed me to yeelede my selfe to the Queene Artaxia. But they coulde not have used worse eloquence to have perswaded my yeelding, then that; I knowing the little good will Artaxia bare me. And therefore making necessitie and justice my best sword and shield, I used the other weapons I had as well as I could; I am sure to the little ease of a good number, who trusting to their number more then to their valure, and valewing money higher then equitie, felt, that guiltlesnesse is not alwayes with ease oppressed. As for Chremes, he withdrew himselfe, yet so guilding his wicked conceipts with his hope of gaine, that he was content to be a beholder, how I should be taken to make his pray.

8  But I was growne so weareie, that I supported my selfe more with anger then strength, when the most excellent Musidorus came to my succour; who having followed my trace as well as he could, after he had found I had left the fight with Anaxius, came to the niggards Castell, where he found all burnd and spoiled by the countrie people, who bare mortall hatred to that covetous man, and now tooke the time, when the castell was left almost without garde, to come in, and leave monuments of their malice therein: which Musidorus not staying either to further, or impeach, came upon the spurre after me (because with one voice many told him, that if I were in his company, it was for no good meant unto me) and in this extremitie found me. But when I saw that Cosen of mine, me thought my life was doubled, and where before I thought of a noble death, I now thought of a noble victorie. For who can feare that hath Musidorus by him? who, what he did there for me, how many he killed, not strauger for the number, then for the strauge blowes wherwith he sent them to a wel-deserved death, might well delight me to speake off, but I should so holde you too long in every particular. But in trueth, there if ever, and ever, if ever any man, did Musidorus shew himselfe second to none in able valour.

9  Yet what the unmeasurable excesse of their number woulde have done in the ende I knowe not, but the triall thereof was cutt off by the chaunceable comming thither of the King of Iberia, that same father of that worthy Plangus, whom it hath pleased you somtimes to mention: who, (not yeelding over to

276
old age his country delights, especially of hauking) was at that time (following a Merline) brought to see this injurie offered unto us: and having great numbers of Courtiers waiting upon him, was straight known by the soldiers that assaulted us, to be their King, and so most of them with-drew themselves.

He by his authoritie knowing of the Captaines owne constrained confession, what was the motive of this mischievous practise; misliking much such violéce should be offered in his country to men of our ranke: but chiefly disdaining it should be done in respect of his Niece, whom (I must confess wrongfully) he hated, because he interpreted that her brother and she had maintained his sonne Plangus against him, caused the Captaines head presently to be striken off, and the old bad Chremes to be hanged: though truely for my part, I earnestly laboured for his life, because I had eaten of his bread. But one thing was notable for a conclusion of his miserable life, that neither the death of his daughter, who (alas the poor Gentlewoman) was by chaunce slaine among his clowes, while she over-boldly for her weake sex sought to hold the from me, nor yet his owne shamefull ende was so much in his mouth as he was ledde to execution, as the losse of his goods, and burning of his house: which often, with more laughter then teares of the hearers, he made pittifull exclamations upon.

CHAP. 20.

1 The two Princes passage to the Iberian Court. 2 Andromanas omniregencie. 3 Her parti-love to them both. 4 Her faire and foule means to inveigle them. 5 Palladius love to Zelmane. 6 Zelmanes love to Pyrocles, and practise with her Lover to release her beloved.

His justice thus done, and we delivered, the Kingindeede in royall sorte invited us to his Court, not farre thence: in all points entertaining us so, as truely I must ever acknowledge a beholdingnesse unto him: although the streame of it fell out not to be so sweet as the spring. For after some dayes being there (curing our selves of such wounds as we had
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

received, while I, causing diligent search to be made of Anaxius, could learne nothing, but that he was gone out of the countrie, boasting in everie place, how he had made me run away) we were brought to receive the favour of acquaintance with this Queene Andromana, whom the Princesse Pamela did in so lively colours describe the last day, as still me thinkes the figure therof possesseth mine eyes, confirmed by the knowledge my selfe had.

2 And therefore I shall neede the lesse to make you know what kinde of woman she was; but this onely, that first with the rares of affection, and after with the very use of directing, she had made her selfe so absolute a maister of her husbands minde, that a-while he would not, and after, he could not tell how to govern, without being governed by her: but finding an ease in not understanding, let loose his thoughtes wholly to pleasure, entrusting to her the entire conduct of all his royall affaires. A thing that may luckily fall out to him that hath the blessing, to match with some Heroicall minded Ladie. But in him it was nether guided by wisdome, nor followed by Fortune, but thereby was slipte insensible into such an estate, that he lived at her undiscreete discretion: all his subjectes having by some yeares learned, so to hope for good, and feare of harm, onely fro her, that it should have neded a stronger vertue the his, to have unwound so deeply an entred vice. So that either not striving (because he was contented) or contented (because he would not strive) he scarcelie knewe what was done in his owne chamber, but as it pleased her Instrumentes to frame the relation.

3 Now we being brought knowen unto her (the time that we spent in curing some very dangerous wounds) after once we were acquainted, (and acquainted we were sooner then our selves expected) she continuallie almost haunted us, till (and it was not long a doing) we discovered a most violent bent of affection: and that so strangely, that we might well see, an "evill minde in authoritie, dooth not onely folow the sway of the desires alreadie within it, but frames to it selue new desires, not before thought of. For, with equall ardour she affected us both: and so did her greatnes disdaine shamefastnes, that she was content to acknowledge it to both. For, (having many times torne the vaile of modestie) it seemed, for a laste delight,
ARCADIA. LIB. 2.

that she delighted in infamy: which often she had used to her husbands shame, filling all mens eares (but his) with reproch; while he (hoodwinkt with kindnes) lest of al mē knew who strake him. But her first degree was, by setting forth her beauties, (truely in nature not to be disliked, but as much advāed to the eye, as abased to the judgemēt by arte) thereby to bring us (as willingly-caught fishes) to bite at her baite. And thereto had she that scutchion of her desires supported by certain badly-diligēt ministers, who oftē cloyed our eares with her praises, & would needs teach us a way of felicitie by seeking her favor. But when she found, that we were as deaf to thē, as dumb to her; then she listed no lōger stay in the suburbs of her foolish desires, but directly entred upō thē; making her self an impudent suter, authorizing her selfe very much with making us see that all favor & power in that realm, so depēded upon her, that now (being in her hands) we were ether to keep, or lose our liberty, at her discretiō; which yet she so tēpred, as that we might rather suspecē, thē she threatē. But whē our wouāds grew so, as that they gave us leave to travell, & that she found we were purpōsed to use all meanes we could to depart thence, she (with more & more importunatnes) craved that, which in all good maners was ether of us to be desired, or not granted. Truely (most faire & every way excellēt Lady) you would have wondred to have seene, how before us she would confess the contentiō in her own mind, between that lovely (indeed most lovely) brōines of Musidorus his face, & this colour of mine, which she (in the deceivable stile of affection) would intitle beautifull: how her eyes wandered (like a glutton at a feast) from the one to the other; and how her wordēs would beginne halfe of the sentence to Musidorus, & end the other half to Pyracles: not ashamed (seeing the friend-shippe betweene us) to desire either of us to be a mediator to the other; as if we should have played a request at Tennis betweene us: and often wishing, that she might be the angle, where the lines of our friend-shippe might meet; and be the knotte which might tie our hartes together. Which proceeding of hers I doo the more largely set before you (most deare Lady) that by the foyle therof, you may see the noblenes of my desire to you, & the warrantablenes of your favour to me.

279
At that *Philoclea* smiled, with a little nod. But (saide *Pyrocles*) when she perceived no hope by suite to prevale, then (perswaded by the rage of affeccion, and encouraged by daring to doo any thing) she founde meanes to have us accused to the King, as though we went about some practise to overthrowe him in his owne estate. Which, because of the straunge successes we had in the kingdomes of *Phrigia, Pontus & Galatia* seemed not unlikely to him, who (but skimming any thing that came before him) was disciplined to leave the through-handling of all, to his gentle wife: who forthwith caused us to be put in prison, having (while we slept) deprived us of our armour: a prison, indeede injurious, because a prison, but els well testifying affeccion, because in all respectes as commodious, as a prison might be: and indeede so placed, as she might at all houres, (not seene by many, though she cared not much how many had seene her) come unto us. Then fell she to saue her desires with threatenings, so that we were in a great perplexitie, restrained to so unworthy a bondage, and yet restrained by Love, which (I cannot tell how) in noble mindes, by a certain duety, claims an answering. And how much that love might moove us, so much, and more that faultines of her mind removed us; her beautie being balanced by her shamelesnes. But that which did (as it were) tie us in captivitie, was, that to graunt, had ben wickedly injurious to him, that saved our lives: and to accuse a Ladie that loved us, of her love unto us, we esteemed almost as dishonorable: & but by one of those waies we sawe no likelihood of going out of that place, where the words would be injurious to your eares, which should expresse the manner of her suite: while yet many times earnestnes died her cheekes with the colour of shamefastnes; and wanton languishing borrowed of her eies the downe-cast looke of modestie. But we in the meane time far from loving her, and often assuring her, that we would not so recompence her husbandes saving of our lives; to such a ridiculous degree of trusting her, she had brought him, that she caused him sende us worde, that upon our lives, we should doo whatsoever she commaundde us: good man, not knowing any other, but that all her pleasures bent to the preservation of his estate. But when that made us rather pittie, then obey his folly, then fel she to servile entreating us, as though force could have bene the
schoole of Love, or that an honest courage would not rather strive against, then yeelde to injurie. All which yet could not make us accuse her, though it made us almost pine awaie for spight, to loose any of our time in so troublesome an idlenesse.

But while we were thus full of wearinesse of what was past, and doubt of what was to follow, Love (that I thinke in the course of my life hath a sporte sometimes to poison me with roses, sometimes to heale me with wormewood) brought forth a remedy unto us: which though it helped me out of that distres, alas the conclusion was such, as I must ever while I live, think it worse then a wracke, so to have bene preserved. This King by this Queene had a sonne of tender age, but of great expectation, brought up in the hope of themselves, & already acceptance of the inconstant people, as successour of his fathers crowne: whereof he was as worthy, considering his partes, as unworthy, in respect of the wrong was therby done against the most worthy Plangus: whose great desertes now either forgotten, or ungratefully remembred, all men set their sayles with the favourable winde, which blewe on the fortune of this young Prince, perchaunce not in their harts, but surely not in their mouths, now giving Plangus (who some yeares before was their only chapion) the poore comfort of calamitie, pittie. This youth therefore accounted Prince of that regiö, by name Palladius, did with vehement affection love a young Ladie, brought up in his fathers court, called Zelmane, daughter to that mischievously unhappie Prince Plexvirtus (of whom already I have, and sometimes must make, but never honorable mention) left there by her father, because of the intricate changeablenes of his estate; he by the motherside being halfe brother to this Queene Andromana, and therefore the willinger committing her to her care. But as Love (alas) doth not alwaies reflect it selfe, so fel it out that this Zelmane, (though truely reason there was inough to love Palladius) yet could not ever perswade her harte to yeelde thereunto: with that paine to Palladius, as they feele, that feele an unloved love. Yet loving indeede, and therefore constant, he used still the intercession of diligëce and faith, ever hoping, because he would not put him selfe into that hell, to be hopelesse: until the time of our being come, and captived there, brought forth this ende,
whiche truely deserves of me a further degree of sorrow then teares.

6 Such was therein my ill destinie, that this young Ladie Zelmane (like some unwisely liberall, that more delight to give presentes, then pay debtes) she chose (alus for the pittie) rather to bestowe her love (so much undeserved, as not desired) upon me, then to recôpence him, whose love (besides many other things) might seeme (even in the court of Honour) justly to claieme it of her. But so it was (alus that so it was) whereby it came to passe, that (as nothing doth more naturally follow his cause, then care to preserve, and benefite doth follow unfained affection) she felt with me, what I felte of my captivitie, and streight laboured to redresse my paine, which was her paine: which she could do by no better meanes, then by using the helpe therein of Palladius: who (true Lover) considering what, and not why, in all her commaundements; and indeed she concealing from him her affection (which she intituled compassion,) immediatly obeyed to imploy his uttermost credite to relieve us: which though as great, as a beloved son with a mother, faulty otherwise, but not hard-harted toward him, yet it could not prevaile to procure us libertie. Wherefore he sought to have that by praftise, which he could not by praier. And so being allowed often to visit us (for indeed our restraints were more, or lesse, according as the ague of her passion was either in the fit, or intermission) he used the opportunitie of a fit time thus to deliver us.

CHAP. 21.

1 'The cause of the Iberian yearely justes. 2 Queene Helens prayses. 3 'The prize borne by her Knights, which Palladius and the Princes set them to reverse. 4 'The inventions and actions of seven tilters. 5 Palladius and the Princes entry into the field, honour in it, and flight from it. 6 'Andromanas pursuite of them 7 to the death of her sonne 8 and her selfe.

1 'The cause of the Iberian yearely justes. 2 Queene Helens prayses. 3 'The prize borne by her Knights, which Palladius and the Princes set them to reverse. 4 'The inventions and actions of seven tilters. 5 Palladius and the Princes entry into the field, honour in it, and flight from it. 6 'Andromanas pursuite of them 7 to the death of her sonne 8 and her selfe.
indeede (as it were) proclaymed to the worlde, how deare she was to the people. Among other, none was either more gratefull to the beholders, or more noble in it selfe, then justs, both with sword and launce, maintainted for a seven-night together: wherein that Nation dooth so excell, bothe for comelines and hablenes, that from neighbour-countries they ordinarily come, some to strive, some to learne, and some to behold.

This day it happened that divers famous Knights came thither frō the court of Helen, Queene of Corinth; a Ladie, whom Fame at that time was so desirous to honor, that she borrowed all mens mouthes to joyne with the sounde of her Trumpet. For as her beautie hath wonne the prize from all women, that stande in degree of comparison (for as for the two sisters of Arcadia, they are farre beyond all concept of comparison) so hath her government bene such, as hath bene no lesse beautifull to mens judgements, then her beautie to the eiesight. For being brought by right of birth, a woman, a yong woman, a faire woman, to governe a people, in nature mutinously prowde, and alwaies before so used to hard governours, as they knew not how to obey without the sworde were drawne. Yet could she for some yeares, so carry her selfe among them, that they found cause in the delicacie of her sex, of admiration, not of cōtempt: & which was notable, even in the time that many countries were full of wars (which for old grudges to Corinth were thought still would conclude there) yet so hālded she the matter, that the threatens ever smarted in the threatners; she using so strāige, and yet so well-succeeding a temper, that she made her people by peace, warlike; her courtiers by sports, learned; her Ladies by Love, chast. For by continuall martiall exercises without bloud, she made them perfect in that bloudy art. Her sportes were such as caried riches of Knowledge upō the streame of Delight: & such the behaviour both of her selfe, and her Ladies, as builded their chastitie, not upon waywardnes, but by choice of worthines: So as it seemed, that court to have bene the mariage place of Love and Vertue, & that her selfe was a Diana appareled in the garments of Venus. And this which Fame onely delivered unto me, (for yet I have never seen her) I am the willinger to speake of to you, who (I knowe) knowe her better, being your neere neighbour, because you may see by her example (in her
selfe wise, and of others beloved) that neither follie is the cause of vehement Love, nor reproch the effect. For never (I thinke) was there any woman, that with more unremoveable determinatiō gave her selfe to the coucell of Love, after she had once set before her mind the worthines of your cousin Amphialus; & yet is nether her wisedome doubted of, nor honour blemished. For (O God) what doth better become wisdome, then to discerne, what is worthy the loving? what more agreable to goodnes, then to love it so discerne? and what to greatnesse of hart, then to be constant in it once loved? But at that time, that Love of hers was not so publikely knowne, as the death of Philoxenus, and her search of Amphialus hath made it: but then seemed to have such pleasure to sende thither diverse choyse Knights of her court, because they might bring her, at lest the knowledge, perchaunce the honour, of that Triumph.

Wherein so they behaved themselves as for three daies they caried the prize; which being come from so farre a place to disgrace her servaunts, Palladius (who himselfe had never used armes) persuaded the Queene Andromana to be content (for the honour sake of her court) to suffer us two to have our horse and armour, that he with us might undertake the recoverie of their lost honour: which she graunted; taking our oth to go no further then her sonne, and never to abandon him. Which she did not more for saving him, then keeping us: and yet not satisfied with our oth, appointed a band of horsemen to have eye, that we should not go beyond appointed limits. We were willing to gratifie the young Prince, who (we saw) loved us. And so the fourth day of that exercise, we came into the fielde: where (I remember) the manner was, that the forenoone they should run at tilt, one after the other: the afternoone in a broad field, in manner of a battell, till either the strangers, or that countrie Knights wan the field.

The first that ran was a brave Knight, whose devise was to come in, all chayned with a Nymph leading him: his Impresa was

Against him came forth an Iberian whose manner of entering was, with bagpipes in steed of trumpets; a shepheard's boy before him for a Page, and by him a dosen appareled like shepherds for the fashion, though rich in
stuffe, who caried his launces, which though strong to give a launcely blow indeed, yet so were they couloured with hooks neere the mourn, that they pretily represēted shephhooks. His own furniture was drest over with wooll, so enriched with Jewels artificially placed, that one would have thought it a mariage betweene the lowest and the highest. His Impresa was a sheepe marked with pitch, with this word Spotted to be knowne. And because I may tell you out his conceipt (though that were not done, till the running for that time was ended) before the Ladies departed from the windowes, among them there was one (they say) that was the Star, wherby his course was only directed. The shepherds attending upó PHILISIDES went amog thē, & säg an eclogue; one of thē answering another, while the other shepheards pulling out recorders (which possest the place of pipes) accorded their musick to the others voice. The Eclogue had great praise: I onely remember sixe verses, while having questioned one with the other, of their fellow-shepheards sodaine growing a man of armes, and the cause of his so doing, they thus said.

ME thought some staves he mist: if so, not much amisse:
For where he most would hit, he ever yet did misse.
One said he brake acrosse; full well it so might be:
For never was there man more crossely crost then he.
But most cryedy, O well broke: O foole full gaily blest:
Where failing is a shame, and breaking is his best.

Thus I have digrest, because his manner liked me wel: But when he began to run against Lelius, it had neere growne (though great love had ever bene betwixt them) to a quarrell. For Philisides breaking his staves with great commendation, Lelius (who was knowne to be second to none in the perfection of that Art) ranne ever over his head, but so finely to the skilfull eyes, that one might well see, he shewed more knowledge in missing, then others did in hitting. For with so gallant a grace his staffe came swimming close over the crest of the Helmet, as if he would represent the kisse, and not the stroke of Mars. But Philisides was much moved with it, while he thought Lelius would shew a contempt of his youth: till Lelius (who therefore would satisfie him, because he was his friend) made him know, that to such bondage he was for so
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

many courses tyed by her, whose disgraces to him were graced by her excellency, and whose injuries he could never otherwise returne, thenhonours.

But so by Lelius willing-missing was the odds of the Iberian side, and continued so in the next by the excellent ruining of a Knight, though fostred so by the Muses, as many times the verie rustick people left both their delights and profites to harken to his songs; yet could he so well perfourme all armed sports, as if he had never had any other pen, then a Launce in his hand. He came in like a wild man; but such a wildnes, as shewed his eye-sight had tamed him, full of withered leaves, which though they fell not, still threatned falling. His Impresa was, a mill-horse still bound to goe in one circle; with this word, Data fata sequutus. But after him the Corinthian Knights absolutely prevailed, especially a great noble man of Corinth; whose devise was to come without any devise, all in white like a new knight, as indeed he was; but so new, as his newnes shamed most of the others long exercise. Then another from whose tent I remember a birde was made flie, with such art to carry a written embassage among the Ladies, that one might say, If a live bird, how so taught? if a dead bird, how so made? Then he, who hidden, man and horse in a great figure lively representing the Phoenix: the fire tooke so artificially, as it consumed the birde, and left him to rise as it were, out of the ashes thereof. Against whom was the fine frozen Knight, frozen in despaire; but his armor so naturally representing Ice, and all his furniture so lively answering therto, as yet did I never see any thing that pleased me better.

But the delight of those pleasing sights have carried me too farre in an unnecessary discourse. Let it then suffice (most excellent Ladie) that you know the Corinthians that morning in the exercise (as they had done the dayes before) had the better; Palladius neither suffering us, nor himselfe to take in hand that partie till the afternoone; when we were to fight in troopes, not differing otherwise from earnest, but that the sharpenesse of the weapons was taken away. But in the triall Palladius (especially led by Musidorus, and somewhat aided by me) himselfe truely behaving himselfe nothing like a beginner, brought the honor to rest it selfe that night of the Iberian side: And the next day, both morning, and after-noone being kept 286
by our party, He (that saw the time fitte for that deliverie he intended) called unto us to follow him; which we both bound by oth, and willing by good-wil, obeyed: and so the gard not daring to interrupt us (he commanding passage) we went after him upon the spur to a little house in a forrest neere by: which he thought would be the fittest resting place, till we might go further from his mothers fury, whereat he was no lesse angry, & ashamed, then desirous to obay Zelmane.

But his mother (as I learned since) understanding by the gard her sonnes conveying us away (forgetting her greatnes, & resining modesty to more quiet thoughts) flew out from her place, and cried to be accompanied, for she her-selfe would follow us. But what she did (being rather with vehemency of passion, then conduct of reason) made her stumble while she ran, & by her owne confusion hinder her owne desires. For so impatiently she commanded, as a good while no body knew what she comanded; so as we had gotten so far the start, as to be alredy past the confines of her kingdome before she over-tooke us: and overtake us she did in the kingdome of Bythinia, not regarding shame, or daunger of having entred into anothers dominions: but (having with her about a three score hors-men) streight commaunded to take us alive, and not to regard her sonnes threatening therein: which they attempted to do, first by speach, & then by force. But neither liking their eloquence, nor fearing their might, we esteemed few swordes in a just defence, able to resist any unjust assaulters. And so Musidorus incredible valour (beating downe all lets) made both me, and Palladius, so good way, that we had little to doo to overcome weake wrong.

And now had the victorie in effect without bloud, when Palladius (heated with the fight, and angrie with his mothers fault) so pursued our assaylers, that one of them (who as I heard since had before our comming bene a speciall minion of Andromanas, and hated us for having dispossest him of her hart) taking him to be one of us, with a traiterous blow slew his youg Prince: who falling downe before our eyes, whom he specially had delivered, judge (sweetest Lady) whether anger might not be called justice in such a case: once, so it wroght in us, that many of his subjects bodies we left there dead, to wait on him more faithfully to the other world.
8 All this while disdaine, strengthened by the furie of a furious love, made Andromana stay to the last of the combat: & whē she saw us light down, to see what help we might do to the helplesse Palladius, she came runing madly unto us, then no lesse threatning, when she had no more power to hurt. But when she perceived it was her onely sonne that lay hurt, and that his hurt was so deadly, as that alredy his life had loste the use of the reasonable, and almost sensible part; then onely did misfortune lay his owne ouglinesse upon his faulte, and make her see what she had done, and to what she was come: especiallie, finding in us rather detestation then pittie (considering the losse of that young Prince) and resolution presently to depart, which stil she laboured to stay. But deprived of all comfort, with eyes full of death, she ranne to her sonnes dagger, and before we were aware of it (who else could have stayed it) strake her selfe a mortall wound. But then her love, though not her person, awaked pittie in us, and I went to her, while Musidorus labored about Palladius. But the wound was past the cure of a better surgeon then my selfe, so as I could but receave some few of her dying words; which were cursings of her ill set affection, and wishing unto me many crosses & mischances in my love, whēsoever I should love, wherin I feare, and only feare that her prayer is from above granted. But the noise of this fight, & issue thereof being blazed by the country people to some noble-mē there-aboutes, they came thither, and finding the wrong offered us, let us go on our journey, we having recommended those royal bodies unto the to be conveyed to the King of Iberia. With that Philoclea, seeing the teares stand in his eyes with remembrance of Palladius, but much more of that which therupon grew, she would needs drinke a kisse from those eyes, and he sucke another from her lippes; whereat she blushed, & yet kissed him againe to hide her blushing. Which had almost brought Pyrocles into another discourse, but that she with so sweete a rigor forbad him, that he durst not rebell, though he found it a great war to keepe that peace, but was faine to go on his storie: for so she absolutely badde him, and he durst not know how to disobey.
A new complaint of Pamphilus new change, to a gracelesse curtisian. Zelmane loves, and as a Page serves Pyrocles. The two Princes policie to reconcile two warring brothers. The unbrotherly brave combat of Tydeus and Telenor. Plexirtus his viperine unkindnes to the kindest Leonatus. His conquest by the two brothers, and his dogtrick to destroy them by themselves. The regreete of the dying brothers.

SO (said he) parting from that place before the Sunne had much abased himselfe of his greatest height, we sawe sitting upon the drie sandes (which yeelded at that time a verie hotte reflection) a faire Gentlewoman, whose gesture accused her of much sorow, & every way shewed she cared not what paine she put her body to, since the better parte (her minde) was laide under so much agonie: and so was she dulled withall, that we could come so neare, as to heare her speeches, and yet she not perceive the hearers of her lamentation. But wel we might understand her at times, say. Thou doost kill me with thy unkind falshood: and it greeves me not to die, but it greeves me that thou art the murtherer: neither doth mine owne paine so much vexe me, as thy errour. For God knowes, it would not trouble me to be slaine for thee, but much it tormentes me to be slain by thee. Thou art untrue Pamphilus, thou art untrue, and woe is me therefore. How oft didst thou sweare unto me, that the Sun should loose his light, and the rocks runne up and down like little kiddes, before thou wouldst falsifie thy faith to me? Sunne therefore put out thy shining, & rockes runne mad for sorrow, for Pamphilus is false. But alas, the Sun keepes his light, though thy faith be darckned; the rockes stand still, though thou change like the wethercocke. O foole that I am, that thought I coulde graspe water, and binde the winde. I might well have knowe thee by others, but I would not; & rather wished to learne poison by drinking it my selfe, while my love helped thy wordes to deceive me. Well, yet I would thou hast made a better choise, when thou didst forsake thy unfortunate Leucippe. But it is no matter, Baccha (thy new mistres) will revenge my wrongs. But do not Baccha, let Pamphilus live happie, though I die.
And much more to such like phrase she spake, but that I (who had occasion to know some-thing of that Pamphilus) stept to comfort her: & though I could not doo that, yet I gotte thus much knowledge of her, that this being the same Leucippe, to whom the unconstante Pamphilus had betrothed himselfe, which had moved the other Ladies to such indignation as I tolde you: nether her woorthinesse (which in truthe was great) nor his owne suffering for her (which is woont to endeare affection) could fetter his ficklenes, but that before his mariadge-day appointed, he had taken to wife that Baccha, of whom she complayned; one, that in divers places I had heard before blazed, as the most impudentlie unchaste woman of all Asia; and withall, of such an imperiousnes therein, that she would not stick to employ them (whom she made unhappe with her favour) to draw more companions of their follie: in the multitude of whom she did no lesse glorie, then a Captaine would doo, of being followed by brave souldiers: waiwardly proud; and therefore bold, because extremely faultie: and yet having no good thing to redeeme both these, and other unlovely parts, but a little beautie, disgraced with wandring eyes, and unwaied speeches; yet had Pamphilus (for her) left Leucippe, and withall, left his faith: Leucippe, of whom one looke (in a cleere judgement) would have bene more acceptable, then all her kindeneses so prodigallie bestowed. For my selfe, the remembrance of his crueltie to Dido, joyned to this, stirred me to seeke some revenge upon him, but that I thought, it shoulde be a gayne to him to lose his life, being so matched: and therefore (leaving him to be punished by his owne election) we conveyed Leucippe to a house thereby, dedicated to Vestall Nunnes, where she resolved to spende all her yeares (which her youth promised shoulde be many) in bewayling the wrong, and yet praying for the wrong-dooer.

But the next morning, we (having striven with the Sunnes earlines) were scarcelyly beyond the prospect of the high turrets of that building, when there overtoke us a young Gentleman, for so he seemed to us, but indeede (sweete Ladie) it was the faire Zelmane, Plexirtus daughter; whom unconsulting affection (unfortunately borne to me-wards) had made borrowe so much of her naturall modestie, as to leave her more-decent rayments, and taking occasion of Andromanas tumultuous pursuing us, had
apparrelled her selfe like a Page, with a pittifull crueltie cutting of her golden haire, leaving nothing, but the short curles, to cover that noble head, but that she ware upon it a faire headpeece, a shielde at her back, and a launce in her hand, els disarmed. Her apparrell of white, wrought upon with broken knots, her horse, faire & lustie, which she rid so, as might shew a fearefull boldnes, daring to doo that, which she knew that she knew not how to doo: and the sweetnes of her countenance did give such a grace to what she did, that it did make handsome the unhansomnes, and make the eye force the minde to beleewe, that there was a praise in that unskilfulnesse. But she straight approached me, and with fewe words (which borowed the help of her countenance to make themselves understood) she desired me to accept her in my service; telling me, she was a noblemans sonne of Iberia, her name Daiphantus, who having seene what I had done in that court, had stolne from her father, to follow me. I enquired the particularities of the maner of Andromanas following me, which by her I understood, she hiding nothing (but her sexe) from me. And still me thought I had seen that face, but the great alteration of her fortune, made her far distant from my memorie: but liking very well the yong Gentleman, (such I tooke her to be) admitted this Daiphantus about me: who well shewed, there is no service like his, that serves because he loves. For, though borne of Princes bloud, brought up with tenderest education, unapt to service (because a woman) & full of thoughts (because in a strange estate;) yet Love enjoyned such diligence, that no apprentice, no, no bondslave could ever be by feare more readie at all commandementes, then that yong Princesse was. How often (alas) did her eyes say unto me, that they loved? and yet, I (not looking for such a matter) had not my conceipt open, to understand them. How ofte would she come creeping to me, betweene gladnes to be neere me, & feare to offend me? Truly I remember, that then I marvailing, to see her receive my commandeements with sighes, and yet do them with cheerefulness: sometimes answering me in such riddles, as I then thought childish in experience: but since returning to my remembrance, they have come more neere unto my knowledge: & pardon me (onely deare Lady) that I use many words: for her affection to me deserves of me an affectionate speach.
In such sort did she serve me in that kingdom of Bythinia, for two moneths space. In which time we brought to good end, a cruell warre long maintained betweene the King of Bythinia and his brother. For my excellent cousin, and I (dividing our selves to either side) found meanes (after some triall we had made of our selves) to get such credite with them, as we brought them to as great peace betweene themselves, as love towards us, for having made the peace. Which done, we intended to returne through the Kingdome of Galatia, towarde Thrace, to ease the care of our father and mother, who (we were sure) first with the shipwracke; and then with the other daungers we dayly past, should have litle rest in their thoughts, till they saw us.

But we were not entred into that Kingdome, whē by the noise of a great fight, we were guided to a pleasentaunt valey, which like one of those Circusses, which in great cities somewhere doth give a pleasant spectacle of rūning horses; so of either side stretching it selfe in a narrow length was it hemd in by woody hilles; as if indeed Nature had meant therein to make a place for beholders. And there we behelde one of the cruelllest fights betweene two Knighes, that ever hath adorned the martial storie. So as I must cofesse, a while we stood wondring, another while delighted with the rare bravery therof; till seing such streames of bloud, as threatned a drowning of life, we galloped towarde them to part them. But we were prevented by a dosen armed Knighes, or rather villains, who using this time of their extreame feeblenesse, all together set upon them. But common daunger brake of particular discorde, so that (though with a dying weakenes) with a lively courage they resisted, and by our help drave away, or slue those murdering attempters: among whom we hapt to take alive the principall. But going to disarme those two excellent Knighes, we found with no lesse wonder to us, then astonishment to themselves, that they were the two valiaunt, and indeede famous Brothers, Tydeus and Telenor; whose adventure (as afterwarde we made that ungratious wretch confesse) had thus fallen out.

After the noble Prince Leonatus had by his fathers death succeeded in the kingdome of Galatia, he (forgetting all former injuries) had received that naughtie Plexirtus into a streight
degree of favour, his goodnesse being as apt to be deceived, as
the others crafte was to deceive. Till by plaine proove finding,
that the ungratefull man went about to poyson him, yet would
not suffer his kindnesse to be overcome, not by justice it selfe:
but calling him to him, used wordes to this purpose. Plexirtus
(said he) this wickednesse is founde by thee. No good deedes
of mine have bene able to keepe it downe in thee. All men
counsell me to take away thy life, likely to bring foorth nothing,
but as daungerous, as wicked effects. But I cannot finde it in
my harte, remembring what fathers sonne thou arte. But
since it is the violence of ambition, which perchaunce puls
thee from thine owne judgement, I will see, whether the
satisfying that, may quiet the ill working of thy spirites. Not
farre hence is the great cittie of Trebisonde; which, with the
territorie about it, aunciently pertained unto this crowne, now
unjustly possessed, and as unjustly abused by those, who have
neither title to holde it, nor vertue to use it. To the conquest
of that for thy selfe I will lende thee force, and give thee my
right. Go thercfor, and with lesse unnaturalesse glut thy
ambition there; and that done, if it be possible, learne vertue.

Plexirtus, mingling forsworne excuses with false-meant promises,
gladly embraced the offer: and hastilie sending backe
for those two Brothers (who at that time were with us suc-
couring the gratious Queen Erona) by their vertue chiefly (if
not onely) obteyned the conquest of that goodly dominion.
Which indeede done by them, gave them such an authoritie,
that though he raigned, they in effect ruled, most men honour-
ing them, because they onely deserved honour; and many,
thinking therein to please Plexirtus, considering how much he
was bound unto them: while they likewise (with a certaine
sincere boldenesse of selfe-warranting friendship) accepted all
openly and plainely, thinking nothing should ever by Plexirtus
be thought too much in them, since all they were, was his.

But he (who by the rules of his own mind, could costrue no
other end of mes doings, but self seking) sodely feared what
they could doo; and as sodainely suspected, what they would
do, and as sodainely hated them, as having both might, and
minde to doo. But dreading their power, standing so strongly
in their owne valour, & others affection, he durst not take open
way against them: and as harde it was to take a secrete, they
being so continually followed by the best, & every way hablest of that region: and therefore used this divelish sleight (which I wil tel you) not doubting (most wicked man) to turne their owne frie¯dship toward him to their owne destruction. He, (knowing that they wel knew, there was no friendship betweene him and the new King of Pontus, never since he succoured Leonatus and us, to his overthrow) gave them to understand that of late there had passed secrete defiance betweene them, to meeete privately at a place apointed. Which though not so fit a thing for men of their greatnes, yet was his honour so engaged, as he could not go backe. Yet faining to find himself weake by some counterfeit infirmitie, the day drawing neere, he requested each of them to go in his stead; making either of the sweare, to keep the matter secret, ever ech frō other, delivering the selfe same particularities to both, but that he told Tydeus, the King would meet him in a blew armour; & Telenor, that it was a black armour: & with wicked subtiltie (as if it had bene so apointed) caused Tydeus to take a black armour, & Telenor a blew; appointing them waies how to go, so as he knew they should not meet, til they came to the place appointed, where each had promised to keep silence, lest the King should discover it was not Plexirtus: and there in await had he laied these murtherers, that who overlived the other, should by them be dispatched: he not daring trust more then those, with that enterprise, and yet thinking them too few, till themselves by themselves were weakened.

9 This we learned chiefly, by the chiefe of those way-beaters, after the death of those worthie brothers, whose love was no lesse, then their valour: but well we might finde much thereof by their pitifull lamentation, when they knew their mismeeting, and saw each other (in despite of the Surgerie we could doo unto them) striving who should runne fastest to the goale of death: each bewailing the other, and more dying in the other, then in himselfe: cursing their owne hands for doing, and their breasts for not sooner suffering: detesting their unfortunately-spent time in having served so ungrateful a Tyraunt: and accusing their folly in having beleaved, he could faithfully love, who did not love faithfulnes: wishing us to take heed, how we placed our good wil upon any other ground, then profe of vertue: since length of acquaintance, mutuall secrecies, nor
height of benefits could binde a savage harte; no man being good to other, that is not good in himself. Then (while any hope was) beseeching us to leave the cure of him that besought, and onely looke to the other. But when they found by themselves, and us, no possibilitie, they desired to be joined; and so embracing and craving that pardon each of other, which they denied to themselves, they gave us a most sorrowfull spectacle of their death; leaving fewe in the world behind them, their matches in any thing, if they had soone inough knowne the ground and limits of friendship. But with wofull hartes, we caused those bodies to be conveyed to the nexte town of Bythinia, where we learning thus much (as I have tolde you) caused the wicked Historian to conclude his history, with his owne well-deserved death.

CHAP. 23.

1 Zelmanes griefe for Plexirtus fault. 2 Otaves, and his Gyants warre on Pontus. 3 Plexirtus endaungered, needes helpe of the dead brothers. 4 Zelmane thought-sicke, unmaskes her selfe. 5 Her dying teares 6 and last requestes. 7 Musidorus to Pontus, Pyrocles hardly partes to save Plexirtus. 8 The sourse and course of his deaths-doome, 9 stayed by Pyrocles. 10 The combat of Pontus well ended. 11 The Asian Princes meeting, to honour the two Greekes.

But then (I must tell you) I found such wofull countenances 1 in DaiphantuSy, that I could not but much marvaile (finding them continew beyond the first assault of pittie) how the cause of strangers (for further I did not conceive) could so deeply pearce. But the truth indeed is, that partly with the shame & sorrow she tooke of her fathers faultinesse, partly with the feare, that the hate I coceive against him, would utterly disgrace her in my opinion, whenssoever I should know her, so vehemently perplexed her, that her fayre colour daicied; and dayly, and hastily grew into the very extreme working of sorrowfulnesse: which oft I sought to leane, 6 helpe. But she, as fearefull as loving, still concealed it; and so decaying
still more and more, in the excellencie of her fairenesse, but that whatsoever weakesesse took away, pitie seemed to adde: yet still she forced her selfe to waite on me, with such care and diligence, as might well shew had bene taught in no other schoole, but Love.

2 While we returning againe to embarke our selves for Greece, understood that the mighty Otaves (brother to Barzanes slaine by Musidorus, in the battale of the six Princes) had entred upō the kingdome of Pontus, partly upon the pretences he had to the crowne, but principally, because he would revenge upon him (whom he knew we loved) the losse of his brother: thincking (as indeede he had cause) that wheresoever we were, hearing of his extremitie, we would come to relieve him; in spite whereof he doubted not to prevale, not onely upon the confidence of his owne vertue and power, but especially because he had in his cópany two mighty Giants, sonnes to a couple whom we slue in the same realme: they having bene absent at their fathers death, and now returned, willingly entered into his service, hating (more then he) both us, and that King of Pontus. We therefore withall speede went thetherwarde, but by the way this fell out, which whenssoever I remember without sorrow, I must forget withall, all humanitie.

3 Poore Daiphantus fell extreme sick, yet would needs conquere the delicacie of her constitution, and force her selfe to waite on me: till one day going towards Pontus, we met one, who in great hast went seeking for Tydeus & Telenor, whose death as yet was not knowne unto the messenger; who (being their servaunt and knowing how deerely they loved Plexirtus) brought them word, how since their departing, Plexirtus was in presen[t] daunger of a cruel death, if by the valiantnesse of one of the best Knightes of the world, he were not reskewed: we enquired no further of the matter (being glad he should now to his losse finde what an unprofitable treason it had bene unto him, to dismembre himselfe of two such friendes) and so let the messenger part, not sticking to make him know his masters destruction, by the falshood of Plexirtus.

4 But the griefe of that (finding a bodie alreadie brought to the last degree of weakesesse) so overwhelmed the little remnant of the spirits left in Daiphantus, that she fell sodainely into deadly soundings; never comming to her selfe, but that withall
she returned to make most pittifull lamentations; most straunge unto us, because we were farre from gessing the ground thereof. But finding her sickness such, as beganne to print death in her eyes, we made al hast possible to convey her to the next towne: but before we could lay her on a bed, both we, & she might find in herselfe, that the harbinger of over-hastie death, had prepared his lodging in that daintie body, which she undoubtedly feeling, with a weake chearefulness, shewed cöfort therin; and then desiring us both to come neere her, & that no bodie els might be present; with pale, and yet (even in palenes) lovely lippes, Now or never, and never indeed, but now it is time for me (said she) to speake: and I thanke death which gave me leave to discover that, the suppressing whereof perchance hath bene the sharpest spur, that hath hasted my race to this end. Know then my Lords, and especially you my Lord and master, Pyrocles, that your page Daiphantus is the unfortunat Zelmane, who for your sake caused my (as unfortuneate) lover, and cosen, Palladius, to leave his fathers court, and consequently, both him & my Aunt his mother, to loose their lives. For your sake my selfe have become, of a Princesse a Page: and for your sake have put off the apparell of a woman, & (if you judge not more mercifully) modestie. We were amazed at her speach, and thē had (as it were) new eyes give us to perceve that which before had bene a present sträger to our minds. For indeed, we forthwith knew it to be the face of Zelmane, whō before we had knownen in the court of Iberia. And sorrow and pittie laying her paine upon me, I comforted her the best I could by the tendernes of good-will, pretending indeed better hope then I had of her recovery.

But she that had inward ambassadors from the tyrât that should shortly oppresse her. No, my deere master (said she) I neither hope nor desire to live. I know you would never have loved me (& with that she wept) nor, alas, had it bene reason you should, considering manie wayes my unworthines. It sufficeth me that the strange course I have takē, shall to your remembrance, witnesse my love: and yet this breaking of my harte, before I would discover my paine, will make you (I hope) think I was not altogether unmodest. Thinke of me so, deare Master, and that thought shall be my life: and with that, languishingly looking upon me; And I pray you (said she)
even by these dying eies of mine (which are onely sorrie to
dye, because they shall lose your sight) and by these pouled
lockes of mine (which while they were long, were the orna-
ment of my sex, now in their short curles, the testimonie of
my servitutde) and by the service I have done you (which God
knowes hath beene full of love) thinke of me after my death
with kindnes, though ye cannot with love. And whensoever
ye shall make any other Ladie happie with your placed affectio,
if you tell her my folly, I pray you speake of it, not with
scorne, but with pitie. I assure you (deare Princesse of my
life, for how could it be otherwise?) her words and her manners,
with the lively consideration of her love, so pearced me, that I,
though I had diverse griefes before, yet I thought I never
felt till then, how much sorow enfeebleth all resolution. For
I coulde not chuse, but yeeld to the weakens of abundant
weeping; in trueth with such griefe, that I could willingly at
that time have chaunged lives with her.

6 But when she saw my teares, O God (said she) howe
largely am I recompenced for my losses? why then (said shee)
I may take boldnesse to make some requests unto you. I
besought her to doo, vowing the performance, though my life
were the price therof. She shewed great joy: The first (said
she) is this, that you will pardon my father the displeasure you
have justly conceived against him, and for this once succour,
him out of the daunger wherin he is: I hope he will amende:
and I pray you, whensoever you remember him to be the
faultie Plexirtus, remember withall that he is Zelmanes father.
The second is, that when you come into Greece, you will take
unto your selfe this name (though unlucky) of Daiphantus, and
vouchsafe to be called by it: for so shall I be sure, you shall
have cause to remember me: and let it please your noble
cousin to be called Palladius, that I doo that right to that
poore Prince, that his name may yet live upon the earth in so
excellent a person: and so betwene you, I trust sometimes
your unluckie page shall be (perhaps with a sigh) mencioned.
Lastly, let me be buried here obscurely, not suffering my
friends to knowe my fortune, till (when you are safely returned
to your own countrie) you cause my bones to be conveyed
thither, and laid (I beseech you) in some place, where your
selfe vouchsafe sometimes to resort. Alas, small petitions for
such a suter; which yet she so earnestly craved, that I was
faine to sweare the accomplishment. And then kissing me,
& often desiring me not to condemne her of lightnesse, in
mine armes she delivered her pure soule to the purest place:
leaving me as full of agonie, as kindnes, pitie, and sorow could
make an honest harte. For I must confesse for true, that if
my starres had not whoely reserved me for you, there els
perhaps I might have loved, & (which had bene most strange)
begun my love after death: whereof let it be the lesse
marvaile, because somwhat shee did resemble you: though
as farre short of your perfectio, as her selfe dying, was of her
flourishing: yet somthing there was, which (when I saw a
picture of yours) brought againe her figure into my remem-
brance, and made my harte as apte to receive the wounde, as
the power of your beauty with unresistable force to pearce.

But we in wofull (& yet privat) manner burying her, per-
formed her commandement: & then enquiring of her fathers
estate, certainly learned that he was presentlie to be succoured,
or by death to passe the neede of succour. Therfore we deter-
mined to divide our selves; I, according to my vowe, to helpe
him, and Musidorus toward the King of Pontus, who stood in
no lesse need then immediate succour, and even readie to
depart one from the other, there came a messenger from him,
who after some enquirie found us, giving us to understand, that
he trusting upon us two, had apointed the combat betweene
him & us, against Otaver, and the two Gyants. Now the day
was so accorded, as it was impossible for me both to succour
Plexirtus, & be there, where my honour was not onely gaged
so far, but (by the straunge working of unjust fortune) I was to
leave the standing by Musidorus, whom better then my selfe I
loved, to go save him whom for just causes I hated. But my
promise given, & given to Zelmane, & to Zelmane dying, pre-
vailed more with me, then my friendship to Musidorus: though
certainly I may affirme, nothing had so great rule in my
thoughts as that. But my promise caried me the easier, because
Musidorus himselfe would not suffer me to breake it. And so
with heavy mindes (more careful each of others successe, the of
our owne) we parted; I towarde the place, where I understood
Plexirits was prisoner to an auncient Knight, absolutely
governing a goodly Castle, with a large territory about it,
whereof he acknowledged no other soveraigne, but himselfe: whose hate to *Plexirtus*, grew for a kinsman of his, whoe he malitiously had murdered, because in the time that he raigned in Galatia, he found him apt to practise for the restoring of his vertuous brother *Leonatus*. This old Knight, still thirsting for revenge, used (as the way to it) a pollicie, which this occasion I will tell you, prepared for him. *Plexirtus* in his youth had maried *Zelmanes* mother, who dying of that only child-birth, he a widower, and not yet a King, haunted the Court of Armenia; where (as he was comming to winne favour) he obtained great good liking of *Artaxia*, which he pursued, till (being called home by his father) he falsly got his fathers kingdom; and then neglected his former love: till throwen out of that (by our meanes) before he was deeply rooted in it, and by and by again placed in Trebitcoinde, understanding that *Artaxia* by her brothers death was become Queen of Armenia, he was hotter then ever, in that pursuit, which being understood by this olde Knight, he forged such a letter, as might be written from *Artaxia*, entreating his present (but very privie) repaire thether, giving him faithfull promise of presente mariage: a thing farre from her thought, having faithfully, and publiquely protested, that she would never marrie any, but some such Prince who woulde give sure profe, that by his meanes we were destroyed. But he (no more wittie to frame, then blinde to judge hopes) bitte hastily at the baite, and in private maner posted toward her, but by the way he was met by this Knight, far better accompanied, who quickly laid holde of him, & condemned him to death, cruel enough, if any thing may be both cruel and just. For he caused him to be kept in a miserable prison, till a day appointed, at which time he would deliver him to be devoured by a monstrous beast, of most ugly shape, armed like a *Rhinoceros*, as strong as an Elephant, as fierce as a Lion, as nimble as a Leopard, and as cruel as a Tigre: whom he having kept in a strong place, from the first youth of it, now thought no fitter match, then such a beastly monster with a monstrous Tyrant: proclaiming yet withall, that if any so well loved him, as to venture their lives against this beast, for him, if they overcame, he should be saved: not caring how many they were (such confidence he had in the monsters strength) but especially hoping to entrappe therby the great courages of
Tydeus and Telenor, whom he no lesse hated, because they had bene principall instruments of the others power.

I dare say, if Zelmane had known what daunger I should have passed, she would rather have let her father perishe, then me to have bidden that adventure. But my word was past, and truely, the hardnes of the enterprise, was not so much a bitte, as a spurre unto me; knowing well, that the journy of high honor lies not in plaine wayes. Therefore, going thether, and taking sufficient securitie, that Plexirtus should be delivered if I were victorious, I undertooke the combatte: and (to make shorte, excellent Ladie, and not trouble your eares with recounting a terrible matter) so was my weakesnes blessed from above, that without dangerous wounds I slewe that monster, which hundreds durste not attempt: to so great admiration of many (who from a safe place might looke on) that there was order given, to have the fight, both by sculpture and picture, celebrated in most parts of Asia. And the olde nobleman so well liked me, that he loved me; onely bewayling, my vertue had beene imploied to save a worse monster then I killed: whom yet (according to faith given) he delivered, and accompanied me to the kingdome of Pontus, whether I would needes in all speede go, to see whether it were possible for me (if per-chance the day had bene delaied) to come to the combat. But that (before I came) had bene thus finished.

The vertuous Leonatus understanding two so good friends of his were to be in that danger, would perforce be one him selfe: where he did valiantly, and so did the King of Pontus. But the truthe is, that both they being sore hurt, the incomparable Musidorus finished the combat by the death of both the Giants, and the taking of Otaves prisoner. To whom as he gave his life, so he gotte a noble friend: for so he gave his worde to be, and he is well known to thinke him selfe greater in being subject to that, then in the greatnes of his principalitie.

But thither (understanding of our being there) flocked great multitudes of many great persons, and even of Princes; especially those, whom we had made beholding unto us: as, the Kings of Phrygia, Bythinia, with those two hurte, of Pontus and Galatia, and Otaves the prisoner, by Musidorus set free; and thither came Plexirtus of Trebisonde, and Antiphilus, then King of Lycia; with as many mo great Princes, drawen ether
by our reputation, or by willingnes to acknowledge them selves obliged unto us, for what we had done for the others. So as in those partes of the world, I thinke, in many hundreds of yeares, there was not scene so royall an assemblie: where nothing was let passe to doo us the highest honors, which such persons (who might command both purses and inventions) could performe. All from all sides bringing unto us right royall presents (which we to avoide both unkindnes, and importuntie, liberally received,) & not content therewith, would needes accept, as from us, their crownes, and acknowledge to hold them of us: with many other excessive honors, which would not suffer the measure of this short leisure to describe unto you.

CHAP. 24.

1 The causes and provisions of the Princes embarking for Arcadia.
2 Plexirtus his treason against them disclosed by one, 3 attempted by another of his ministers. 4 Sedition and slaughter in the shipe about it. 5 Their shipwrack by fire. 6 Pyrocles fight with the Captaine, and escape from sea. 7 The amarous concluding the olde, and beginning a newe storie, both broken of by Miso.

But wee quickly aweary thereof, hasted to Greece-ward, led thither partly with the desire of our parents, but hastened principally, because I understooode that Anaxius with open mouth of defamation had gone thither to seeke mee, and was nowe come to Peloponnesus where from Court to Court he made enqyrie of me, doing yet himselfe so noble deedes, as might hap to authorize an ill opinion of me. We therefore sufferd but short delayes, desiring to take this countrey in our way, so renowned over the worlde, that no Prince could pretend height, nor begger lownesse, to barre him from the sound thereof: renowned indeede, not so much for the ancient prayses attributed thereunto, as for the having in it Argalus and Amphialus (two knights of such rare prowes, as we desired especially to know) and yet by farre, not so much for that, as without suffering of comparison for the beautie of you...
and your sister, which makes all indifferent judges, that speake thereof, account this countrie as a temple of deities. But these causes indeed moving us to come by this land, we embarked our selves in the next porte, whether all those Princes (saving Antiphilus, who returned, as he pretended, not able to tarry long from Erona) conveyed us. And there found we a ship most royally furnished by Plexirtus, who made all thinges so proper (as well for our defence, as ease) that all the other Princes greatly commended him for it: who (seeming a quite altered man) had nothing but repentance in his eies, friendship in his gesture, & vertue in his mouth: so that we who had promised the sweete Zelmane to pardon him, now not onely forgave, but began to favour; perswading our selves with a youthfull credulitie, that perchance thinges were not so evil as we tooke them, & as it were desiring our owne memorie, that it might be so. But so were we licensed from those Princes, truly not without teares, especially of the vertuous Leonatus, who with the king of Potus, would have come with us, but that we (in respect of the ones young wife, & both their new settled kingdoms) would not suffer it. Then would they have sent whole fleets to guard us: but we, that desired to passe secretely into Greece, made them leave that motion, when they found that more ships, then one, would be displeasing unto us. But so comming our selves to the uncertaine discretion of the wind, we (then determining as soone as we came to Greece, to take the names of Daiphantus and Palladius, as well for our owne promise to Zelmane, as because we desired to come unknowne into Greece) left the Asian shore full of Princely persons, who even upon their knees, recommended our safeties to the devotion of their chiefe desires: among whom none had bene so officious (though I dare affirme, all quite contrarie to his unfaithfulnes) as Plexirtus.

So having sailed almost two daies, looking for nothing but 2 when we might looke upon the land, a grave man (whom we had scene of great trust with Plexirtus, and was sent as our principall guide) came unto us, and with a certaine kinde manner, mixt with shame, and repentance, began to tell us, that he had taken such a love unto us (considering our youth and fame) that though he were a servaunt, and a servaunt of such trust about Plexirtus, as that he had committed unto him

303
even those secretes of his hart, which abhorde all other knowledge; yet he rather chose to reveale at this time a most pernitious counsell, then by concealing it bring to ruin those, whom he could not choose but honour. So went he on, and tolde us, that Plexirtus (in hope thereby to have Artaxia, endowed with the great Kingdome of Armenia, to his wife) had given him order, when we were neere Greece, to finde some opportunitie to murder us, bidding him to take us a sleepe, because he had seene what we could do waking. Now sirs (said he) I would rather a thousand times loose my life, then have my remembrance (while I lived) poysoned with such a mischiefe: and therefore if it were onely I, that knewe herein the Kings order, then should my disobedience be a warrant of your safetie. But to one more (said he) namely the Captaine of the shippe, Plexirtus hath opened so much touching the effect of murdering you, though I think, laying the cause rather upon old grudge, then his hope of Artaxia. And my selfe, (before the consideration of your excellencies had drawne love and pittie into minde) imparted it to such, as I thought fittest for such a mischiefe. Therefore, I wishe you to stand upon your garde, assuring you, that what I can doo for your safetie, you shall see (if it come to the pushe) by me perfourmed. We thanked him, as the matter indeed deserved, and from that time would no more disarme our selves, nor the one sleepe without his friendes eyes waked for him: so that it delaied the going forwarde of their bad enterprize, while they thought it rather chaunce, then providence, which made us so behave our selves.

But when we came within halfe a daies sayling of the shore, soone they saw it was speedily, or not at all to be done. Then (and I remember it was about the first watch in the night) came the Captaine and whispered the Counsellour in the eare: But he (as it should seem) disswading him from it, the Captaine (who had bene a pyrate from his youth, and often blouded in it) with a lowde voice sware, that if Plexirtus had him, he would not sticke to kill God him selfe. And there with cald his mates, and in the Kings name willed them to take us, alive or dead; encouraging the with the spoile of us, which he said, (& indeed was true) would yeeld many exceeding rich jewels. But the Counsellour (according to his promise)
commanded them they should not comit such a villany, protesting that he would stād betweene them and the Kings anger therein. Wherewith the Captaine enraged: Nay (said he) the we must begin with this traitor him selfe: and therewith gave him a sore blow upon the head, who honestly did the best he could to revenge himselfe.

But then we knew it time rather to encounter, then waite for mischiefe. And so against the Captaine we went, who straight was environned with most parte of the Souldiers and Mariners. And yet the truth is, there were some, whom either the authoritie of the councellour, doubt of the Kings minde, or liking of us, made draw their swords of our side: so that quickly it grew a most confused fight. For the narrownesse of the place, the darkenesse of the time, and the uncertainty in such a tumult how to know friēds from foes, made the rage of swordes rather guide, then be guided by their maisters. For my cousin and me, truly I thinke we never perfourmed lesse in any place, doing no other hurte, then the defence of our selves, and succouring them who came for it, drave us to: for not discerning perfectlie, who were for, or against us, we thought it lesse evill to spare a foe, then spoyle a friend. But from the hiest to the lowest parte of the shippe there was no place lefte, without cries of murdring, and murrded persons. The Captaine I hapt a while to fight withall, but was driven to parte with him, by hearing the crie of the Councellour, who received a mortall wounde, mistaken of one of his owne side. Some of the wiser would call to parley, & wish peace, but while the wordes of peace were in their mouthes, some of their auditours gave them death for their hire. So that no man almost could conceive hope of living, but being lefte alive: and therefore every one was willing to make him selfe roome, by dispatching almost any other: so that the great number in the ship was reduced to exceeding few, when of those few the most part weary of those troubles leapt into the boate, which was fast to the ship: but while they that were first, were cutting of the rope that tied it, others came leaping in, so disorderly, that they drowned both the boate, and themselves.

But while even in that little remnant (like the children of Cadmus) we continued still to slay one an other, a fire, which (whether by the desperate malice of some, or intention to
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

separate, or accidentally while all things were cast up and downe) it should seeme had taken a good while before, but never heeded of us, (who onely thought to preserve, or revenge) now violently burst out in many places, and began to maister the principall partes of the ship. Then necessitie made us see, that, a common enimy sets at one a civill warre: for that little all we were (as if we had bene waged by one man to quench a fire) streight went to resist that furious enimie by all art and labour: but it was too late, for already it did embrace and devour from the sterne, to the wast of the ship: so as labouring in vaine, we were driven to get up to the prowe of the ship, by the worke of nature seeking to preserve life, as long as we could: while truely it was a straunge and ougly sight, to see so huge a fire, as it quickly grew to be, in the Sea, and in the night, as if it had come to light us to death. And by and by it had burned off the maste, which all this while had proudly borne the sayle (the winde, as might seeme, delighted to carrie fire and bloud in his mouth) but now it fell over boord, and the fire growing neerer us, it was not onely terrible in respect of what we were to attend, but insupportable through the heat of it.

6 So that we were constrained to bide it no longer, but disarming and stripping our selves, and laying our selves upon such things, as we thought might help our swimming to the lande (too far for our owne strength to beare us) my cousin and I threw our selves into the Sea. But I had swomme a very little way, when I felt (by reason of a wound I had) that I should not be able to bide the travaile, and therefore seeing the maste (whose tackling had bene burnt of) flote cleare from the ship, I swamme unto it, and getting on it, I found mine owne sworde, which by chaunce, when I threw it away (caught by a peecce of canvas) had honge to the maste. I was glad, because I loved it well; but gladder, when I saw at the other end, the Captaine of the ship, and of all this mischiefe; who having a long pike, belike had borne him selfe up with that, till he had set him selfe upon the mast. But when I perceived him, Villaine (said I) doost thou thinke to overse to live so many honest men, whom thy falsehood hath brought to destruction? with that bestriding the mast, I gat by little and little towards him, after such a manner as boies are wont (if ever you saw that
sport) when they ride the wild mare. And he perceiving my
intention, like a fellow that had much more courage then
honestie, set him selfe to resist. But I had in short space
gotten within him, and (giving him a sound blowe) sent him to
feede fishes. But there my selfe remainde, untill by pyrates I
was taken up, and among them againe taken prisoner, and
brought into Laconia.

But what (said Philoclea) became of your cousin Musidorus? 7
Lost said Pyrocles. Ah my Pyrocles, said Philoclea, I am glad I
have takē you. I perceive you lovers do not alwaies say truely:
as though I know not your cousin Dorus, the sheepheard?
Life of my desires (saide Pyrocles) what is mine, even to my soule
is yours: but the secret of my friend is not mine. But if you
know so much, then I may truely say, he is lost, since he is no
more his owne. But I perceive, your noble sister & you are great
friends, and well doth it become you so to be. But go forward
dear Pyrocles, I log to heare out till your meeting me: for
there to me-warde is the best part of your storie. Ah sweet
Philoclea (said Pyrocles) do you thinke I can thinke so precious
leysure as this well spent in talking. Are your eyes a fit booke
(thinke you) to reade a tale upon? Is my love quiet enough to
be an historian? Deare Princesse, be gracious unto me. And
then he faine would have remembred to have forgot himselfe.
But she, with a sweetly disobeying grace, desired that her
desire (once for ever) might serve, that no spotte might disgrace
that love which shortly she hoped shold be to the world
warrantable. Faine he would not have heard, til she threatened
anger. And then the poore lover durst not, because he durst
not. Nay I pray thee, dear Pyrocles (said she) let me have my
story. Sweet Princesse (said he) give my thoughts a little
respite: and if it please you, since this time must so be spoiled,
yet it shall suffer the lesse harme, if you vouchsafe to bestow
your voice, and let me know, how the good Queene Erona was
betraied into such däger, and why Plangus sought me. For
in deede, I should pitie greatly any mischance fallen to that
Princesse. I will, said Philoclea smiling, so you give me your
worde, your handes shall be quiet auditours. They shal, said
he, because subject. Then began she to speake, but with so
prettie and delightfull a majestie, when she set her counten-
ounce to tell the matter, that Pyrocles could not chuse but
rebell so far, as to kisse her. She would have puld her head away, and speake, but while she spake he kist, and it seemed he fedde upon her wordes: but shee gate away. Howe will you have your discourse (said she) without you let my lips alone? He yeelded and tooke her hand. On this (said he) will I revenge my wrong: and so began to make much of that hand, when her tale, & his delight were interrupted by Miso: who taking her time, while Basilius backe was turned, came unto them: and told Philoclea, she deserved she knewe what, for leaving her mother, being evill at ease, to keepe companie with straungers. But Philoclea telling her, that she was there by her fathers commandemët, she went away muttering, that though her back, and her shoulders, and her necke were broken, yet as long as her tongue would wagge, it should do her errand to her mother.

CHAP. 25.

1 Gynecias divining dreame. 2 Her passionate jelousie in actions, speach, and song described. 3 Her troubling Philoclea and Zelmane. 4 The rebels troubling her. 5 Rebels resisted by Zelmane. 6 Zelmane assisted by Dorus. 7 Dorus and Zelmanes five memorable strokes.

1 So went up Miso to Gynecia, who was at that time miserably vexed with this manner of dreame. It seemed unto her to be in a place full of thornes, which so molested her, as she could neither abide standing still, nor treade safely going forward. In this case she thought Zelmane, being upon a faire hill, delightfull to the eye, and easie in apparence, called her thither: whither with much anguish being come, Zelmane was vanished, and she found nothing but a dead bodie like unto her husband, which seeming at the first with a strange smell to infect her, as she was redie likewise within a while to die, the dead bodie, she thought, tooke her in his armes, and said, Gynecia, leave all; for here is thy onely rest.

2 With that she awaked, crying very loud, Zelmane, Zelmane. But remembring her selfe, and seeing Basilius by, (her guiltie conscience more suspecting, then being suspected) she turned
her call, and called for Philoclea. Miso forthwith like a valiant shrew, (looking at Basilius, as though she would speake though she died for it) tolde Gynecia, that her daughter had bene a whole houre togethier in secrete talke with Zelmane: And (sayes she) for my part I could not be heard (your daughters are brought up in such awe) though I tolde her of your pleasure sufficiently. Gynecia, as if she had heard her last doome pronounced agaynst her, with a side-looke and chaunged countenance, O my Lorde (said she) what meane you to suffer these yong folkes together? Basilius (that aymed nothing at the marke of her suspition) smilingly tooke her in his armes, sweete wife (said he) I thanke you for your care of your child: but they must be youthes of other mettall, then Zelmane, that can endaunger her. O but; cryed Gynecia, and therewith she stayed: for then indeede she did suffer a right conflict, betwixt the force of love, and rage of jealousie. Manie times was she about to satisfie the spite of her minde, and tell Basilius, how she knewe Zelmane to be farre otherwise then the outwarde appearance. But those many times were all put backe, by the manifolde objections of her vehement love. Faine she would have barde her daughters happe, but loth she was to cut off her owne hope. But now, as if her life had bene set uppon a wager of quicke rysing, as weake as she was, she gat up; though Basilius, (with a kindnesse flowing onely from the fountaine of unkindnesse, being in deede desirous to winne his daughter as much time as might be) was loth to suffer it, swearing he sawe sickenesse in her face, and therefore was loath she should aduenture the ayre.

But the great and wretched Ladie Gynecia, possessed with 3 those devils of Love and Jealousie, did rid herselfe from her tedious husbande: and taking no body with her, going toward thee; O Jealousie (said she) the phrensie of wise folkes, the well-wishing spite, and unkinde carefullnesse, the selfe-punishment for others faults, and selfe-miserie in others happinesse, the cousin of envye, daughter of love, & mother of hate, how coudest thou so quietly get thee a seate in the unquiet hart of Gynecia, Gynecia (said she sighing) thought wise, and once vertuous? Alas it is thy breeders power which plantes thee there: it is the flaming agonie of affection, that works the chilling accesse of thy fever, in such sort, that nature gives place; the growing
of my daughter seemes the decay of my selfe; the blessings of
a mother turne to the curses of a competitor; and the faire face of
Philoclea, appeares more horrible in my sight, then the image
of death. Then remembred she this song, which she thought
tooke a right measure of her present mind.

With two strange fires of equall heate possesti,
The one of Love, the other Jealousie,
Both still do worke, in neither finde I rest:
For both, alas, their strengthes together tie:
The one aloft doth holde, the other hie.

Love wakes the jealous eye least thence it moves:
The jealous eye, the more it lookes, it loves.

These fires increase: in these I dayly burne:
They feede on me, and with my wings do fli:
My lovely joyes to dolefull ashes turne:
Their flames mount up, my powers prostrate lie:
They live in force, I quite consumed die.
One wonder yet farre passeth my conceate:
The fuell small: how be the fires so great?

But her unleasured thoughtes ran not over the ten first
wordes; but going with a pace, not so much too fast for her
bodie, as slowe for her minde, she found them together, who
after Misos departure, had left their tale, and determined what
to say to Basilius. But full abashed was poore Philoclea, (whose
conscience nowe began to knowe cause of blushing) for first
salutation, receyving an eye from her mother, full of the same
disdainefull scorne, which Pallas shewed to poore Arachne,
that durst contende with her for the prize of well weaving:
yet did the force of love so much rule her, that though for
Zelmanes sake she did detest her, yet for Zelmanes sake she used
no harder words to her, then to bid her go home, and
accompany her solitarie father.

Then began she to display to Zelmane the storehouse of her
deadly desires, when sodainly the confused rumor of a mutinous
multitude gave just occasion to Zelmane to breake of any such
conference, (for well she found, they were not friendly voices
they heard) and to retire with as much diligence as conveniently
they could, towards the lodge. Yet before they could winne
the lodge by twentie paces, they were overtaken by an unruly sort of clowes, and other rebels, which like a violent flood, were caried, they themselves knewe not whether. But assoone as they came within perfect discerning these Ladies, like enraged beastes, without respect of their estates, or pitie of their sexe, they began to runne against them, as right villaines, thinking abilitie to doo hurt, to be a great advancement: yet so many as they were, so many almost were their mindes, all knitte together onely in madnes. Some cried, Take; some, Kill; some, Save: but even they that cried save, ran for companie with them that meant to kill. Everie one commaunded, none obeyed, he only seemed chief Captain, that was most ragefull.

Zelmane (whose vertuous courage was ever awake) drew out 7 her sword, which upon those il-armed churls giving as many wounds as blowes, & as many deathes almost as wounds (lightning courage, and thundering smart upon them) kept them at a bay, while the two Ladies got theselves into the lodge: out of the which, Basilius (having put on an armour long untried) came to prove his authoritie among his subjects, or at lest, to adventure his life with his deare mistresse, to whö he brought a shield, while the Ladies tremblingly attended the issue of this dangerous adventure. But Zelmane made them perceive the ods betweene an Eagle and a Kight, with such a nimble stayednes, and such an assured nimblenes, that while one was running backe for feare, his fellow had her sword in his guts.

And by and by was both her harte and helpe well encreased 8 by the comming of Dorus, who having been making of hurdles for his masters sheepe, hearde the horrible cries of this madde multitude; and having streight represented before the eies of his carefull love, the perill wherein the soule of his soule might be, he went to Pamela's lodge, but found her in a cave hard by, with Mopsa and Dametas, who at that time would not have opened the entrie to his father. And therfore leaving them there (as in a place safe, both for being strong, and unknownen) he ranne as the noise guyded him. But when he saw his friend in such danger among them, anger and contempt (asking no counsell but of courage) made him roome among them, with no other weapon but his sheephooke, and with that overthrowing one of the villaines, took away a two-hand sword
from him, and withall, helpt him from ever being ashamed of losing it. Then lifting up his brave head, and flashing terror into their faces, he made armes & legs goe complaine to the earth, how evill their masters had kept them. Yet the multitude still growing, and the verie killing wearying them (fearing, lest in long fight they should be conquered with coquering) they drew back toward the lodge; but drew back in such sort, that still their terror went forwarde: like a valiant mastiffe, whom when his master pulls backe by the taile from the beare (with whom he hath alreadie interchanged a hatefull embracement) though his pace be backwarde, his gesture is forward, his teeth and eyes threatening more in the retiring, then they did in the advancing: so guided they themselves homeward, never stepping steppe backward, but that they proved themselves masters of the ground where they stept.

Yet among the rebels there was a dapper fellowe, a tayler by occupation, who fetching his courage onelie from their going back, began to bow his knees, & very fencer-like to draw neere to Zelmane. But as he came within her distace, turning his sword very nicely about his crown, Basilius, with a side blow, strake of his nose. He (being a suiter to a seimsters daughter, and therfore not a little grieved for such a disgrace) stouped downe, because he had hard, that if it were fresh put to, it would cleave on againe. But as his hand was on the grounde to bring his nose to his head, Zelmane with a blow, sent his head to his nose. That saw a butcher, a butcherlie chuffe indeed (who that day was sworn brother to him in a cup of wine) & lifted up a great leaver, calling Zelmane all the vile names of a butcherly eloquence. But she (letting slippe the blowe of the leaver) hitte him so surely on the side of his face, that she lefte nothing but the nether jawe, where the tongue still wagged, as willing to say more, if his masters remembrance had served. O (said a miller that was halfe dronke) see the lucke of a good fellow, and with that word, ran with a pitchforke at Dorus: but the nimblenes of the wine caried his head so fast, that it made it over-runne his feet, so that he fell withall, just betwene the legs of Dorus: who setting his foote on his neck (though he offered two milche kine, and foure fatte hogs for his life) thrust his sword quite through, from one eare to the other; which toke it very unkindlie, to feele such newes
before they heard of them, in stead of hearing, to be put to such feeling. But Dorus (leaving the miller to vomit his soul out in wine and bloud) with his two-hand sword strake of another quite by the waste, who the night before had dreamed he was grown a couple, and (interpreting it he should be married) had bragd of his dreame that morning among his neighbors. But that blow astonished quite a poore painter, who stood by with a pike in his handes. This painter was to counterfette the skirmishing betwene the Centaures and Lapithes, and had bene very desirous to see some notable wounds, to be able the more lively to expresse them; and this morning (being caried by the streame of this companie) the foolish fellow was even delighted to see the effect of blowes. But this last, (hapning neere him) so amazed him, that he stood still, while Dorus (with a turne of his sword) strake of both his hands. And so the painter returned, well skilled in wounds, but with never a hand to performe his skill.

CHAP. 26.

1 Zelmanes confident attempt to appease the mutinie. 2 A bone of division cast by her, 3 and caught by them. 4 Her pacificatorie oration. 5 The acceptation and issue of it.

In this manner they recovered the lodge, and gave the rebels a face of wood of the out-side. But they then (though no more furious, yet more courageous when they saw no resister) went about with pickaxe to the wall, and fire to the gate, to gette themselves entrance. Then did the two Ladies mixe feare with love, especially Philoclea, who ever caught hold of Zelmane, so (by the follie of love) hindering the help which she desired. But Zelmane seeing no way of defence, nor time to deliberate (the number of those villaines still encreasing, and their madnesse still encreasing with their number) thought it onely the meanes to goe beyond their expectation with an unused boldenesse, and with danger to avoide danger: and therfore opened againe the gate, and (Dorus and Basilius standing redie for her defence) she issued againe among them. The blowes she had dealt before (though all in generall were
hastie) made each of them in particular take breath, before they brought them sodainly over-neeere her, so that she had time to gette up to the judgement-seate of the Prince, which (according to the guise of that countrie) was before the gate. There she paused a while, making signe with her hand unto them, & withall, speaking aloud, that she had something to say unto them, that would please them. But she was answered a while with nothing but shouts and cries; and some beginning to throw stones at her, not daring to approach her. But at length, a young farmer (who might do most among the countrie sort, and was caught in a little affection towards Zelmane) hoping by this kindenesse to have some good of her, desired them, if they were honest men, to heare the woman speake. Fie fellowes, fie, (said he) what will all the maides in our towne say, if so many tall men shall be afraide to heare a faire wench? I sweare unto you by no little ones, I had rather give my teeme of oxen, then we should shewe our selves so uncivill wights. Besides, I tell you true, I have heard it of old men counted wisdome, to heare much, & say little. His sententious speech so prevailed, that the most parte began to listen. Then she, with such efficacie of gracefulnes, & such a quiet magnanimitie represented in her face in this uttermost perill, as the more the barbarous people looked, the more it fixed their looks upon her, in this sorte began unto them.

2. It is no small comfort unto me (said she) having to speake something unto you for your owne behoofs, to find that I have to deale with such a people, who shew indeed in theselves the right nature of valure, which as it leaves no violence unattempted, while the choller is nourished with resistance; so when the subject of their wrath, doth of it self unloked-for offer it self into their hands, it makes the at lest take a pause before they determine cruelty. Now then first (before I come to the principall matter) have I to say unto you; that your Prince Basilius himselfe in person is within this Lodge, & was one of the three, who a few of you went about to fight withall: (& this she said, not doubting but they knew it well inough; but because she would have them imagine, that the Prince might think that they did not know it) by him am I sent unto you, as fro a Prince to his well approoved subjects, nay as from a father to beloved children, to know what it is that hath bred
just quarrell among you, or who they be that have any way wrōged you? what it is with which you are displeased, or of which you are desirous? This he requires: and indeed (for he knowes your faithfulnes) he commaunds you presently to set downe, & to choose among your selves some one, who may relate your grieves or demaundes unto him.

This (being more then they hoped for from their Prince) asswaged well their furie, & many of them consented (especially the young farmer helping on, who meant to make one of the demaúds that he might have Zelmane for his wife) but when they began to talke of their grieves, never Bees made such a cofused hūming: the towne dwellers demanding putting downe of imposts: the country felowes laying out of cómons: some would have the Prince keepe his Court in one place, some in another. Al cried out to have new couículors: but when they should think of any new, they liked thē as well as any other, that they could remember, especially they would have the treasure so looked unto, as that he should never neede to take any more subsidies. At length they fel to direct contrarieties. For the Artisans, they would have corne & wine set at a lower price, and bound to be kept so stil: the plowmen, vine-laborers, & farmers would none of that. The coutrimen demaunded that every man might be free in the chief townes: that could not the Burgesses like of. The peasāts would have the Gentlemē destroyed, the Citizens (especially such as Cookes, Barbers, & those other that lived most on Gentlemen) would but have them refourmed. And of ech side were like divisions, one neighbourhoud beginning to find fault with another. But no confusion was greater then of particular mens likings and dislikings: one disparising such a one, whō another praised, & demanding such a one to be punished, whom the other would have exalted. No lesse ado was there about choosing him, who should be their spokes-man. The finer sort of Burgesses, as Marchants Prentises, & Clothworkers, because of their riches, disdaining the baser occupations, & they because of their number as much disdaining them: all they scorning the countrimens ignorancē, & the countrymeñ suspecting as much their cūning: So that Zelmane (finding that their united rage was now growne, not only to a dividig, but to a crossing one of another, & that the mislike growne among thēselves did
is embraced. For all what is done, he doth not only pardon you, but thanke you; judging the action by the minds, & not the minds by the actio. Your grievances, and desires, whatsoever, & whensoever you list, he will consider of, and to his consideration it is reason you should refer them. So then, to conclude; the uncertainty of his estate made you take armes; now you see him well, with the same love lay them downe. If now you end (as I know you will) he will make no other account of this matter, but as of a vehement, I must confess over-vehement affection: the only continuance might prove a wickednes. But it is not so, I see very well, you bega with zeale, & will end with reverence.

5 The action Zelmane used, being beautified by nature and apparelled with skill, her gestures byeng such, that as her wordes did paint out her minde, so they served as a shadow, to make the picture more lively and sensible, with the sweete cleernesse of her voice, rising & falling kindly as the nature of the worde, and efficacie of the matter required, altogether in such admirable person, whose incomparable valour they had well felte, whose beautie did pearce through the thicke dulnes of their senses, gave such a way unto her speach through the rugged wildernes of their imaginations, who (besides they were striken in admiration of her, as of more then a humane creature) were coold with taking breath, and had learned doubts out of leasure, that in stead of roaring cries, there was now heard nothing, but a confused muttring, whether her saying were to be followed, betwixt feare to pursue, & lothnesse to leave: most of them could have bene content, it had never bene begun, but how to end it (each afraid of his companion,) they knew not, finding it far easier to tie then to loose knots. But Zelmane thinking it no evil way in such mutinies, to give the mutinous some occasiō of such service, as they might thinke (in their own judgement) would countevalue their trespass, withal, to take the more assured possession of their mindes, which she feared might begin to waver, Loiall Arcadians (said she) now do I offer unto you the manifesting of your duties: all those that have taken armes for the Princes safetie, let the turne their backs to the gate, with their weapons bent against such as would hurt his sacred person. O weak trust of the many-headed multitude, whom inconstancie onely doth guide to well
doing: who can set confidence there, where company takes away shame, and ech may lay the fault of his fellow? So said a craftie felow among them, named Cliniias, to himselfe, when he saw the worde no sooner out of Zelmanes mouth, but that there were some shouts of joy, with, God save Basilius, and divers of them with much jollity growne to be his guard, that but litle before met to be his murderers.

CHAP. 27.

1 A verball craftie coward purtrayed in Cliniias. 2 His first raising, and with the first, relenting in this mutinie, punished by the farmer. 4 The uprore reenforced, &e weakned by themselves. 5 Cliniias-his Simon-like narration of this drüken rebellions original. 6 The kings order in it.

This Cliniias in his youth had bene a scholler so farre, as to 1 learne rather wordes then maners, and of words rather plentie then order; and oft had used to be an actor in Tragedies, where he had learned, besides a slidingnesse of language, acquaintance with many passions, and to frame his face to beare the figure of them: long used to the eyes and eares of men, and to reckon no fault, but shamefastnesse; in nature, a most notable Coward, and yet more strangely then rarely venturous in privie practises.

This fellowe was become of neere trust to Cecropia, 2 Amphialius-his mother, so that he was privy to al the mischeivous devises, wherewith she went about to ruine Basilius, and his children, for the advauncing of her sonne: and though his education had made him full of tongue, yet his love to be doing, taught him in any evill to be secret; and had by his mistresse bene used (ever since the strange retiring of Basilius) to whisper rumors into the peoples eares: and this time (finding great aptnes in the multitude) was one of the chiefe that set them in the uprore (though quite without the cosaent of Amphialus, who would not for all the Kingdoms of the world so have advetur the life of Philaclea.) But now perceiving the flood of their furie began to ebbe, he thought it policie to take
is embraced. For all what is done, he doth not only pardon you, but thanke you; judging the action by the minds, & not the minds by the action. Your grieues, and desires, whatsoever, & whencesoever you list, he wil consider of, and to his consideration it is reason you should refer them. So then, to conclude; the uncertainty of his estate made you take armes; now you see him well, with the same love lay them downe. If now you end (as I know you will) he will make no other account of this matter, but as of a vehement, I must cõesse over-vehement affections: the only continuance might prove a wickednes. But it is not so, I see very wel, you begã with zeale, & wil end with reverëce.

5 The action Zelmane used, being beautified by nature and apparelled with skill, her gestures beyng such, that as her wordes did paint out her minde, so they served as a shadow, to make the picture more lively and sensible, with the sweete cleerness of her voice, rising & falling kindly as the nature of the worde, and efficacie of the matter required, altogether in such admirable person, whose incomparable valour they had well felte, whose beautie did pearce through the thicke dulnes of their senses, gave such a way unto her speach through the rugged wildernes of their imaginations, who (besides they were striken in admiration of her, as of more then a humane creature) were coold with taking breath, and had learned doubts out of pleasure, that in steed of roaring cries, there was now heard nothing, but a cõfused muttring, whether her saying were to be followed, betwixt feare to pursue, & lothnesse to leave: most of them could have bene cõtent, it had never bene begun, but how to end it (each afraid of his companion,) they knew not, finding it far easier to tie then to loose knots. But Zelmane thinking it no evil way in such mutinies, to give the mutinous some occasiõ of such service, as they might think (in their own judgement) would countervaile their trespasse, withal, to take the more assured possession of their mindes, which she feared might begin to waver, Loiall Arcadians (said she) now do I offer unto you the manifesting of your duties: all those that have taken armes for the Princes safetie, let the turne their backs to the gate, with their weapons bent against such as would hurt his sacred person. O weak trust of the many-headed multitude, whom inconstancie onely doth guide to well
doing: who can set confidence there, where company takes away shame, and ech may lay the fault of his fellow? So said a craftie felow among them, named Clinias, to himselfe, when he saw the worde no sooner out of Zelmanes mouth, but that there were some shouts of joy, with, God save Basilius, and divers of them with much jollity growne to be his guard, that but litle before met to be his murderers.

CHAP. 27.

1 A verball craftie coward purrayed in Clinias. 2 His first raising, and with the first, relenting in this mutinie, 3 punished by the farmer. 4 The uprore reenforced, & weakened by themselves. 5 Clinias—his Sinon-like narration of this dråken rebellions original. 6 The kings order in it.

This Clinias in his youth had bene a scholler so farre, as to l

tearne rather wordes then maners, and of words rather plentie then order; and oft had used to be an actor in Tragedies, where he had learned, besides a slidingnesse of language, acquaintance with many passions, and to frame his face to beare the figure of them: long used to the eyes and eares of men, and to reckon no fault, but shamefastnesse; in nature, a most notable Coward, and yet more strangely then rarely venturous in privie practises.

This fellowe was become of neere trust to Cecropia, 2

Amphialus—his mother, so that he was privy to al the mischievous devises, wherewith she went about to ruine Basilius, and his children, for the advauncing of her sonne: and though his education had made him full of tongue, yet his love to be doing, taught him in any evill to be secret; and had by his mistresse bene used (ever since the strange returing of Basilius) to whisper rumors into the peoples eares: and this time (finding great aptnes in the multitude) was one of the chiefe that set them in the uprore (though quite without the cosent of Amphialus, who would not for all the Kingdoms of the world so have advetured the life of Philoclea.) But now perceiving the flood of their furie began to ebbe, he thought it policie to take
the first of the tide, so that no man cried lowder then he, upon Basilius. And som of the lustiest rebels not yet agreeing to the rest, he caused two or three of his mates that were at his commandement to lift him up, & then as if he had had a prologue to utter, he began with a nice gravitie to demand audience. But few attending what he said, with vehement gesture, as if he would teare the stars from the skies, he fell to crying out so lowde, that not onely Zelmane, but Basilius might heare him. O unhappie men, more madde then the Giants that would have plucked Jupiter out of heaven, how long shal this rage continue? why do you not all throw downe your weapons, and submit your selves to our good Prince, our good Basilius, the Pelops of wisdom, & Minos of all good governmet? when will you begin to beleve me, and other honest and faithfull subjects, that have done all we could to stop your furie?

3 The farmer that loved Zelmane could abide him no longer. For as at the first he was willing to speake of coditions, hoping to have gotten great soveraineties, & among the rest Zelmane: so now perceiving, that the people, once any thing downe the hill from their furie, would never stop till they came to the bottom of absolute yeeldig, and so that he should be nearer feares of punishment, then hopes of such advancement, he was one of them that stood most against the agreement: and to begin withall, disdaining this fellow should play the preacher, who had bin one of the chiefe make-bates, strake him a great wound upon the face with his sword. The cowardly wretch fell down, crying for succour, & (scrambling through the legs of them that were about him) gat to the throne, where Zelmane tooke him, and comforted him, bleeding for that was past, and quaking for feare of more.

4 But as soone as that blow was given (as if Eolus had broke open the doore to let all his winds out) no hand was idle, ech one killing him that was next, for feare he should do as much to him. For being divided in minds & not divided in compaines, they that would yeeld to Basilius were intermingled with the that would not yeeld. These men thinking their ruine stood upō it: those men to get favor of their Prince, converted their ungracous motion into their owne bowels, & by a true judgement grew their owne punishers. None was sooner killed the those that had bene leaders in the disobedience: who by being
so, had taught them, that they did leade disobedience to the same leaders. And many times it fell out that they killed them that were of their owne faction, anger whetting, and doubt hastening their fingers. But then came downe Zelmane; and Basilius with Dorus issued, and somtimes seeking to draw together those of their party, somtimes laying indifferently among them, made such havocke (amog the rest Zel-mane striking the farmer to the hart with her sworde, as before she had done with her eyes) that in a while all they of the contrary side were put to flight, and fled to certaine woods upon the frontiers; where feeding coldly, and drinking onely water, they were disciplined for their dronken riots; many of them being slaine in that chase, about a score onely escaping. But when these late rebels, nowe solliers, were returned from the chase, Basilius calling them togethers, partly for policy sake, but principally because Zelmane before had spoken it (which was to him more the a divine ordinance) he pronounced their generall pardon, willing them to returne to their houses, and therafter be more circiuspect in their proceedings: which they did most of them with share-marks of their folly. But imagining Clinias to be one of the chiefe that had bred this good alteration, he gave him particular thanks, and withall willed him to make him know, how this frenzie had entred into the people.

Clinias purposing indeede to tell him the trueth of al, saving what did touch himself, or Cecropia, first, dipping his hand in the blood of his woif, Now by this blood (said he) which is more deare to me, then al the rest that is in my body, since it is spent for your safety: this tōgue (perchance unfortunat, but never false) shall not now begin to lie unto my Prince, of me most beloved. Then stretching out his hand, and making vehement countenances the ushers to his speches, in such manner of tearms recounted this accident. Yesterday (said he) being your birth-day, in the goodly greene two mile hence before the city of Enispus, to do honour to the day, were a four or five thousand people (of all conditions, as I thinke) gathered together, spending al the day in dancings and other exercises: and when night came, under tents and bowes making great cheare, and meaning to observe a wassaling watch all that night for your sake. Bacchus (the learned say) was begot with thunder: I
think, that made him ever since so full of stur & debate. *Bacchus* indeed it was which so βεβαεδ the first τρυπετ to this rude αλαρυ. For that barbarous opinion being generally among them, to thinke with vice to do honor, & with ακτιβιτιε in beastlines to shew abundance of love, made most of the seeke to shew the depth of their αισχυλιο in the depth of their draught. But being once wel chafed with wine (having spent al the night, & some peece of the morning in such revelling) & imboldned by your absented maner of living, there was no matter their eares had ever heard of that grew not to be a subject of their winie conference. I speake it by profe: for I take witnes of the gods (who never leave perjuries unpunished) that I oftε cried out against their impudency, & (whε that would not serve) stopt mine eares, because I wold not be partaker of their blasphemies, till with buffs they forced me to have mine eares είε deified. Publike affairs were mingled with private grudges, neither was any man thought of wit, that did not pretende some cause of mislike. Rayling was counted the fruite of freedome, and saying nothing had his uttermeste prayse in ignoraunce. At the length, your sacred person ( alas why did I live to heare it? alas how do I breath to utter it? But your κομανδενμμ doth not onely enjoine obedience, but give me force: your sacred person (I say) fell to be their ταβλεταλκε: a proud word swelling in their stomacks, & disdainfull reproches against so great a greatnes, having put on the shew of greatnes in their little mindes: till at length the very un-brideled use of words having increased fire in their mindes (which God knowes thought their knowledge notable, because they had at all no knowledge to κοδεμνε their own want of knowledge) they descended (Ο never to be forgotten presump-tion) to a direct mislike of your living from among them. Whereupon it were tedious to remember their far-fetched construictions. But the summe was, you disdained them: and what were the pompes of your estate, if their armes mainteyned you not? Who woulde call you a Prince, if you had not a people? When certaine of them of wretched estates, and worse mindes (whose fortunes, change could not impaire) began to say, that your government was to be looked into; how the great treasures (you had levied amογ θε) had bene spent; why none but great men & gentlemen could be admitted into
counsel, that the cōmons (forsooth) were to plain headed to say their opiniōs: but yet their blood & sweat must maintain all. Who could tell whether you were not betraied in this place, where you lived? nay whether you did live or no? Therefore that it was time to come & see; and if you were here, to know (if Arcadia were growne lothsome in your sight) why you did not ridde your selfe of the trouble? There would not want those that would take so faire a cumber in good part. Since the Countrie was theirs, and the gouvernement an adherent to the countrie, why should they not consider of the one, as well as inhabite the other? Nay rather (said they) let us beginne that, which all Arcadia will followe. Let us deliver our Prince from daunger of practises, and our selves from want of a Prince. Let us doo that, which all the rest thinke. Let it be said, that we onely are not astonished with vaine titles, which have their force but in our force. Lastly, to have saide & heard so much, was as dāgerous, as to have attepted: & to attept they had the name of glorious liberty with them. These words being spokē (like a furious storme) presently caried away their wel inclined braines. What I, and some other of the honester sort could do, was no more, then if with a pufe of breath, one should goe about to make a saile goe against a mightie winde: or, with one hand, stay the ruine of a mightie wall. So generall grewe this madnes among them, there needed no drumme, where each man cried, each spake to other that spake as fast to him, and the disagreeing sounde of so many voices, was the chiefe token of their unmeete agreement. Thus was their banquette turned to a battaile, their winie mirthes to bloudie rages, and the happie prayers for your life, to monstrous threatning of your estate; the solemnizing your birth-day, tended to have been the cause of your funerals. But as a dronken rage hath (besides his wickednes) that follie, that the more it seekes to hurt, the lesse it considers how to be able to hurt: they never weyed how to arme thēselves, but tooke up every thing for a weapon, that furie offered to their handes. Many swordes, pikes, and billes there were: others tooke pitchforkes and rakes, converting husbandrie to souldierie: some caught hold of spittes (things serviceable for life) to be the instruments of death. And there was some such one, who held the same pot wherein he drank to your health, to use it (as he could) to your mischiefe. Thus

x 2

323
armed, thus governed, forcing the unwilling, and hardening the
willing, adding furie to furie, and encreasing rage with running,
they came headlong toward this lodge: no man (I dare say)
resolved in his own hart, what was the uttermost he would doo
when he came hether. But as mischief is of such nature,
that it cannot stand but with strengthening one evill by an
other, and so multiplie in it sylfe, till it come to the highest,
and then fall with his owne weight: so to their mindes (once
passed the bounds of obedience) more and more wickednes
opened it selfe, so that they who first pretended to preserve
you, then to reforme you, (I speak it in my conscience, and
with a bleeding hart) now thought no safetie for them, without
murdering you. So as if the Gods (who preserve you for the
preservation of Arcadia) had not shewed their miraculous
power, and that they had not used for instruments, both your
owne valour (not fit to be spoken of by so meane a mouth as
mine) and some (I must confesse) honest minds, (whò alas why
should I mention, since what we did, reached not the hundred
part of our duetie?) our hands (I tremble to think of it) had
destroyed all that, for which we have cause to rejoyce that we
are Arcadians.

With that the fellow did wring his hands, & wrang out
teares: so as Basilius, that was not the sharpest pearcer into
masked minds, toke a good liking to him; & so much the
more as he had tickled him with praise in the hearing of his
mistres. And therfore pitying his wouï, willed him to get him
home, and looke well unto it, & make the best search he could,
to know if there were any further depth in this matter, for
which he should be well rewarded. But before he went away,
certain of the shepheards being come (for that day was ap-
pointed for their pastorals) he sent one of them to Philanax,
and an other to other principal noble-men, and cities there
abouts, to make through-inquirie of this uprōre, and withall, to
place such garrisons in all the townes & villages neere unto
him, that he might thereafter keep his solitary lodge in more
security, upō the making of a fire, or ringing of a bell, having
them in a redines for him.
The praises of Zelmanes and Dametas his caroll for saving himself, and his charge. Basilius his conference with Philanax of the Oracle (the ground of all this storie.) His wrong-construction of it. His hymne to Apollo. His courting turned over to tale-telling.

This, Clinias (having his eare one way when his eye was an other) had perceived; & therefore hasted away, with mind to tell Cecropia that she was to take some speedie resolution, or els it were daunger those examinations would both discover, & ruine her: and so went his way, leaving that little companie with embracements, and praising of Zelmanes excellent proceeding, to shew, that no decking sets forth any thing so much, as affection. For as, while she stoode at the discretion of those indiscreete rebelles, everie angrie countenance any of them made, seemed a knife layde upon their owne throates; so unspeakable was now their joy, that they saw (besides her safetie & their owne) the same wrought, and safely wrought by her meanes, in whom they had placed all their delights. What examples Greece could ever alledge of witte and fortitude, were set in the ranke of trifles, being compared to this action.

But as they were in the midst of those unfained ceremonies, a Gitterne, ill-played on, accompanied with a hoarse voice (who seemed to sing maugre the Muses, and to be merie in spite of Fortune) made them looke the way of the ill-noysed song. The song was this.

A hatefull cure with hate to heale:  
A bloody helpe with blood to save:
A foolish thing with fooles to deale:
Let him be bold that bobs will have.

But who by meanes of wisdome hie
Hath sav’d his charge? it is even I.

Let other deck their pride with skarres,
And of their wounds make brave lame showes:
First let them die, then passe the starres,
When rotten Fame will tell their blowes.

But eye from blade, and eare from crie:
Who hath sav’d all? it is even I.
They had soone found it was Dametas, who came with no lesse lifted up countenance, then if he had passed over the bellies of all his enemies: so wise a point he thought he had perfourmed, in using the naturall strength of a cave. But never was it his dooing to come so soone thence, till the coast were more assuredly cleare: for it was a rule with him, that after a great storme there ever fell a fewe droppes before it be "fully finished. But Pamela (who had now experienced how much care doth sollicite a Lovers hart) used this occasion of going to her parents and sister, indeed aswel for that cause, as being unquiet, till her eye might be assured, how her shepheard had gone through the daunger. But Basilius with the sight of Pamela (of whom almost his head otherwise occupied, had left the wonted remembrance) was sodainly striken into a devout kind of admiration, remembring the oracle, which (according to the fauning humour of false hope) he interpreted now his owne to his owne best, and with the willing blindnesse of affection (because his minde ran wholly upon Zelmane) he thought the Gods in their oracles did principally minde her.

But as he was deeply thinking of the matter, one of the shepheards tolde him, that Philanax was already come with a hundred horse in his company. For having by chaunce rid not farre of the little desert, he had heard of this uprore, and so was come upon the spurre (gathering a company of Gentlemen as fast as he could) to the succour of his Master. Basilius was glad of it; but (not willing to have him, nor any other of the Noble men, see his Mistresse) he himselfe went out of the Lodge, and so giving order unto him of placing garrisons, and examining these matters; and Philanax with humble earnestnesse beginning to entreate him to leave of his solitarie course (which already had bene so daungerous unto him) Well (said Basilius) it may be ere long I wil co'discend unto your desire. In the meane time, take you the best order you can to keepe me safe in my solitarinesse. But, (said he) doo you remember, how earnestly you wrote unto me, that I should not be moved by that Oracles authoritie, which brought me to this resolution? Full well Sir (answered Philanax) for though it pleased you not as then to let me knowe, what the Oracles words were, yet all Oracles holding (in my conceipt) one degree of reputatiō, it suffised me to know, it was but an Oracle, which led you frō

326
your owne course. Well (said Basilius) I will now tell you the wordes; which before I thought not good to doo; because when al the events fall out (as some already have done) I may charge you with your incredulitie. So he repeated them in this sorte.

 Thy elder care shall from thy carefull face
 By princely meane be stolne, and yet not lost.
 Thy yonger shall with Natures blisse embrace
 An uncouth love, which Nature hateth most.
 Both they themselves unto such two shall wed,
 Who at thy beer, as at a barre, shall plead;
 Why thee (a living man) they had made dead.
 In thy owne seate a forraine state shall sit.
 And ere that all these blowes thy head doo hit,
 Thou, with thy wife, adultry shall commit.

For you forsoth (said he) when I told you, that some supernaturall cause sent me strange visiös, which being confirmed with presagious chaunces, I had gone to Delphos, & there received this answere: you replied to me, that the onely supernaturall causes were the humors of my body, which bred such melancholy dreames; and that both they framed a mind full of conceipts, apt to make presages of things, which in themselves were meerly changeable: & with all as I say, you remëber what you wroë unto me, touching authoritie of the Oracle: but now I have some notable triall of the truth therof, which herafter I wil more largly cömunicate unto you. Only now, know that the thing I most feared is alredy performed; I mean that a forraine state should possesse my throne. For that hath ben done by Zelmane, but not as I feared, to my ruine, but to my preservatiö. But whë he had once named Zelmane, that name was as good as a pully, to make the clocke of his praises run on in such sort, that (Philanax found) was more exquisite then the only admiration of vertue breedeth: which his faithful hart inwardly repining at, made him shrinke away as soone as he could, to go about the other matters of importance, which Basilius had enjoyned unto him.

Basilius returned into the Lodge, thus by him selfe con- struing the oracle, that in that he said, his elder care should by Princely meane be stolne away from him, and yet not lost, it
was now perfected, since Zelmane had as it were robd from him the care of his first begotten childe, yet was it not lost, since in his harte the ground of it remained. That his younger should with Natures blisse embrace the love of Zelmane, because he had so commanded her for his sake to doo; yet shoulde it be with as much hate of Nature, for being so hatefull an opposite to the jealousie hee thought her mother had of him. The sitting in his seate he deemed by her already performed: but that which most comforted him, was his interpretation of the adulterie, which he thought he should commit with Zelmane, whom afterwards he should have to his wife. The point of his daughters marriage, because it threatned his death withall, he determined to prevent, with keeping them unmaried while he lived. But having as he thought, gotten thus much understanding of the Oracle, he determined for three daies after to perfecte certaine rites to Apollo: and even then began with his wife and daughters to singe this Hymne, by them yearely used.

5 A Pollo great, whose beames the greater world do light,
And in our little world do cleare our inward sight,
Which ever shine, though hid from earth by earthly shade,
Whose lights do ever live, but in our darkenesse fade;
Thou God, whose youth was deckt with spoiles of Pythos skin:
"(So humble knowledge can throw downe the snakish kinne)
Latonas sonne, whose birth in paine and travaile long
Doth teach, to learne the good what travailes do belong:
"In travaile of our life (a short but tedious space)
While brickie houreglas runnes, guide thou our panting pace:
Give us foresightfull mindes: give us minds to obaye
What foresight tels; our thoughts upon thy knowledge staye.
Let so our fruities grow up, that nature be maintainde:
But so our barters kepe downe, with vice they be not stainde.
Let this assured holde our judgements overtake,
"That nothing winnes the heaven, but what doth earth forsake.

6 Assone as he had ended his devotion (all the priviledged shepheards being now come) knowing well inough he might lay all his care upon Philanax, he was willing to sweeten the tast of this passed tumult, with some rurall pastimes. For which while the shepheards prepared themselves in their best
māner, Basilius take his daughter Philoclea aside, and with such hast, as if his eares hunted for wordes, desired to know how she had found Zelmane. She humbly answered him, according to the agreement betwixt them, that thus much for her sake Zelmane was content to descend from her former resolutiō, as to heare him, whesoever he would speake; & further then that (she said) as Zelmane had not graunted, so she nether did, nor ever would desire. Basilius kist her with more then fatherly thanks, and straight (like a hard-kept warde new come to his lands) would faine have used the benefite of that graunt, in laying his sicknes before his onely physition. But Zelmane (that had not yet fully determined with her selfe, how to beare her selfe toward him) made him in a few words understand, that the time in respect of the cōpanie was unfit for such a parley, & therfore to keep his braines the busier, letting him understand what she had learned of his daughters, touching Eronas distresse (whom in her travaile she had knowne, and bene greatly beholding to) she desired him to finish the rest, for so far as Plāgus had told him; Because she said (& she said truly) she was full of care for that Ladie, whose desart (only except an over-base choise) was nothing agreeable to misfortune. Basilius glad that she would command him any thing, but more glad, that in excusing the unfitnesse of that time, she argued an intention to graunt a fitter, obeyed her in this manner.

CHAP. 29.

1 Antiphilus his base-borne pride borne high by flatterie. 2 His unkinde hating the loving Erona, and fond loving of hating Artaxia. 3 Artaxias trap to take them both. 4 The mans weakenesse, and the womans strength in bearing captivitie. 5 Plangus love to her, employed by her to save Antiphilus, 6 who againe betraies himselfe and them. 7 His execution by women. 8 Plangus hardy attempts to save Erona. 9 The conditions of her death. 10 Her sorrow for Antiphilus, 11 and Plangus travaile for her: with his crosses, and course therein.

M Adame (said he) it is very true, that since yeares enhabled me to judge what is, or is not to be pitied, I never saw anything that more moved me to justifie a vehemēt com-

329
passion in my self, then the estate of that Prince, whom strong against al his owne afflictions (which yet were great, as I perceave you have heard) yet true and noble love had so pulled downe, as to lie under sorrow for another. In so much as I could not temper my long idle pen in that subject, which I perceive you have seene. But then to leave that unrepeated, which I finde my daughters have told you, It may please you to understand, since it pleaseth you to demand, that Antiphilus being crowned, & so left by the famous Princes Musidorus & Pyrocles (led thece by the challenge of Anaxius, who is now in these provinces of Greece, making a dishonorable enquirie after that excellent prince Pyrocles alreadie perished) Antiphilus (I say) being crowned, and delivered from the presence of those two, whose vertues (while they were present, good schoolmasters) suppressed his vanities, he had not strethgh of mind enough in him to make long delay, of discovering what maner of man he was. But streight like one caried up to so hie a place, that he looseth the discerning of the ground over which he is; so was his mind lifted so far beyd the levell of his owne discourse, that remembering only that himselfe was in the high seate of a King, he could not perceive that he was a king of reasonable creatures, who would quickly scorne follies, and repine at injuries. But imagining no so true propertie of sovereigntie, as to do what he listed, and to list whatsoever pleased his fansie, he quickly made his kingdome a Teniscourt, where his subjects should be the balles; not in truth cruelly, but licenciously abusing them, presuming so far upon himselfe, that what he did was liked of every bodie: nay, that his disgraces were favours, and all because he was a King. For in Nature not able to conceyve the bonds of great matters (suddenly borne into an unknowne Ocean of absolute power) he was swayed withall (he knewe not howe) as everie winde of passions puffed him. Whereo nothing helped him better, then that poysous sugar of flatterie: which some used, out of the innate basesnesse of their hart, straight like dogges fawning upon the greatest; others secretely hating him, and disdayning his great rising so suddenly, so undeservedly (finding his humour) bent their exalting him only to his overthrow; like the bird that caries the shell-fish high, to breake him the easier with his fall. But his minde (being an apt matter to receive what forme their
amplifying speeches woulde lay upon it) daunced so prettie a musicke to their false measure, that he thought himselfe the wysest, the woorthyest, and best beloved, that ever gave honour to a royall tytle. And being but obscurely borne, he had found out unblushing pedegrees, that made him not only of the blood royall, but true heyre, unjustly dispossed by Eronas auncestours. And like the foolish birde, that when it so hides the heade that it sees not it selfe, thinkes no bodie else sees it: so did he imagine, that no bodie knew his basenesse, while he himselfe turned his eyes from it.

Then vainenesse (a meager friend to gratefulnesse) brought him so to despise Erona, as of whom he had received no benefit, that within halfe a yeeres mariage he began to pretend barrennesse: and making first an unlawfull law of having mo wives then one, he still keeping Erona, under-häd, by message sought Artaxia, who no lesse hating him, then loving (as unluckie a choise) the naughtie King Plexirtus, yet to bring to passe what he purposed, was content to train him into false hopes, till alreadie his imagination had crowned him King of Armenia, & had made that, but the foundation of more, and more monachies; as if fortune had only gottê eies to cherish him. In which time a great assembly of most part of al the Princes of Asia being to do honour to the never sufficiently praised Pyrocles & Musidorus, he would be one not to acknowledge his obligation (which was as great as any of the others,) but looking to have bene yong master among those great estates, as he was amög his abusing underlings. But so many valorous Princes, in-deed farre neerer to disdaine him then otherwise, he was quickly (as standing upon no true ground, inwardly) out of countenance with himselfe, till his seldom-cöfortlesse flatterers (perswading him, it was envie & feare of his expected greatnes) made him hast away frö that company, & without further delay appointed the meeting with Artaxia; so incredibly blinded with the over-bright shining of his royalty, that he could thinke such a Queene could be content to be joined-patent with an other to have such an husband. Poore Erona to all this obeied, either vehemëcy of affection making her stoop to so overbase a servitude, or astonished with an unlooked-for fortune, dull to any behoofeful resolutiö, or (as many times it falles out even in great harts when they can accuse none but theëselves) desperatly
For so went she on in that way of her love, that (poore Lady) to be beyond all other examples of ill-set affection, she was brought to write to Artaxia, that she was content, for the publike good, to be a second wife, and yeeld the first place to her: nay to extoll him, and even woo Artaxia for him.

But Artaxia (mortally hating them both for her brothers sake) was content to hide her hate, til she had time to shewe it: and pretending that all her grudge was against the two paragons of vertue, Musidorus & Pyrocles, even met them halfe way in excusing her brothers murder, as not being principall actors; and of the other-side, driven to what they did by the ever-pardonable necessitie: and so well handled the matter, as, though she promised nothing, yet Antiphilus promised himselfe all that she woulde have him thinke. And so a solemnne enterview was appointed. But (as the Poets say) Hymen had not there his saffron-coloured cote. For Artaxia laying men secretly (and easily they might be secret, since Antiphilus thought she overran him in love) when he came even readie to embrace her, shewing rather a countenaunce of accepting then offering, they came forth, and (having much advantage both in number, valure, and fore-preparation) put all his companie to the sword; but such as could flie away. As for Antiphilus she caused him and Erona both to be put in irons, hasting backe toward her brothers tombe, upo which she ment to sacrifice them; making the love of her brother stand betwene her and all other motions of grace, from which by nature she was alienated.

But great diversitie in them two quickly discovered it selfe for the bearing of that affliction. For Antiphilus that had no greatness but outwarde, that taken away, was readie to fall faster then calamitie could thrust him; with fruitlesse begging (where reason might well assure him his death was resolved) and weake bemoning his fortune, to give his enemies a most pleasing musique, with manie promises, and protestations, to as little purpose, as from a little minde. But Erona sadde indeede, yet like one rather used, then new fallen to sadnesse (as who had the joyes of her hart alreadie broken) seemed rather to welcome then to shunne that ende of miserie, speaking little, but what she spake was for Antiphilus, remembrring his guiltles-
nesse, being at that time prisoner to Tiridates, when the valiant princes slue him: to the disgrace of men, shewing that there are women more wise to judge what is to be expected, and more constant to beare it when it is happened.

But her witte endeared by her youth, her affliction by her 5 birth, and her sadnesse by her beautie, made this noble prince Plangus, who (never almost from his cousin Artaxia) was nowe present at Eronaes taking, to perceyve the shape of lovelinesse more perfectly in wo, then in joyfulnesse (as in a picture which receives greater life by the darkenesse of shadowes, then by more glittering colours) and seeing to like; and liking to love; and loving straight to feele the most incident effects of love, to serve and preserve. So borne by the hastie tide of short lesure, he did hastily deliver together his affection, and affectionate care. But she (as if he had spoken of a small matter, when he mentioned her life, to which she had not leisure to attend) desired him if he loved her, to shew it, in finding some way to save Antiphilus. For her, she found the world but a wearisom stage unto her, where she played a part against her will: and therefore besought him, not to cast his love in so unfruitfull a place, as could not love it selfe: but for a testimonie of constancie, and a sutablenes to his word, to do so much comfort to her minde, as that for her sake Antiphilus were saved. He tolde me how much he argued against her tendering him, who had so ungratefully betraied her, and foolishly cast away himselfe. But perceiving she did not only bend her very goodwits to speake for him against her-selfe, but when such a cause could be allied to no reaso, yet love would needs make it-self a cause, & barre her rather fro hearing, then yeeld that she should yeeld to such arguments: he likewise in whō the power of Love (as they say of spirits) was subject to the love in her, with griefe consented, & (though backwardly) was diligent to labor the help of Antiphilus: a man whom he not onely hated, as a traitour to Erona, but envied as a possessor of Erona. Yet Love sware, his hart, in spite of his hart, should make him become a servant to his rivall. And so did he, seeking all the meanes of perswading Artaxia, which the authority of so neere, and so vertuous a kinsma would give unto him. But she to whom the eloquence of hatred had given revenge the face of delight, rejected all such motions;
but rather the more closely imprisoning them in her chiefe citie, where she kept them with intention at the birth-day of Tiridates (which was very nere) to execute Antiphilus, & at the day of his death (which was about halfe a yeere after) to use the same rigor towar[ds] Erona. Plangus much grieved (because much loving) attempted the humors of the Lycians, to see, whether they would come in with forces to succor their Princesse. But there the next inheritor to the crowne (with the true play that is used in the game of kingdōs) had no sooner his mistres in captivity, but he had usurped her place, & making her odious to her people, because of the unfit elecțiō she had made, had so left no hope there: but which is worse, had sent to Artaxia, perswading the justicing her, because that unjustice might give his title the name of justice. Wätting that way, Plangus practised with some deere friends of his, to save Antiphilus out of prison, whose day because it was much neerer then Eronae, & that he wel found, she had twisted her life upō the same threed with his, he determined first to get him out of prison: & to that end having prepared al matters as wel as in such case he could, where Artaxia had set many of Tiridates old servants to have well-marking eyes, he cōferred with Antiphilus, as (by the au∂horitie he had) he found meanes to do; & agreed with him of the time and manner, how he should by the death of some of his jaylors escape.

6 But all being well ordered, and Plangus willinglie putting himselfe into the greatest danger, Antiphilus (who, like a bladder, sweld redie to breake, while it was full of the winde of prosperitie, that being out, was so abjected, as apt to be trode on by every bodie) when it came to the point, that with some hazard, he might be in apparrant likelihoode to avoide the uttermost harm, his harte fainted, and (weake foolē, neither hoping, nor fearing as he should) gat a conceite, that with bewraying his practise, he might obtaine pardon: and therefore, even a little before Plangus should have come unto him, opened the whole practise to him that had the charge, with unpittyed teares idly protesting, he had rather die by Artaxias commaundement, then against her will escape: yet begging life upon any the hardest, and wretchedest conditions that she woulde lay upon him. His keeper provided accordingly, so that when Plangus came, he was like, himself to have bene
entrappd: but that finding (with a luckie in-sight) that it was discovered, he retired; and (calling his friendes about him) stood upon his guard, as he had good cause. For, Artaxia (accounting him most ungrateful considering that her brother and she, had not onely preserved him against the malice of his father, but ever used him much liker his birth, then his fortune) sent forces to apprehend him. But he among the martiall men had gotten so great love, that he could not onely keepe himself from the malice, but worke in their mindes a compassion of Eronas adversitie.

But for the succour of Antiphilus he could gette no bodie to joyne with him, the contempt of him having not bene able to qualifie the hatred; so that Artaxia might easilie upon him perfourme her will; which was (at humble suite of all the women of that citie) to deliver him to their censure, who mortally hating him for having made a lawe of Polygamie, after many tortures, forste him to throwe himselfe from a high Pyramis, which was built over Tiridates tombe, and so to end his fallse-harted life, which had planted no strong thought in him, but that he could be unkinde.

But Plangus well perceiving that Artaxia staied onely for the appointed day, that the faire Eronas bodie, (consumed to ashes) should make a notorious testimonie, how deeply her brothers death was engraven in her brest, he assembled good numbers of friendes, whõ his vertue (though a stranger) had tied unto him, by force to give her libertie. Contrariwise, Artaxia, to whom Anger gave more courage then her sexe did feare, used her regall authoritie (the most she could) to suppresse that sedition, and have her will: which (she thought) is the most princely thing that may be. But Plangus, who indeede (as all men witnes) is one of the best captains (both for policie and valour) that are trained in the schoole of Mars, in a conflict overthrew Artaxias power, though of far greater number: and there toke prisoner a base sonne of her brothers, whom she deerly affected, & then sent her word that he should run the same race of fortune (whatsoever it was) that Erona did: & happy was that threatning for her; for els Artaxia had hastened the day of her death, in respecte of those tumults.

But now (some principal noble-mẽ of that countrie interposing themselves) it was agreed, that all persons els fullie
pardon'd, and all prisoners (except Erona) delivered, she should be put into the hands of a principal nobleman, who had a castle of great strength, upon oath, that if by the day two years from Tiridates death, Pyrocles and Musidorus did not in person combat, & overcome two knights, who she appointed to maintain her quarrell against Erona and them, of having by treason destroyed her brother, that the Erona should be that same day burned to ashes: but if they came, and had the victorie, she should be delivered; but upon no occasion, neither freed, nor executed, till that day. And hereto of both sides, all toke solemne oath, and so the peace was concluded; they of Plangus partie forcing him to agree, though he himselfe the sooner condiscended, knowing the courtesie of those two excellent Princes, not to refuse so noble a quarrell, and their power such, as two more (like the other two) were not able to resist. But Artaxia was more, and upon better ground, pleased with this action; for she had even newly received newes from Plexirtus, that upon the sea he had caused them both to perish, and therefore she held her selfe sure of the match.

10 But poore Plangus knew not so much, and therefore seeing his partie (as most times it fallas out in like case) hungry of conditions of peace, accepted them; & then obtained leave of the Lord, that indifferently kept her, to visite Erona, whom he founde full of desperate sorowe, not suffering, neither his unwoorthinesse, nor his wronges, nor his death (which is the naturall conclusion of all worldly acts) either to cover with forgetfulnes, or diminish with consideration, the affection she had borne him: but even glorying in affliction, and shunning all comforte, she seemed to have no delight, but in making her selfe the picture of miserie. So that when Plangus came to her, she fell in deadlie traunces, as if in him she had seen the death of Antiphilus, because he had not succoured him: and yet (her vertue striving) she did at one time acknowledge her selfe bound, and professe her selfe injured; in steeed of allowing the conclusion they had made, or writing to the Princes (as he wisht her to doo) craving nothing but some speedie death to followe, her (in spite of just hate) beloved Antiphilus.

11 So that Plangus having nothing but a ravisht kisse from her hande at their parting, went away towarde Greece, whereward he understoode the Princes were embarked. But by the
way it was his fortune to interrupt letters, written by Artaxia to Plexirtus: wherein she signified her accepting him to her husband, whom she had ever favoured, so much the rather, as he had performed the conditions of her marriage, in bringing to their deserved end, her greatest enemies: withall, thanking the sea, in such tearmes, as he might well perceive, it was by some treason wrought in Plexirtus shippe. Whereupon (to make more diligent search) he tooke shippe himselfe, and came into Laconia, enquiring, and by his enquirie finding, that such a shippe was indeede with fight, and fire, perished, none (almost) escaping. But for Pyrocles and Musidorus, it was assuredly determined that they were cast away: for the name of such Princes (especially in Greece) would quickly els have bene a large witnesse to the contrarie. Full of griefe with that, for the losse of such, who left the world poor of perfection: but more sorie for Eronas sake, who now by them could not be relieved. A new advertisement from Armenia overtooke him, which multiplied the force of his anguish. It was a message from the Nobleman who had Erona in ward, giving him to understand, that since his departure, Artaxia (using the benefite of time) had besieged him in his castell, demaunding present delivery of her, whom yet for his faith given, he would not, before the day appointed, if possibly he could resist, which he foresaw, log he should not do for want of victual, which he had not so wisely provided, because he trusted upon the generall oth taken for two yeares space: & therefor willed him to make hast to his succour, & come with no small forces; for all they that were of his side in Armenia, were consumed, & Artaxia had encreased her might by mariage of Plexirtus, who now crowned King there, stickt not to glory in the murder of Pyrocles and Musidorus, as having just cause thereto, in respect of the deaths of his sister Andromana, her sonne his nephew, and his own daughter Zelmane, all whose losse he unjustly charged them withal, & now openly stickt not to confess, what a revenge his wit had brought forth. Plangus much astonished herewith, bethought himselfe what to doo. For to returne to Armenia was vaine, since his friends there were utterly overthrowne. Thè thought he of going to his father; but he had already (even since the death of his stepmother, & brother) attempted the recovering his favour, &
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

all in vaine. For they, that had before joined with Andromana to do him the wrong, thought now no life for the if he returned, & therfore kept him stil (with new forged suspicions) odious to his father. So that Plangus reserving that for a worke of longer time, then the saving of Erona could beare, determined to go to the mighty and good King Euarchus: who lately having (to his eternall fame) fully, not onely conquered his enimies, but established good government in their countries, he hoped he might have present succour of him, both for the justnes of the cause, & revenge of his childrens death, by so hainous a treason murthered. Therefore with diligence he went to him; & by the way (passing through my country) it was my hap to find him, the most overthrowne mà with griefe, that ever I hope to see againe. For stil it seemed he had Erona at a stake before his eies; such an apprehension he had taken of her daunger; which in despite of all the comfort I could give him, he poured out in such lamentations, that I was moved not to let him passe, till he had made full declaration, which by peeces my daughters & I have delivered unto you. Fayne he would have had succour of my selfe, but the course of my life being otherwise bent, I onely accompanied him with some that might safely guide him to the great Euarchus: for my parte having had some of his speeches so feelingly in my memory, that at an idle time (as I tolde you) I set them downe Dialogue-wise, in such manner as you have seen. And thus, excellent Ladie, I have obeyed you in this storie; wherein if it well please you to consider, what is the straunge power of Love, and what is due to his authoritie, you shall exercise therein the true noblenesse of your judgement, and doo the more right to the unfortunate Historian. Zelmane (sighing for Eronaes sake, yet inwardly comforted in that she assured her selfe, Euarchus would not spare to take in hande the just delivering of her, joyned with the just revenge of his childrens losse) having now what she desired of Basilius, to avoide his further discourses of affection, encouraged the shepheards to begin, whom she saw all ready for them.
The second Eclogues.

The rude tumulte of the Enispians gave occasion to the honest shepheardes to beginne their pastorals this day with a daunce, which they called the skirmish betwixt Reason and Passion. For seven shepheardes (which were named the Reasonable shepheardes) joined theselves; foure of them making a square, and the other two going a little wide of either side, like winges for the maine battell; and the seventh man foremost, like the forlorn hope to begin the skirmish. In like order came out the seven appassionated shepheardes; all keeping the pase of their foote by their voice, and sundry consorted instrumëts they held in their armes. And first, the formost of Reasonable side began to sing.

R. Thou Rebell vile, come, to thy master yelde.
And the other that met with him answered.
P. No, Tyrant, no: mine, mine shall be the fielde.
Reason. Can Reason then a Tyraunt counted be?
Passion. If Reason will, that Passions be not free.
R. But Reason will, that Reason governe most.
P. And Passion will, that Passion rule therost.
R. Your will is will; but Reason reason is.
P. Will hath his will, when Reasons will doth misse.
R. Whom Passion leades unto his death is bent.
P. And let him die, so that he die content.
R. By nature you to Reason faith have sworne.
P. Not so, but fellowlike together borne.
R. Who Passion doth ensue, lives in annoy.
P. Who Passion doth forsake, lives void of joy.
R. Passion is blinde, and treads an unknowne trace.
P. Reason hath eyes to see his owne ill case.

Then as they approched neerer, the two of Reasons sides, as if they shot at the other, thus sange.

R. Dare Passions then abide in Reasons light?
P. And is not Reason dimde with Passions might?
R. O foolish thing, which glory doth destroye.
P. O glorious title of a foolish toye.
R. Weakenes you are, dare you with our strength fight?
P. Because our weaknes weakeneth all your might.

Y 2
THE COUTESSE OF PEMBROKES

R. O sacred Reason, helpe our vertuous toiles.
P. O Passion, passe on feeble Reasons spoiles.
R. We with ourselves abide a daily strife.
P. We gladly use the sweetnes of our life.
R. But yet our strife sure peace in end doth breede.
P. We now have peace, your peace we doo not neede.

Then did the two square battailes meete, & in stead of fighting embrace one another, singing thus.
R. We are too strong: but Reason seekes no blood.
P. Who be too weake, do seigne they be too good.
R. Though we cannot orecome, our cause is just.
P. Let us orecome, and let us be unjust.
R. Yet Passion, yeeld at length to Reasons stroke.
P. What shall we winne by taking Reasons yoke?
R. The joyes you have shall be made permanent.
P. But so we shall with griefe learne to repent.
R. Repent indeed, but that shall be your blisse.
P. How know we that, since present joyes we misse?
R. You know it not: of Reason therefore know it.
P. No Reason yet had ever skill to show it.
R. P. Then let us both to heavenly rules give place,

Which Passions skill, and Reason do deface.

Then embraced they one another, and came to the King, who framed his praises of the according to Zelmanes liking; whose unrestrained parts, the minde & eie, had their free course to the delicate Philoclea, whose looke was not short in well requiting it, although she knew it was a hatefull sight to her jealous mother. But Dicus (that had in this time taken a great liking of Dorus for the good partes he found above his age in him) had a delight to taste the fruites of his wit, though in a subject which he him selfe most of all other despised: and so entred to speach with him in the manner of this following Eclogue.

Dicus. Dorus.

Dicus. Dorus.

Dicus. D Orus, tell me, where is thy wonted motion
To make these woods resounde thy lamentation?
Thy sainte is dead, or dead is thy devotion.

340
For who doth holde his love in estimation,
To witnes, that he thinkes his thoughts delicious,
Thinks to make ech thing badge of his sweet passion.

But what doth make thee Dicus so suspicius
Of my due faith, which needs must be immutable?
Who others vertue doubt, themselves are vicious.
Not so; although my mettall were most mutable,
Her beames have wrought therin most faire impression:
To such a force some chaunce were nothing suitable.

The harte well set doth never shunne confession:
If noble be thy bandes, make them notorious:
Silence doth seeme the maske of base oppression.
Who glories in his love, doth make Love glorious:
But who doth feare, or bideth mutt wilfully,
Showes, guilty harte doth deeme his state opprobrious.
Thou then, that framste both words & voice most skilfully,
Yeeld to our eares a sweet and sound relation,
If Love tooke thee by force, or caught thee guilefully.

If Sunnie beames shame heav’nyly habitation;
If three-leav’d grasse seeme to the sheepe unsavorie,
Then base and sower is Loves most high vocation.
Or if sheepes cries can helpe the Sunnes owne brauerie,
Then may I hope, my pipe may have abilitie,
To helpe her praise, who decks me in her slaverie.
No, no: no wordes ennobles selfe-nobilitie.
As for your doubts; her voice was it deceaved me,
Her eye the force beyond all possibilitie.

Thy words well voic’d, well gra’ste had almost heaved me
Quite from my selfe to love Loves contemplation;
Till of these thoughts thy sodaine ende bereaved me.
Goe on therefore, and tell us, by what fashion
In thy owne proove he gets so straunge possession,
And how possesst he strengthens his invasion?

Sight is his roote, in thought is his progression,
His childhood woonder, prenticeship attention,
His youth delight, his age the soules oppression:
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKE'S

Doubte is his sleepe, he waketh in invention;
Fancie his foode, his clothing is of carefulnes;
Beautie his boote, his play lovers dissention:
   His eyes are curious search, but vailde with warfulnesse:
His wings desire oft clipt with desperation:
Largesse his hands could never skill of sparefulness.
But how he doth by might, or by persuasion
To conquere, and his conquest how to ratifies,
Experience doubts, and schooles holde disputation.

Dicus. But so thy sheepe may thy good wishes satisfie
   With large increas, and wooll of fine perfection,
So she thy love, her eyes thy eyes may gratifie,
   As thou wilt give our soules a deare reflection,
By telling how she was, how now she framed is
To helpe, or hurt in thee her owne infection.

Dorus. Blest be the name, wherewith my mistres named is:
   Whose wounds are salves, whose yokes please more then pleasure doth:
Her staines are beames; vertue the fault she blamed is.
   The hart, eye, eare here onely find his treasure doth:
All numbring artes her endlesse graces number not:
Time, place, life, wit scarcely her rare gifts measure doth.
   Is she in rage? so is the Sunne in sommer hot,
Yet harvest brings. Doth she alas absent herselfe?
The Sunne is hid; his kindly shadows cumber not.
   But when to give some grace she doth content herselfe,
O then it shines; then are the heav'ns distributed,
And Venus seemes, to make up her, she spent herselfe.
   Thus then (I say) my mischiefs have contributed
A greater good by her divine reflection;
My harmes to me, my blisse to her attributed,
   Thus she is framde: her eyes are my direction;
Her love my life; her anger my destruction.
Lastly what so she is, that's my protection.

Dicus. Thy safetie sure is wrapped in destruction:
   For that construction thine owne wordes do beare.
A man to feare a womans moodie eye,
   Makes Reason lie a slave to servile Sense.
A weake defence where weakesnesse is thy force:
So is remorse in follie dearly bought.
If I had thought to heare blasphemous wordes,

My brest to swords, my soule to hell have solde
I rather would, then thus mine eares defile
With words so vile, which viler breath doth breed.

O heards take heed; for I a woolfe have found;
Who hunting round the strongest for to kill,
His brest doth fill with earth of others joyes,
And laden so pul'd downe, pul'd downe destroyes.

O sheepheards boyes, eschue these tongues of venome,
Which do envenome both the soule and senses.

Our best defenses are to flie these adders.

O tongues like ladders made to clime dishonour,

Dorus you wander farre in great reproches;
So love encroches on your charmed reason,
But it is season for to end our singing.

Such anger bringing: as for me, my fancies

In sickie-mans frenzie rather takes compassion,

Then rage for rage: rather my wish I send to thee,
Thou soone may have some helpe, or change of passion.

She oft her lookes, the starres her favour bend to thee:

A quiet mind none but thy selfe can lend to thee,

Thus I commend to thee all our former love.

Well do I prove, errour lies oft in zeale,
Yet it is seale, though errour, of true hart.

Nought could impart such beates to friendly mind.
But for to find thy words did her disgrace,

Whose onely face the little heaven is,
Which who doth misse his eyes are but delusions,

Barr'd from their chiefest object of delightfulnesse,

As for thy wish to my enraged spitefullnesse,

She oft her looke, her starres her favour bend to thee:

A quiet mind none but thy selfe can lend to thee,

Thus I commend to thee all our former love.

Well do I prove, errour lies oft in zeale,
Yet it is seale, though errour, of true hart.

Nought could impart such beates to friendly mind.
But for to find thy words did her disgrace,

Whose onely face the little heaven is,
Which who doth misse his eyes are but delusions,

Barr'd from their chiefest object of delightfulnesse,

Throwne on this earth the Chaos of confusions.

As for thy wish to my enraged spitefullnesse,

The lovely blowne with rare reward, my prayer is

Thou mayest love her that I may see thy sightfulnesse.

The quiet mind (whereof my selfe empairer is,

As thou doest think) should most of all disquiet me

Her onely cure from surfet-woes can diet me:
THE COUNTESSE. OF PEMBROKES

She holdest the ballance of my contentation:
Her cleared eyes, nought els, in stormes can quiet me.
    Nay rather then my ease discontentation
Should breed to her, let me for aye dejected be
From any joy, which might her griefe occasion.
    With so sweete plagues my happie harmes infected be:
Paine willes me die, yet will of death I mortifie:
For though life irkes, in life my loves proteeted be.
    Thus for ech change my changelesse hart I fortifie.

When they had ended to the good pleasing of the assistants,
especially of Zelmane, who never forgat to give due comédations to her friend Dorus, the more to advance him in his pursue (although therein he had brought his matters to a more wished conclusion then yet she knew of) out starte a jolly yonker, his name was Nico, whose tongue had borne a very itching silence all this while. And having spied one Pas, a mate of his, as mad as himselfe (both indeed lads to clime any tree in the world) he bestowed this maner of salutation upon him, and was with like reverence requited.

Nico.        Dorus.

Nico. And are you there old Pas? in troth I ever thought,
         Among us all we should find out some thing of nought.

Pas. And I am here the same, so mote I thrive and thee,
Despairde in all this flocke to find a knave, but thee.

Nico. Ah now I see, why thou art in thy selfe so blind:
    Thy gray-hood hides the thing, that thou despairst to find.

Pas. My gray-hood is mine owne, all be it be but gray,
    Not like the scrippe thou stol'ste, while Dorcas sleeping lay.

Nico. Mine was the scrippe: but thou, that seeming raid with love,
    Didst snatch from Cosmas hand her greeny wroughte glove.

Pas. Ah foole; so Courtiers do. But who did lively skippe,
    When for a treene-disb stolne, thy father did thee whippe?

Nico. In deed the witch thy dam her crouch from shoulder spred,
    For pilfring Lalus lambe, with crouch to blesse thy head.
My voice the lambe did winne, Menalcas was our judge:
Of singing match was made, whence he with shame did trudge.

Couldst thou make Lalus flie? so nightingales avoide,
When with the kawing crowses their musicke is annoide.

Nay like to nightingales the other birds give eare:
My pipe and song made him both pipe and song forsweare.

I thinke it well: such voice would make one musicke hate:
But if I had bene there, th'adst met another mate.

Another sure as is a gander from a goose:
But still when thou dost sing, me thinkes a colt is loose.

Well aimed by my hat: for as thou sangst last day;
The neighbours all did crye, alas what asse doth bray?

But here is Dicus old; let him then speake the woord,
To whether with best cause the Nymphes faire flowers affoord.

Content: but I will lay a wager hereunto,
That profit may ensue to him that best can do.
I have (and long shall have) a white great nimble cat,
A king upon a mouse, a strong foe to the rat,
Fine eares, long taile he bath, with Lions curbed clawe,
Which oft he lifteth up, and stayes his lifted pawe,
Deepe musing to himselfe, which after-mewing showes,
Till with lickt beard, his eye of fire espie his foes.
If thou (alas poore if) do winne, then winne thou this,
And if I better sing, let me thy Cosma kisse.

Kisse her? now mayst thou kisse. I have a better match;
A prettie curre it is; his name iwis is Catch,
No eare nor taile he bath, least they should him disgrace,
A ruddie haire his cote, with fine long speckled face:
He never musing standes, but with himselfe will play
Leaping at every flie, and angrie with a flea:
He eft would kill a mouse, but he disdaines to fight,
And makes our home good sport with dauncing bolt upright.
This is my pawne; the price let Dicus judgement show:
Such oddes I willing lay; for him and you I know.

Sing then my lads, but sing with better vaine then yet,
Or else who singeth worst, my skill will hardly hit.
Who doubts but Pas fine pipe againe will bring
The auncient prayse to Arcad shepheards skill?
Pan is not dead, since Pas beginnes to sing.

Who evermore will love Apollos quill,
Since Nico doth to sing so widelie gape?
Nico his place farre better furnish will.

Was not this he, who did for Syrinx scape
Raging in woes teach pastors first to plaine?
Do you not heare his voice, and see his shape?

This is not he that failed her to gaine,
Which made a Bay, made Bay a holy tree:
But this is one that doth his musicke staine.

O Faunes, O Fairies all, and do you see,
And suffer such a wrong? a wrong I trowe,
That Nico must with Pas compared be?

O Nymphes, I tell you newes, for Pas you knowe:
While I was warbling out your woonted praise,
Nico would needs with Pas his bagpipe blowe.

If never I did faile your holy-dayes,
With daunces, carols, or with barlybreake:
Let Pas now know, how Nico makes the layes.

If each day hath bene holy for your sake,
Unto my pipe, O Nymphes, helpe now my pipe,
For Pas well knowes what layes can Nico make.

Alas how oft I looke on cherries ripe,
Me thinkes I see the lippes my Leuca hath,
And wanting her, my weeping eyes I wipe.

Alas, when I in spring meete roses rathe,
And thinke from Cosmas sweet red lips I live,
I leave mine eyes unwipte my cheekes to bathe.

As I of late, neer bushes usde my sive,
I spied a thrush where she did make her nest,
That will I take, and to my Leuca give.

But long have I a sparrow gailie drest,
As white as milke, and comming to the call,
To put it with my hand in Cosmas brest.
I oft doo sue, and Leuca saith, I shall,
But when I did come neere with heate and hope,
She ranne away, and threw at me a ball.

Cosma once said, she left the wicket ope,
For me to come; and so she did: I came,
But in the place found nothing but a rope.

When Leuca dooth appeare, the Sunne for shame
Dooth hide himselfe: for to himselfe he sayes,
If Leuca live, she darken will my fame.

When Cosma doth come forth, the Sun displaies
His utmost light: for well his witte doth know,
Cosmas faire beames emblemish much his raies.

Leuca to me did yester-morning showe
In perfect light, which could not me deceave,
Her naked legge, more white then whitest snowe.

But yesternight by light I did receive
From Cosmas eyes, which full in darkenes shine,
I sawe her arme, where purest Lillies cleave.

She once starke nak'd did bathe a little tine;
But still (me thought) with beauties from her fell,
She did the waters wash, and make more fine.

She once, to coole her selfe, stood in a well,
But ever since that well is well besought,
And for Rose-water sould of rarest smell.

To rivers banke, being on walking brought,
She bad me spie her babie in the brooke,
Alas (said I) this babe dooth nurce my thought.

As in a glasse I held she once did looke,
I said, my hands well paide her for mine eyes,
Since in my hands selfe goodly sight she tooke.

O if I had a ladder for the skies,
I would climbe up, and bring a prettie starre,
To weare upon her neck, that open lies.

O if I had Apollos golden carre,
I would come downe, and yeeld to her my place,
That (shining now) she then might shine more farre.
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

Nico. Nothing (O Leuca) shall thy fame deface,
   While shepheard's tunes be heard, or rimes be read,
   Or while that shepheard's love a lovely face.

Pas. Thy name (O Cosma) shall with praise be spread,
   As farre as any shepheard's piping be:
   As farre as Love possesseth any head.

Nico. Thy monument is layd in many a tree,
   With name engrav'd: so though thy bodie die,
   The after-folkes shall wonder still at thee.

Pas. So oft these woods have heard me Cosma-crie,
   That after death, to heav'n in woods resound,
   With Echoes help, shall Cosma, Cosma flye.

Nico. Peace, peace good Pas, thou weeriest even the ground
   With sluttish song: I pray thee learne to blea,
   For good thou mayst yet prove in sheepish sound.

Pas. My father hath at home a prettie Jay,
   Goe winne of him (for chattering) praise or shame:
   For so yet of a conquest speake thou may.

Nico. Tell me (and be my Pan) the monsters name,
   That hath foure legs, and with two onely goes,
   That hath foure eyes, and onely two can frame.

Pas. Tell me (and Phoebus be) what monster growes
   With so strong lives, that bodie cannot rest
   In ease, untill that bodie life forgoes.

Dies. Enough, enough: so ill hath done the best,
   That since the having them to neither's due,
   Let cat and dog fight which shall have both you.

Some speech there straignt grew among the hearers, what
they should meane by the riddles of the two monsters.
But Zelmane, whose harte better delighted in wailefull ditties,
as more according to her fortune, she desired Lamon, he would
againe repeate some other lamentation of the still-absent Strephon
and Klaius. Basilius (as soone as he understood Zelmanes
pleasure) commaundd Lamon upon paine of his life (as though
every thing were a matter of life and death, that pertained to
his mistresse service) immediately to sing it: who with great
cunning, varying his voice according to the diversitie of the persons, began this Dizaine, answered in that kinde of verse, which is called the Crowne.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Strephon</th>
<th>Klaius</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joye in griefe, and doo detest all joyes:</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Despise delight, and tyrde with thought of ease</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I turne my minde to all formes of annoyes,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>And with the chaunge of them my fancie please.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I studie that which may me most displease,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>And in despite of that displeasures might,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Embrace that most, that most my soule destroyes.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blinded with beames, fell darkenes is my sight:</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dole on my ruine feedes, with sucking smarte,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>And loth this time, calld life, nay thinke, that life</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nature to me for torment did emparte;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thinke, my harde haps have blunted deaths sharpe knife,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Not sparing me, in whom his workes be rife:</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>And thinking this, thinke Nature, Life, and Death</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Place Sorrowes triumph on my conquered brest:</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Where to I yeeld, and seeke none other breath,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>But from the sent of some infectious grave:</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nor of my fortune ought, but mischiefe crave.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nor of my fortune ought but mischiefe crave,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>And seeke to nourish that, which now contaynes</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>All what I am: if I my selfe will save,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Then must I save, what in me chiefly raignes,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Which is the hatefull web of Sorrowes paines.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sorow then cherish me, for I am sorowe:</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No being now, but sorowe I can have:</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Then decke me as thine owne; thy helpe I borowe,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Since thou my riches arte, and that thou haste</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Enough to make a fertill minde lie waste.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Enough to make a fertill minde lie waste</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Is that huge storme, which powres it selfe on me:</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| Hailestones of teares, of sighes a monstrous blast,
Thunders of cries; lightnings my wilde looks be,
The darkened heav'n my soule which nought can see;
The flying sprites which trees by rootes up teare
Be those despaire, which have my hopes quite wast.
The difference is; all folkes those stormes forbeare:
But I cannot; who then my selfe should flie
So close unto my selfe my wrackes doo lie.

So close unto my selfe my wrackes doo lie;
Both cause, effect, beginning, and the ende
Are all in me: what helpe then can I trie?
My ship, my selfe; whose course to love doth bende,
Sore beaten doth her mast of Comforte spende:
Her cable, Reason, breaks from anchor, Hope:
Fancie, her tackling, torne away doth flie:
Ruine, the winde, hath blowne her from her scope:
Brused with waves of Cares, but broken is
On rocke, Despaire, the buriall of my blisse.

On rocke, Despaire, the buriall of my blisse
I long doo plowe with plough of deepe Desire:
The seed Fast-meaning is, no truth to misse:
I harowe it with Thoughts, which all conspire
Favour to make my chiefe and onely hire.
But, woe is me, the yeare is gone about,
And now I faine would reape, I reape but this,
Hate fully growne, Absence new sprongen out.
So that I see, although my sight empaire,
Vaine is their paine, who labour in Despaire.

Vaine is their paine, who labour in Despaire.
For so did I, when with my angle, Will,
I sought to catch the fish Torpedo faire.
Ev'n then Despaire did Hope already kill:
Yet Fancie would perforce employ his skill,
And this bath got; the catcher now is caught,
Lamde with the angle, which it selfe did beare,
And unto death, quite drownde in Dolours, brought
To death, as then disguisde in her faire face.
Thus, thus I had, alas, my losse in chase.
Thus, thus I had, alas, my losse in chase,

When first that crowned Basiliske I knewe,
Whose footesteps I with kisses oft did trace,
Till by such hap, as I must ever rewe,
Mine eyes did light upon her shining bewe,
And hers on me, astonisht with that sight.
Since then my harte did loose his wonted place,
Infected so with her sweet poysons might,
That, leaving me for dead, to her it went:
But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent.

But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent,
Her flight from me, from me, though dead to me,
Yet living still in her, while her beames lent
Such vitall sparke, that her mine eyes might see.
But now those living lights absented be,
Full dead before, I now to dust should fall,
But that eternall paines my soule should bent,
And keepe it still within this body thrall:
That thus I must, while in this death I dwell,
In earthly fetters feele a lasting hell.

In earthly fetters feele a lasting hell

Alas I doo; from which to finde release,
I would the earth, I would the heavens fell.
But vaine it is to thinke these paines should cease,
Where life is death, and death cannot breed peace.
O faire, 0 onely faire, from thee, alas,
These foule, most foule, distresses to me fell;
Since thou from me (0 me) 0 Sunne didst passe.
Therefore esteeming all good blessings toyes
I joy in grieved, and doo detest all joyes.

I joye in griefe, and doo detest all joyes.

And now an ende, (0 Claius) now an ende
For even the hearbes our mournefull musique stroyes,
And from our burning breath the trees doo bende.

So wel did Lamons voice expresse the passiōs of those shepheards, that all the Princely beholders were striken in a silent cōsideration of them; indeed every one making, that
he heard of another the balâce of his own troubles. And Basilius perceiving such melancholique musique best consorted to the humor of his mistresse, entreated againe the young melancholy shephered, that he would emparte some part of the sorow his coûtenaunce so well witnessed unto them. Which he in parte to satisfie, began an Eclogue betwixt himselfe and the Echo: framing his voice in those deserte places, as what words he would have the Echo replie, unto those he would singe higher then the rest, and so kindly framed a disputation betwixt himselfe and it. Which with these Hexameters in the following order he uttered.

Echo.

F

Aire rocks, goodly rivers, sweet woods, when shall I see peace? Peace.

O I doo know what guest I doo meete: it is Echo.
Well mett Echo; aproch, and tell me thy will too.

Echo, what doo I get yelding my sprite to my griefes?

What medicine may I finde for a paine that drawes me to death?
O pois’nous medicine: what worse to me can be then it?

In what state was I then, when I tooke this deadly disease?
And what maner a minde, which had to that humor a vaine?

Hath not reason enough vehemence the desire to reprove?

Oft prove I: but what salve, when Reason seeks to be gone?

What be the joyes, for which t’enjoye they went to the paines?
Then to an earnest love what doth best victorie lende?

Ende? but I can never ende: Love will not give me the leave.

How be the mindes disposde, that cannot taste the Physicke?
Yet say againe th’advice for th’ils that I tolde thee.

Doth th’infected wretch of his ill th’extremitie know?

But if he know not his harms, what guidh beth he whilst he be blind?

What blinde guides can be have that leads to a fancie?

Can fancies wante eyes? or he fall that steppeth aloft?

What causes first made these tormentes on me to light?
Can then a cause be so light, that forceth a man to goe die?

Yet tell, what light thing I had in me to drawe me to die?

Eie-sight made me to yeeld: but what first pearst to my eyes?
Eyes hurters? eyes bute? but what from them to me falls?  
But when I first did fall, what brought most fall to my harte?  
Arte? what can be that arte, which thou dost meane by thy speach?  
What be the fruites of speaking arte, what growes by the wordes?  
O much more then wordes: those wordes serv'd more me to blesse.  
O when shall I be knowne, where most to be known I doo long?  
Long be thy woes for such bad newes: how reck she my thoughts?  
Then, then what doo I gayne, since unt' her will I doo winde?  
Winde, tempests, and stormes: yet in ende what gives she desire?  
Silly rewarde: yet above women bath she a title.  
What great name may I give to so heav'nly a woman?  
Woe, but seems to me joye, that agrees to my thought so.  
Thinke so: for of my desired blisse it is onely the course.  
Curst be thy selfe for cursing that, which leads me to joyes.  
What be the sweete creatures where lowly demaundes be not harde?  
Harde to be gott, but got constant, to be helde very steeles.  
How be they helde unkinde? speake, for th' bast narrowly pry'de.  
How can pride come there since springs of beautie be thence?  
Horrible is this blasphemie unto the most holie.  
Thou l'ist, false Echo; their mindes, as vertue, be juste.  
Mockst thou those Diamonds, which onely be matcht by the Godds? Odds.  
Odds? what an odds is there, since them to the heav'ns I preferre? Erre.  
Tell yet againe, how name ye the godly made evill?  
Devill? in hell where such Devill is, to that hell I doo goe.

After this well placed Echo, the other shepheardes were  
offring themselves to have continued the sports: But  
the night had so quietly spent most part of her selfe, that the  
King for that time licensed them: & so bringing Zelmane to  
er her lodging, who would much rather have done the same for  
Philoclea, of all sides they went to counterfaite a sleep in their  
beds, for a true one their agonies could not afoord them. Yet  
there lay they (for so might they be most solitarie) for the  
foode of their thoughts, till it was neere noone the next day.  
After which Basilius was to continue his Apollo devotions, and  
the other to meditate upon their private desires.

The end of the second Booke.
THE THIRDE BOOKE
OF THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

CHAP. 1.

Dorus—his faire and foule weather in his love. His forlorn agones. His doubts to write, and Pamelaes to reade, his elegie.

His last dayes danger, having made Pamelaes love discerne, what a losse it should have suffered, if Dorus had bene destroyed, bredde such tendernesse of kindnes in her toward him: that she coulde no longer kepe Love from looking through her eyes, and going forth in her words; whom before as a close prisoner she had to her hart onely committed; so as finding not only by his speeches & letters, but by the pitifull oratiō of a languishing behavior, & the easily discyphered charactrer of a sorowful face, that Despair began nowe to threaten him destruction, she grewe content both to pitie him, and let him see she pityed him: as well by making her owne beautifull beames thawe away the former icinesse of her behavour, as by entertaining his discourses (whensoever he did use them) in the third person of Musidorus; to so farre a degree, that in the ende she said, that if she had bene the Princesse, whom that disguised Prince had vertuously loved, she would have requited his faith with faithfull affection: finding in her hart, that nothing could so hartily love as vertue: with many mo words to the same sense of noble favour, & chast plainnesse. Which when at the first it made that expected blisse shine upon Dorus; he was like one frozen with extremitie of colde, over-hastily brought to a great fire, rather oppressed, then relieved with such a lightning of felicitie. But after the strength of nature had made him able to feel the sweetnesse of joyfulnes, that again being a child of Passion, & never acquainted with mediocrity, could not set bouëds upon his happines, nor be cōtent to give Desire a kingdome, but that
it must be an unlimited Monarchy. So that the ground he stood upon being over-high in happines, & sliperie through affection, he could not hold himselfe fro falling into such an error, which with sighs blew all comfort out of his brest, & washt away all cheerfulnes of his cheere, with teares. For this favour filling him with hope, Hope encouraging his desire, & Desire considering nothing, but opportunitie: one time (Mopsa being called away by her mother, & he left alone with Pamela) the sudden occasion called Love, & that never staid to aske Reasons leave; but made the too-much loving Dorus take her in his armes, offering to kisse her, and, as it were, to establish a trophee of his victorie.

But she, as if she had bin ready to drinke a wine of excellent tast & colour, which suddenly she perceived had poison in it, so did she put him away fro her: loiking first unto heaven, as amazed to find herselfe so beguiled in him; then laying the cruel punishment upon him of angry Love, and lowring beautie, shewing disdain, & a despising disdain, Away (said she) unworthy man to love, or to be loved. Assure thy selfe, I hate my selfe for being so deceived; judge then what I doo thee, for deceiving me. Let me see thee no more, the only fall of my judgement, and staine of my conscience. With that she called Mopsa, not staying for any answer (which was no other, but a flood of tears, which she semed not to mark (much lesse to pity) & chid her for having so left her alone.

It was not an amazement, it was not a sorrow, but it was even a death, which then laid hold of Dorus: which certainly at that instant would have killed him, but that the feare to tary longer in her presence (contrary to her comandement) gave him life to cary himselfe away fro her sight, and to run into the woods, where, throwing himselfe downe at the foot of a tree; he did not fall to lamentation (for that proceeded of pitying) or grieving for himselfe (which he did no way) but to curses of his life, as one that detested himselfe. For finding himselfe not onely unhappy, but unhappie after being falne from all happines: and to be falne from all happines, not by any misconceiving, but by his own fault, and his fault to be done to no other but to Pamela: he did not tender his owne estate, but despised it; greedily drawing into his minde, all concepts which might more and more torment him. And so
remained he two dayes in the woods, disdaining to give his bodie food, or his mind comfort, loving in himselfe nothing, but the love of her. And indeed that love onely strave with the fury of his anguish, telling it, that if it destroyed Dorus, it should also destroy the image of her that lived in Dorus: and when the thought of that was crept in unto him, it begå to win of him some cōpassion to the shrine of the image, & to bewaile not for himselfe (whō he hated) but that so notable a love should perish. Thē began he onely so farre to wish his owne good, as that Pamela might pardon him the fault, though not the punishment: & the uttermost height he aspired unto, was, that after his death, she might yet pittie his error, and know that it proceeded of love, and not of boldnesse.

4 That concept found such friendship in his thoughts, that at last he yielded, since he was banished her presēce, to seeke some meanes by writing to shew his sorrow, & testifie his repentance. Therfore getting him the necessarie instruments of writing, he thought best to cōterfaite his hand (fearing that as alreadie she knew his, she would cast it away as soone as she saw it) and to put it in vers, hoping, that would draw her on to read the more, chusing the Elegiac as fittest for mourning. But pen did never more quakingly performe his office; never was paper more double moistned with inke & teares; never words more slowly maried together, & never the Muses more tired, then now with changes & rechanges of his devises: fearing howe to ende, before he had resolved how to begin, mistrusting ech word, condemning eche sentence. This word was not signifcant, that word was too plain: this would not be cōceived; the other would be il conceived. Here Sorow was not inough expressed; there he seemed too much for his owne sake to be sory. This sentence rather shewed art, then passion; that sentence rather foolishly passionate, then forcibly moving. At last, marring with mending, and putting out better, then he left, he made an end of it; & being ended, & diverse times ready to teare it: till his reason assuring him, the more he studied, the worse it grew, he folded it up, devoutly invoking good acceptation unto it; and watching his time, when they were all gone one day to dinner (saving Mopsa) to the other lodge, stale up into Pamelaes chamber, and in her stādish (which first he kissed; and craved of it a safe and friendly
keeping) left it there, to be seen at her next using her inke (himselue returning againe to be true prisoner to desperate sorrow) leaving her standish upon her beds head, to give her the more occasion to marke it: which also fell out.

For she finding it at her after noone-returne, in another place then she left it, opened it. But when she saw the letter, her hart gave her from whence it came. And therefore clapping it to againe, she went away from it, as if it had bin a contagious garment of an infected person: and yet was not long away, but that she wished she had read it, though she were loth to reade it. Shall I (said she) second his boldnesse so farre, as to reade his presumptuous letters? And yet (said she) he sees me not to growe the bolder thereby: And how can I tell, whether they be presumptuous? The paper came from him, and therefore not worthie to be receyved; and yet the paper (she thought) was not guiltie. At last, she concluded, it were not much amisse to looke it over, that she might out of his wordes picke some further quarrell against him. Then she opened it, and threwe it away, and tooke it up againe, till (ere she were aware) her eyes woulde needes reade it, conteining this matter.

Unto a caitife wretch, whom long affliction holdeth,
and now fully belieues helpe to be quite perished;
Grant yet, grant yet a looke, to the last monumet of his anguish,
O you (alas so I find) cause of his onely ruine.
Dread not a whit (O goodly cruell) that pittie may enter
into thy hart by the sight of this Epistle I send:
And so refuse to behold of these strange wounds the recitall,
least it might tb' allure home to thy selfe to returne,
(Unto thy selfe I do meane those graces dwell so within thee,
gratefulnes, sweetnes, holy love, bartie regard)
Such thing cannot I seeke (Despaire hath giv'n me my answer
despaire most tragicall clause to a deadly request)
Such thing canot be hope, that knowes thy determinat hardnes;
hard like a rich marble: hard, but a faire Diamond.
Can those eyes that of eyes drownd in most harty flowing teares,
(teares and teares of a man) had no returne to remorse;
Can those eyes now yeeld to the kind conceit of a sorrow,
which inke onely relates, but ne laments, ne replies?
Ah, that, that I do I not conceive (though that to my blisse were) more then Nestors yeares, more then a Kings diadememe.

Ah, that, that I do not conceive; to the heaven when a mouse climes then may I hope t'atchieve grace of a heavenly tiger.

But, but alas, like a man cœdm'd doth crave to be heard speake not that he hopes for amends of the desaster he feeles,

But finding th' approach of death with an ougly relenting, gives an adieu to the world, as to his onely delight:

Right so my boiling hart, enflam'de with fire of a faire eye, bubling out doth breath signes of his bugie dolours:

Now that he finds to what end his life and love be reserved, and that he hence must part where to live onely he lov'd.

O faire, O fairest, are such thy triumphs to thy fairnesse?
can death beautie become? must be such a monument?

Must I be onely the marke, shall prove that Vertue is angrie?
shall prove that fiercenes can with a white dove abide?

Shall to the world appeare that faith and love be rewarded
with mortall disdaine, bent to unendly revenge?

Unto revenge? O sweete, on a wretch wilt thou be revenged?
shall such high Plannets ende to the losse of a worme?

And to revenge who doe bend, would in that kind be revenged,
as th' offence was done, and doe beyond if he can.

All my' offence was Love: with Love then must I be chastned,
and with more, by the lawes that to Revenge doo belong.

If that love be a fault, more fault in you to be lovely:
Love never had me opprest, but that I saw to be lov'd.

You be the cause that I lov'd: what Reason blameth a shadowe,
that with a body't goes? since by a body it is.

If that Love you did hate, you should your beautie have hidden:
you should those faire eyes have with a veile covered.

But foole, foole that I am, those eyes would shine fro a dark cave.
what veiles then doo prevaile, but to a more miracle?

Or those golden lockes, those lockes which lock me to bondage,
torne you should disperse unto the blasts of a winde.

But foole, foole that I am, tho I had but a hair of her head fould,
evn as I am, so I should unto that haire be a thrall.

Or with fair hâds-nailes (ô hâd which nailes me to this death)
you should have your face (since Love is ill) blemished.

O wretch, what do I say? should that faire face be defaced?
should my too-much sight cause so true a Sunne to be lost?
First let Cimmerian darkness be my onel’ habitacion:
first be mine eyes pulde out, first be my braine perished;
Ere that I should consent to doo such excessive a dammage
unto the earth, by the hurt of this her heavenly jewell.
O no: but such love you say you could have afoorded,
as might learne Temp’rance voyde of a rages events.
O sweet simplicitie: from whence should Love so be learned?
unto Cupid that boy shall a Pedante be found?
Well: but faultie I was: Reason to my Passion yeelded,
Passion unto my rage, Rage to a hasty revenge.
But what’s this for a fault, for which such fault is abolisht,
such faith, so staineles, inviolate, violent?
Shall I not? o may I not thus yet refresh the remembrance,
what sweete joyes I had once, and what a place I did hold?
Shall I not once object, that you, you graunted a favour
unto the man, whom now such miseries you awarde?
Bed your thoghts to the dear sweet words which the to me giv’n were:
think what a world is now, think who hath altr’d her hart.
What? was I then worthie such good, now worthie such evill?
now fled, then cherished? then so nie, now so remote?
Did not a rosed breath, from lips more rosie proceeding,
say, that I should well finde in what a care I was had?
With much more: now what doo I finde, but Care to abhor me,
Care that I sinke in griefe, Care that I live, banished?
And banished doo I live, nor now will seeke a recov’rie,
since so she will, whose will is to me more then a lawe.
If then a man in most ill case may give you a farewell;
farewell, long farewell, all my woe, all my delight.

CHAP. 2.

1The young Ladies mette: 2 invited to the countrie-wenches sports,
3goe thether, 4 there are taken, and thence caried to Am-
phialus castle. 5 Their entertainement there. 6 Cecropias
auricular confession of her proud cariage in prosperitie, 7 and
ambitious practises in adversitie. 8 Amphialus his affe(r)tion
in these actions.

What this would have wrought in her, she her selfe could not tell: for, before her Reason could moderate the
disputation betwene Favour & Faultines, her sister, and Miso,
called her downe to entertaine Zelmane, who was come to visite
the two sisters; about whom, as about two Poles, the Skie of
Beautie was turned: while Gynecia wearied her bed with her
melancholie sicknes, and made Misos shrewdnesse (who like a
sprite, sette to keep a treasure, barde Zelmane from any further
conference) to be the Lieutenant of her jealouseie: Both she and
her husband, driving Zelmane to such a streit of resolution,
either of impossible graunting, or dangerous refusing, as the
best escape she had, was (as much as she could) to avoyde
their companie. So as, this day, being the fourth day after the
uproe, (Basilius being with his sicke wife, conferring upon such
examinations, as Philanax, and other of his noble-men had
made of this late seditiœ, all touching Cecroia with vehemët
suspition of giving either flame or fuell unto it) Zelmane came
with her bodie, to find her mind, which was gone long before
her, & had gotten his seate in Philoclea: who now with a
bashfull cheerefulnesse (as though she were ashamed, that she
could not choose but be glad) joyned with her sister, in making
much of Zelmane.

And so as they sate devising how to give more feathers to
the winges of Time, there came to the lodge dore, sixe maides,
all in one liverie of skarlette petticotes, which were tuckt up
almoeste to their knees, the petticoates them selves beinge in
many places garnished with leaves, their legges naked, saving
that above the anckles they had little black silke laces, upon
which did hang a few silver belles: like which they had a little
above their elbowes, upon their bare armes. Upon their haire
they ware garlandes of roses and gilliflowers; and the haire was
so drest, as that came againe above the garlandes; enterchaung-
ing a mutuell covering: so as it was doubtfull, whether the
haire drest the garlandes, or the garlandes drest the haire.
Their breasts liberall to the eye: the face of the formoste
of them, in excellencie faire; and of the rest lovely, if not
beautifull: and beautifull would have bene, if they had not
suffered greedy Phœbus, over-often, and harde, to kisse them.
Their countenaunces full of a gracefull gravitie; so as the
gesture matcht with the apparrell, it might seem a wanton
modestie, and an entising sobernes. Each of them had an
instrument of musick in their hands, which consorting their
wel-pleasing tunes, did charge each eare with unsensiblenes,
that did not lende it selfe unto them. The Musicke entring alone into the lodge, the Ladies were all desirous to see from whence so pleasant a guest was come: and therefore went out together; where, before they coulde take the paines to doubt, much lesse to aske the question of their qualitie, the fairest of them (with a gay, but yet discreete demeanour) in this sort spake unto them. Most excellent Ladies, (whose excellencies have power to make cities envie these woods, and solitaries to be accounted the sweetest companie) vouchsafe our message your gracious hearing, which as it comes from Love, so comes it from lovely persons. The maides of all this coast of Arcadia, understanding the often accesse that certaine shepheards of these quarters, are allowed to have in this forbidden place; and that their rurall sports are not disdained of you, have bene stird with emulation to them, and affeccion to you, to bring forth some thing, which might as well breede your contentment: and therefore hoping that the goodnes of their intention, & the hurtlesnes of their sex shall excuse the breach of the commandemé&t in coming to this place unsent for, they chose out us, to invite both your princely parents, & your selves, to a place in the woods about half a mile hence: where they have provided some such sports, as they trust your gratious acceptatiós will interpret to be deliteful. We have bene at the other lodge, but finding them there, busied in weightier affaires, our trust is, that you yet will not deny the shining of your eies upó us.

The Ladies stood in some doubt, whether they should goe 3 or not, lest Basilius might be angry withall. But Miso (that had bene at none of the pastorals, and had a great desire to lead her old senses abroad to some pleasure) told them plainly, they should nor will nor choose, but go thether, and make the honest countrie people know, that they were not so squeamish as folkes thought of them. The Ladies glad to be warranted by her authoritie; with a smiling humblenesse obeyed her: Pamela only casting a seeking looke, whether she could see Dorus (who poore wretch wandred halfe mad for sorrow in the woods, crying for pardon of her, who could not heare him) but indeed was grieved for his absence, having given the wound to him through her owne harte. But so the three Ladies & Miso went with those six Nymphes, conquering the length of the
way with the force of musique, leaving only Mopsa behind, who disgraced weeping with her countenaunce, because her mother would not suffer her to shewe her newskoured face among them. But the place apointed (as they thought) met them halfe in their way, so well were they pleased with the sweete tunes and prettie conversation of their inviter. There founde they in the midst of the thickest part of the wood, a little square place, not burdened with trees, but with a boord coverèd, & beautified with the pleasantest fruites, that Sun-burnd Autunne could deliver unto the. The maids besought the Ladies to sit downe, and tast of the swelling grapes, which seemed great with child of Bacchus: & of the divers coloured plums, which gave the eye a pleasant tast before they came to the mouth. The Ladies would not shew to scorne their provision, but eat, and dranke a little of their coole wine, which seemed to laugh for joy to come to such lips.

4 But after the collation was ended, and that they looked for the cοming foorth of such devises, as were prepared for them, there rushet out of the woods twentie armed men, who round about environed them, & laying hold of Zelmane before she could draw her sword, and taking it from her, put hoods over the heads of all fower, and so muffled, by force set them on horsebacke and carried them away; the sisters in vaine crying for succour, while Zelmanes harte was rent in peeces with rage of the injurie, and disdaine of her fortune. But when they had caried them a fower or five mile further, they lefte Miso with a gagge in her mouth, and bound hande and foote, so to take her fortune: and brought the three Ladies (by that time that the Night seemed with her silence to conspire to their treason) to a castle about ten mile of from the Lodges: where they were fayne to take a boate whiche wayted for them. For the castle stood in the midst of a great lake, upon a high rocke, where partly by Arte, but principallie by Nature, it was by all men esteemed impregnable.

5 But at the Castle gate their faces were discovered, and there were mett with a great number of torches, after whome the sisters knewe their aunt in lawe, Cecropia. But that sight increased the deadly terror of the Princesses, looking for nothing but death, since they were in the power of the wicked Cecropia: who yet came unto them, making curtesie the outside
of mischiefe, and desiring them not to be discomforted: for they were in a place dedicated to their service. Philoclea (with a looke where Love shined through the miste of Feare) besought her to be good unto them, having never deserved evil of her. But Pamela high harte dislayning humblenesse to injurie, Aunt, (said she) what you have determined of us I pray you doo it speedily: for my part I looke for no service, where I finde violence.

But Cecropia (using no more wordes with them) conveyed them all three to severall lodgings (Zelmanes harte so swelling with spite, that she coulde not bring forth a worde) and so lefte them: first taking from them their knives, because they should doe themselves no hurte, before she had determined of them: and then giving such order that they wanted nothing but libertie, & comfort, she went to her sonne, who yet kept his bed, because of his wound he had received of Zelmane, & told him, whom now he had in his power. Amphialus was but even then returned from far countries, where he had wonne immortall fame, both of courage & curtesie, when he met with the Princesses, and was hurt by Zelmane, so as he was utterly ignorant of all his mothers wicked devises; to which he would never have consented, being (like a rose out of a brier) an excellent sonne of an evill mother: and now when he heard of this, was as much amazed, as if he had seen the Sunne fall to the earth. And therefore desired his mother that she would tell him the whole discourse, how all these matters had happened.

Sonne (said she) I will doo it willingly, and since all is done for you, I will hide nothing from you. And howsoever I might be ashamed to tell it strangers, who would thinke it wickednesse, yet what is done for your sake (how evill soever to others) to you is vertue. To begin then even with the beginning, this doting foole Basilius that now raignes, having lived unmarried till he was nigh threescore yeares old (and in all his speaches affirming, and in all his dooings assuring, that he never would marrie) made all the eyes of the country to be bent upon your father, his onely brother (but then younger by thirty yeares) as upon the undoubted successour: being indeed a man worthy to raigne, thinking nothing enough for himselfe: where this goose (you see) puts downe his head, before there be
any thing neere to touch him. So that he holding place and estimation as heyre of Arcadia, obteyMed me of my father the King of Argos, his brother helping to the conclusion, with protesting his bachelery intention: for else you may be sure the King of Argos, nor his daughter would have suffered their Royall bloud to be stained with the base name of subjection. So that I came into this countrie as apparrant Princesse therof, and accordingly was courted, and followed of all the Ladies of this countrie. My porte and pompe did well become a King of Argos daughter: in my presence their tongues were turned into eares, & their eares were captives unto my tongue. Their eyes admired my Majestie, & happy was he or she, on whom I would suffer the beames thereof to fall. Did I goe to church? it seemed the very Gods wayted for me, their devotions not being solemnized till I was ready. Did I walke abroad to see any delight? Nay, my walking was the delight it selfe: for to it was the concourse; one thrusting upon another, who might shewe him selfe most diligent and serviceable towards me: my sleepes were inquired after, and my wakings never unsaluted: the very gate of my house full of principall persons, who were glad, if their presents had receaved a gratefull acceptation. And in this felicite wert thou borne, the very earth submitting it selfe unto thee to be troden on as by his Prince; and to that passe had my husbandes vertue (by my good helpe) within short time brought it, with a plot we laide, as we should not have needed to have waited the tedious worke of a naturall end of Basilius; when the heaves (I thinke envying my great felicity) the stopt thy fathers breath, whè he breathing nothing but power and soveraigntie. Yet did not thy orphancie, or my widdowhood, deprive us of the delightfull prospect, which the hill of honour dooth yeeld, while expectation of thy succession did bind dependencies unto us.

7 But before, (my sonne) thou wert come to the age to feele the sweetnesse of authoritie, this beast (whom I can never name with patience) falsely and foolishly married this Gynecia, then a young girle, and brought her to sit above me in al feasts, to turne her shoulder to me-ward in all our solemnities. It is certaine, it is not so great a spite to be surmounted by straungers, as by ones owne allies. Thinke then what my minde was, since withall there is no question: The fall is greater from the first
to the second, then from the second to the undermost. The rage did swell in my harte, so much the more as it was faine to be suppressed in silence, & disguised with humblenes. But above al the rest, the griefe of griefes was, whē with these daughters (now thy prisoners) she cut of al hope of thy successiō. It was a tedious thing to me; that my eies should looke lower then any bodies, that (my selfe being by) another's voice then mine, should be more respected. But it was insupportable unto me, to think that not only I, but thou shouldst spend al thy time in such misery, & that the Sun should see my eldest son lesse then a Prince. And though I had ben a saint I could not choose, finding the chaūge this chaūge of fortune bred unto me, for now frō the multitude of followers, silence grew to be at my gate, & absence in my presence. The guesse of my mind could prevale more before, then now many of my earnest requests. And thou (my deare sonne) by the fickle multitude no more then any ordinary person (borne of the mud of the people) regarded. But I (remebring that in all miseries" weeping becomes fooles, and practize wise folks) have tried" divers meanes to pull us out of the mire of subjectiō. And though many times Fortune failed me, yet did I never faile my self. Wild beasts I kept in a cave hard by the lodges, which I caused by night to be fed in the place of their pastorals, I as then living in my house hard by the place, and against the houre they were to meete (having kept the beasts without meate) then let them loose, knowing that they would seeke their food there, and devoure what they founde. But blind Fortune hating sharpe-sighted inventions, made them unluckily to be killed. After, I used my servant Clinias to stir a notable tumult of country people: but those louts were too grosse instruments for delicate conceits. Now lastly, finding Philanaxhis examinations grow daungerous, I thought to play double or quit; & with a sleight I used of my fine-witted wech Artesia, with other maids of mine, would have sent these good inheri-trixes of Arcadia, to have pleaded their cause before Pluto, but that over-fortunatly for thē, you made me know the last day how vehemently this childish passion of love doth torment you. Therefor I have brought them unto you, yet wishing rather hate thē love in you. For Hate often begetteth victory; Love" commonly is the instrument of subjection. It is true, that I
would also by the same practise have entrapped the parents, but my maids failed of it, not daring to tarry long about it. But this sufficeth, since (these being taken away) you are the undoubted inheritor, and Basilius will not long over-live this losse.

8 O mother (said Amphialus) speake not of doing them hurt, no more then to mine eies, or my hart, or if I have any thing more deare then eyes, or hart unto me. Let others finde what sweetnesse they will in ever fearing, because they are ever feared: for my part, I will thinke my selfe highly intitled, if I may be once by Philoclea accepted for a servant. Well (said Cecropia) I would I had borne you of my minde, as well as of my body: then should you not have suncke under base weaknesses. But since you have tied your thoughts in so wilfull a knot, it is happie I have brought matters to such a passe, as you may both enjoy affection, and uppon that build your soveraigntie. Alas (said Amphialus) my hart would faine yeeld you thanks for setting me in the way of felicitie, but that feare killes them in me, before they are fully borne. For if Philoclea be displeased, how can I be pleased? if she count it unkindnes, shal I give tokens of kindnes? perchance she cœdemes me of this action, and shall I triumph? perchance she drownes nowe the beauties I love with sorrowful teares, and where is then my rejoicing? You have reason (said Cecropia with a feined gravitie) I will therefore send her away presently, that her contentment may be recovered. No good mother (said Amphialus) since she is here, I would not for my life constraine presence, but rather would I die then cœsent to absence. Prety intricat follies (said Cecropia) but get you up, & see how you can prevale with her, while I go to the other sister. For after we shall have our hands full to defend our selves, if Basilius hap to besiege us. But remembring herself, she turned back, & asked him what he woulde have done with Zelmane, since nowe he might be revenged of his hurt. Nothing but honorably, answered Amphialus, having deserved no other of me, especially being (as I heare) greatly cherishd of Philoclea. And therefore I could wish they were lodged together. O no (said Cecropia) company confirmes resolutio, & lonelines breeds a werines of ones thoughts, and so a sooner consenting to reasonable provers.
Amphialus addressing him to Philoclea. * Her melancholy habit.  
His humble suit.  * Her pitiful answer:  * and his compassionate reply.  * Their parting with cold comfort.

But Amphialus (taking of his mother Philoclea knives, which he kept as a reliquary, since she had worn them) got up, and calling for his richest apparel, nothing seemed sumptuous enough for his mistress's eyes: and that which was costly, he feared were not daintie: and though the invention were delicat, he misdoubted the making. As careful he was too of the colour; lest if gay, he might seem to glorify in his injury, and her wrong; if mourning, it might strike some evil presage unto her of her fortune. At length he took a garment more rich than glaring, the ground being black velvet, richly embroidered with great pearle, & precious stones, but they set so among certaine tuffs of cypres, that the cypres was like blacke cloud, through which the starrs might yeeld a darke luster. About his necke he ware a brode & gorgeous coller; whereof the pieces enterchangeably answering; the one was of Diamonds and pearle, set with a white enamell, so as by the cunning of the workman it seemed like a shining ice, and the other piece being of Rubies, and Opalles, had a fierie glistring, which he thought pictured the two passions of Feare and Desire, wherein he was enchayned. His hurt (not yet fully well) made him a little halt, but he strave to give the best grace he could unto his halting.

And in that sort he went to Philoclea chamber: whome he found (because her chamber was over-lightsome) sitting of that side of her bedde which was from the windowe; which did cast such a shadow upon her, as a good Painter woulde bestowe uppon Venus, when under the trees she bewayled the murder of Adonis: her handes and fingers (as it were) indented one within the other: her shoulder leaning to her beds head, and over her head a scarfe, which did eclipse almost halfe her eyes, which under it fixed their beames upon the wall by, with so steddie a maner, as if in that place they might well chaunge, but not mende their object: and so remayned they a good while after his comming in, he not daring to trouble her, nor
she perceyving him, till that (a little varying her thoughts something quickening her senses) she heard him as he happed to stirre his upper garment: and perceyving him, rose up, with a demeanure, where in the booke of Beautie there was nothing to be read but Sorrow: for Kindnesse was blotted out, and Anger was never there.

3 But Amphialus that had entrusted his memorie with long and forcible speeches, found it so locked up in amazement, that he could pike nothing out of it, but the beseeching her to take what was done in good part, and to assure herselfe there was nothing but honour meant unto her person. But she making no other aunswere, but letting her handes fall one from the other, which before were joyned (with eyes something cast aside, and a silent sigh) gave him to understande, that considering his doings, she thought his speech as full of incongruitie, as her aunswere would be voyde of purpose: whereupon he kneeling downe, and kissing her hande, (which she suffered with a countenaunce witnessing captivitie, but not kindnesse) he besought her to have pitie of him, whose love went beyonde the boundes of conceite; much more of uttering: that in her handes the ballance of his life or death did stande; whereto the least motion of hers would serve to determine, she being indeede the mistresse of his life, and he eternall slave; and with true vehemencie besought her that he might heare her speake, whereupon she suffered her sweete breath to turne it selfe into these kind of words.

4 Alas cousin, (saide she) what shall my tongue be able to doo, which is infoumed by the eares one way, and by the eyes another? You call for pittie, and use crueltie; you say, you love me, and yet do the effectes of enmitie. You affirme your death is in my handes, but you have brought me to so neere a degree to death, as when you will, you may lay death upon me: so that while you say I am mistresse of your life, I am not mistresse of mine owne. You entitle your selfe my slave, but I am sure I am yours. If then violence, injurie, terror, and depriving of that which is more dear then life it selfe, libertie, be fit orators for affection, you may expect that I will be easily persuaded. But if the nearesnesse of our kinred breede any remorse in you, or there be any such thing in you, which you call love towarde.
me, then let not my fortune be disgraced with the name of imprisonment: let not my hart waste it selfe by being vexed with feeling evill, and fearing worse. Let not me be a cause of my parents wofull destruction; but restore me to my selfe; and so doing I shall account I have receyved my selfe of you. And what I say for my selfe, I say for my deare sister, and my friend Zelmane: for I desire no wel being, without they may be partakers. With that her teares rained downe from her heavenly eyes, and seemed to water the sweet and beautifull flowers of her face.

But Amphialus was like the poore woman, who loving a tame Doe she had, above all earthly things, having long played withall, and made it feede at her hand and lappe, is constrained at length by famine (all her flocke being spent, and she fallen into extreme poverty) to kill the Deare, to sustaine her life. Manie a pitifull looke doth she cast upon it, and many a time doth she draw backe her hand before she can give the stroke. For even so Amphialus by a hunger-sterved affection, was compelled to offer this injurie, and yet the same affection made him with a tormenting griefe, thinke unkindnesse in himselfe, that he could finde in his hart any way to restraine her freedome. But at length, neither able to grant, nor deny, he thus answered her. Deare ladie (said he) I will not say unto you (how justly soever I may do it) that I am neither author, nor accessarie unto this your withholding. For since I do not redres it, I am as faulty as if I had begun it. But this I protest unto you (and this protestation of mine, let the heavens heare, and if I lie, let them answer me with a deadly thunderbolt) that in my soule I wish I had never seene the light, or rather, that I had never had a father to beget such a child, the that by my meanes those eyes should overflow their owne beauties, then by my meanes the skie of your vertue should be overclowded with sorrow. But woe is me, most excellent Ladie, I finde my selfe most willing to obey you: neither truely doo mine eares receave the least word you speak, with any lesse reverence, then as absolute, and unresistable commaundements. But alas, that Tyrant Love, (which now possesseth the holde of all my life and reason) will no way suffer it. It is Love, it is Love, not I, which disobey you. What then shall I say? but that I, who am redie to lie under your feete, to venture, nay to loose my life at your least
commandement: I am not the staye of your freedome, but Love, Love, which ties you in your owne knots. It is you your selfe, that imprison your selfe: it is your beautie which makes these castle-walles embrace you: it is your owne eyes, which reflect upon themselves this injurie. Then is there no other remedie, but that you some way vouchsafe to satisfie this Loves vehemencie; which (since it grewe in your selfe) without question you shall finde it (far more then I) tractable.

But with these wordes Philoclea fell to so extreame a quaking, and her lively whitenesse did degenerate to so dead a palenesse, that Amphialus feared some daungerous traunce: so that taking her hande, and feelinge that it (which was woonte to be one of the chiefe firebrands of Cupid) had all the sense of it wrapt up in coldnes, he began humblie to beseech her to put away all feare, and to assure herselfe upon the vowe he made thereof unto God, and her selfe, that the uttermost forces he would ever employ to conquere her affection, should be Desire, and Desert. That promise brought Philoclea againe to her selfe, so that slowly lifting up her eyes upon him, with a countenaunce ever courteous, but then languishing, she tolde him, that he should doo well to do so, if indeede he had ever tasted what true love was: for that where now she did beare him good will, she should (if he tooke any other way) hate, and abhor the very thought of him: offering him withall, that though his mother had taken away her knives, yet the house of Death had so many doores, as she would easilie flie into it, if ever she fouunde her honor endaungered.

Amphialus having the colde ashes of Care cast upon the coales of Desire, leaving some of his mothers Gentlewomen to waite upon Philoclea, himselfe indeede a prisoner to his prisoner, and making all his authoritie to be but a footestooole to Humblenes, went from her to his mother. To whom with words which Affection endited, but Amazement uttered, he delivered what had passed betwene him and Philoclea: beseeching her to trie what her perswasions could doo with her, while he gave order for all such things as were necessarie against such forces, as he looked dayly Basilius would bring before his castle. His mother bade him quiette him selfe, for she doubted not to take fitte times. But that the best way was, first to let her owne Passion a little tire it selfe.

So they calling Clinias, and some other of their counsell, advised upon their present affairs. First, he dispatched privat letters to al those principall Lords and gentlemen of the country, who he thought either alliance, or friendship to himselfe might drawe; with speciall motions from the generall consideration of duetie: not omitting all such, whom either youthfull age, or youth-like mindes did fill with unlimited desires: besides such, whom any discontentment made hungry of change, or an over-spended wante, made want a civill warre: to each (according to the counsell of his mother) conforming himselfe after their humors. To his friends, friendlines; to the ambitious, great expectations; to the displeased, revenge; to the greedie, spoyle: wrapping their hopes with such cunning, as they rather seemed given over unto them as partakers: then promises sprong of necessitie. Then sent he to his mothers brother, the King of Argos: but he was as then so over-laide with warre himselfe, as from thence he could attend small succour.

But because he knewe, how violently rumors doo blow the sailes of popular judgemēts, & how few there be, that can discerne betweene trueth and truthlikenes, betweene showes and substance; he caused a justification of this his action to be written, wherof were sowed abroad many copies, which with some glosses of probabilitie, might hide indeede the foulenes of his treason; and from true common-places, fetch downe most false applications. For, beginning how much the duetie which is owed to the countrie, goes beyond all other dueties, since in it selfe it contene them all, and that for the respect therof, not onely all tender respects of kinred, or whatsoever other friendshippes, are to be laide aside, but that even long-helde opinions (rather builded upon a secrete of governement, then any ground of truthe) are to be forsaken. He fell by degrees to shew, that since the ende whereunto any thing is directed, is ever to be of more noble reckning, then the thing thereto directed:

AA 2

371
that therefore, the weale-publicke was more to be regarded, then any person or magistrate that thereunto was ordained. The feeling consideration whereof, had moved him (though as nere of kinne to Basilius as could be, yet) to set principally before his eyes, the good estate of so many thousands, over whom Basilius raigned: rather then so to hoodwinke himselfe with affection, as to suffer the realme to runne to manifest ruine. The care whereof, did kindly appertaine to those, who being subalterne magistrates and officers of the crowne, were to be employed as fro the Prince, so for the people; and of all other, especiallie himselfe, who being descended of the Royall race, and next heire male, Nature had no soner opened his eyes, but that the soyle where-upon they did looke, was to looke for at his hands a continuall carefulnes: which as fro his childhood he had ever caried; so now finding that his uncle had not only givé over al care of government, but had put it into the hands of Philanax, (a man neither in birth comparable to many, nor for his corrupt, prowde, and partiall dealing, liked of any) but beside, had set his daughters (in whom the whole estate, as next heires thereunto, had no lesse interest the himselfe) in so unfit & il-guarded a place, as it was not only dagerous for their persons, but (if they should be conveyed to any forraine country) to the whole common-wealth pernicious: that therfore he had brought them into this strög castle of his, which way, if it might seem strange, they were to consider, "that new necessities require new remedies: but there they should be served & honored as belonged to their greatnes, until by the generall assembly of the estates, it should be determined how they should to their best (both private, and publique) advantage be matched; vowing all faith & duty both to the father & children, never by him to be violated. But if in the meane time, before the estates could be assēbled, he were assailed, he would the for his own defence take armes: desiring all, that either tendred the dangerous case of their country, or in their harts loved justice, to defend him in this just actiō. And if the Prince should commaund them otherwise, yet to know, that wherein he was no more to be obeied, then if he should call for poison to hurt himself withall: since all that was done, was done for his service, howsoever he might (seduced by Philanax) interprete of it: he protesting, that what soever he should doo
for his owne defence, should be against Philanax, & no way against Basilius.

To this effect, amplified with arguments and examples, and painted with rhetorical colours, did he sow abroad many discourses: which as they prevayled with some of more quicke then sounde conceipte, to runne his fortune with him; so in many did it breed a coolenesse, to deale violently against him, and a false-minded neutralitie to expect the issue. But besides the waies he used to weaken the adverse partie, he omitted nothing for the strengthening of his owne. The chiefe trust whereof (because he wanted men to keepe the field) he reposed in the suretie of his castle; which at lest would winne him much time, the mother of many mutations. To that therefore he bent his outward & inward eyes, striving to make Art strive with Nature, to whether of them two that fortification should be most beholding. The seat Nature bestowed, but Arte gave the building: which as his rocky hardnesse would not yeeld to undermining force, so to opē assaults he tooke counsell of skill, how to make all approches, if not impossible, yet difficult; as well at the foot of the castle, as round about the lake, to give unquiet lodgings to the, whom onely enmitie would make neighbors. Then omitted he nothing of defence, as wel simple defence, as that which did defend by offending, fitting instrumēts of mischiefe to places, whence the mischiefe might be most liberally bestowed. Nether was his smallest care for viōtuals, as wel for the providing that which should suffice both in store & goodnesse, as in well preserving it, and wary distributing it, both in quantitie, and qualitie; spending that first which would keepe lest.

But wherein he sharpned his wits to the pearcingest point, was touching his men (knowing them to be the weapon of weapons, & master-spring (as it were) which makes all the rest to stir; and that therefore in the Arte of man stood the quint-essence, & ruling skill of all prosperous governement, either peaceable, or military) he chose in number as many as without pestring (and so daunger of infection) his viōtuall would seem for two yeare to maintaine; all of hable bodies, and some few of able mindes to direct, not seeking many commaunders, but contenting himselfe, that the multitude should have obeying wills, every one knowing whom he should commaund, and
whom he should obey, the place where, and the matter where-in; distributing each office as neere as he could, to the disposition of the person that should exercise it: knowing no love, daunger, nor discipline can sodainly alter an habite in nature. Therefor would he not employ the stil mā to a shifting practise, nor the liberall man to be a dispenser of his victuals, nor the kind-harted man to be a punisher: but would exercise their vertues in sorts, where they might be profitable, employing his chief care to know thē all particularly, & throughly, regarding also the cōstitutiō of their bodies; some being able better to abide watching, some hüger, some labour, making his benefit of ech hability, & not forcing beyond power. Time to every thing by just proportiō he allotted, & as well in that, as in every thing els, no small errour winckt at, lest greater should be animated. Even of vices he made his profite, making the cowardly Clīniāς to have care of the watch, which he knew his own feare would make him very wakefully performe. And before the siege began, he himselfe caused rumors to be sowed, and libels to be spread against himselfe, fuller of mallice, then witty persuasion: partly, to knowe those that would be apt to stumble at such motions, that he might cull them from the faithfuller band; but principally, because in necessitie they should not know when any such thing were in earnest attempted, whether it were, or not, of his owne invention. But even then (before the enemies face came neere to breed any terrore) did he exercise his men dayly in all their charges, as if Daunger had presently presented his most hideous presence: him selke rather instructing by example, then precept; being neither more sparing in travaile, nor spēding in diet, then the meanest souldier: his hand and body disdaining no base matters, nor shrinking from the heavy.

5 The onely ods was, that when others tooke breath, he sighed; and when others rested, he crost his armes. For Love passing thorow the pikes of Daüger, & tumbling it selfe in the dust of Labour, yet still made him remember his sweete desire, and beautifull image. Often when he had begun to commaund one, somewhat before halfe the sentence were ended, his inward guest did so entertaine him, that he would breake it of, and a prettie while after end it, when he had (to the marvaile of the standers by) sent himself in to talke with his own thoughts.
sometimes when his hand was lifted up to some thing, as if with the sight of Gorgons head he had bene sodainely turned into a stone, so would he there abide with his eyes planted, and handes lifted, till at length, comming to the use of himself, he would looke about whether any had perceived him; then would he accuse, and in himselfe condemne all those wits, that durst affirme Idlenesse to be the well-spring of Love. O, would he say, al you that affect the title of wisdome, by ungratefull scorning the ornaments of Nature, am I now piping in a shaddow? or doom slouthfull feathers now enwrap me? Is not hate before me, and doubtse behinde me? is not daunger of the one side, and shame of the other? And doom I not stande upon paine, and travaile, and yet over all, my affection triumphes? The more I stirre about urgent affaires, the more me thinks the very stirring breeds a breath to blow the coales of my love: the more I exercise my thoughts, the more they encrease the appetite of my desires. O sweet Philoclea (with that he would cast up his eies wherein some water did appeare, as if they would wash themselves against they should see her) thy heavenly face is my Astronomie; thy sweet vertue, my sweet Philosophie: let me profite therein, and fare-well all other cogitations. But alas, my mind misgives me, for your planets beare a contrarie aspect unto me. Woe, woe is me, they threaten my destruction: and whom doom they threaten this destruction? even him that loves them; and by what means will they destroy, but by loving them? O deare (though killing) eyes, shall death head his darte with the golde of Cupids arrowe? Shall death take his ayme from the rest of Beautie? O beloved (though hating) Philoclea, how if thou beest mercifull, hath crueltie stolne into thee? Or how if thou beest cruel, doth crueltie looke more mercifull then ever Mercie did? Or alas, is it my destinie that makes Mercie cruel? Like an evill vessell which turns sweete licour to sowernes; so when thy grace falls upon me, my wretched constitution makes it become fiercenesse. Thus would he exercise his eloquence, when she could not heare him, and be dumbe-striken, when her presence gave him fit occasion of speaking: so that his witte could finde out no other refuge, but the comfort and counsell of his mother, desiring her (whose thoughts were unperplexed) to use for his sake the most prevailing manners of intercession.
CHAP. 5.

1 Suttle Cecropia visites sad Philoclea. 2 The shamelesse Aunts shrewd temptations to love and mariage. The modest neeces maidenly resistance.

1 Cecropia seing her sonnes safetie depende thereon, (though her pride much disdained the name of a desire) tooke the charge upon her, not doubting the easie conquest of an unexpert virgin, who had alreadie with subtiltie and impudencie begun to undermine a monarchy. Therfore, waighing Philocleas resolutions by the counterpease of her own youthful thoughts, which she then called to minde, she doubted not at least to make Philoclea receive the poyson distilled in sweete liquour, which she with little disguising had drunke up thirstily. Therefore she went softly to Philocleas chamber, & peeping through the side of the doore, then being a little open, she sawe Philoclea sitting lowe upon a cushion, in such a given-over manner, that one would have thought, silence, solitarinesse, and melancholie were come there, under the ensigne of mishap, to conquere delight, and drive him from his naturall seate of beautie: her teares came dropping downe like raine in Sunshine, and she not taking heede to wipe the teares, they ranne downe upon her cheekes, and lips, as upon cherries which the dropping tree bedeweth. In the dressing of her haire and apparell, she might see neither a careful arte, nor an arte of carelesnesse, but even left to a neglecdted chaunce, which yet coulde no more unperfect her perfections, then a Die anie way cast, could loose his squarenesse.

2 Cecropia (stirred with no other pitie, but for her son) came in, and haling kindnesse into her countenance, What ayles this sweete Ladie, (said she) will you marre so good eyes with weeping? shall teares take away the beautie of that complexion, which the women of Arcadia wish for, and the men long after? Fie of this peevish sadnesse; in sooth it is untimely for your age. Looke upon your owne bodie, and see whether it deserve to pine away with sorrow: see whether you will have these hands (with that she tooke one of her hands and kissing it, looked uppon it as if she were enamoured with it) fade from
their whitenesse, which makes one desire to touch them; &
their softnesse, which rebounds againe a desire to looke on them,
and become drie, leane and yellowe, and make everie bodie
woonder at the chaunge, and say, that sure you had used some
arte before, which nowe you had left? for if the beauties had
beene naturall, they woulde never so soone have beene blemished.
Take a glasse, and see whether these tears become your eies:
although, I must cöfesse, those eies are able to make tears
comely. Alas Madame (answered Philoclea) I know not whether
my teares become mine eies, but I am sure mine eies thus
beteared, become my fortune. Your fortune (saide Cecropia) if
she could see to attire herselfe, would put on her best raiments.
For I see, and I see it with griefe, and (to tell you true) un-
kindnes: you misconster every thing, that only for your sake is
attempted. You thinke you are offended, and are indeed de-
fended: you esteeme your selfe a prisoner, and are in truth a
mistres: you feare hate, and shall find love. And truely, I had
a thing to say to you, but it is no matter, since I find you are
so obstinatly melancholy, as that you woo his fellowship: I will
spare my paines, and hold my peace: And so staied indeede,
thinking Philoclea would have had a female inquisitiveness of
the matter. But she, who rather wished to unknowe what she
knewe, then to burden her hart with more hopeles knowledge,
only desired her to have pitty of her, and if indeed she did meane
her no hurt, then to grant her liberty: for else the very griefe
& feare, would prove her unappointed executioners. For that
(said Cecropia) beleve me upö the faith of a kings daughter, you
shall be free, so soone as your freedome may be free of mortal
däger, being brought hither for no other cause, but to prevent
such mischieves as you know not of. But if you thinke indeed
to winne me to have care of you, even as of mine owne
daughter, then lend your eares unto me, & let not your mind
arme it self with a wilfulnesse to be flexible to nothing. But
if I speake reason, let Reason have his due reward, persuasion.
Then sweet neece (said she) I pray you presuppose, that now,
evë in the midst of your agonies, which you paint unto your
selfe most horrible, wishing with sighes, & praying with vowes,
for a soone & safe deliverie. Imagin neece (I say) that some
heavenly spirit should appeare unto you, and bid you follow him
through the doore, that goes into the garden, assuring you, that
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

you should therby return to your deare mother, and what other delights soever your mind esteemes delights: would you (sweet neece) would you refuse to follow him, & say, that if he led you not through the chiefe gate, you would not enjoy your over-desired liberty? Would you not drinke the wine you thirst for, without it were in such a glasse, as you especially fancied? tel me (deare neece:) but I wil answer for you, because I know your reason and will is such, as must needs conclude, that such nicenesse can no more be in you, to disgrace such a mind, then disgracefulnessse can have any place in so faultles a beauty. Your wisdom would assuredly determin, how the marke were hit, not whether the bow were of Ewe or no, wherein you shot. If this be so, and thus sure (my deare neece) it is, then (I pray you) imagin, that I am that same good Angel, who grieving in your griefe, and in truth not able to suffer, that bitter sighs should be sent forth with so sweete a breath, am come to lead you, not only to your desired, and imagined happines, but to a true and essentiall happines; not only to liberty, but to libertie with commandement. The way I will shew you (which if it be not the gate builded hither-to in your private choise, yet shall it be a doore to bring you through a garden of pleasures, as sweet as this life can bring forth; nay rather, which makes this life to be a life: (My son,) let it be no blemish to him that I name him my son, who was your fathers own nephew: for you know I am no smal kings daughter,) my sonne (I say) farre passing the neerness of his kinred, with the neerness of good-will, and striving to match your matchlesse beautie with a matchlesse affection, doth by me present unto you the full enjoying of your liberty, so as with this gift you wil accept a greater, which is, this castell, with all the rest which you knowe he hath, in honorable quantitie; and will confirme his gift, and your receipt of both, with accepting him to be yours. I might say much both for the person and the matter; but who will crie out the Sun shines? It is so manifest a profit unto you, as the meanest judgement must straight apprehend it: so farre is it from the sharpenesse of yours, therof to be ignorant. Therfore (sweet neece) let your gratefulnes be my intercession, & your gentlenesse my eloquence, and let me cary comfort to a hart which greatly needs it. _Philoclea_ looked upon her, & cast downe her
eie again. Aunt (said she) I would I could be so much a mistres of my owne mind, as to yeele to my cousens vertuous request: for so I construe of it. But my hart is already set (and staying a while on that word, she brought foorth after wards) to lead a virgins life to my death: for such a vow I have in my selfe devoutly made. The heavens prevent such a mischiefe (said Cecropia.) A vowe, quoth you? no, no, my deere neece, Nature, when you were first borne, vowed you a woma, & as she made you child of a mother, so to do your best to be mother of a child: she gave you beautie to move love; she gave you wit to know love; she gave you an excellët body to reward love: which kind of liberall rewarding is crowned with unspeakable felicitie. For this, as it bindeth the receiver, so it makes happy the bestower: this doth not impoverish, but enrich the giver. O the sweet name of a mother: O the cösort of cöforts, to see your childrë grow up, in whö you are (as it were) eternized: if you could conceive what a hart-tickling joy it is to see your own little ones, with awfull love come running to your lap, and like little models of your selfe, still cary you about them, you would thinke unkindnes in your own thoughts, that ever they did rebell against the mean unto it. But perchace I set this blessednes before your eies, as Captains do victorie before their soldiers, to which they might come through many paines, grieues & dangers. No, I am cötent you shrink from this my counsel, if the way to come unto it, be not most of all pleasant. I know not (answered the sweet Philolea, fearing least silence would offend her sullennes) what contentment you speake of: but I am sure the best you can make of it, (which is mariage) is a burdensome yoke. Ah, deere neece (said Cecropia) how much you are deceived? A yoke indeed we all beare, laid upö us in our creation, which by mariage is not increased, but thus farre eased, that you have a yoke-fellow to help to draw through the cloddy cumbers of this world. O widow-nights, beare witnes with me of the differ ence. How often alas do I embrace the orfan-side of my bed, which was wöt to be imprinted by the body of my deare husband, & with teares acknowledge, that I now enjoy such a liberty as the banished mä hath; who may, if he list, wäder over the world, but is ever restrained frö his most delightful home? that I have now such a liberty as the seeled dov hath,
which being first deprived of eies, is then by the falconer cast off? For beleve me, neece, beleve me, mans experieéce is womas best eie-sight. Have you ever seene a pure Rosewater kept in a chrystal glas; how fine it lokes, how sweet it smels, while that beautifull glasse imprisons it? Breake the prison, and let the water take his owne course, doth it not imprace dust, and loose all his former sweetenesse, and fairenesse? Truly so are we, if we have not the stay, rather then the restraint of Cristalline mariage. My hart meltas to thinke of the sweete comfortes, I in that happie time received, when I had never cause to care, but the care was doubled: whē I never rejoiced, but that I saw my joy shine in anotheras eies. What shall I say of the free delight, which the hart might embrace, without the accusing of the inward conscience, or feare of outward shame? and is a solitary life as good as this? then can one string make as good musicke as a consort: thē can one colour set forth a beautie. But it may be, the generall consideration of mariage dooth not so much dislike you, as the applying of it to him. He is my sōne, I must confesse, I see him with a mothers eyes, which if they doo not much deceive me, he is no such one, over whom Contempt may make any just chalenge. He is comely, he is noble, he is rich; but that which in it selve should carie all comelinesse, nobilitie, and riches, he loves you; and he loves you, who is beloved of others. Drive not away his affection (sweete Ladie) and make no other Ladie hereafter proudly bragge, that she hath robbed you of so faithfull and notable a servant. *Philoclea* heard some pieces of her speches, no otherwise then one doth when a tedious pratler cōbers the hearing of a delightful musicke. For her thoughts had left her eares in that captivitie, and conveied themselves to behold (with such eies as imagination could lend thē) the estate of her Zel-mane: for whō how wel she thought many of those sayings might have ben used with a farre more gratefull acceptation. Therefore listing not to dispute in a matter whereof her selfe was resolute, and desired not to enforme the other, she onely told her, that whilest she was so captived, she could not conceive of any such persuasions (though never so reasonable) any otherwise, then as constraints: and as constraints must needs evē in nature abhor thē, which at her libertie, in their owne force of reason, might more prevaile with her: and so faine would have
returned the strength of Cecropias persuasions, to have procured freedome.

CHAP. 6.


But neither her witty wordes in an enemie, nor those wordes, made more then eloquent with passing through such lips, could prevalie in Cecropia, no more then her persuasions could winne Philoclea to disavowe her former vowe, or to leave the prisoner Zelmane, for the commaunding Amphialus. So that both sides being desirous, and neither graunter, they brake of conference. Cecropia sucking up more and more spite out of her deniall, which yet for her sonnes sake, she disguised with a visarde of kindnes, leaving no office unperfourmed, which might either witnes, or endeare her sonnes affection. Whatsoever could be imagined likely to please her, was with liberall diligence perfourmed: Musickes at her windowe, & especially such Musickes, as might (with dolefull embassage) call the mind to thinke of sorow; and thinke of it with sweetnes; with ditties so sensiblie expressing Amphialus case, that everie worde seemed to be but a diversifying of the name of Amphialus. Daily presents, as it were oblations, to pacifie an angrie Deitie, sent unto her: wherein, if the workmanship of the forme, had striven with the sumptuousnes of the matter, as much did the invention in the application, contende to have the chiefe excellencie: for they were as so many stories of his disgraces, & her perfection; where the richnes did invite the eyes, the fashion did entertaine the eyes, and the device did teach the eyes the present miserie of the presenter himselfe, awefully serviceable: which was the more notable, as his authoritie was manifest. And for the bondage wherein she lived, all meanes used to make knowne, that if it were a bondage, it was a bondage onely knitte in love-knots. But in harte already understanding no language but one, the Musicke wrought indeede a dolefulnes, but it was a dolefulnes to be in his power: the dittie intended for Amphialus,
she translated to Zelmane: the presents seemed so many tedious clogs of a thralled obligation: and his service, the more diligent it was, the more it did exprobrate (as she thought) unto her, her unworthy estate: that even he that did her service, had authoritie of commanding her, onely construing her servitude in his own nature, esteeming it a right, and a right bitter servitude: so that all their shots (how well soever levelled) being carried awrie from the marke, by the storme of her dislike, the Prince Amphialus affectionately languished, & Cecropia spitefullie cunning, disdained at the barrennes of their successes.

2 Which willingly Cecropia woulde have revenged, but that she sawe, her hurte could not be divided from her sonnes mischiefe: wherefore, she bethought her self to attempt Pamela, whose beautie being equall, she hoped, if she might be woon, that her sonnes thoughtes would rather rest on a beautifull gracefulnes, then still be tormented with a disdaining beautie. Wherfore, giving newe courage to her wicked inventions, and using the more industry, because she had mist in this, & taking even precepts of prevailing in Pamela, by her fayling in Philoclea, she went to her chamber, & (according to her own ungratious method of a subtile proceeding) stood listening at the dore, because that out of the circumstance of her present behauiour, there might kindly arise a fitte beginning of her intended discourse.

3 And so she might perceave that Pamela did walke up and down, full of deep (though patient) thoughts. For her look and countenance was setted, her pace soft, and almost still of one measure, without any passionate gesture, or violent motion: till at length (as it were) awaking, & strengthening her selfe, Well (said she) yet this is the best, & of this I am sure, that how soever they wrōg me, they cannot over-master God. No darknes blinds his eyes, no Jayle barres him out. To whome then else should I flie, but to him for succoure? And therewith kneeling down, euē in the same place where she stood, she thus said. O all-seeing Light, and eternal Life of all things, to whom nothing is either so great, that it may resist; or so small, that it is contemned: looke upon my miserie with thine eye of mercie, and let thine infinite power vouchsafe to limite out some proportion of deliverance unto me, as to thee shall seem most convenient. Let not injurie, o Lord, triumphe over me,
and let my faultes by thy handes be corrected, and make not mine unjuste enemie the minister of thy Justice. But yet, my God, if in thy wisdome, this be the aptest chastizement for my inexcusable follie; if this low bondage be fittest for my over-hie desires; if the pride of my not-inough humble harte, be thus to be broken, O Lord, I yeeld unto thy will, and joyfully embrace what sorrow thou wilt have me suffer. Onely thus much let me crave of thee, (let my craving, ô Lord, be accepted of thee, since even that proceeds from thee) let me crave, even by the noblest title, which in my greatest affliction I may give my selfe, that I am thy creature, & by thy goodnes (which is thy self) that thou wilt suffer some beame of thy Majestie so to shine into my mind, that it may still depende confidently upon thee. Let calamitie be the exercise, but not the overthrowe of my vertue: let their power prevale, but prevale not to destruction: let my greatnes be their praine: let my paine be the sweetnes of their revenge: let them (if so it seem good unto thee) vexe me with more and more punishment. But, ô Lord, let never their wickednes have such a hand, but that I may carie a pure minde in a pure bodie. (And pausing a while) And ô most gracious Lord (said she) what ever become of me, preserve the vertuous Musidorus.

The other parte Cecropia might well heare, but this latter 4 prayer for Musidorus, her hart helde it, as so jewel-like a treasure, that it would scarce trust her owne lippes withall. But this prayer, sent to heaven, from so heavenly a creature, with such a fervent grace, as if Devotion had borrowed her bodie, to make of it self a most beautifull representation; with her eyes so lifted to the skie-ward, that one would have thought they had begunne to flie thetherward, to take their place amog their felow stars; her naked hands raising up their whole length, & as it were kissing one another, as if the right had bene the picture of Zeale, and the left, of Humblenesse, which both united themselves to make their suites more acceptable. Lastly, all her senses being rather tokens then instruments of her inwarde motions, altogether had so straunge a working power, that even the harde-harted wickednesse of Cecropia, if it founde not a love of that goodnes, yet it felt an abashment at that goodnes; & if she had not a kindly remorse, yet had she an yrksome accusation of her owne naughtines, so that she
was put fro the biasse of her fore-intended lesson. For well she found there was no way at that time to take that mind, but with some, at lest, image of Vertue, and what the figure thereof was her hart knew not.

Yet did she prodigally spende her uttermost eloquence, leaving no argument unproved, which might with any force invade her excellent judgement: the justnes of the request being, but for marriage; the worthinesse of the suiter: then her owne present fortune, if she would not onely have amendment, but felicitie: besides falsely making her believe, that her sister would thinke her selfe happie, if now she might have his love which before she contemned: and obliquely touching, what daunger it should be for her, if her sonne should accept Philoclea in marriage, and so match the next heire apparant, she being in his powre: yet plentifully perjuring, how extremely her sonne loved her, and excusing the little shewes he made of it, with the dutifull respe¢t he bare unto her, & taking upo her selfe that she restrayned him, since she found she could set no limits to his passions. And as she did to Philoclea, so did she to her, with the tribute of gifts, seeke to bring her minde into servitude: and all other meanes, that might either establish a beholdingnesse, or at the lest awake a kindnes; doing it so, as by reason of their imprisonment, one sister knew not how the other was wooed; but each might thinke, that onely she was sought. But if Philoclea with sweete and humble dealing did avoid their assaults, she with the Majestic of Vertue did beate them of.

CHAP. 7.

1 An Allarme to the Amphialians. 2 Base cowardise in Clinias; 3 brave courage imaged in Amphialus. 4 His onset with the death of two friendes his foes. 5 The horror of Mars-his game. 6 Two deaths taken where they were not lookt for, the third delayed where it was expected.

Ut this day their speach was the sooner broken of, by reason that he, who stood as watche upon the top of the keepe, did not onely see a great dust arise (which the earth sent
up, as if it would strive to have clowdes as well as the aire) but
might spie sometimes, especially when the dust (wherein the
naked winde did apparaile it self) was caried aside from them,
the shining of armour, like flashing of lightning, wherwith
the clowdes did seeme to be with child; which the Sunne
guilding with his beames, it gave a sight delightfull to any, but
to them that were to abide the terrour. But the watch gave a
quick Alarum to the soldiers within, whome practise already
having prepared, began each, with unabashed hartes, or at lest
countenaunces, to looke to their charge, or obedience, which
was allotted unto them.

Onely Clinias and Amphialus did exceed the bounds of 2
mediocrity: the one in his naturall coldnesse of cowardise,
the other in heate of courage. For Clinias (who was bold
only in busie whisperings, and even in that whisperingnes
rather indeed confident in his cunning, that it should not be
bewraied, then any way bolde, if ever it should be bewrayed)
now that the enemy gave a dreadful aspect unto the castle, his
eyes saw no terror, nor eare heard any martiall sounde, but
that they multiplied the hideousnesse of it to his mated minde.
Before their comming he had many times felt a dreadfull ex-
pecication, but yet his minde (that was willing to ease it selfe of
the burden of feare) did somtimes feine unto it selfe possibility
of let; as the death of Basilius, the discord of the nobility, &
(when other cause fayled him) the nature of chaunce served as
a cause unto him: and sometimes the hearing other men speake
valiantly, and the quietnesse of his unassailed senses, would
make himselfe beleve, that he durst do something. But now,
that present daunger did display it selfe unto his eye, & that a
daungerous dooing must be the onely meane to prevët the
dager of suffering, one that had marked him would have judged,
that his eies would have run into him, & his soule out of him;
so unkindly did either take a sent of danger. He thought the
lake was too shallow, & the walles too thin: he misdoubted
ech mans treason, and conjectured every possibilitie of mis-
fortune, not onely fore-casting likely perils, but such as all the
planets together could scarce have conspired: & already began
to arme him selfe, though it was determined he should tarrie
within doores; and while he armed himselfe, imagined in what
part of the vault he might hide himselfe if the enimies wonne

S. A.  BB  385
the castle. Desirous he was that every body should do valiantly, but himselfe; and therefore was afraid to shew his feare, but for very feare would have hid his feare; lest it should discôfort others: but the more he sought to disguize it, the more the unsutablenes of a weake broke voice to high brave wordes, and of a pale shaking countenance to a gesture of animating, did discover him.

3 But quite contrarily Amphiatus, who before the enimies came was carefull, providently diligent, and not somtimes without doubting of the issue; now the nearer danger approched (like the light of a glow-worme) the lesse still it seemed: and now his courage began to boile in choler, and with such impatience to desire to powre out both upô the enimie, that he issued presently into certaine boates he had of purpose, and carying with him some choise men, went to the fortresse he had upô the edge of the lake, which he thought would be the first thing, that the enimie would attempt; because it was a passage, which cômanding all that side of that country, & being lost would stop victuall, or other supply, that might be brought into the castle: & in that fortresse having some force of horsemen, he issued out with two hundred horse, & five hûdred footmen, embushed his footmē in the falling of a hill, which was over-shadowed with a wood, he with his hûsdre went a quarter of a mile further; aside had of which he might perceave the many troupes of the enimie, who came but to take view where best to encampe themselves.

4 But as if the sight of the enimie had bene a Magnes stone to his courage he could not cûtaine himself, but shewing his face to the enimie, & his backe to his souldiers, used that action, as his onely oration, both of denouncing warre to the one, and persuading help of the other. Who faithfully folowing an example of such authoritie, they made the earth to grone under their furious burden, and the enimies to begin to be angry with thē, whom in particular they knew not. Among whom there was a young man, youngest brother to Philanax, whose face as yet did not bewray his sex, with so much as shew of haire; of a minde having no limits of hope, nor knowing why to feare; full of jollitie in conversation, and lately grown a Lover. His name was Agenor, of all that armie the most beautifull: who having ridden in sportfull conversatiō among the foremost, all
armed saving that his beaver was up, to have his breath in more freedome, seing Amphialus come a pretty way before his compañy, neither staying the cómaundement of the captaine, nor recking whether his face were armed, or no, set spurs to his horse, & with youthfull bravery casting his staffe about his head, put it then in his rest, as carefull of comely carying it, as if the marke had ben but a ring, & the lookers on Ladies. But Amphialus launce was already come to the last of his descending line, and began to make the full point of death against the head of this young Gentleman, when Amphialus perceyving his youth and beautie, Compassion so rebated the edge of Choller, that he spared that faire nakednesse, and let his stiffe fall to Agenors vamplat: so as both with brave breaking should hurtlesie have perfourmed that match, but that the pittilesse launce of Amphialus (angry with being broken) with an unlucky counterbuffe full of unsparing splinters, lighted upon that face farre fitter for the combats of Venus; geving not onely a suddaine, but a fowle death, leaving scarcely any tokens of his former beautie: but his hâds abandoning the reynes, and his thighes the saddle, he fell sidewarde from the horse. Which sight comming to Leontius, a deere friende of his, who in vayne had lamentably cried unto him to stay, when he saw him beginne his careere, it was harde to say, whether pittie of the one, or revenge of the other, helde as then the soveraigntie in his passions. But while he directed his eye to his friende, and his hande to his enimie, so wrongly- consorted a power could not resist the ready minded force of Amphialus: who perceyving his il-directed direction against him, so paide him his debt before it was lent, that he also fell to the earth, onely happy that one place, & one time, did finish both their loves and lives together.

But by this time there had bene a furious meeting of either side: where after the terrible salutation of warlike noyse, the shaking of handes was with sharpe weapons: some launces according to the mettall they mett, and skill of the guider, did staine themselves in bloud; some flew up in pieces, as if they would threaten heaven, because they fayled on earth. But their office was quickly inherited, either by (the Prince of weapons) the sworde, or by some heavy mase, or biting axe; which hunting still the weakest chase, sought ever to light

BB 2

387
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

there, where smallest resistâce might worse prevent mischief. The clashing of armour, and crushing of staves; the justling of bodies, the resounding of blowes, was the first part of that ill-agreeing musicke, which was beautified with the griselinesse of wounds, the rising of dust, the hideous falles, and grones of the dying. The verie horses-angrie in their maisters anger, with love and obedience brought foorth the effectts of hate and resistance, and with minds of servitude, did as if they affected glorie. Some lay deade under their dead maisters, whome unknighly wounds had unjustly punished for a faithfull dutie. Some lay uppon their Lordes by like accidents, and in death had the honour to be borne by them, whô in life they had borne. Some having lost their commandung burthens, ranne scattered about the field, abashed with the madnesse of man-kinde. The earth it selfe (woont to be a buriall of men) was nowe (as it were) buried with men: so was the face thereof hidden with deade bodies, to whome Death had come masked in diverse manners. In one place lay disinherited heades, dispossessed of their naturall seignories: in an other, whole bodies to see to, but that their harts wont to be bound all over so close, were nowe with deadly violence opened: in others, fowler deaths had ouglily displayed their trayling guttes. There lay armes, whose fingers yet mooved, as if they woulde feele for him that made them feele: and legges, which contrarie to common nature, by being discharged of their burthen, were growne heavier. But no swordre payed so large a tribute of soules to the eternall Kingdome, as that of Amphialus, who like a Tigre, from whome a companie of Woolves did seeke to ravish a newe gotten pray; so he (remembring they came to take away Philoclea) did labour to make valure, strength, hatred, and choller to answere the proportion of his love, which was infinit.

6 There died of his handes the olde knight Æschylus, who though by yeares might well have beene allowed to use rather the exercise of wisedome, then of courage; yet having a lustie bodie & a merrie hart, he ever tooke the summons of Time in jest, or else it had so creepingly stollen upon him, that he had heard scarcely the noise of his feete, and therefore was as fresh in apparell, and as forwarde in enterprises, as a farre yonger man: but nothing made him bolder, then a certaine prophecie
had beene tolde him, that he shoulde die in the armes of his sonne, and therefore feared the lesse the arme of an enemie. But nowe, when Amphialus sworde was passed through his throate, he thought himselfe abused; but that before he died, his sonne, indeede, seeing his father beginne to fall, helde him up in his armes, till a pitilesse souldier of the other side, with a mace brained him, making father and sonne become twinnes in their never againe dying birth. As for Drialus, Mennon, Nisus and Policrates; the first had his eyes cut out so, as he could not see to bid the neare following death welcome: the seconde had met with the same Prophet that olde Æschylus had, and having founde manie of his speeches true, beleeved this to, that he should never be killed, but by his owne companions: and therefore no man was more valiant then he against an enemie, no man more suspicios of his friends: so as he seemed to sleepe in securitie, when he went to a battell, and to enter into a battaile, when he began to sleepe, such guards he would set about his person; yet mistrusting the verie guards, that they would murther him. But nowe Amphialus helped to unriddle his doubts; for he overthrowing him from his horse, his owne companions comming with a fresh supplie, pressed him to death. Nisus grasping with Amphialus, was with a short dagger slaine. And for Policrates, while he shunned as much as he could, keeping onely his place for feare of punishment, Amphialus with a memorable blowe strake of his head, where, with the convulsions of death setting his spurre to his horse, he gave so brave a charge upon the enemie, as it grewe a proverbe, that Policrates was onely valiant, after his head was off. But no man escaped so well his handes as Pheibilus did: for he having long loved Philoclea, though for the meannes of his estate he never durst reveale it, nowe knowing Amphialus, setting the edge of a rivall upon the sworde of an enemie, he helde strong fight with him. But Amphialus had alreadie in the daungerousest places disarmed him, and was lifting up his sworde to sende him away from him, when he thinking indeede to die, O Philoclea (said he) yet this joyes me, that I die for thy sake. The name of Philoclea first staied his sworde, and when he heard him out, though he abhorde him much worse then before, yet could he not vouchsafe him the honour of dying for Philoclea, but turned his sword another way, doing him no
hurt for over-much hatred. But what good did that to poore Phebitus, if escaping a valiant hand, he was slaine by a base souliour, who seeing him so disarmed, thrust him through?

CHAP. 8.

The Basilians reembattelled \(^1\) first by Philanax, \(^4\) then by the blacke Knight. \(^2\) Ismenus slaine by Philanax. \(^8\) Philanax captived by Amphialus. \(^4\) The blacke Knights exploits. \(^6\) His encounter with Amphialus, parted by a by-blow. \(^6\) The Amphialians retrait, and departure of the blacke Knight.

Thus with the well-followed valure of Amphialus were the other almost overthrowne, when Philanax (who was the marshal of the army) came in, with newe force rening the almost decayed courage of his souldiers. For, crying to them (and asking them whether their backes or their armes were better fighters) he himselfe thrust into the presse, and making force and furie waite uppon discretion and governement, he might seeme a brave Lion, who taught his yong Lionets, how in taking of a pray, to joine courage with cunning. The Fortune (as if she had made chases inow of the one side of that bloody Teniscourt) went of the other side the line, making as many fall downe of Amphialus followers, as before had done of Philanaxis; they loosing the ground, as fast as before they had woon it, only leaving them to keepe it, who had lost themselves in keeping it. Then those that had killed, inherited the lot of those that had bene killed; and cruel Death made the lie quietly togethier, who most in their lives had sought to disquiet ech other; and many of those first overthrowne, had the comfort to see the murtherers overrun them to Charons ferrie.

Codrus, Ctesiphon, and Milo, lost their lives upon Philanax-his sword: but no bodies case was more pitied, then of a yong esquire of Amphialus, called Ismenus, who never abandoning his maister, and making his tender age aspire to actes of the strongest manhoode, in this time that his side was put to the worst, and that Amphialus-his valure was the onely stay of them from delivering themselves over to a shamefull flight, he
sawe his masters horse killed under him. Whereupon, asking no advise of no thought, but of faithfulnes and courage, he presently lighted from his owne horse, and with the helpe of some choise and faithfull servants, gat his master up. But in the multitude that came of either side, some to succour, some to save Amphialus, he came under the hande of Philanax: and the youth perceyving he was the man that did most hurt to his partie, (desirous eve to change his life for glorie) strake at him, as he rode by him, and gave him a hurt upon the leg, that made Philanax turn towards him; but seing him so yōg, & of a most lovely presence, he rather toke pity of him; meaning to make him prisoner, & the to give him to his brother Agenor to be his companion, because they were not much unlike, neither in yeeres, nor countenance. But as he loked down upon him with that thought, he spied wher his brother lay dead, & his friend Leontius by him, evē almost under the squiers feet. The sorowing not only his owne sorow, but the past-cofort sorow, which he fore-knew his mother would take, (who with many teares, & misgiving sighs had suffred him to go with his elder brother Philanax) blotted out all figures of pitie out of his minde, and putting foorth his horse (while Ismenus doubled two or three more valiant, then well set blowes) saying to himselfe, Let other mothers bewaile an untimely death as well as mine; he thrust him through. And the boy fearce though beautiful; & beautifull, though dying, not able to keepe his failing feete, fel downe to the earth, which he bit for anger, repining at his Fortune, and as long as he could resisting Death, which might seeme unwilling to; so long he was in taking away his yong struggling soule.

Philanax himselfe could have wished the blow ungiven, when he saw him fall like a faire apple, which some uncourteous bodie (breaking his bowe) should throwe downe before it were ripe. But the case of his brother made him forget both that, and himselfe: so as overhastily pressing uppon the retiring enemies, he was (ere he was aware) further engaged then his owne souldiers could relieve him; were being overthrownne by Amphialus, Amphialus glad of him, kept head aginst his enemies while some of his men caried away Philanax.

But Philanax-his men as if with the losse of Philanax they had lost the fountaine of their valure, had their courages so
dried up in fear; that they began to set honour at their backes, and to use the vertue of pacience in an untimely time: when into the presse comes (as hard as his horse, more afraid of the spurre, then the sword could carie him) a Knight in armor as darke as blacknes could make it, followed by none, and adorned by nothing; so far without authoritie that he was without knowledge. But vertue quickly made him knowne, and admiration bred him such authoritie, that though they of whose side he came knew him not, yet they all knew it was fitte to obey him: and while he was followed by the valiantest, he made way for the vilest. For, taking part with the besiegers, he made the Amphialians bloud serve for a caparison to his horse, and a decking to his armour. His arme no oftner gave blowes, then the blowes gave wounds, then the wounds gave deaths: so terrible was his force, and yet was his quicknes more forcible then his force, and his judgement more quick then his quicknes. For though the sword went faster then eyesight could follow it, yet his owne judgement went still before it. There died of his hand, Sarpedon, Plistonax, Strophilus, and Hippolitus, men of great prove in warres, and who had that day undertaken the guard of Amphialus. But while they sought to save him, they lost the fortresses that Nature had placed them in. Thē slew he Megalus, who was a little before proude, to see himselfe stained in the bloud of his enemies: but when his owne bloud came to be married to theirs, he then felt, that Crueltie dooth never enjoy a good cheape glorie. After him sent he Palemon, who had that daye vowed (with foolish braverie) to be the death of tenne: and nine already he had killed, and was carefull to performe his (almost performed) vowe, when the Blacke Knight helpt him to make up the tenth himselfe.

And now the often-changing Fortune began also to change the hewe of the batailles. For at the first, though it were terrible, yet Terror was deckt so bravelie with rich furniture, guilte swords, shining armours, pleasant pensils, that the eye with delight had scarce pleasure to be afraide: But now all universally defiled with dust, bloud, broken armours, mangled bodies, tooke away the maske, and sette foorth Horror in his owne horrible manner. But neither could danger be dreadfull to Amphialus—his undismayable courage, nor yet seeme ougly to him, whose truely-affected minde, did still paint it over with
the beautie of Philoclea. And therefore he, rather enflamed then troubled with the encrease of dangers, and glad to finde a woorthie subject to exercise his courage, sought out this newe Knight, whom he might easilie finde: for he, like a wanton rich man, that throwes down his neighbours houses, to make himselfe the better prospecte, so had his sword made him so spacious a roome, that Amphialus had more cause to wonder at the finding, then labour for the seeking: which, if it stirred hate in him, to see how much harme he did to the one side, it provoked as much æmulation in him, to perceave how much good he did to the other side. Therefore, they approaching one to the other, as in two beautifull folkes, Love naturally stirres a desire of joyning, so in their two courages Hate stirred a desire of triall. Then began there a combatte betwene them, worthy to have had more large listes, and more quiet beholders: for with the spurre of Courage, and the bitte of Respect, each so guided himselfe, that one might well see, the desire to overcome, made them not forget how to overcome: in such time & proportion they did employ their blowes, that none of Ceres servaunts coulde more cunningly place his flaire: while the lefte foote spurre set forwarde his owne horse, the right sette backward the contrarie horse, even sometimes by the advauntage of the enemies legge, while the lefte hande (like him that helde the sterne) guyded the horses obedient courage: All done in such order, that it might seeme, the minde was a right Prince indeede, who sent wise and diligent Lieutenants into each of those well governed partes. But the more they fought, the more they desired to fight; and the more they smarted, the lesse they felte the smarte: and now were like to make a quicke profe, to whom Fortune or Valour woulde seeme most friendly, when in comes an olde Governour of Amphialus, always a good Knight, and carefull of his charge; who giving a sore wounde to the blacke Knights thighe, while he thought not of him, with an other blowe slewe his horse under him. Amphialus cried to him, that he dishonoured him: You say well (answered the olde Knight) to stande now like a private souldier, setting your credite upon particular fighting, while you may see Basilius with all his hoste, is getting betwene you and your town. 

He looked that way, and found that true indeede, that the enemie was beginning to encompasse him about, and stoppe his
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

returner: and therefore causing the retreite to be sounded, his Governour ledde his men homewarde, while he kepte him selfe still hindmoste, as if hee had stoode at the gate of a sluse, to lette the streame goe, with such proportion, as shoulde seeme good unto him: and with so manfull discretion perfourmed it, that (though with losse of many of his men) he returned in him selfe safe, and content, that his enemies had felte, how sharpe the sworde couldie bite of Philooleas Lover. The other partie being sorie for the losse of Philanax, was yet sorrier when the blacke Knight could not be found. For he having gotten on a horse, whom his dying master had bequeathed to the world, finding himselfe sore hurt, and not desirous to be knowen, had in the time of the enemies retiring, retired away also: his thigh not bleeding bloud so fast, as his harte bledde revenge. But Baslius having attempted in vaine to barre the safe returne of Amphialius, encamped himselfe as strongly as he could, while he (to his grief) might heare the joy was made in the towne by his owne subjectes, that he had that day sped no better. For Amphialius (being well beloved of that people) when they sawe him not vanquished, they esteemed him as victorious, his youth setting a flourishing shew upon his worthinesse, and his great nobilitie ennobling his dangers.

CHAP. 9.

1 The Love-divining dreame of Amphialius song to Philoclea.
2 Philanax his captivitie, and deaths-doome, 3 for Philocleas sake turnde to life and libertie. 4 His loyall answere of his Lords intents. 5Cecropias artes to perswade the sisters.

But the first thing Amphialus did, being returned, was to visite Philoclea, and first presuming to cause his dreame to be song unto her (which he had seen the night before he fell in love with her) making a fine boy he had, accorde a prettie dolefulnes unto it. The song was this.

N ow was our heav'nly vaulte deprived of the light
With Sunnes depart: and now the darkenes of the night
Did light those beamye stars which greater light did darke:
Now each thing that enjoy'd that firie quickning sparke

394
(Which life is cold) were mov'd their spirits to repose,
And wanting use of eyes their eyes began to close:
A silence sweet each where with one consent embraste
(A musique sweet to one in carefull musing plaste)
And mother Earth, now clad in mourning weeds, did breath
A dull desire to kisse the image of our death:
When I, disgraced wretch, not wretched then, did give
My senses such reliefe, as they which quiet live,
Whose braines broile not in woes, nor brests with beatings ake,
With natures praise are wont in safest home to take.
Far from my thoughts was ought, where to their minds aspire,
Who under courtly pompes doo hatch a base desire.
Free all my powers were from those captivating snares,
Which heav'nly purest gifts defile in muddy cares.
Ne could my soule it selfe accuse of such a faulte,
As tender conscience might with furious panges assaulte.
But like the feeble flower (whose stalke cannot sustaine
His weighty top) his top doth downward drooping lean:
Or as the silly birde in well acquainted nest
Doth hide his head with cares but onely how to rest:
So I in simple course, and unentangled minde
Did suffer drousie lids mine eyes then cleare to blinde;
And laying downe my head, did natures rule observe,
Which senses up doth shut the senses to preserve.
They first their use forgot, then fancies lost their force;
Till deadly sleepe at length posset my living course.
A living coarse I lay: but ah, my wakefull minde
(Which made of heav'nly stuffe no mortal chaunge doth blind)
Flew up with freer wings of fleshly bondage free;
And having plaste my thoughts, my thoughts thus placed me.
Me thought, nay sure I was, I was in fairest wood
Of Samothea lande; a lande, which whilom stood
An honour to the world, while Honour was their ende,
And while their line of yeares they did in vertue spende.
But there I was, and there my calmie thoughts I fedd
On Natures sweet repast, as healthfull senses ledd.
Her giftes my study was, her beauties were my sporte:
My worke her workes to know, her dwelling my resorte.
Those lampes of heav'nly fire to fixed motion bound,
The ever-turning spharees, the never-moving ground;
What essence dest'nie hath; if fortune be or no;
Whence our immortall soules to mortall earth doo flowe:
What life it is, and how that all these lives doo gather,
With outward makers force, or like an inward father.
Such thoughts, me thought, I thought, and straund my single mind
Then void of neerer cares, the depth of things to find.
When lo with hugest noise (such noise a tower makes
When it blowne downe with winde a fall of ruine takes)
(Or such a noise it was, as highest thunders sende,
Or canons thunder-like, all shot together, lende)
The Moone a sunder rent; whereout with sodaine fall
(More swift then falcons stoope to feeding Falconers call)
There came a chariot faire by doves and sparrows guided:
Whose stormelike course staid not till hard by me it bided.
I wretch astonisht was, and thought the deathfull doome
Of heaven, of earth, of hell, of time and place was come.
But streight there issued forth two Ladies (Ladies sure
They seemed to me) on whom did waite a Virgin pure:
Straunge were the Ladies weeds; yet more unfit then strange.
The first with cloth's tuckt up as Nymphes in woods do range;
Tuckt up even with the knees, with bowe and arrowes prest:
Her right arme naked was, discovered was her brest.
But heavy was her pace, and such a meagre cheere,
As little hunting minde (God knowes) did there appeere.
The other had with arte (more then our women knowe,
As stuffe meant for the sale set out to glaring shoue)
A wanton womans face, and with curld knots had twinde
Her baire, which by the helpe of painters cunning, shinde.
When I such guests did see come out of such a house,
The mountaines great with childe I thought brought forth a mouse.
But walking forth, the first thus to the second saide,
Venus come on: said she, Diane you are obaide.
Those names abasht me much, whē those great names I hard:
Although their fame (me seemd) from truth had greatly jard.
As I thus musing stood, Diana cald to her
The waiting Nympe, a Nympe that did excell as farr
All things that earst I sawe, as orient pearles exceed,
That which their mother bight, or els their silly seed.
Indeed a perfect bewe, indeed a sweet consent
Of all those Graces giftes the heavens have ever lent.
And so she was attirde, as one that did not prize
Too much her peerles parts, nor yet could them despise.
But cald, she came apace; a pace wherein did move
The bands of beauties all, the little world of Love.
And bending humbled eyes (o eyes the Sunne of sight)
She waited mistresse will: who thus disclosd her spright.
Sweet Mira mine (quoth she) the pleasure of my minde,
In whom of all my rules the perfect proffe I finde,
To onely thee thou seest we graunt this speciall grace
Us to attend, in this most private time and place.
Be silent therefore now, and so be silent still
Of that thou seest: close up in secrete knot thy will.
She answer'd was with looke, and well perform'd behest:
And Mira I admirde: her shape sonke in my brest.
But thus with irefull eyes, and face that shooke with spite
Diana did begin. What mov'd me to invite
Your presence (sister deare) first to my Moony sphere,
And hither now, vouchsafe to take with willing eare.
I know full well you know, what discord long hath raign'd
Betwixt us two; how much that discord foule hath stain'd
Both our estates, while each the other did deprave,
Proffe speaks too much to us that feeling triall have.
Our names are quite forgot, our temples are defaced:
Our offrings spoil'd, our priest from priesthood are displac'd
Is this the fruite of strife? those thousand churches bie,
Those thousand altars faire now in the dust to lie?
In mortall mindes our mindes but planets names preserve:
No knees once bowed, forsooth, for them they say we serve.
Are we their servants growne? no doubt a noble staye:
Celestiall powers to wormes, Joves children serve to claye.
But such they say we be: this praise our discord bred,
While we for mutuall spight a striving passion fed.
But let us wiser be; and what foule discorde brake,
So much more strong againe let fastest concorde make.
Our yeares doo it require: you see we both doo feele
The weakning worke of Times for ever-whirling wheele.
Although we be divine, our grandsire Saturne is
With ages force decay'd, yet once the heaven was his.
And now before we seeke by wise Apollos skill
Our young yeares to renew (for so he saith he will)
Let us a perfect peace betwene us two resolve:  
Which lest the ruinous want of government dissolve;  
Let one the Princesse be, to her the other yeeld:  
For vaine equalitie is but contentions field.  
And let her have the giftes that should in both remaine:  
In her let beautie both, and chastnesse fully raigne.  
So as if I prevaile, you give your giftes to me:  
If you, on you I lay what in my office be.  
Now resteth onely this, which of us two is she,  
To whom precedence shall of both accorded be.  
For that (so that you like) hereby doth lie a youth  
(She beckned unto me) as yet of spotlesse truth,  
Who may this doubt discerne: for better, witt, then lot  
Becommeth us: in us fortune determines not.  
This crowne of amber faire (an amber crowne she held)  
To worthiest let him give, when both be hath beheld:  
And be it as he saith. Venus was glad to heare  
Such proffer made, which she well showd with smiling cheere.  
As though she were the same, as when by Paris doome  
She had chiefe Goddesses in beautie overcome.  
And smirky thus gan say. I never sought debate  
Diana deare; my minde to love and not to hate  
Was ever apt: but you my pastimes did despise.  
I never spited you, but thought you overwise.  
Now kindnesse profred is, none kinder is then I:  
And so most ready am this meane of peace to trie.  
And let him be our judge: the lad doth please me well.  
Thus both did come to me, and both began to tell  
(For both togither spake, each loth to be behinde)  
That they by solemne oth their Deities would binde  
To stand unto my will: their will they made me know.  
I that was first agast, when first I saw their shoue:  
Now bolder waxt, waxt prowde, that I such sway must beare:  
For neere acquaintance dooth diminish reverent feare.  
And having bound them fast by Styx, they should obaye  
To all what I decreed, did thus my verdict saye.  
How ill both you can rule, well bath your discord taught:  
Ne yet for ought I see, your beauties merite ought.  
To yonder Nymphe therefore (to Mira I did point)  
The crowne above you both for ever I appoint.
I would have spoken out: but out they both did cry;
Fie, fie, what have we done? ungodly rebell fie.
But now we needs must yeelde, to that our others require.
Yet thou shalt not go free (quoth Venus) such a fire
Her beautie kindle shall within thy foolish minde,
That thou full oft shalt wish thy judging eyes were blinde.
Nay then (Diana said) the chastnesse I will give
In ashes of despaire (though burnt) shall make thee live.
Nay thou (said both) shalt see such beames shine in her face
That thou shalt never dare seeke helpe of wretched case.
And with that cursed curse away to heaven they fled,
First having all their giftes upon faire Mira spred.
The rest I cannot tell, for therewithall I wak'd
And found with deadly feare that all my sinewes shak'd.
Was it a dreame? O dreame, how hast thou wrought in me,
That I things erst unseene should first in dreaming see?
And thou o traytour Sleepe, made for to be our rest,
How hast thou framde the paine wherewith I am opprest?
O cowarde Cupid thus doost thou thy honour keepe,
Unarmde (alas) unwares to take a man asleepe?

Laying not onely the conquests, but the hart of the
côquerour at her feet. ***But she receiving him after her
woonted sorrowfull (but otherwise unmoved) mäner, it made
him thinke, his good succeesse was but a pleasant monument of
a dolefull buriall: Joy it selfe seeming bitter unto him, since it
agreed not to her taste.
Therefore, still craving his mothers helpe to persuade her, 2
he himself sent for Philanax unto him, whom he had not onely
long hated, but nowe had his hate greatly encreased by the
death of his Squire Ismenus. Besides he had made him as one of
the chiefe causes that mooved him to this rebellion, and
therefore was enclined (to colour the better his action, and the
more to embrewre the handes of his accomplices by making
them guiltie of such a trespasse) in some formall sort to cause
him to be executed: being also greatly egged thereunto by his
mother, and some other, who long had hated Philanax, onely
because he was more worthy to be loved then they.
But while that deliberation was handeled, according rather 3
to the humour then the reason of ech speaker, Philoclea comming

399
to knowledge of the hard plight wherein Philanax stood, she
desired one of the gentlewomen appoynted to waite upon her,
to goe in her name, and beseech Amphialus, that if the love of
her had any power of perswasion in his minde, he would lay no
further punishment, then imprisonment, uppon Philanax. This
message was delivered even as Philanax was entring to the pre-
sence of Amphialus, comming (according to the warning was
given him) to receyve a judgement of death. But when he
with manfull resolution attended the fruite of such a tyran-
nicall sentence, thinking it wrong, but no harme to him that
shoulde die in so good a cause; Amphialus turned quite the
fourme of his pretended speech, and yeelded him humble
thankes, that by his meanes he had come to that happinesse,
as to receive a commaundement of his Ladie: and therefore he
willingly gave him libertie to returne in safetye whither he
would; quitting him, not onely of all former grudge, but
assuring him that he would be willing to do him any friend-
ship, and service: onely desiring thus much of him, that he
would let him know the discourse and intent of Basilius-his
proceeding.

Truely my Lorde (answered Philanax) if there were any
such knowne to me, secrete in my maisters counsaile, as that
the revealing thereof might hinder his good successe, I shoulde
loath the keeping of my blood, with the losse of my faith; and
woulde thinke the just name of a traitour a harde purchase of a
fewe yeares living. But since it is so, that my maister hath
indeede no way of privie practise, but meanes openly and
forcibly to deale against you, I will not sticke in fewe wordes
to make your required declaration. Then told he him in
what amaze of amazement, both Basilius and Gynecia were,
when they mist their children and Zelmane. Sometimes apt to
suspect some practise of Zelmane, because she was a straunger;
sometimes doubting some reliques of the late mutinie, which
doubt was rather encreased, then any way satisfied, by Miso:
who (being founde, almost deade for hunger, by certaine
Countrey-people) brought home worde, with what cunning
they were trayned out, and with what violence they were
caried away. But that within a fewe dayes they came to
knowledge where they were, with Amphialus-his owne letters
sent abroade to procure confederates in his attemptes. That
Basilius his purpose was never to leave the siege of this towne, till he had taken it, and revenged the injurie done unto him. That he meant rather to winne it by time, and famine, then by force of assault: knowing howe valiaunt men he had to deale withall in the towne: that he had sent order, that supplyes of souldiours, pioners, and all things else necessarie, shoulede dayly be brought unto him: so as, my Lorde (sayde Philanax) let me nowe, having receyved my life by your grace, let me give you your life and honour by my counsaile; protesting unto you, that I cannot choose but love you, being my maister-his nephewe; and that I wish you well in all causes: but this, you knowe his nature is as apte to forgive, as his power is able to conquere. Your fault passed is excusable, in that Love perswaded, and youth was perswaded. Do not urge the effects of angrie victorie, but rather seeke to obtaine that constantly by courtesie, which you can never assuredly enjoy by violence. One might easily have seene in the cheare of Amphialus, that disdainfull choller woulde faine have made the aunswere for him, but the remembraunce of Philoclea served for forcible barriers betweene Anger, and angry effects: so as he saide no more, but that he woulde not put him to the trouble to give him any further counsaile: But that he might returne, if he listed, presently. Philanax glad to receyve an uncorrupted libertie, humbly accepted his favourable convoy out of the towne; and so departed, not having visited the Princesses, thinking it might be offensive to Amphialus, and no way fruitfull to them, who were no way but by force to be relieved.

The poore Ladies indeede, not suffered either to meet 5 together, or to have coference with any other, but such as Cecropia had alreadie framed to sing all her songs to her tune, she herselfe omitting no day, and catching holde of everie occasion to moove forwarde her sonnes desire, and remove their knowne resolutions: using the same arguments to the one sister, as to the other; determining that whome she coulde winne first, the other shoulde (without her sonnes knowledge) by poyson be made away. But though the reasons were the same to both, yet the handeling was diverse, according as she sawe their humours to preferre a more or lesse aptnesse of apprehension: this day having used long speech to Philoclea, amplifying not a little the great duetifulnesse her sonne had shewed in delivering
Philanax: of whome she coulde get no aunswere, but a silence sealed up in vertue, and so sweetly graced, as that in one instant it caried with it both resistance, and humblenesse.

CHAP. 10.

1Pamelas exercise. Cecropias talke with her of Beautie and the use thereof. 4The Auntes Atheisme refuted by the Neece Divinitie.

Ecropa threatning in her selfe to runne a more ragged race with her, went to her sister Pamela: who that day having wearied her selfe with reading, and with the height of her hart disdaining to keepe companie with any of the Gentlewomen appointed to attende her, whome she accounted her jaylours, was woorking uppon a purse certayne Roses and Lillies, as by the finenesse of the worke, one might see she had borowed her wittes of the sorow that owed them, & lent them wholy to that exercise. For the flowers she had wrought, caried such life in them, that the cunningest painter might have learned of her needle: which with so pretty a maner made his careers to & fro through the cloth, as if the needle it selfe would have bene loth to have gone froward such a mistres, but that it hoped to return theceward very quickly againe: the cloth loking with many eies upon her, & lovingly embracing the wounds she gave it: the sheares also were at hand to behead the silke, that was growne to short. And if at any time she put her mouth to bite it off, it seemed, that where she had beene long in making of a Rose with her hand, she would in an instant make Roses with her lips; as the Lillies seemed to have their whitenesse, rather of the hande that made them, then of the matter whereof they were made; and that they grew there by the Sunes of her eyes, & were refreshed by the most in discomfort comfortable ayre, which an unwares sigh might bestow upon them. But the colours for the grounde were so well chosen, neither sullenly darke, nor glaringly lightsome, and so well proportioned, as that, though much cunning were in it, yet it was but to serve for an ornament of the principall worke; that it was not without marvaile to see, howe a minde which could cast a carelesse
sembplant upon the greatest conflicts of Fortune, coulde commande it selfe to take care for so small matters. Neither had she neglected the daintie dressing of her selfe: but as it had ben her mariage time to Affliction, she rather seemed to remember her owne worthinesse, then the unworthinesse of her husband. For well one might perceyve she had not rejected the counsaille of a glasse, and that her handes had pleased themselves, in paying the tribute of undeceyving skill, to so high perfections of Nature.

The sight whereof so diverse from her sister, (who rather suffered sorrow to distresse it selfe in her beautie, then that she would bestow any intertainment of so unwelcome a guest) made Cecropia take a suddaine assurednesse of hope, that she should obtaine somewhat of Pamela: thinking (according to the squaring out of her own good nature) that beauty, carefully set forth, wold soone prove a signe of an unrefusing harbrough. Animated wherewith, she sate downe by Pamela: and taking the purse, and with affected curiositie looking upon the worke, Full happie is he (saide she) at least if he knew his owne happinesse, to whom a purse in this maner, and by this hand wrought, is dedicated. In faith he shall have cause to account it, not as a purse for treasure, but as a treasure it selfe, worthie to be pursed up in the purse of his owne hart. And thinke you so indeed (said Pamela halfe smiling) I promise you I wrought it, but to make some tedious houres beleeve, that I thought not of them: for else I valued it, but even as a verie purse. It is the right nature (saide Cecropia) of Beautie, to worke unwitting effectes of wonder. Truely (saide Pamela) I never thought till nowe, that this outward glasse, intitled Beautie, which it pleaseth you to lay to my (as I thinke) unguitie charge, was but a pleasaunt mixture of naturall colours, delightfull to the eye, as musicke is to the eare, without any further consequence: since it is a thing, which not onely beastes have; but even stones and trees many of them doo greatly excell in it. That other things (answered Cecropia) have some portion of it, takes not away the excellencie of it, where indeede it doth excell: since we see, that even those beastes, trees, & stones, are in the name of Beauty only highly praised. But that the beautie of humaine persons be beyond all other things there is great likelihood of reason, since to them onely is given the judgement to discerne Beautie; and among reasonable wights, as it seemes, that our sex hath the
preeminence, so that in that preeminence, Nature counter-
vailes all other liberalities, wherein she may be thought to have
dealte more favourably toward mankind. How doo men
crowne (thinke you) themselves with glorie, for having either
by force brought others to yeeld to their minde, or with long
studie, and premeditated orations, perswaded what they woulde
have perswaded? and see, a faire woman shall not onely com-
maund without authoritie, but perswade without speaking. She
shall not neede to procure attention, for their owne eyes will
chaine their eares unto it. Men venture lives to conquer; she
conqueres lives without venturing. She is served, and obeyed,
which is the most notable, not because the lawes so command
it, but because they become lawes to theselves to obey her; not
for her parents sake, but for her owne sake. She neede not dis-
pute, whether to governe by Feare, or by Love, since without
her thinking thereof, their love will bring foorth feare, and their
feare will fortifie their love: and she neede not seeke offensive,
or defensive force, since her lippes may stande for ten thousand
shields, and tenne thousand unevitable shot goe from her eyes.
Beautie, Beautie (deare Neece) is the crowne of the feminine
greatnes; which gifte, on whom soever the heavens (therein
most nigardly) do bestowe, without question, she is bound to use
it to the noble purpose, for which it is created: not onely
winning, but preserving; since that indeede is the right happines,
which is not onely in it selfe happie, but can also derive the
happines to another. Certainly Aunt (said Pamela) I feare you
will make me not onely thinke my selfe fairer then ever I
did, but think my fairnes a matter of greater valew then here-
tofores I could imagine it. For I ever (till now) conceaved
these conquests you spake of, rather to proceed from the weake-
nes of the conquered, then from the strength of the coquering
power: as they say, the Cranes overthowe whole battailes of
Pygmees, not so much of their Cranish courage, as because the
other are Pygmees: and that we see, young babes think babies
of woonderful excellencie, and yet the babies are but babies.
But since your elder yeares, and abler judgement, finde Beautie
to be worthy of so incomparable estimation, certainly me thinks,
it ought to be held in dearnes, according to the excellencie, and
(no more then we would do of things which we accoût pretious)
ever to suffer it to be defiled.

404
Defiled? (said Cecropia) Mary God forbid that my speech should tend to any such purpose, as should deserve so foul a title. My meaning is to joyn your beauty to love; your youth to delight. For truely, as colours should be as good as nothing, if there were no eyes to behold them: so is Beauty nothing, without the eye of Love behold it: and therfore, so far is it from defiling it, that it is the only honoring of it, the only preserving of it: for Beauty goes away, devoured by Time, but where remains it ever flourishing, but in the hart of a true lover? And such a one (if ever there were any) is my son: whose love is so subjected unto you, that rather then breed any offence unto you, it will not delight it selfe in beholding you. Ther is no effect of his love (answered Pamela) better pleaseth me then that: but as I have oft answered you, so, resolutely I say unto you, that he must get my parents consent, & then he shall know further of my mind; for, without that, I know I should offend God. O sweet youth (said Cecropia) how un-timely subject it is to devotion? No, no sweet neece, let us old folks think of such precise consideratiös, do you enjoy the heaven of your age, whereof you are sure: and like good householders, which spend those things that will not be kept, so do you pleasantly enjoy that, which else will bring an over-late repentance, whé your glas shall accuse you to your face, what a change there is in you. Do you see how the spring-time is ful of flowers, decking it self with them, & not aspiring to the fruits of Autumn? what lesson is that unto you, but that in the april of your age, you should be like April? Let not some of thé, for whom already the grave gapeth, & perhaps envy the felicity in you, which theéselves cannot enjoy, perswade you to lose the hold of occasiö, while it may not only be taken, but offers, nay sues to be také: which if it be not now taken, will never hereafter be overtaken. Your self know, how your father hath refused all offers made by the greatest Princes about you, & wil you suffer your beauty to be hid in the wrinkles of his pevish thoughts? If he be pevish (said Pamela) yet is he my father, & how beautiful soever I be, I am his daughter: so as God claims at my hands obedience, and makes me no judge of his imperfections.

These often replies upon conscience in Pamela, made
*Cecropia* thinke, that there was no righter waye for her, then as she had (in her opinion) set her in liking of Beautie, with perswasion not to suffer it to be voide of purpose, so if she could make her lesse feeling of those heavenly conceipts, that then she might easilie winde her to her croked bias. Therefore, employing the uttermost of her mischievous witte, and speaking the more earnestly, because she spake as she thought, she thus dealt with her. Deare neecce, or rather, deare daughter (if my affection and wishe might prevale therein) how much dooth it increase (trowe you) the earnest desire I have of this blessed match, to see these vertues of yours knit fast with such zeale of Devotion, indeede the best bonde, which the most politicke wittes have found, to holde mans witse in well doing? For, as children must first by feare be induced to know that, which after (when they doo know) they are most glad of: So are these bug-beares of opinions brought by great Clearkes into the world, to serve as shewelles to keepe them from those faults, whereto els the vanitie of the worlde, and weaknesses of senses might pull them. But in you (Neece) whose excellencie is such, as it neede not to be helde up by the staffe of vulgar opinions, I would not you should love Vertue servillie, for feare of I know not what, which you see not: but even for the good effects of vertue which you see. Feare, and indeede, foolish feare, and fearefull ignorance, was the first inventor of those conceates. For, when they heard it thunder, not knowing the naturall cause, they thought there was some angrie body above, that spake so lowde: and ever the lesse they did perceive, the more they did conceive. Whereof they knew no cause that grewe streight a miracle: foolish folks, not marking that the alterations be but upon particular accidents, the universalitie being alwaies one. Yesterday was but as to day, and to morrow will tread the same footsteps of his foregoers: so as it is manifest inough, that all things follow but the course of their own nature, saving only Man, who while by the pregnancie of his imagination he strives to things supernaturall, meane-while he looseth his owne naturall felicitie. Be wise, and that wisedome shalbe a God unto thee; be contented, and that is thy heaven: for els to thinke that those powers (if there be any such) above, are moved either by the eloquence of our prayers, or in a chase by the folly of our
actions; caries as much reason as if flies should thinke, that men take great care which of them hums sweetest, and which of them flies nimblist.

She would have spoken further to have enlarged & confirmed her discourse: but Pamela (whose cheeks were died in the beautifullest graine of vertuous anger, with eies which glistered forth beames of disdaine) thus interrupted her. Peace (wicked woman) peace, unworthy to breathe, that doest not acknowledge the breath-giver; most unworthy to have a tongue, which speakest against him, through whom thou speakest: keepe your affection to your self, which like a bemired dog, would defile with fauning. You say yesterday was as to day. O foolish woman, and most miserly foolish, since wit makes you foolish. What dooth that argue, but that there is a constancie in the everlasting governour? Would you have an inconstant God, since we count a man foolish that is inconstant? He is not seene you say, and would you thinke him a God, who might be seene by so wicked eyes, as yours? which yet might see enough if they were not like such, who for sport-sake willingly hood-winccke themselves to receave blowes the easier. But though I speake to you without any hope of fruite in so rotten a harte, and there be no bodie else here to judge of my speeches, yet be thou my witnesse, O captivitie, that my eares shall not be willingly guiltie of my Creators blasphemie. You saye, because we know not the causes of things, therefore feare was the mother of superstition: nay, because we know that each effect hath a cause, that hath engendred a true & lively devotion. For this goodly worke of which we are, and in which we live, hath not his being by Chaunce; on which opinion it is beyond mervaile by what chaunce any braine could stumble. For if it be eternall (as you would seeme to conceive of it) Eternity, & Chaunce are things unsufferable together. For that is chaunce-able which happeneth; & if it happen, there was a time before it hapned, when it might not have happened; or els it did not happen; and so of chaunceable, not eternall, as now being, the not being. And as absurd it is to thinke that if it had a beginning, his beginning was derived fro Chaunce: for Chaunce could never make all things of nothing: and if there were substances before, which by chaunce shoulde meete to make up this worke, thereon followes another bottomlesse pitt of
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

absurdities. For then those substaunces must needes have bene from ever, and so eternall: and that eternall causes should bring forth chaunceable effects, is as sensible, as that the Sunne should be the author of darkenesse. Againe, if it were chaunceable, then was it not necessarie; whereby you take away all consequents. But we see in all things, in some respect or other, necessitie of consequence: therfore in reason we must needs know that the causes were necessarie.

Lastly, Chaunce is variable, or els it is not to be called Chaunce: but we see this worke is steady and permanent. If nothing but Chaunce had glewed those pieces of this All, the heavie partes would have gone infinitely downewarde, the light infinitely upwarde, and so never have mett to have made up this goodly bodie. For before there was a heaven, or a earth, there was nether a heaven to stay the height of the rising, nor an earth, which (in respect of the round walles of heaven) should become a centre. Lastly, perfect order, perfect beautie, perfect constancie, if these be the children of Chaunce, or Fortune the efficient of these, let Wisedome be counted the roote of wickednesse, and eternitie the fruite of her inconstancie. But you will say it is so by nature, as much as if you said it is so, because it is so: if you meane of many natures conspiring together, as in a popular governement to establish this fayre estate; as if the Elementishe and ethereall partes should in their towne-house set downe the boundes of each ones office; then consider what followes: that there must needs have bene a wisedome which made them concurre: for their natures beyng absolute contrarie, in nature rather woulde have sought each others ruine, then have served as well consorted partes to such an unexpressable harmonie. For that contrary things should meete to make up a perfe6ti6 without a force and Wisedome above their powers, is absolutely impossible; unles you will flie to that hissed-out opinion of Chaunce againe. But you may perhaps affirm, that one universall Nature (which hath bene for ever) is the knitting together of these many partes to such an excellent unitie. If you meane a Nature of wisdome, goodnes, & providence, which knowes what it doth, then say you that, which I seeke of you, and cannot conclude those blasphemies, with which you defiled your mouth, & mine cares. But if you meane a
Nature, as we speake of the fire, which goeth upward, it knowes not why: and of the nature of the Sea which in ebbing and flowing seemes to observe so just a daunce, and yet understands no musicke, it is but still the same absurditie subscribed with another title. For this worde, one, being attributed to that which is All, is but one mingling of many, and many ones; as in a lesse matter, when we say one kingdome which conteines many citties; or one cittie which conteines many persons, wherein the under ones (if there be not a superiour power and wisedome) cannot by nature regarde to any preservation but of themselves: no more we see they doo, since the water willingly quenches the fire, and drownes the earth; so farre are they from a conspired unitie: but that a right heavenly Nature indeed, as it were unnaturing them, doth so bridle them.

Againe, it is as absurde in nature that from an unitie many contraries should proceede still kept in an unitie: as that from the number of contrarieties an unitie should arise. I say still, if you banish both a singularitie, and pluralitie of judgement from among them, then (if so earthly a minde can lift it selfe up so hie) doo but conceave, how a thing whereto you give the highest, and most excellent kinde of being (which is eternitie) can be of the base and vilest degree of being, and next to a not-being; which is so to be, as not to enjoy his owne being? I will not here call all your senses to witnes, which can heare, nor see nothing, which yeeldes not most evident evidence of the unspeakeablenesse of that Wisedome: each thing being directed to an ende, and an ende of preservation: so proper effects of judgement, as speaking, and laughing are of mankind.

But what madd furie can ever so enveagle any conceipte, as to see our mortall and corruptible selves to have a reason, and that this universalitie (whereof we are but the lest pieces) should be utterly devoide thereof? as if one should saie, that ones foote might be wise, and him selfe foolish. This hearde I once allledged against such a godlesse minde as yours, who being driven to acknowledge these beastly absurdities, that our bodies should be better then the whole worlde, if it had the knowledge, whereof the other were voide; he sought (not able to answere directly) to shifte it of in this sorte: that if that reason were true, then must it followe also, that the worlde must have in it a spirite, that could write and reade to, and be

---

409
learned; since that was in us so commendable: wretched foole, not considering that Bookes be but supplies of defects; and so are prayed, because they helpe our want, and therefore cannot be incident to the eternall intelligence, which needes no recording of opinions to confirme his knowledge, no more then the Sunne wants waxe to be the fewell of his glorious lightfulness. This worlde therefore cannot otherwise consist but by a minde of Wisedome, whiche governes it, which whether you wil allow to be the Creator thereof, as undoubtedly he is, or the soule and governour thereof, most certaine it is that whether he governe all, or make all, his power is above either his creatures, or his governement. And if his power be above all things, then consequently it must needs be infinite, since there is nothing above it to limit it. For beyond which there is nothing, must needs be boundlesse, and infinite: if his power be infinite, then likewise must his knowledge be infinite: for else there should be an infinite proportion of power which he shoulde not know how to use; the unsensiblenesse whereot I thinke even you can conceive: and if infinite, then must nothing, no not the estate of flies (which you with so unsaverie skorne did jest at) be unknowne unto him. For if it were, then there were his knowledge bounded, and so not infinite: if knowledge and power be infinite, then must needs his goodness and justice march in the same rancke: for infinitenes of power, & knowledge, without like measure of goodnesse, must necessarily bring foorth destruction and ruine, and not ornament and preservation. Since then there is a God, and an all-knowing God, so as he sees into the darkest of all naturall secretes, which is the harte of Man; and sees therein the deepest dissembled thoughts, nay sees the thoughts before they be thought: since he is just to exercise his might, and mightie to performe his justice, assure thy selfe, most wicked woman (that hast so plaguily a corrupted minde, as thou canst not keepe thy sickenesse to thy selfe, but must most wickedly infect others) assure thy selfe, I say, (for what I say dependes of everlasting and unremooveable causes) that the time will come, when thou shalt knowe that power by feeling it, when thou shalt see his wisedome in the manifesting thy ougly shamelesnesse, and shalt onely perceive him to have bene a Creator in thy destruction.

410
CHAP. II.

1Cecropia malcontent, still practiseth.  2The besiegers discipline, and attempts of the besieged.  3Phalantus chalengeth 4by Letter Amphialus:  5who by Letter accepteth it.  6Amphialus 7and Phalantus militar accoustrements.  8Their fo-like com-bate, 9but friendly conclusion.

Thus she said, thus she ended, with so faire a majestie of unconquered vertue, that captivitie might seeme to have authoritie over tyrannie: so fowly was the filthinesse of impietie discovered by the shining of her unstayed goodnes, so farre, as either Cecropia saw indeed, or else the guilty amazement of her selfe-accusing conscience, made her eies untrue judges of their natural object, that there was a light more then humane, which gave a lustre to her perfections. But Cecropia, like a Batte (which though it have eyes to discerne that there is a Sunne, yet hath so evill eyes, that it cannot delight in the Sunne) found a truth, but could not love it. But as great persons are woont to make the wrong they have done, to be a cause to doo the more wrong, her knowledge rose to no higher point, but to envie a worthier, and her will was no otherwise bent, but the more to hate, the more she founde her enemie provided against her. Yet all the while she spake (though with eyes cast like a horse that woulde strike at the stirrop, and with colour which blushed through yellownesse) she sate rather still then quiet, and after her speech rather muttered, then replied: for the warre of wickednesse in her selfe, brought forth disdainefull pride to resist cunning dissimulation; so as, saying little more unto her, but that she shoulde have leysure inough better to bethinke her selfe; she went away repining, but not repenting: condemning greatly (as she thought) her sonnes over-feeble humblenesse, and purposing to egge him forward to a course of violence. For her selfe, determining to deal with neither of them both any more in maner of a suter: for what majestie of vertue did in the one, that did silent humblenesse in the other. But finding her sonne over-apt to lay both condemnation, and execution of sorrowe upon himselfe, she sought to mitigate his minde with feigned delayes of conforte, who
THE COUTTESSE OF PEMBROKES

another. The matter of your letters so fit for a worthy minde, and the maner so suitable to the noblenesse of the matter, give me cause to thinke howe happie I might accounte my selfe, if I coulde get such a friende, who esteeme it no small happinesse to have mette with so noble an enemie. Your chalenge shall be aanswered, and both time, place, and weapon accepted. For your securitie for any treacherie (having no hostage woorthie to countervaile you) take my woorde, which I esteeme above all respedles. Prepare therefore your armes to fight, but not your hart to malice; since true valure needes no other whetstone, then desire of honour.

6 Havinge writte and sealed his letter, he delivered it to the Heraulde, and withall tooke a faire chaine from off his owne necke, and gave it him. And so with safe convoy sent him away from out his Citie: and he being gone, Amphialus shewed unto his mother, and some other of his chiefe Counsailours, what he had receyved, and howe he had aanswerd: telling them withall, that he was determined to aanswer the chalenge in his owne person. His mother with prayers authorized by motherly commaundement; his olde governour with perswasions mingled with reprehensions, (that he would rather affect the glorie of a private fighter, then of a wise Generall) Clinias with falling downe at his feete, and beseeching him to remember, that all their lives depended uppon his safetie, sought all to dissuade him. But Amphialus (whose hart was enflamed with courage, and courage enflamed with affection) made an imperious resolution cutte off the tediousnesse of replyes, giving them in charge, what they shoulde doo uppon all occasions, and particularly to deliver the Ladies, if otherwise then well happened unto him: onely desiring his mother, that she woulde bring Philoclea to a window, where she might with ease perfectly discerne the combat. And so, as soone as the morning beganne to draw dewe from the fairest greenes, to wash her face withall, against the approach of the burning Sunne, he went to his stable, where himselfe chose out a horse, whom (though he was neere twentie yeere olde) he preferred for a peece of sure service, before a great nuber of yonger. His colour was of a browne bay, dapled thick with black spots; his forhead marked with a white starre; to which, in all his bodie
there was no part suitable, but the left foote before; his mane and taile black, and thick, of goodly, and well proportioned greatnes. He caused him to be trimmed with a sumptuous saddle of tawnie, and golde enamell, enriched with pretious stones: his furniture was made into the fashio of the branches of a tree, from which the leaves were falling: and so artificiallie were the leaves made, that as the horse moved, it seemed indeed that the leaves wagged, as when the winde plaies with them; and being made of a pale cloath of gold, they did beare the straw-coloured liverie of ruine. His armour was also of tawnie and golde, but formed into the figure of flames darckened, as when they newelie breake the prison of a smoakie furnace. In his shielde he had painted the Torpedo fish. And so appointed, he caused himselfe, with his trumpet and squire (whom he had taken since the death of Ismenus) to be ferried over into the Iland: a place well chosen for such a purpose. For, it was so plaine, as there was scarcely any bush, or hillock, either to unlevell, or shadowe it: of length and breadth enough, to trie the uttermost both of launce and sword, and the one end of it facing of the castle, the other extending it selfe toward the campe, and no accessse to it, but by water: there coulde no secrate trecherie be wrought, and for manifest violence, ether side might have time inough to succour their party.

But there he found Phalantus, alredy waiting for him upon a horse, milke white, but that upon his shoulder and withers, he was fretned with red staines, as when a few strawberies are scattered into a dish of creame. He had caused his mane and taile to be died in carnation; his reines were vine branches, which ingendring one with the other, at the end, when it came to the bitte, there, for the bosse, brought forth a cluster of grapes, by the workeman made so lively, that it seemed, as the horse champed on his bitte, he chopped for them, and that it did make his mouth water, to see the grapes so neere him. His furniture behind was of vines, so artificially made, as it semed the horse stood in the shadow of the vine, so pretily were clusters of rubie grapes dispersed among the trappers which embraced his sides. His armour was blew, like the heaven, which a Sun did with his rayes (proportionately delivered) guilde in most places. His shield was beautified with this device; A greyhound, which overrunning his fellow, and taking
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

the hare, yet hurts it not whē it takes it. The word was, *The glorie, not the pray.*

8 But as soone as *Amphialus* landed, he sent his squire to *Phalantus*, to tel him, that there was the Knight, redy to know whether he had any thing to him. *Phalantus* answered, that his answere now must be in the lāguage of launces; & so each attended the warning of the trūpets, which were to sound at the appointment of four judges, who with consideration of the same, had devided the ground. *Phalantus*-his horse young, and feeling the youth of his master, stoode corvetting; which being wel governed by *Phalātus*, gave such a glittering grace, as when the Sunne shines upon a waving water. *Amphialus*-horse stood panting upon the ground, with his further foot before, as if he would for his masters cause begin to make himselfe angry: till the trumpet sounded together. Together they set spurrese to their horses, together took their launces from their thigges, conveied them up into their restes together, together let them sinke downward; so as it was a delectable sight, in a dangerous effect; and a pleasant consideration, that there was so perfect agreement, in so mortall disagreement: like a musick, made of cunning discords. But their horses keeping an even line their masters had skilfully allotted unto them, passed one by another without encountering, although either might feel the angry breath of other. But the staves being come to a just descent, but even when the mark was ready to meet them, *Amphialus* was runne through the vamplate, and under the arme: so as the staffe appearing behind him, it semed to the beholders he had bene in danger. But he strake *Phalantus* just upon the gorget, so as he battred the lamms therof, and made his head almost touch the back of his horse. But either side having staied the spur, & used the bit to stop their horses fury, casting away the trōcheons of their staves, & drawing their swords, they attended the second summons of the death-threatening trumpet, which quickly followed; and they asoon made their horses answer their häds, with a getle galop, set the one toward the other; til being come in the neernes of little more then a staves length. *Amphialus* trusting more to the strength, then to the nimblenes of his horse, put him foorth with speedie violence, and making his head joyne to the others flanke, guiding his blow with discretion, and strengthening it
with the course of his horse, strake *Phalantus* upon the head, in such sort, that his feeling sense did both dazell his sight, and astonish his hearing. But *Phalantus* (not accustomed to be un-gratefull to such benefites) strake him upon the side of his face, with such a force, that he thought his jawe had bene cut asunder: though the faithfulnes of his armour indeede garded him from further damage. And so remayned they awhile, rather angry with fighting, then fighting for anger, till Amphialus-his horse, leaning harde upon the other, and winning ground, the other horse feeling himselfe prest, began to rise a little before, as he was woont to doo in his corvette: which advantage *Amphialus* taking, set forward his own horse with the further spurre, so as *Phalantus*-his horse came over with his master under him. Which *Amphialus* seeing, lighted, with intention to help *Phalantus*. But his horse that had faulted, rather with untimely arte, then want of force, gatte up from burdning his burden, so as *Phalantus* (in the fall having gotten his feete free of & the stirrup) could (though something bruised) arise, seeing *Amphialus* neere him, he asked him, Whether he had give him any help in removing his horse. *Amphialus* said No. Truely sayd *Phalantus*, I asked it, because I would not willingly have fought with him, that had had my life in his mercie. But now (said *Phalantus*) before we proceed further, let me know who you are, because never yet did any man bring me to the like fortune. *Amphialus* listing to keepe him selfe unknowne, told him he was a Gentlemâ, to whom *Amphialus* that day had given armour and horse to trie his valour, having never before bene in any combat worthy remembrance. Ah, (said *Phalantus* in a rage) And must I be the exercise of your prentis-age? & with that, choler tooke away either the bruse, or the feeling of the bruse, so as he entred a fresh into the còbat, & boiling in his armes the disdaine of his harte, strake so thicke upon *Amphialus*, as if every blow would faine have bene foremost. But *Amphialus* (that many like trials had taught, great spending to leave small remnants) let passe the storme with strong wardes, and nimble avoidings: till seeing his time fit, both for distaunce and nakednes, he strake him so cruell a blow on the knee, that the poore Gentleman fell downe withall in a sowne.

But *Amphialus*, pittyng approved valoure, made pretious by 9
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

naturall curtesie, went to him; & taking of his head-piece to give him aire, the young Knight (disdained to buy life with yeelding) bad him use his fortune: for he was resolved never to yeeld. No more you shall (said Amphialus) if it be not to my request, that you will account your self to have great interest in me. Phalantus more overcome by his kindnes, the by his fortune, desired yet once againe to know his name, who in his first beginning had shewed such furie in his force, and yet such stay in his furie. Amphialus, then named himselfe, telling him withal, he would think his name much bettred, if it might be honored by the title of his friëd. But no Baulme could be more comfortable to his wound, then the knowledge thereof was to his mind, when he knew his mishap should be excused by the renowned valour of the other. And so promising each to other assurednes of good will, Phalantus, (of whom Amphialus would have no other rausome, but his word of friëdship) was conveyed into the campe, where he would but little remaine among the enimies of Amphialus: but went to seeke his adventures other-where.

CHAP. 12.

1 Philocleas il-taking Amphialus wel-meaning. 2 His challenge and conquests continued for Love, and his love. 3 Argalus sent for to this challenge. 4 The conjugall happines of him and his wife. 5 The passions stirred by this message. 6 Their sorrow-sounding farewell. 7 Argalusis desie. 8 Amphalious answere. 9 Argalusis furniture. 10 Their combat, blody to both, deadly to Argalus. 11 Parthenia comes to the end of it, and him. 12 Her and his lamentations. 14 The funerals.

As for Amphialus he was receaved with triumph into the castle; although one might see by his eyes (humbly lifted up to the window where Philocleia stood) that he was rather suppliaunt, then victorious: whiche occasion Cecropia taking, (who as then stooed by Philocleia, and had lately lefte Pamela in another roome, whence also she might see the combate) Sweet Lady (said she) now you may see, whether you
have cause to love my sonne, who then lies under your feete, when he standes upon the necke of his bravest enemies. Alas said Philoclea, a simple service to me, me thinkes it is, to have those, who come to succour me, destroyed: If it be my dutie to call it love, be it so: but the effects it brings forth I confesse I account hatefull. Cecropia grew so angry with this unkind answere, that she could not abstayne from telling her, that she was like them that could not sleepe, when they were softly layed: but that if her sonne would follow her counsell, he should take another course with her: and so flange away from her.

Yet (knowing the desperate melancholy of Amphialus in like cases) framed to him a very thankefull message, poudring it with some hope-giving phrases; which were of such joy to Amphialus, that he (though against publike respect, & impor-
tunity of dissuaders) presently caused it to be made knowne to the campe, that whatsoever Knight would trie the like fortune as Phalantus did, he should in like sorte be answered: so as divers of the valiantest, partly of themselves, partly at the instigation of Basilius, attempted the combat with him: and according to every ones humour, so were the causes of the challege grouded: one laying treason to his charge; another preferring himselfe in the worthines to serve Philoclea; a third, exalting some Ladies beautie beyond ether of the sisters; a fourth, laying disgraces to Love it selfe, naming it the bewitcher of the witt, the rebell to Reason, the betrayer of resolution, the defiler of thoughts, the underminer of magnanimitie, the flatterer of vice, the slave to weakenesse, the infection of youth, the madnesse of age; the curse of life, and reproch of death; a fifth, disdayning to caste at lesse then at all, woulde make the cause of his quarrell the causers of love, and proclayme his blasphemies against womankinde; that namely that sex was the oversight of Nature, the disgrace of reasonablenes, the obstinate cowards, the slave-borne tyrants, the shops of vanities, the guilded wethercocks; in whom conscience is but peevishnes, chastitie waywardnes, & gratefulnes a miracle. But all these challenges (how wel so ever endited) were so well answered, that some by death taught others, though past learning themselves; & some by yeelding gave themselves the lie for having blasphemed; to the great griefe of Basilius, so to see his Rebell
prevail, and in his own sight to crowne himselfe with deserved
honour.

3 Wherupon thirsting for revenge, & else not hoping to
prevail, the best of his campe being already overthrownne; he
sent a messenger to Argalus, in whose approved courage and
force, he had (and had cause) to have great confidence, with a
letter; requiring him, to take this quarrell in hand, from which
he had hetherto spared him in respect of his late mariage. But
now his honour, and (as he esteemed it) felicitie standing upon it,
he could no longer forbear to chalenge of him his faithfull service.

4 The messenger made speede, and found Argalus at a castle
of his owne, sitting in a parler with the faire Parthenia, he
reading in a booke the stories of Hercules, she by him, as to
heare him reade; but while his eyes looked on the booke, she
looked on his eies, & sometimes staying him with some prety
question, not so much to be resolved of the doubte; as to give
him occasion to looke upon her. A happy couple, he joying
in her, she joying in her selfe, but in her selfe, because she
enjoyed him: both encreasing their riches by giving to each
other; each making one life double, because they made a
double life; one, where desire never wanted satisfactio, nor
satisfaction never bred sacietie; he ruling, because she would
obey: or rather because she would obey, she therein ruling.

5 But when the messenger came in with letters in his hand,
& hast in his countenance, though she knew not what to feare,
yet she feared, because she knew not; but she rose, and went
aside, while he delivered his letters and message; yet a far of
she looked, now at the messenger, & then at her husband: the
same feare, which made her loth to have cause of feare, yet
making her seeke cause to nourish her feare. And wel she
foûd there was some serious matter; for her husbands counten-
ance figured some resolution betweene lothnesse and necessitie:
and once his eie cast upon her, & finding hers upon him, he
blushed; & she blushed, because he blushed; and yet streight
grew paler, because she knew not why he had blushed. But
when he had read, & heard, & dispatched away the messenger
(like a man in whom Honour could not be rocked on sleepe by
Affection) with promise quickly to follow; he came to Par-
thenia, and as sore as might be for parting, and yet more sore
for her sorrow, he gave her the letter to reade. She with
fearful slownes tooke it, and with fearefull quicknesse read it; and having read it, 

*Ab* my Argalus (said she) and have you made such hast to answere? and are you so soone resolved to leave me? But he discoursing unto her, how much it imparted his honour (which since it was deare to him, he knew it would be deare unto her) her reason overclouded with sorrow, suffered her not presently to replie, but left the charge thereof to teares, and sighes; which he not able to beare, left her alone, and went to give order for his present departure.

By that time he was armde, and readie to go, she had recovered a little strength of spirite againe, & coming out, & seing him armed, & wanting nothing for his departure but her farewell, she ran to him, tooke him by the arme, and kneeling downe without regard, who either heard her speach, or saw her demeanour, My Argalus, my Argalus (said she) doo not thus forsake me. Remember, alas, Remember that I have interest in you, which I will never yeeld shalbe thus adventured. Your valour is already sufficiently knowne: sufficiently have you already done for your country: ennow, ennow there are besides you to loose lesse worthie lives. Woe is me, what shall become of me, if you thus abandon me? Then was it time for you to follow these adventures, when you adventured no body but your selfe, and were no bodies but your owne. But now pardon me, that now, or never, I claime mine owne; mine you are, & without me you can undertake no däger: & will you endäger Parthenia? Parthenia shalbe in the battle of your fight: Parthenia shall smart in your paine, & your blood must be bled by Parthenia. Deare Parthenia (said he) this is the first time, that ever you resisted my will: I thanke you for it; but persever not in it; & let not the teares of those most beloved eies be a presage unto me of that, which you would not should happen. I shal live, doubt not: for so great a blessing, as you are, was not given unto me, so soone to be deprived of it. Looke for me therefore shortly, and victorious; and prepare a joyfull welcome, and I will wish for no other triumph. She answered not, but stood as it were thunder-striken with amazement: for true Love made obedience stande up against all other passions. But when he tooke her in his armes, and sought to printe his harte in her sweete lippes, she fell in a sounde, so as he was faine to leave her to her Gentlewomen:
and caried away by the tyrannie of Honour, though with manie a backe-cast looke, and hartie grone, went to the campe. When understanding the notable victories of Amphialus, he thought to give him some dayes respite of rest, because he woulde not have his victorie disgraced by the others wearinesse. In which dayes, he sought by all meanes (having leave to parley with him) to dissuade him from his enterprise: and then imparting his mind to Basilius, because he found Amphialus was inflexible, wrote his defie unto him in this maner.

7 Right famous Amphialus, if my persauasion in reason, or praier in good wil, might prevaille with you, you should by better meanes be like to obteine your desire. You shoulde make many brave enemies become your faithful servâts, & make your honor flie up to the heavë, being caried up by both the wings of valure & justice; whereof now it wants the latter. But since my suite, nor counsel can get no place in you, disdaigne not to receive a mortall chalenge, from a man so farre inferiour unto you in vertue, as that I do not so much dislike of the deed, as I have the doer in admiration. Prepare thetherefore your self, according to the noble maner you have used, and think not lightly of never so weake an arme, which strikes with the sword of justice.

To this quickly he received this answere.

8 Much more famous Argalus, I, whom never threatnings could make afraid, am now terrified by your noble curtesie. For wel I knowe, from what height of vertue it doth proceed, and what cause I have to doubt such vertue bent to my ruine: but Love, which justifieth the unjustice you lay unto me, dooth also animate me against all daungers, since I come full of him by whom your selfe have beene (if I be not deceived) sometimes conquered. I will therefor attend your apperaunce in the Ile, carying this advantage with me, that as it shal be a singular honour if I get the victorie, so there can be no dishonour in being overcome by Argalus.

9 The chalenge thus denounced, and accepted, Argalus was armed in a white armour, which was guilded over with knots of womans haire, which came downe from the crest of his head-ppeece, and spred it selve in rich quâtitie over all his armour: his furniture was cut out into the fashion of an Eagle, whereof the beake (made into a rich jewell) was fastened to the saddle,
the taile covered the crooper of the horse, and the wings served for trappers; which falling of eche side, as the horse stirred, the bird seemed to flie. His pettrel and reines, were embrodered with feathers suitable unto it: upon his right arme he ware a sleeve, which his deare Parthenia had made for him, to be worne in a justes, in the time that sucesse was ungratefull to their well-deserved love: It was full of bleeding hartes, though never intended to any blooddie enterprise. In this shield (as his owne device) he had two Palme trees, neere one another, with a worde signifying, In that sort flourishing. His horse was of a firie sorrell, with blacke feete, and blacke list on his back, who with open nostrels breathed warre, before he could see an enemy: and now up with one legge, and then with another, seemed to complain of Nature, that she had made him any whit earthie.

But he had scarcely viewed the grounde of the Ilande, and considered the advauntages (if any were) therof, before the Castel boat had delivered Amphialus, in al points provided to give a hard entertainmēt. And then sending ech to other their Squires in honourable maner, to knowe whether they should attende any further ceremony; the trumpets sounding, the horses with smooth running, their staves with unshaked motion, obediently performed their cholericke comandements. But when they drew nere, Argalus-his horse being hot, prest in with his head: which Amphialus perceiving, knowing if he gave him his side, it should be to his disadvauntage, prest in also with him, so as both the horses & men met shoulder to shoulder, so as the horses (hurt as much with the striking, as being striken) tumbled downe to the earth, daungerously to their maister, but that they by strength nimble, and by use skilfull, in the falling shunned the harme of the fall, and without more respite, drewe out their swordes with a gallant braverie, eche striving to shewe himselfe the lesse endamaged, and to make knowne that they were glad, they had nowe nothing else to trust to, but their owne vertue. True it is, that Amphialus was the sooner up; but Argalus had his sworde out the sooner: and then fell they to the cruellste combate, that any present eye had seene. Their swordes first, like Canons, battering downe the walles of their armour, making breaches almost in everie place for troupes of woundes to enter. Among the rest,
Argalus gave a great wound to Amphialus—his disarmed face; though part of the force of it Amphialus warded upon his shielde, and with-all (first casting his eye up to Philocleas Window, as if he had fetched his courage thence) feyning to intend the same sort of blowes, turned his sword, and with a mightie reverse, gave a cruell wounde to the right arme of Argalus, the unfaythfull armour yeelding to the swardes strong-guided sharpenesse. But though the blood accused the hurt of Argalus, yet woulde he in no action of his confesse it: but keeping himselfe in a lower warde, stoode watching with timely thrustes to repaire his losse; which quickly he did. For Amphialus (following his fawning fortune) laid on so thicke upon Argalus, that his shield had almost fallen peece-meale to the earth, when Argalus comming in with his right foote, and something stowping to come under his armour, thrust him into the belly daungerously, and mortally it would have beene, but that with the blowe before, Amphialus had overthowne himselfe so, as he fell side-warde downe, and with falling saved himselfe from ruine. The sworde by that meanes slipping aside, and not pearcing more deeply, Argalus seeing him fall, threatening with voyce and sworde, bad him yeelde. But he striving without aunswere to rise, Argalus strake with all his might upon his head. But his hurt arme not able to maister so sounde a force, let the swardes fall so, as Amphialus, though astonished with the blowe, could arise: which Argalus considering, ranne in to graspe with him, and so closed together; falling so to the grounde, nowe one getting above, and then the other; at length, both wearie of so unlovely embraces, with a dissenting consent gate up, and went to their swordes: but happened eche of his enemies: where Argalus finding his foes swardes garnished in his blood, his hart rase with the same sward to revenge it, and on that blade to allie their bloods together. But his minde was evill wayted-on by his lamed force, so as he receyved still more and more woundes, which made all his armour seeme to blush, that it had defended his master no better. But Amphialus perceiving it, & waying the small hatefulnesse of their quarrell, with the worthinesse of the Knight, desired him to take pitie of himselfe. But Argalus, the more repining, the more he founde himselfe in disadvauntage, filling his veynes with spite in stead of blood,
and making courage arise agaynst faintnesse, (like a Candle, which a little before it goes out, gives then the greatest blaze) so did he unite all his force, that casting away the little remnaunt of his shielde, and taking his swoorde in both handes, he stroke such a notable blowe, that he cleft his shielde, armour, and arme almost to the bone.

But then Amphialus forgat all ceremonies, and with cruell blowes made more of his blood succeed the rest; til his hand being staiied by his eare, his eare filled with a pitifull crie, the crie guided his sight to an excellent faire Ladie, who came running as fast as she could, and yet because she coulde not as fast as she would, she sent her lamentable voyce before her: and being come, and being knowne to them both, to be the beautifull Parthenia, (who had that night dreamed she sawe her husbande in such estate, as she then founde him, which made her make such haste thither) they both marvailed. But Parthenia ranne betweene them (feare of love making her forget the feare of Nature) and then fell downe at their feete, determining so to part them, till she coulde get breathe to sigh out her doolefull speeches: and when her breath (which running had spent, and dismayednesse made slowe to returne) had by sobbes gotten into her sorow-closed breast, for a while she coulde say nothing, but, O wretched eyes of mine, O wailefull sight, O day of darkenesse: at length turning her eyes (wherein sorrowe swamme) to Amphialus, My Lorde (saide she) it is saide you love; in the power of that love, I beseech you to leave of this combate, as even your harte may finde comfort in his affection, even for her sake, I crave it: or if you be mortally determined, be so pitifull unto me, as first to kill me, that I may not see the death of Argalus. Amphialus was aboute to have aunswered, when Argalus, vexed with his Fortune, but most vexed that she should see him in that fortune, Ah Parthenia (saide he) never till nowe unwelcome unto me, do you come to get my life by request? And can not Argalus live but by request? Is it a life? With that he went aside, for feare of hurting her, and woulde have begunne the combate afresh. But Amphialus not onely conjured by that which helde the Monarchie of his mind, but even in his noble hart melting with compassion at so passionate a sight, desired him to withholde his handes, for that he shoulde strike one, who sought his favour, and woulde not make
resistaunce. A notable example of the woonderfull effectes of Vertue, where the conquerour, sought for friendship of the conquered, and the conquered woule not pardon the conquerour: both indeede being of that minde to love eche other for accepting, but not for giving mercie, and neyther affected to over-live a dishonour: so that Argalus not so much striving with Amphialus (for if he had had him in the like sorte, in like sort he would have dealt with him) as labouring against his owne power (which he chiefly despised) set himself forward, stretching his strength to the uttermost. But the fire of that strife, blowen with his inward rage, boyled out his bloud in such abundance, that he was driven to rest him upon the pommel of his sword: and then each thing beginning to turne rounde in the daunce of Death before his eyes, his sight both dazled, and dimmed, till (thinking to sit downe) he fell in a sowne. Parthenia, and Amphialus both hastily went unto him: Amphialus tooke of his helmet, and Parthenia laid his head in her lap, tearing of her linnen sleeves & partlet, to serve about his wounds; to bind which, she tooke of her hair-lace, and would have cut of her faire haire herselfe, but that the squires and judges came in with fitter things for the purpose: while she bewayled her selfe with so lamentable sweetnes, as was inough to have taught sorrow to the gladdest thoughts, and have engraued it in the mindes of hardest mettall.

12 O Parthenia, no more Parthenia (said she) What art thou? what seest thou? how is thy blisse in a moment fallen? how art thou, even-now before all Ladies the example of perfect happines, and now the gasing-stock of endles miserie? O God, what hath bene my desert to be thus punished? or if such have bene my desert, why was I not in my selfe punished? O wandring life, to what wildernes wouldst thou lead one? But Sorow, I hope thou art sharp inough to save my labour from other remedies. Argalus, Argalus, I will folow thee, I wil folow thee.

13 But with that Argalus came out of his sowne, and lifting up his languishing eyes (which a painefull rest, and iron sleepe did seeke to lock up) seeing her, in whō (even dying) he lived, and him selfe seated in so beloved a place, it seemed a little cheerefull bloud came up to his cheekes, like a burning cole, almost dead, if some breath a little revive it: & forcing up (the
best he could) his feeble voice, My deare, my deare, my better halfe (said he) I finde I must now leave thee: and by that sweet hand, and faire eyes of thine I sweare, that Death brings nothing with it to grieve me, but that I must leave thee, and cannot remayne to answere part of thy infinit deserts, with being some comfort unto thee. But since so it pleaseth him, whose wisdome and goodnesse guideth all, put thy confidence in him, and one day we shall blessedly meet againe, never to depart: meane while live happily, deare Parthenia, and I perswade my selfe, it will increase the blessednes of my soule, so to see thee. Love well the remembrance of thy loving, and truely loving, Argalus: and let not (with that worde he sighed) this disgrace of mine, make thee one day thinke, thou hadst an unwoorthie husband. They could scarcely understand the last wordes: for Death began to seaze him selfe of his harte, neither coulde Parthenia make answere, so full was her breast of anguish. But while the other sought to stanch his remediles wounds, she with her kisses made him happie: for his last breath was delivered into her mouth.

But when indeede she found his ghost was gone, then Sorrowe lost the witte of utterance, and grewe ragefull, and madde, so that she tare her beautifull face, and rent her haire, as though they could serve for nothing, since Argalus was gone; till Amphialus (so moved with pittie of that sight, as that he honoured his adversaries death with teares) caused her (with the helpe of her women that came with her) partelie by force, to be conveyed into boate, with the dead body of Argalus, from which she could not depart. And being come of the other side, there she was receaved by Basilius him selfe, with all the funerall pompe of militarie discipline, trayling all their Ensignes upon the ground, making his warlike instruments sound dolefull notes, and Basilius (with comfort in his mouth, and woe in his face) sought to perswade some ease into Parthenias minde: but all was as easefull to her, as the handling of sore woundes: all the honour done, being to her but the triumph of her ruine, she finding no comfort, but in desperate yeelding to Sorrow: and rather determined to hate her selfe, if ever she should finde ease thereof. And well might she heare as she past through the Campe, the great prayses spoken of her husbande, which all were recordes of her losse. But the more excellent he was
(being indeede accounted seconde to none in all Greece) the more did the breath of those praises, beare up the winges of Amphialus-his fame: to whom yet (such was his case) that Trophe upon Trophe, still did but bulde up the monumet of his thraldome; he ever finding himselfe in such favour of Philoclea, that she was most absent, when he was present with her; and ever sorriest, when he had best successe: which would have made him renounce all comfort, but that his mother, with diversity of devises, kept up his hart.

But while he allayed thus his outward glorie, with inward discomfort, he was like to have bene overtaken with a notable treason, the beginning wherof (though meerely ridiculous) had like to have brought forth unto him a weeping effect.

**CHAP. 13.**

1 Dametas put in harte to defie Clinias. *Clinias out of harte to see the vie. 4 Dametas braverie, adoubements, and imprese. *Clinias drawne to answere him. 7 Their passions in comming to the field. 8 Their actions in it, not so doubty, as their fortune doubtfull. 9 Clinias yeelding to triumphant Dametas.

Among other that attended Basilius in this expedition, Dametas was one; whether to be present with him, or absent from Miso: once, certaine it was without any minde to make his sworde cursed by any widow. Nowe, being in the campe, while each talke seemed injurious, which did not acknowledge some duety to the fame of Amphialus, it fell out sometimes in communication, that as the speech of heaven doth often beget the mention of hell, so the admirable prowes of Amphialus (by a cõtrarie) brought forth the remembrance of the cowardise of Clinias: in so much, as it grew almost to a proverb, As very a cowarde, as Clinias. Describing him in such sort, that in the end, Dametas began to thinke with himselfe, that if he made a chalenge unto him, he would never answere it; and that then he should greatly encrease the favourable conceite of Basilius. This fancie of his he uttered to a young Gentleman, that waited upon Philanax, in whose friendship he had especiall
confidence, because he haunted his company, laughing often merely at his speeches, and not a little extolling the goodly dotes of Mopsa. The young Gentleman as glad, as if he had found a Hare sitting, egd him on, breaking the matter with Philanax, and then (for feare the humour should quayle in him) wrote a challenge him selfe for Dametas, and brought it to him. But when Dametas read it, putting his head on his shoulder, and somewhat smiling; he said, it was prettie indeed; but that it had not a loftie stile enough: and so would needes indite it in this sort.

O Clinias, thou Clinias, the wickedest worme that ever went 2
upon two legges; the very fritter of fraude, and seething pot
of iniquitie: I Damætas, chiefe governour of all the royall cattell,
and also of Pamela (whom thy Maister most perniciously hath
suggested out of my dominion) doe deie thee, in a mortall affray from
the bodkin to the pike upwarde. Which if thou dost presume
to take in bande, I will out of that superfluous bodie of thine
soule to be evacuated.

The young Gentleman seemed dumbe-striken with admira-
tion, and presently tooke upon him to be the bearer thereof,
while the heate of the fit lasted: and having gotten leave of
Basilius (every one helping on, to ease his minde overcharged
with melancholy) he went into the towne according to the
manner before time used, and in the presence of Amphialus
delivered this letter to Clinias; desiring to have an answere,
which might be fit for his reputation. Clinias opened it, and
read it; and in the reading, his bloud not daring to be in so
daungerous a place, went out of his face, and hid it selfe more
inwardly: and his very wordes (as if they were afraid of blowes)
came very slowly out of his mouth: but, aswell as his painting
breath would utter it, he bad him tell the lowte that sent him,
that he disdained to have any thing to doo with him. But
Amphialus, perceiving the matter, tooke him aside, and very
earnestly dealt with him not to shame himselfe; Amphialus not
only desirous to bring it to passe to make some sport to Philoclea,
but not being able to perswade with him, Amphialus licenced
the Gentleman, telling him, by the next morning he should
have answere.

The yong Gentlemā (sory he had sped no better) returned 4
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

to Damætas, who had fetched many a sower-breathed sigh, for fear Clinias would accept the chalēge. But whē he perceived by his trusty messenger, that this delay was in effect a denial, there being no dispositiō in him to accept it; then lo, Damætas began to speake his lowdō voice, to looke big, to march up & down, & in his march to lift his legs higher thē he was wont, swearing by no meane devotiōs, that the wals should not keepe the coward frō him, but he would fetch him out of his connie-berrie: & then was hotter then ever to provide himselfe of horse & armour, saying, he would go to the Iland bravely addoubled, & shew himself to his charge Pamela. To this purpose many willing häds were about him, letting him have reynes, pettrel, with the rest of the furniture, and very brave bases; but all comming from divers houses, neither in coulour or fashion, shewing any kinred one with another; but that liked Damætas the better: for that he thought would argue, that he was maister of many brave furnitures. Then gave he order to a painter for his device; which was, a plowe with the oxen lewsed from it, a sword with a great many armes and legges cut of; and lastly a great armie of pen and inke-hornes, and bookes. Nether did he sticke to tell the secrete of his intent, which was, that he had lefte of the plowe, to doo such blody deedes with his swoorde, as many inkehorses and bookes should be employed about the historifying of them: and being asked, why he set no worde unto it, he said, that was indeede like the painter, that sayeth in his picture, Here is the dog, and here is the Hare: & with that he laughed so perfectly, as was great consolation to the beholders. Yet remembring, that Miso would not take it well at his returne, if he forgat his dutie to her, he caused about in a border to be written:

Miso mine own pignie, thou shalt heare news o' Damætas.

Thus all things being condignely ordered, with an ill favoured impatiencie he waited, until the next morning, that he might make a muster of him selve in the Iland; often asking them that very diligently wayted upon him, whether it were not pittie, that such a coward, as Clinias, should set his runaway feete upon the face of the earth?

But as he was by divers principal yong Gentlemen, to his no small glory, lifted up on horsebacke, comes me a page of

430
Amphialus, who with humble smiling reverence delivered a letter unto him from Clinias: whom Amphialus had brought to this, first with persuasions (that for certaine, if he did accept the combat, Dametas would never dare to appeare, and that then the honour should be his) but principally threatning him, that if he refused it, he would turne him out of the towne to be put to death for a traitour by Basilius: so as the present feare (ever to a coward most terrible) of being turned out of the towne, made him, though full unwillingly, undertake the other feare, wherein he had some shewe of hope, that Dametas might hap either to be sick, or not to have the courage to performe the matter. But when Dametas heard the name of Clinias, very aptly suspecting what the matter might be, he bad the page carry backe his letter, like a naughty boy as he was: for he was in no humour, he tolde him, of reading letters. But Dametas-his friëd, first persuading him, that for certaine it was some submission, tooke upon him so much boldnesse, as to open his letter, and to reade it alowd in this sort.

Ilthy drivell, unworthy to have thy name set in any letter by a 6 souldiers hande written: could thy wretched harte thinke it was timorousnesse, that made Clinias suspende a while his answer? No caitiffe, no: it was but as a Ramme, which goes backe to returne with the greater force. Know therefore that thou shalt no sooner appeare (appeare now if thou darest) I say thou shalt no sooner appeare in the Ilande (O happy thou, if thou doe not appeare) but that I will come upon thee withall my force; and cut thee in pieces (marke, what I saie) joynte after joynte, to the eternall terror of all presumptuous villaines. Therefore looke what thou doost: for I tell thee, horrible smarte, and paine shalbe thy lot, if thou wilt needes be so foolish (I having given thee no such cause) as to meeete with me.

These terrible wordes Clinias used, hoping they would give 7 a cooling to the heate of Dametas-his courage: and so indeede they did, that he did grone to heare the thundring of those threatnings. And when the Gentleman had ended the reading of them, Dametas tolde them, that in his opinion he thought his answere came too late, and that therefore he might very well go, and disarme him selfe: especially considering, the other had in curteous maner warned him not to come. But they
(having him now on horsebacke) led him unto the ferrie, and so into the Iland; the clashing of his owne armour striking miserable feare into him, and in his minde thinking greate unkindnesse in his friende, that he had brought him to a matter so contrarie to his complexion. There stayed he but a little (the Gentlemen that came with him teaching him how to use his sworde and launce, while he cast his eye about, to see which way he might runne away, cursing all Ilands in being evill scituated) when Clinias with a brave sounde of trumpets landed at the other ende: who came all the way debating with himselfe, what he had desired of Amphialus to drive him to those inconveniences. Sometimes his witte made him bethinke him selfe what was beste to be done: but feare did so corrupt his witt, that whatsoever he thought was best, he still found danger therein; fearethfulness (contrarie to all other vices) making him thinke the better of another, the worse he found him selfe; rather imagining in him selfe, what wordes he would use (if he were overcome) to get his life of Dametas, then how to overcome, whereof he could thinke with no patience. But oftentimes looking to the Earth pittifullly complauning, that a man of such sufficiencie (as he thought him selfe) shoulde in his best yeares be swallowed up by so base an element. Faine he would have prayed, but he had not harte enouogh to have confidence in praier; the glittering of the armour, and sounding of the trumpets giving such an assault to the weake-breache of his false senses, that he grewe from the degree of feare to an amazement, not almost to know what he did; till two judges (chosen for the purpose) making the trumpets cease, and taking the oth of those champions, that they came without guile or witchcraft, set them at wonded distaunce; one from the other.

8 Then the trumpets sounding, Dametas-his horse (used to such causes) when he thought lest of the matter, started out so lustely, that Dametas was jogde back with head, and bodie, and pulling withall his bridle-hande, the horse (that was tender of mouth) made halfe a stop, and fell to bounding, so that Dametas threw away his launce, and with both his hands held by the pummell: the horse, halfe running, halfe leaping, till he met with Clinias: who fearing he should misse his reste, had put his staffe therein before he began his careere: neither would he then have begun, but that at the trumpets warning, one (that
stood behinde) strake on his horse, who running swiftly, the winde tooke such holde of his staffe, that it crost quite over his breast, and in that sorte gave a flat bastonado to Damætas: who, halfe out of his sadle, went neere to his olde occupation of digging the earth, but with the creste of his helmet. Clinias when he was paste him, not knowing what he had done, but fearing lest Damætas were at his backe, turned with a wide turne; & seeing him on the ground, he thought then was his time, or never, to treade him under his horses feete; & withall (if he could) hurt him with his launce, which had not broken, the encounter was so easie. But putting forth his horse, what with the falling of the staffe to low before the legs of the horse, & the coming upon Damætas, who was then scrabling up, the horse fell over & over, and lay upon Clinias. Which Damætas (who was gotten up) perceiving, drew out his sword, prying which way he might best come to kil Clinias behind. But the horse that lay upon him, kept such a pawing with his feet, that Damætas durst not approch, but verie leysurely; so as the horse (being lustie) gat up, and withall fell to strike, and leape, that Damætas started up a good way, and gave Clinias time to rise, but so bruised in bodie, and broken in hart, that he meant to yeeld himselfe to mercie: and with that intent drew out his sworde, entending when he came nearer, to present the pommel of it to Damætas. But Damætas, when he sawe him come with his sword drawne, nothing conceiving of any such intent, went backe as fast as his backe and heelees woulde leade him. But as Clinias founde that, he beganne to thinke a possibilitie in the victorie, and therefore followed with the cruell haste of a prevailing cowarde; laying upon Damætas, who did nothing but crie out to him to holde his hand: sometimes that he was dead, sometimes that he woulde complaine to Basilius: but still bare the blowes ungratefully, going backe, till at length he came into the water with one of his feete.

But then a new feare of drowning tooke him, so that not 9 daring to go back, nor to deliberat (the blows stil so lighted on him) nor to yeele (because of the cruell threatnings of Clinias) feare being come to the extremitie, fell to a madnesse of despaire: so that (winking as hard as ever he could) he began to deale some blowes, and his arme (being used to a flaile in his youth) laid the on so thick, that Clinias now began with lamet-
able eies to see his owne blood come out in many places, and before he had lost halfe an ounce, finding in himselfe that he fainted, cried out aloud to Damætas, that he yelded. Throw away thy sword then (said Damætas) and I will save thee; but still laying on, as fast as he could. Clinias straight obeyed, and humbly craved mercie, telling him, his sworde was gone. Then Damætas first opened his eyes, and seeing him indeed unweaponed, made him stande a good way of from it; and then willed him to lie downe upon the earth as flat as he could. Clinias obeyed; and Damætas (who never could thinke himselfe safe, till Clinias wereдеade) began to thinke with himselfe, that if he strake at him with his sworde, if he did not kill him at the first blowe, that then Clinias might happe to arise, and revenge himselfe. Therefore he thought best to kneele downe upon him, and with a great whittle he had (having disarmed his heade) to cut his throate, which he had used so with Calves, as he had no small dexteritie in it. But while he sought for his Knife, which under his armour he coulde not well finde out, and that Clinias lay with so sheepish a countenaunce, as if he would have beene glad to have his throate cut for feare of more paine, the Judges came in, and tooke Damætas from off him, telling him he did against the lawe of Armes, having promised life, if he threwe away his sworde. Damætas was loath to consent, till they swere, they woulde not suffer him to fight any more, when he was up: and then more forced, then perswaded, he let him rise, crowing over him, and warning him to take heede how he dealt any more with any that came of his fathers kinred. But thus this combate of cowardes being finished, Damætas was with much mirth and melodie received into the campe as victorius, never a Page there failing to waite upon this Triumph.

CHAP. 14.

1Clinias a slie traitour. 2Artesia his malcontent accomplice. 3Zelmanes passions. 4Her practise with Artesia. 5The complot revealed to the disliking sisters, 6bewrayed by Pamela.

B UT Clinias, though he wanted hart to prevent shame, yet he wanted not witte to feel shame; not so much repining at it for the abhoring of shame, as for the discommodities,
that to them that are shamed, ensue. For well he deemed, it would be a great barre to practize, and a pulling on of injuries, when men needed not care, how they used him. Insomuch, that Clinias (finding himselfe the scorning-stocke of every companie) fell with repining to hate the cause thereof; & hate in a cowards hart, could set it selfe no other limites, but death. Which purpose was well egged on by representing unto himselfe, what daunger he lately was in; which still kept no lesse ougly figure in his minde, then when it was present: and quickly (even in his dissembling countenance) might be discerned a concealed grudge. For though he forced in himselfe a farre more diligent officiousnesse towarde Amphialus, then ever before, yet a leering eye upon the one side at him, a countenance still framed to smiling before him (how little cause soever there was of smiling) and grombling behind him, at any of his com-maundements, with an uncertaine manner of behaviour: his words comming out, though full of flatterie, yet slowly, and hoarcely pronounced, might well have blazed, what armes his false hart bare. But despised, because of his cowardlimesse, and not marked, because despised, he had the freer scope of practize. Which he did the more desperately enter into, because the dayly dangers Amphialus did submit himselfe into, made Clinias assuredly looke for his overthrow, and for his owne consequently, if he did not redeme his former treason to Basilius, with a more treasonable falshood toward Amphialus.

His chiefe care therefore was, to find out among all sorts of Amphialus, whom either like feare, tediousnes of the siege, or discôtentment of some unsatisfied ambitiō would make apt to dig in the same mine that he did: & some already of welthy weary folks, & unconstat youths (who had not found such sudden successe as they had promised the selves) he had made stoupe to the lure. But of none he made so good account as of Artesia, sister to the late slain Ismenus, & the chiefe of six maids, who had trained out the Princesses to their banket of miserie: so much did the sharpnes of her wit countervaile (as he thought) any other defects of her sex: for she had undertaken that dangerous practise by the persuasion of Cecropia; who assured her that the two princesses should be made away; & the Amphialus wold marry her: which she was the apter to beleve, by some false persuasiō her glas had givē her of her own
incōparable excellencies, & by the great favor she knew he bare to her brother Iſmenus, which (like a self-flattering womā) she conceived was done for her sake. But when she had atcheived her attempt, & that she found the Princesses were so far frō their intended death, as that the one of them was like to be her sovereigne, & that neither her service had woon of Amphialius much more thē ordinary favor, nor her over-large offering herself to a mind otherwise owed, had obtained a loked-for acceptatiō; disdain to be disdained spite of a frustrate hope, & perchance unquenched lust-growne rage, made her unquiet thoughts find no other rest, but malice: which was increased by the death of her brother, whō she judged neither succoured against Philanax, nor revēged upon Philanax. But all these coles were wel blowne by the cōpany she especially kept with Zelmane, all this time of her imprisonment. For finding her presence uncheerfull to the mourning Philoclea, and contemned of the hie harted Pamela, she spent her time most with Zelmane. Who though at the first hardly breaking the instrument of their miserie, learning cunning in the schoole of adversitie, in time framed her selfe to yeeld her acceptable entertainment.

For Zelmane, when she had by that unexpected mischief her bodie imprisoned, her valure overmastred, her wit beguiled, her desires barred, her love eclipsed; assured of evill, fearing worse, able to knowe Philocleas misfortune, and not able to succour her, she was a great while, before the greatnes of her hart could descend to sorow, but rather rose boyling up in spight and disdain; Reason hardly making Courage beleeve, that it was distressed: but as if the walles would be afraid of her, so woulde her lookes shoote out threatening upon them. But the fetters of servitude (growing heavier with wearing) made her feelē her case, and the little prevailing of repining: and then grieſe gat seate in her softned minde, making sweetenesse of passed comfortes by due title clame teares of present discomfort: and since her fortune made her able to helpe as litle as any bodie, yet to be able to waile as much as any bodie; solitarie Sorrowe, with a continuall circle in her selfe, going out at her owne mouth, to come in againe at her owne eares. Then was the name of Philoclea graved in the glas windowes, and by the foolish idolatrie of affection, no sooner written, thē adored; & no sooner adored, thē pitied: al the wōted praises (she was wont
to give unto her) being now but figures of rhetorick to amplify the injuries of misfortune; against which being alone, she woulde often make invective declamations, methodized onely by raging sorow.

But whe Artesia did insinuat herself into her acquaintance, she gave the government of her courage to wit, & was cōtent to familiarize herselſe with her: so much the rather, as that she perceived in her certaine flawes of il-cōcealed discontentmēt. Insomuch that whē Zelmane would sweete her mouth with the praises of the sisters, especially setting forth their noble gratefulnes, in never forgetting wel-intended services, & invoking the justice of the gods, not to suffer such treasures to be wrōgfully hidde, & somtimes with a kind unkindnes, charging Artesia that she had ben abused to abuse so worthy persōs: Artesia (though falsly) wold protest, that she had bin beguiled in it, never meaning other matter thē recreatiō: & yet withall (by alleaging how ungratefully she was dealt with) it was easie to be seene, it was the unrewarding, & not the evil employing her service, which grieved her. But Zelmane (using her own bias to bowle neer the mistresse of her owne thoughtes) was content to lende her beleefe, and withall, to magnifie her desert, if willingly she would deliver, whom unwillingly she had imprisoned; leaving no argument which might tickle ambition, or flatter revenge. So that Artesia, (pusht forward by Clinias, and drawne onward by Zelmane) bound her selſe to that practise; wherein Zelmane (for her part) desired no more, but to have armour and weapons brought into her chamber, not doubting, therewith to perfourm any thing, how impossible soever, which longing Love can perswade, and invincible Valour dare promise.

But Clinias (whose faith could never comprehende the misteries of Courage) perswaded Artesia, while he by corruptiō had drawn the guard of one gate, to open it (when he would appoint the time) to the enemie: that she should impoyson Amphialus, which she might the easier do, because she her selſe had used to make the broaths, when Amphialus (either wearied or wounded) did use such diet. And al things alredy were ready to be put in executiō, when they thought best to breake the matter with the two excellent sisters, not doubting of their cōsent in a thing so behooofefull to thēselves: their reasons
incoparable excellencies, & by the great favor she knew he bare
to her brother *Ismenus*, which (like a self-flattering womā) she
conceived was done for her sake. But when she had atchieved
her attempt, & that she found the Princesses were so far frō
their intended death, as that the one of them was like to be her
sovereigne, & that neither her service had woon of *Amphialus*
much more thē ordinary favor, nor her over-large offering herself
to a mind otherwise owed, had obteined a loked-for acceptatiō;
disdain to be disdained spite of a frustrate hope, & perchance
unquenched lust-growne rage, made her unquiet thoughts find
no other rest, but malice: which was increased by the death of
her brother, whō she judged neither succoured against *Philanax*,
nor revēged upon *Philanax*. But all these coles were wel blowne
by the cōpany she especially kept with *Zelmane*, all this time of
her imprisonment. For finding her presence uncheerfull to the
mourning *Philoclea*, and contemned of the hie harted *Pamela*,
she spent her time most with *Zelmane*. Who though at the
first hardly broking the instrument of their miserie, learning
cunning in the schoole of adversitie, in time framed her selfe to
yeeld her acceptable intertainment.

3 For *Zelmane*, when she had by that unexpeceted mischief
her bodie imprisoned, her valure overmastred, her wit beguiled,
her desires barred, her love eclipsed; assured of evill, fearing
worse, able to knowe *Philoclea* misfortune, and not able to
succour her, she was a great while, before the greatnes of her
hart could descend to sorow, but rather rose boyling up in spight
and disdain; Reason hardly making Courage beleeve, that it was
distressed: but as if the walles would be afraid of her, so woulde
her lookes shoote out threatning upon them. But the fetters
of servitude (growing heavier with wearing) made her feele her
case, and the little prevailing of repining: and then griefe gat
seate in her softned minde, making sweetenesse of passed
comfortes by due title claime teares of present discomfort:
and since her fortune made her able to helpe as little as any
bodie, yet to be able to waile as much as any bodie; solitarie
Sorrowe, with a continuall circle in her selfe, going out at her
owne mouth, to come in againe at her owne eares. Then was
the name of *Philoclea* graved in the glas windowes, and by the
foolish idolatrie of affection, no sooner written, thē adored; &
no sooner adored, thē pitied: al the wōted praises (she was wont
to give unto her) being now but figures of retorick to amplifie the injuries of misfortune; against which being alone, she woulde often make invective declamations, methodized onely by raging sorow.

But whē Artesia did insinuat herself into her acquaintance, she gave the government of her courage to wit, & was cōtent to familiarize herselfe with her: so much the rather, as that she perceived in her certaine flawes of il-cōcealed discontentmēt. Insomuch that whē Zelmane would sweete her mouth with the praises of the sisters, especially setting forth their noble gratefulnes, in never forgetting well-intended services, & invoking the justice of the gods, not to suffer such treasures to be wrōg-fully hidde, & somtimes with a kind unkindnes, charging Artesia that she had ben abused to abuse so worthy persōs: Artesia (though falsly) wold protest, that she had bin beguiled in it, never meaning other matter the recreatio: & yet withall (by alleaging how ungratefullly she was dealt with) it was easie to be seene, it was the unrewarding, & not the evil employing her service, which grieved her. But Zelmane (using her own bias to bowle neer the mistresse of her owne thoughtes) was content to lende her beleefe, and withall, to magnifie her desert, if willingly she would deliver, whom unwillingly she had imprisoned; leaving no argument which might tickle ambition, or flatter revenge. So that Artesia, (pusht forward by Clinias; and drawne onward by Zelmane) bound her selfe to that practise; wherin Zelmane (for her part) desired no more, but to have armour and weapons brought into her chamber, not doubting, therewith to perfourm any thing, how impossible soever, which longing Love can perswade, and invincible Valour dare promise.

But Clinias (whose faith could never comprehende the misteries of Courage) perswaded Artesia, while he by corruptio had drawn the guard of one gate, to open it (when he would appoint the time) to the enemie: that she should impoyson Amphialus, which she might the easier do, because she her selfe had used to make the broaths, when Amphialus (either wearied or wounded) did use such diet. And al things alredy were ready to be put in executio, when they thought best to breake the matter with the two excellent sisters, not doubting of their cōsent in a thing so behoofefull to thēselves: their reasons
being, that the Princesses knowing their service, might be sure to preserve them from the fury of the entring souldiers: whereof Clinias (even so) could scarcely be sufficiently certaine: and withall, making them privie to their action, to binde them afterwaides to acknowledgment gratefulnes towards them. They went therefore at one time, when they knewe them to be alone, Clinias to Philoclea, and Artesia to Pamela: and Clinias, with no fewe words, did set forth what an expolite was intended for her service. But Philoclea (in whose cleere minde treason could finde no hiding place) told him, that she would be glad, if he could perswade her cosin to deliver her, and that she would never forgett his service therein: but that she desired him to lay down any such way of mischiefe, for that (for her part) she would rather yeeld to perpetuall imprisonment, then consent to the destroying her cosin, who (she knewe) loved her, though wronged her. This unlooked-for answere amazed Clinias, so that he had no other remedie in his minde, but to kneele downe to Philoclea, and beseech her to keep it secrete, considering that the intention was for her service: and vowing (since she misliked it) to proceed no further therein. She comforted him with promise of silence, which she performed.

6 But that little avayled: for Artesia having in like sort opened this device to Pamela, she (in whose mind Vertue governed with the scepter of Knowledge) hating so horrible a wickednes, and strait judging what was fitte to doo, Wicked woman (said she) whose unrepenting harte can find no way to amend treason, but by treason: nowe the time is come, that thy wicked wiles have caught thy selfe in thine owne nette: as for me, let the Gods dispose of me as shall please them; but sure it shall be no such way, nor way-leader, by which I will come to libertie. This she spake something with a lowder voice then she was woont to use, so as Cecropia heard the noise; who was (sooner then Artesia imagined she would) come up, to bring Pamela to a window, where she might see a notable skirmish happened in the Campe, as she thought, among themselves: and being a cunning fisheer in troubled waters, strait found by their voices and gestures, there was some matter of consequence, which she desired Pamela to tell her. Aske of her (said Pamela) & learne to know, that who do falshoode to their superiours, teach falshoode to their
inferiours. More she would not say. But Cecropia taking away the each-way guiltie Artesia, with feare of torture, gat of her the whole practise: so as Zelmane was the more closely imprisoned, and Clinias (with the rest of his corrupted mates, according to their merites) executed: For, as for Artesia, she was but lockt up in her chamber, Amphialus not consenting (for the love he bare Isemus) that further punishment should be laide upon her.

CHAP. 15.

1 Proude Anaxius breaketh through the besiegers. 2 His welcome by Amphialus. 3 The Musicke, 4 and lovesong made to Philoclea. 5 The sallie of Anaxius and his on the Basilians, 6 backt by Amphialus, 7 beaten backe by three unknown Knightes. 8 The Retraite of both sides.

But the noyse they hearde in the campe, was occasioned by the famous Prince Anaxius, nephewe to the Giant Euardes whom Pyrocles slew: A Prince, of body exceedingly strong; in armes so skilfull and fortunate, as no man was thought to excel him; of courage that knew not how to feare: partes worthie praise, if they had not bene guyded by pride, and followed by unjustice. For, by a strange composition of minde, there was no man more tenderly sensible in any thing offered to himselfe, which in the farthest-fette construction, might be wrested to the name of wrög; no man, that in his own actions could worse distinguish betwene Valour and Violence: So proud, as he could not abstaine from a Thrasso-like boasting, and yet (so unluckie a lodging his vertues had gotten) he would never boast more then he would accomplish: falsly accounting an unflexible anger, a courageous constancie: esteeming feare, and astonishment, righter causes of admiration, then Love and Honour. This man had foure sundrie times fought with Amphialus, but Mars had bene so unpartiall an arbiter, that neither side gate advauntage of the other. But in the end it hapned, that Anaxius found Amphialus (unknowne) in a great danger, and saved his life: wherupon (loving his owne benefite) began to
favour him, so much the more, as, thinking so well of himselfe, he could not choose but like him, whom he founde a match for himselfe: which at last grewe to as much friendship towards him, as could by a proud harte be conceived. So as in this travaile (seeking Pyrocles to be revenged of his uncles death) hearing of this siege, never taking paines to examine the quarrell (like a man whose will was his God, and his hand his lawe) taking with him his two brothers (men accounted little inferiour to him selfe in martiall matters) and two hundred chosen horsemen (with whome he thought him selfe able to conquere the world) yet commaunding the rest of his forces to follow, he him selfe upon such an unexpected suddainenesse entred in upon the backe of Basilius, that many with great unkindnesse tooke their death, not knowing why, nor how they were so murdred. There, if ever, did he make knowne the wonderfulnes of his force. But the valiant, & faithfull Philanax, with wel governed speed made such head against him, as would have shewed, how soone Courage falles in the ditch which hath not the eie of Wisdome: but that Amphialus at the same time issued out, & winning with an abondaunce of courage one of the sconses, which Basilius had builded, made ware for his friend Anaxius with great losse of both sides, but especially of the Basilians; such notable monuments had those two swords especially lefte of their Maisters redoubted worthynesse.

2 There with the respect fit to his estate, the honour dewe to his worthiness, and the kindnesse which accompanies friendship (made fast by enterchaunged benefites) did Amphialus enforce him selfe (as much as in a besieged towne he could) to make Anaxius know, that his succour was not so needefull, as his presence gratefull. For causing the streates and houses of the towne to witnes his welcome (making both souldiers and Magistrates in their countenaunces to shewe their gladnesse of him) he led him to his mother, whom he besought to entertain him with no lesse love and kindnesse, then as one, who once had saved her sonnes life, and now came to save both life and honour. Tush (said Anaxius, speaking alowde, looking upon his brothers) I am onely sorie there are not halfe a dozen Kinges more about you: that what Anaxius can doo, might be the better manifested. His brothers smiled, as though he had over-modestly spoken farre underneath the pitch of his
Then was he disarmed at the earnest request of Amphialus: for Anaxius boiled with desire to issue out uppon the enemies, perswading himselfe, that the Sunne shoulde not be sette, before he had overthrowne them. And having reposed himselfe, Amphialus asked him, whether he woulde visite the yong Princesses. But Anaxius whispered him in the eare: In trueth (saide he) deare friende Amphialus, though I am none of those, that love to speake of themselves, I never came yet in companie of Ladies, but that they fell in love with me. And I that in my hart scorne them as a peevish paltrie sexe, not woorthie to communicate with my vertues, would not do you the wrong: since (as I heare) you doo debase your selfe so much as to affect them. The curteous Amphialus could have beeene angrie with him for those wordes; but knowing his humour, suffered him to daunce to his owne musicke: and gave himselfe to entertaine both him and his brothers, with as cheerefull a maner, as coulde issue from a minde whome unluckie love had filled with melancholie. For to Anaxius he yeelded the direction of all. He gave the watchwoorde, and if any grace were graunted, the meanes were to be made to Anaxius. And that night when supper was ended, wherein Amphialus woulde needes himselfe waite upon him, he caused in Boates upon the Lake an excellent musicke to be ordered: which, though Anaxius might conceive was for his honour, yet indeede he was but the Bricke-wall to convey it to the eares of the beloved Philoclea.

The musicke was of Cornets, whereof one aunswering the 3 other, with a sweete emulation, striving for the glorie of musicke, and striking upon the smooth face of the quiet Lake, was then delivered up to the castell walles, which with a proude reverberation, spreading it into the aire; it seemed before the harmonie came to the eare, that it had enriched it selfe in travaile, the nature of those places adding melodie to that melodious instrument. And when a while that instrument had made a brave proclamation to all unpossessed mindes of attention, an excellent consort streight followed of five Violles, and as manie voyces; which all being but Oratours of their maisters passions, bestowed this song uppon her, that thought uppon another matter.
The Fire to see my woes for anger burneth:
The Aire in raine for my affliction weepeth:
The Sea to ebbe for griefe his flowing turneth:
The Earth with pitie dull his center turneth.
Fame is with wonder blazed:
Time runnes away for sorrow:
Place standeth still amazed,
To see my night of ills, which hath no morrowe.
Alas all onely she no pitie taketh
To know my miseries, but chaste and cruell
My fall her glory maketh;
Yet still her eyes give to my flames their fuell.

Fire, burne me quite till sense of burning leave me:
Aire, let me drawe thy breath no more in anguish:
Sea, drown'd in thee of tedious life bereave me:
Earth, take this earth wherein my spirits languish.
Fame, say I was not borne:
Time, hast my dying hower:
Place, see my grave uptorne:
Fire, aire, sea, earth, fame, time, place show your power.
Alas from all their helpe I am exiled:
For hers am I, and Death feares her displeasure.
Fie Death thou art beguiled:
Though I be hers, she sets by me no treasure.

But Anaxius (seeming a weary before it was ended) told Amphialus, that for his part he liked no musick, but the neighing of horses, the sound of trumpets, and the cries of yeelding persons: and therefore desired, that the next morning they shoulde issue upon the same place, where they had entred that day, not doubting to make them quickly a wearie of being the besiegers of Anaxius. Amphialus, who had no whit lesse courage, though nothing blowne up with pride, willingly condiscended: and so the next morning (giving false alarum to the other side of the campe) Amphialus at Anaxius earnest request, staying within the towne to see it garded, Anaxius and his brethren, Lycurgus, and Zoilus, sallied out with the best chosen men. But Basilius (having bene the last day somewhat unprovided) now had better fortified the overthrowne sconse;
and so well had prepared every thing for defence, that it was impossible for any valour from within, to prevale. Yet things were performed by Anaxius beyonde the credite of the credulous. For thrise (valiantly followed by his brothers) did he set up his banner upon the rampire of the enemie: though thrise againe by the multitude, and advantage of the place, but especially by the comming of three valiant Knights, he were driven downe againe. Nubers there were that day, whose deaths and overthrowes were executed by the well known sworde of Anaxius: but the rest, by the length of time and injurie of Historians, have bene wrapped up in darke forgetfulness: onely Tressennius is spoken of, because when all abandoned the place, hee onely made head to Anaxius; till having lost one of his legs, yet not lost the harte of fighting, Lycurgus (second brother to Anaxius) cruellie murthered him; Anaxius him selfe disdayning any further to deale with him.

But so farre had Anaxius at the thirde time prevayled, that now the Basilians began to let their courage descende to their feete, Basilius, and Philanax in vaine striving, with reverence of authoritie to bridle the flight of astonishment, and to teach Feare discretion: so that Amphialus, seeing Victorie shew such a flattering countenaunce to him, came out with all his force; hoping that day to end the siege.

But that fancie altered quicklie by the suddaine comming to the other side of three Knights, whereof the one was in white armour, the other in greene, and the thirde by his blacke armour, and device streight knowne to be the notable Knight, who the first day had given Fortune so short a stoppe with his notable deedes, and fighting hand to hand with the deemed invincible Amphialus. For the very cowardes no sooner saw him, but as borrowing some of his spirit, they went like yong Eagles to the pray, under the wing of their damme. For the three adventurers, not content to keepe them from their rampier, leapt downe among them, and entered into a brave combate with the three valiaunt brothers. But to whether side Fortune woulde have beeene partiall, could not be determined. For the Basilians, lightened with the beames of these straugers valure; followed so thicke, that the Amphialians were glad with some haste to retire to the walles warde: though Anaxius neither reason, feare, nor example, coulde make him
asswage the furie of his fight: untill one of the Basilians (unwoorthie to have his name registred, since he did it cowardly, sidewarde, when he least looked that way) almost cut off one of his legges: so as he fell downe, blaspheming heaven, that all the influences thereof had power to overthrow him; and there death would have seazed of his proude hart, but that Amphialus tooke in hand the blacke knight, while some of his souldiers conveyed away Anaxius, so requiting life for life unto him.

And for the love and example of Amphialus, the fight began to enter into a new fitte of heate: when Basilius (that thought inough to be done for that day) caused retraite to be sounded; fearing least his men following over-hastily, might bee the losse of those excellent Knights whom he desired to knowe. The Knights as soone as they heard the retraite (though they were "eagerly set, knowing that courage without discipline is nearer "beastlinesse then manhhood) drew backe their swords, though hungrie of more blood: especially the blacke Knight, who, knowing Amphialus, could not refraine to tell him, that this was the second time he escaped out of his hands, but that he would shortly bring him a bill of all the former accounts. Amphialus seing it fit to retire also (most of his people being hurt, both in bodies and harts) withdrew himselfe, with so well seated a resolution, that it was as farre from anger, as from dismayednesse; answering no other to the blacke Knights threats, but that when he brought him his account, he should finde a good pay-master.

CHAP. 16.

1 The unknowne Knights will not be knowne. 2 The Knight of the Tombes shew, 3 and challenge accepted by Amphialus. 4 Their fight, with the death of the Tombe-knight. 5 Who that Knight was. 6 The dying speeches, and 7 the lamentable funerals.

The fight being ceased, and ech side withdrawne within their strengths, Basilius sent Philanax to entertaine the straunge Knights, and to bring them unto him, that he might
acknowledge what honour was due to their vertue. But they excused themselves, desiring to be knowne first by their deedes, before their names should accuse their unworthinesse: and though the other replied according as they deserved, yet (finding that unwelcome curtesie is a degree of injury) he" suffered them to retire themselves to a tent of their owne without the campe, where they kept themselves secrete: Philanax hismelfe being called away to another straunge Knight; straunge not onely by the unlookedfornesse of his comming, but by the straunge maner of his comming.

For he had before him foure damosels, and so many behind him, all upon palfreys, & all appareled in mourning weedes; eoch of them servants of eoch side, with like liveries of sorrow. Himselfe in an armour, all painted over with such a cunning of shadow, that it represented a gaping sepulchre, the furniture of his horse was all of Cypresse braunches; wherwith in olde time they were woont to dresse graves. His Bases (which he ware so long, as they came almost to his ankle) were imbro-dered onely with blacke worms, which seemed to crawle up and downe, as readie alreadie to devour him. In his shielde for Impresa, he had a beautifull childe, but having two heads; whereof the one shewed, that it was alreadie dead: the other alive, but in that case, necessarily looking for death. The word was, No way to be rid from death, but by death.

This Knight of the tombe (for so the souldiours termed him) sent to Basilius, to demaund leave to send in a damosel into the towne, to cal out Amphialus, according as before time some others had done. Which being grated (as glad any would undertake the charge, which no bodie else in that campe was knowne willing to do) the damosell went in, and having with tears sobbed out a brave chalenge to Amphialus, from the Knight of the Tombe, Amphialus, honourably entreteining the gentlewoman, & desiring to know the Knights name (which the doolefull Gentlewoman would not discover) accepted the chalenge, onely desiring the Gentlewoman to say thus much to the strange Knight, from him; that if his minde were like to his title, there were more cause of affinitie, then enmitie betweene them. And therefore presently (according as he was woont) as soone as he perceyved the Knight of the Tombe, with his Damosels and Judge, was come into the Iland, he also
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

went over in accustomed manner: and yet for the curtesie of his nature, desired to speake with him.

4 But the Knight of the Tombe, with silence, and drawing his horse backe, shewed no will to heare, nor speake: but with Launce on thigh, made him knowe, it was fitte for him to go to the other ende of the Career, whence wayting the starte of the unknowne Knight, he likewise made his spurrees claime haste of his horse. But when his staffe was in his rest, comming downe to meete with the Knight, nowe verie neere him, he perceyved the Knight had mist his rest: wherefore the curteous Amphialus woulde not let his Launce descende, but with a gallant grace, ranne over the heade of his there-in friended enemie: and having stopped his horse, and with the turning of him, blessed his sight with the Windowe where he thought Philoclea might stand, he perceyved the Knight had lighted from his horse, and throwne away his staffe, angrie with his misfortune, as having mist his rest, and drawne his sworde to make that supply his fellowes fault. He also lighted, and drew his sworde, esteeming victorie by advantage, rather robbed then purchased: and so the other comming eagerly toward him, he with his shield out, and sword aloft, with more braverie then anger, drew unto him; and straight made their swords speake for them a pretie-while with equall fearcenes. But Amphialus (to whom the earth brought forth few matches) having both much more skill to choose the places, and more force to worke upon the chosen, had already made many windowes in his armour for death to come in at; whē (the noblenes of his nature abhorring to make the punishment overgoe the offence) he stept a little backe, and withal, Sir Knight (said he) you may easely see, that it pleaseth God to favour my cause; employ your valour against them that wish you harte: for my part, I have not deserved hate of you. Thou lyest false traytor, saide the other, with an angrie, but weake voyce. But Amphialus, in whome abused kindnesse became spitefull rage, Ah barbarous wretch (said hee) onely couragious in discourtesie; thou shalt soone see whether thy toonge hath betrayed thy harte, or no: and with that, redoubling his blowes, gave him, a great wounde upon his necke, and closing with him overthrew him, and with the fall thrust him mortally into the bodie: and with that went to pull off his
helmet, with intention to make him give himselfe the lye, for having so saide, or to cut off his head.

But the head-peece was no sooner off, but that there fell about the shoulders of the overcome Knight the treasure of faire golden haire, which with the face (soone knowne by the badge of excellencie) witnessed that it was Parthenia, the unfortunateli vertuous wife of Argalus: her beautie then even in despit of the passed sorrow, or comming death, assuring all beholders, that it was nothing short of perfection. For her exceeding faire eyes, having with continuall weeping gotten a little rednesse about them; her roundy sweetly swelling lippes a little trembling, as though they kissed their neighbour death; in her cheekes the whitenesse striving by little and little to get upon the rosinesse of them; her necke, a necke indeed of Alablaster, displaying the wounde, which with most daintie blood laboured to drowne his owne beauties; so as here was a river of purest redde, there an Iland of perfittest white, each giving lustre to the other; with the sweete countenance (God-knowes) full of an unaffected languishing: though these things to a grosly conceaving sense might seeme disgraces; yet indeed were they but apparailing beautie in a new fashion, which all looked-upon thorough the spectacles of pittie, did evē encrease the lynes of her naturall fairenesse, so as Amphialus was astonished with griefe, compassion, & shame, detesting his fortune, that made him unfortunat in victory.

Therfore, putting off his headpeece & gauntlet; kneeling down unto her, & with teares testifying his sorrow, he offred his (by himselfe accursed) hands to helpe her: protestinge his life and power to be readie to doo her honour. But Parthenia (who had inward messingers of the desired deathes approch) looking upon him, and straights turning away her feeble sight, as from a delightlesse object, drawing out her wordes, which her breath (loath to parte from so sweete a bodie) did faintly deliver, Sir (saide she) I pray you (if prayers have place in enemies) to let my maides take my body untouched by you: the onely honour I now desire by your meanes, is, that I have no honour of you. Argalus made no such bargaine with you, that the hands which killed him, shoulde helpe me. I have of them (and I doo not onely pardon you, but thanke you for it) the service which I desired. There rests nothing now, but
that I go live with him, since whose death I have done nothing but die. Then pawsing, and a little fainting, and againe comming to herselfe, O sweete life, welcome (saide she) nowe feele I the bandes untied of the cruell death, which so long hath helde me. And O life, O death, aunswere for me, that my thoughts have not so much as in a dreame tasted any comfort; since they were deprived of Argalus. I come, my Argalus, I come: And, O God hide my faultes in thy mercies, and graunt (as I feele thou doost graunt) that in thy eternall love, we may love eche other eternally. And this O Lorde: But there Atropos cut off her sentence: for with that, casting up both eyes and hands to the skies, the noble soule departed (one might well assure himselfe) to heaven, which left the bodie in so heavenly a demeanure.

7  But Amphialus (with a hart oppressed with griefe, because of her request) withdrewe himselfe, but the Judges, as full of pitie, had bene al this while disarming her, and her gentle-women with lamentable cries, laboring to stanch the remedies wounds: & a while she was dead before they perceived it; death being able to divide the soul, but not the beauty fro that body. But whē the infallible tokens of death assured the of their losse, one of the women would have killed her selfe, but that the squire of Amphialus perceiving it, by force held her. Others that had as strong passions, though weaker resolution, fell to cast dust upon their heads, to teare their garments: all falling upon, and crying upon their sweet mistres; as if their cries could persuade the soul to leave the celestiall happines, to come again into the elemēts of sorrow: one time calling to remembrance her vertue, chastnes, sweetnes, goodnes to them: another time accruing themselves, that they had obeyed her, they having bene deceaved by her words, who assured the, that it was revealed unto her, that she should have her harts desire in the battaile against Amphialus, which they wrongly understood. Then kissing her cold hands and feet, wearie of the world, since she was gone, who was their world. The very heavens semed, with a cloudie countenance, to loure at the losse, and Fame it selfe (though by nature glad to tell rare accidents, yet) could not choose but deliver it in lamentable accents, & in such sort went it quickly all over the Campe: &,

as if the aire had bene infected with sorow, no hart was so
hard, but was subject to that contagion; the rarenes of the accident, matching together (the rarely matched together) pittie with admiration, Basilius himselfe came foorth, and brought foorth the faire Gynecia with him, who was gone into the campe under colour of visiting her husband, and hearing of her daughters: but indeed Zelmane was the Saint, to which her pilgrimage was entended: cursing, envying, blessing, and in her harte kissing the walles which imprisoned her. But both they with Philanax, and the rest of the principall Nobilitie, went out, to make Honour triumph over Death, conveying that excellent body (wherto Basilius himself would needes bend his shoulder) to a church a mile from the campe, where the valiant Argalus lay intombed; recommending to that sepulchre, the blessed reliques of faithfull and vertuous Love: giving order for the making of marble images, to represent them, & each way enriching the tombe. Upon which, Basilius himself caused this Epitaphe to be written.
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

CHAP. 17.

The remorse of Amphialus for his last deede, and lasting destinie.
His reverent respect in love.
His mothers ghostly counsell to a rape.

Then with eyes full of teares, and mouthes full of her prayses, returned they to the campe, with more and more hate against Amphialus: who (poore Gentleman) had therfore greater portion of woe, then any of them. For that courteous harte, which would have grieved but to have heard the like adventure, was rent with remembrance of himselfe to be the author: so that his wisdome could not so farre temper his passion, but that he tooke his sword, counted the best in the world (which with much bloud he had once conquered of a mightie Giant) and brake it into many pieces (which afterwardes he had good cause to repent) saying, that neither it was worthie to serve the noble exercise of chivalrie, nor any other worthie to feel that sword, which had stroken so excellent a Ladie: & withall, banishing all cheerfulnes of his countenance, he returned home. Where he gate him to his bed, not so much to rest his restles minde, as to avoyd all companie, the sight whereof was tedious unto him. And then melancholie (onely riche in unfortunatune remembrances) brought before him all the mishappes, with which his life had wrestled: taking this, not onely as a confirming of the former, but a presage of following miserie; and to his harte (alredie overcome by sorrowfullnes) even trifling misfortunes came, to fill up the rolle of a grieved memorie, labouring onely his wittes to pearce farther and farther into his owne wretchednes. So all that night (in despite of darkenes) he held his eyes open; and the morning when the light began to restore to each body his colour, then with curtaines barde he himselfe from the enjoying of it: neither willing to feele the comfort of the day, nor the ease of the night: untill his mother (who never knew what love meant, but onely to himward) came to his bed side, and beginning with loving earnestnes to lay a kinde chiding upon him, because he would suffer the weakenesse of sorow, to conquere the strength of his vertues; he did with a broaken peecemeale speach (as if the tempest of passion unorderly
blewe out his words) remember the mishappes of his youth, the evils he had bene cause of, his rebelling with Shame, and that shame increased with shamefull accidents, the deaths of Philoxenus and Parthenia, wherein he found himselfe hated of the ever-ruling powers, but especially (and so especially, as the rest seemed nothing when he came to that) his fatall love to Philoclea: to whom he had so governed himselfe, as one that could neither conquer, nor yeeld; being of the one side a slave, and of the other a jaylor: and with all, almost up-brayding unto his mother the little successe of her large hoping promises, he in effect finding Philoclea nothing mollified, and now himselfe so cast downe, as he thought him unworthy of better.

But his mother (as she had plentifull cause) making him see, that of his other griefes there was little or no faulte in him selfe, and therefore there ought to be little or no griefe in him; when she came to the head of the sore, indeed seeing that she could not patch up her former promises (he taking a desperate deafnesse to all delaying hopes) she confess plainly, that she could prevaile nothing: but the faulte was his owne, who had marred the yong Girle by seeking to have that by praier, which he should have taken by authoritie. That as it were an absurd cunning to make his ladders to go in a plaine way; so was it an untimely and foolish flattery, there to beseech, where one might commaund, puffing the up by being besought, with such a selfe-pride of superioritie, that it was not (forsooth) to be held out, but by a denial. O God (said Amphialus) how wel I thought my fortune would bring forth this end of your labors? assure your self, mother, I will sooner pull out these eies then they shal looke upon the heavenly Philoclea, but as upó a heavē, whence they have their light, & to which they are subject, if they will power down any influēces of cōfort, O happy I: but if by the sacrifice of a faithfull hart, they will not be called unto me, let me languish, & wither with languishing, & grieve with withering, but never so much as repine with never so much grieving. Mother, ô Mother, lust may well be, a tyrant, but true-love where it is indeed, it is a servant. Accursed more then I am, may I be, if ever I did approch her, but that I friezed as much in a fearefull reverence, as I burned in a vehement desire. Did ever mans eye looke
thorough love upō the majesty of vertue, shining through beauty, but that he became (as it wel became him) a captive? & is it the stile of a captive, to write, Our will and pleasure?

3 Tush, tush sonne (said Cecropia) if you say you love, but withall you feare; you feare lest you should offend; offend? & how know you, that you should offend? because she doth denie: denie? Now by my truth; if your sadnes would let me laugh, I could laugh hartily, to see that yet you are ignorant, that No, is no negative in a womans mouth. My sonne, beleeve me, a womā, speaking of women: a lovers modesty among us is much more praised, then liked: or if we like it, so well we like it, that for marring of his modestie, he shall never proceed further. Each vertue hath his time: if you cōmand your soouldier to march formost, & he for curtesie put others before him, would you praise his modestie? love is your Generall: he bids you dare: & will Amphibius be a dastard? Let examples serve: doo you thinke Theseus should ever have gotten Antiope with sighing, and crossing his armes? he ravished her, and ravished her that was an Amazon, and therefore had gotten a habite of stoutnes above the nature of a woman; but having ravished her, he got a child of her. And I say no more, but that (they say) is not gotten without consent of both sides. Iole had her owne father killed by Hercules, & her selfe ravished, by force ravished, & yet ere long this ravished, and unfathered Lady could sportfully put on the Lions skin upon her owne faire shoulders, & play with the clubbe with her owne delicate hands: so easily had she pardoned the ravisher, that she could not but delight in those weapōs of ravishing. But above all, mark Helen daughter to Jupiter, who could never brooke her manerly-wooing Menelaus, but disdained his humblenes, & lothed his softnes. But so well she could like the force of enforcing Paris, that for him she could abide what might be abidden. But what? Menelaus takes hart; he recovers her by force; by force carries her home; by force injoies her; and she, who could never like him for serviceablenesse, ever after loved him for violence. For what can be more agreable, then upon force to lay the fault of desire, and in one instant to joyne a deare delight with a just excuse? or rather the true cause is (pardon me 6 woman-kinde for revealing to mine owne sonne the truth of this mystery) we
thinke there wants fire, where we find no sparkles at lest of furie. Truly I have knowen a great Lady, long sought by most great, most wise, most beautifull, most valiant persons; never wonne; because they did over-suspiciously sollicite her: the same Ladie brought under by an other, inferiour to all them in all those qualities, onely because he could use that imperious maisterfulnesse, which nature gives to men above women. For indeede (sonne, I confesse unto you) in our very creatiō we are servants: and who prayseth his servaunts shall never be well obeyed: but as a ready horse streight yeeldes, when he findes one that will have him yeelde; the same fals to boundes when he feeles a fearefull horseman. Awake thy spirits (good Amphialus) and assure thy selfe, that though she refuseth, she refuseth but to endeere the obtaining. If she weepe, and chide, and protest, before it be gotten, she can but weepe, and chide, and protest, when it is gotte. Thinke, she would not strive, but that she meanes to trie thy force: and my Amphialus, know thy selfe a man, and shew thy selfe a man: and (beleeve me upon my word) a woman is a woman.

CHAP. 18.

1 The forsaken Knights defie. 2 Amphialus answere. 4 The one & others armour and imprese. 5 The issue of their quarrell. 6 Their heroicall monomachy on horse, 7 and foot. 8 Their breathings, 9 & reencounters. 10 Amphialus rescued by Anaxius brethren, the Blacke Knight by the greene and white. 11 The supply of both sides to carry away the breathles Knights. 12 The Blackknights grieves.

Amphialus was aboue to answere her, when a Gentlemā of his made him understande, that there was a messenger come, who had brought a letter unto him from out of the campe: whom he presently calling for, tooke, opened, and read the letter, importing this.

To thee Amphialus of Arcadia, the forsaken Knight wisbeth 1 health, and courage, that by my hand thou maiest receyve punishment for thy treason, according to thine owne offer, which wickedly occasioned, thou haste proudly begun, and accursedly main-
teyned. I will presently (if thy minde faint thee not for his owne guiltiness) meete thee in thy Iland, in such order, as bath by the former beene used: or if thou likest not the time, place, or weapon, I am ready to take thine owne reasonable choise in any of them; so as thou do performe the substaunce. Make me such answere as may shew that thou hast some taste of honour: and so I leave thee, to live till I meete thee.

Amphialus read it, and with a deepe sigh (according to the humour of inward affection) seemed even to condemn him selfe, as though indeed his reproches were true. But howsoever the dulnes of Melancholy would have languishingly yeelded thereunto, his Courage (unused to such injuries) desired helpe of Anger to make him this answere.

2 Orsaken Knight, though your namelesse challenge might carry in it selfe excuse for a man of my birth and estate, yet herein set your harte at rest, you shall not be forsaken. I will without stay answere you in the woonted manner, and come both armed in your foolish threatnings, and yet the more fearelesse, expecting weake blowes, where I finde so strong wordes. You shall not therefore long attende me in the Ilande, before proffe teache you, that of my life you have made your selfe too large a promise. In the meane time, Farewell.

3 This being written, and delivered, the messenger tolde him, that his Lord would (if he liked the same) bring two Knights with him to be his Patrons. Which Amphialus accepted, and withall shaking of (with resolution) his mothers importunate disswasions, he furnished him selfe for the fight: but not in his wonted furniture. For now (as if he would turne his inside outwarde) he would needes appeare all in blacke; his decking both for him selfe, and horse, being cut out into the fashion of very ragges: yet all so dainty, joynd together with pretious stones, as it was a brave raggednesse, and a riche povertie: and so cunningly had a workeman followed his humour in his armour, that he had given it a rustic shewe, and yet so, as any man might perceive was by arte, and not negligence; carying at one instant a disgraced handsomnesse, and a new oldnes. In his shield he bare for his devise, a Night, by an excellently painter, with a Sunne with a shadow, and upon the shadow
with a speech signifying, that it only was barrd from injoying that, whereof it had his life: or, From whose I am bannished. In his creste he caried Philocleas knives, the onely token of her forwarde favour.

So past he over into the Iland, taking with him the two 4 brothers of Anaxius; where he founde the forsaken Knight, attired in his owne liveree, as blacke, as sorrowe it selfe could see it selfe in the blackest glasse: his ornaments of the same hew, but formed in the figure of Ravens, which seemed to gape for carrion: onely his raynes were snakes, which finely wrapping themselves one within the other, their heads came together to the cheekes and bosses of the bit, where they might seeme to bite at the horse, and the horse (as he champte the bit) to bite at them; and that the white foame was ingendred by the poysonous furie of the combatt. His Impresa was a Catoblepta which so long lies dead, as the Moone (whereto it hath so naturall a sympathie) wants her light. The worde signified that The Moone wanted not the light, but the poore beast wanted the Moones light. He had in his headpiece, a whippe, to witnesse a selfe-punishing repentance. Their very horses were cole-blacke too, not having so much as one starre to give light to their night of blackeness: so as one would have thought they had bene the two sonnes of Sorrow, and were come thether to fight for their birth-right in that sore inheritance.

Which alliance of passions so moved Amphialus (alredy 5 tender-minded by the afflictions of Love) that without staffe or sword drawne, he trotted fairely to the forsaken Knight, willing to have put off his combat, to which his melancholy hart did (more then ever in like occasion) misgive him: and therefore saluting him, Good Knight (said he) because we are men, and should knowe reason why we doo things; tell me the cause, that makes you thus eager to fight with me. Because I affirme (answered the forsaken Knight) that thou dost most rebellious injurie to those Ladies, to whom all men owe service. You shall not fight with me (saide Amphialus) upon that quarrell: for I confesse the same too: but it proceeds from their owne beauty, to inforce Love to offer this force. I maintaine then (said the forsaken Knight) that thou art not worthy so to love. And that confesse I too (saide Amphialus) since the world is not so richly blessed, as to bring forth any thing worthy thereof.
But no more unworthy then any other, since in none can be a
more worthy love. Yes, more unworthy then my self (said
the forsaken Knight) for though I deserve contempt, thou
deservest both contempt, and hatred.

But Amphialus by that thinking (though wrongly, each
indeede mistaking other) that he was his rivall, forgat all minde
of reconciliation, and having all his thoughts bōūd up in choler,
never staying either judge, trūpet, or his owne laūce, drew out
his sword, & saying, Thou lyest false villaine, unto him; his
words & blowes came so quick togither, as the one seemed a
lightning of the others thūder. But he foūd no bārre grous of
such seede: for it yeelded him his owne with such encrease,
that though Reason and Amazement go rarely togither, yet the
most reasonable eies that saw it, founde reason to be amazed at
the fury of their combat. Never game of death better plaid;
never fury set it self forth in greater braverie. The curteous
Vulcan, whē he wrought at his nowe more curteous wives
request, Enexas an armour, made not his hammer beget a
greater sounde; then the swords of those noble Knights did;
they needed no fire to their forge; for they made the fire to
shine at the meeting of their swords, & armours; ech side
fetching new spirit from the castle window, and careful of
keeping their sight, it was a matter of greater consideration in
their combat, then either the advantage of Sun or winde:
which Sunne and wind (if the astonished eies of the beholders
were not by the astonishment deceived) did both stand still to
be beholders of this rare match. For neither could their
amazed eies discerne motion in the Sunne, and no breath of
wind stirred, as if either for feare it would not come amōg such
blows, or with delight had his eies so busie, as it had forgot to
open his mouth. This fight being the more cruell, since both
Love and Hatred conspired to sharpen their humours, that
hard it was to say, whether Love with one trumpet, or Hatred
with another, gave the lowder alarum to their courages. Spite,
rage, disdaine, shame, revenge, came weighting upon Hatred:
of the other side came with love-longing Desire, both invincible
Hope, and fearelesse Despaire, with rivallike Jealousie, which
(although brought up within doores in the schoole of Cupid)
woulde shewe themselves no lesse forward, then the other
dustie bande of Mars, to make themselves notable in the
notablenes of this combat. Of eyther side Confidence, un-acquainted with Losse, but assured trust to overcome, and good experience howe to overcome: nowe seconging their terrible blowes with cunning labouring the horses, to winne ground of the enimie; now unlooked-for parting one from the other, to win advantage by an advantageous retoure. But force against force, skill against skill, so enterchangeably encountred, that it was not easie to determine, whether enterprising, or preventing came former: both, sometimes at one instant, doing and suffering wrong, and choller no lesse rising of the doing, then of the suffering. But as the fire, the more fuell is put to it, the more hungrie still it is to devour more: so the more they strake, the more unsatisfied they were with striking. Their verie armour by piecemeale fell away from them: and yet their flesh abode the wounds constantly, as though it were lesse sensible of smarte, then the senselesse armour: their blood in most places stayning the blacke, as if it would give a more lively coulour of mourning, then blacke can doo. And so a long space they fought, while neither vertue, nor fortune seemed partiall of either side: which so tormented the unquiet hart of Amphialus, that he resolved to see a quicke ende: and therefore with the violence of courage, adding strength to his blow, he strake in such wise upon the side of the others heade, that his remembrance left that battered lodging: so as he was quite from himselfe, casting his armes abroade, and redie to fall downe; his sword likewise went out of his hande; but that being fast by a chaine to his arme, he could not loose. And Amphialus used the favour of occasion, redoubling his blowes: but the horse (weary to be beaten, as well as the master) carried his master away, till he came unto himselfe: But then who could have seene him, might wel have discerned shame in his cheekes, and revenge in his eyes: so as setting his teeth togither with rage, he came running upon Amphialus, reaching out his arme, which had gathered up the sword, meaning with that blow to have cleaved Amphialus in two. But Amphialus seeing the blow coming, shunned it with nimble turning his horse aside; wherwith the forsaken Knight over-strake himself so, as almost he came downe with his owne strength. But the more hungrie he was of his purpose, the more he was bard the food of it: disdaining the resistance,
both of force, and fortune, he returned upon the spurre againe, and ranne with such violence upon Amphialus, that his horse with the force of the shocke rose up before, almost overturned: which Amphialus perceiving, with rayne and spurre put forth his horse; and withall gave a mightie blow in the descent of his horse, upon the shoulder of the forsaken Knight; from whence sliding, it fell upon the necke of his horse, so as horse and man fell to the ground: but he was scarce downe before he was up on his feete againe, with brave gesture shewing rising of corage, in the falling of fortune.

7 But the curteous Amphialus excused himselfe, for having (against his will) kild his horse. Excuse thy selfe for viler faults (answered the forsaken Knight) and use this poore advantage the best thou canst; for thou shalt quickly finde thou hast neede of more. Thy folly (said Amphialus) shall not make me forget my selfe: and therewith (trotting a little aside) alighted from his horse, because he would not have fortune come to claime any part of the victorie. Which curteous act would have mollified the noble harte of the forsaken Knight, if any other had done it, besides the Jaylor of his mistres: but that was a sufficient defeazaunce for the firmest bonde of good nature; and theryfore he was no sooner alighted, but that he ranne unto him, re-entring into as cruel a fight, as eye did ever see, or thought could reasonably imagine; farre beyond the reach of weak words to be able to expresse it. For what they had done on horsebacke, was but as a morsell to keep their stomakes in appetite, in comparison of that, which now (being themselves) they did. Nor ever glutton by the châge of daintie diet could be brought to fetch feeding (when he might have bene satisfied before) with more earnestnes, then those (by the change of their maner of fight) fell cleane to a new fight, though any else would have thought they had had their fill alredy. Amphialus being the taller man, for the most part stood with his right legge before; his shield at the uttermost length of his arme; his sword hie, but with the point toward his enemy. But whê he strake, which came so thick, as if every blow would strive to be foremost, his arme seemed still a postillion of death. The forsaken Knight shewed with like skil, unlike gesture, keeping himselfe in continual motion, proportioning the distance betweene thê to any thing that Amphialus
attempted: his eye guided his foote, and his foote conveyed his hand; and since nature had made him something the lower of the two, he made art follow, and not strive with nature: shunning rather the warding his blowes; like a cunning mastiffe, who knowes the sharpnes of the horne, and strength of the Bul; fights low to get his proper advantage; answering mightnes with nimblenes, and yet at times imploying his wonderfull force, wherein he was seconde to none. In summe, the blowes were stronge, the thrusts thicke, and the avoydings cunning. But the forsaken Knight (that thought it a degree of being cöquered to be long in conquering) strake so mightie a blow, that he made Amphialus put knee to the ground, without any humblenes. But when he felt himselfe striken downe, and saw himselfe striken downe by his rivall, then shame seemed one arme, and disdain another; fury in his eyes, and revenge in his hart; skill and force gave place, & they tooke the place of skil & force: with so unweariable a manner, that the forsaken Knight was also driven to leave the streame of cunning, and give himselfe wholly to be guided by the storme of fury: there being in both (because hate would not suffer admiration) extreame disdain to finde themselves so matched.

What (said Amphialus to himselfe) am I Amphialus, before whom so many monsters & Gyants have falne dead, when I onely sought causelesse adventures? and can one Knight now withstand me in the presence of Philoclea, and fighting for Philoclea? or since I lost my liberty, have I lost my courage? have I gotten the hart of a slave, as well as the fortune? If an armie were against me in the sight of Philoclea, could it resist me? O beast, one man resistes thee; thy rivall resistes thee: or am I indeed Amphialus? have not passions kild him, and wretched I (I know not how) succeeded into his place? Of the other side the forsaken Knight with no lesse spite, fel out with himself; Hast thou broké (said he to himselfe) the cömädemét of thy only Princesse to come now into her presence, & in her presence to prove thy self a coward? Doth Asia and Egypt set up Trophies unto thee, to be matched here by a traytor? O noble Barsanes, how shamed will thy soule be, that he that slew thee, should be resisted by this one man? O incomparable Pyrocles, more grieved wilt thou be with thy friends shame, the with thine owne imprisonment, when thou shalt know how
little I have bene able to doo for the deliverie of thee, and those
heavenlie Princesses. Am I worthie to be friend to the most
valourous Prince that ever was entituled valourous, and shewe
my selfe so weake a wretch? No, shamed Musidorus, worthie
for nothing, but to keepe sheepe, get thee a sheepooke again,
since thou canst use a sword no better.

Thus at times did they, now with one thought, then with
another, sharpen their over-sharpe humors; like the Lion, that
beates himselfe with his owne taile, to make himselfe the more
angrie. These thoughtes indeede not staying, but whetting
their angrie swordes, which now had put on the apparraile of
Crueltie: they bleeding so abundantly, that every bodie that
sawe them, fainted for them, & yet they fainted not in them-
selves: their smart being more sensible to others eyes, then to
their owne feeling: Wrath and Courage barring the common
sense from bringing any message of their case to the minde:
Paine, Wearines, and Weakenes, not daring to make known
their case (though already in the limits of death) in the presence
of so violent furie: which filling the veines with rage, in stead
of bloud, and making the minde minister spirites to the bodie, a
great while held out their fight, like an arrowe shotte upward
by the force of the bowe, though by his owne nature he would
goe downward. The forsaken Knight had the more wounds,
but Amphialus had the soarer; which the other (watchinge time
and place) had cōningly geven unto him. Who ever saw
a well-mand Galley fight with a tall ship, might make unto
himselfe some kind of comparison of the difference of these two
Knights; a better couple then which, the world could not
bragge of. Amphialus seemed to excell in strength, the forsaken
Knight in nimblenes; and yet did the ones strength excel
in nimblenes, and the others nimblenes excell in strength:
but now, strength and nimblenes were both gone, and excesse
of courage only maintayned the fight. Three times had
Amphialus with his mightie blowes driven the forsaken
Knight to go staggering backwarde, but every one of those
times he requited pain with smarte, and shame with repulse.
And now, whether he had cause, or that over-much confidence
(an over-forward scholer of unconquered Courage) made him
think he had cause, he bega to persuade himselfe he had the
advantage of the combat, though the advantage he toke himselfe

460
to have, was onely that he should be the later to die: which hopes, Hate (as unsecrete as Love) could not conceale, but drawing himself a little back frō him, brake out in these maner of words.

Ah Amphialus (said the forsakē knight) this third time thou shalt not escape me, but thy death shall satisfie thy injury, & my malice; and pay for the crueltie thou shewedst in killing the noble Argalus, & the fair Parthenia. In troth (said Amphialus) thou art the best knight that ever I fought withal, which would make me willing to graūt thee thy life, if thy wit were as good as thy corage; that (besides other follies) layest that to my charge, which most against my will was committed. But whether my death be in thy power, or no, let this tel thee; And upon the worde wayted a blow, which parted his shield into two peeces; & despising the weak resistance of his alredie broke armor, made a great breach into his hart side, as if he would make a passage for his love to get out at.

But paine rather seemed to increase life, then to weaken life in those champions. For, the forsaken Knight comming in with his right leg, and making it guide the force of the blow, strake Amphialus upon the bellie, so horrible a wouē, that his guts came out withall. Which Amphialus perceaving (fearing death, onely because it should come with overthrow) he seemed to conjure all his strength for one moments service; and so, lifting up his sword with both hands, hit the forsaken knight upō the head, a blow, wherewith his sword brake. But (as if it would do a notable service before it died) it prevayled so, even in the instant of breaking, that the forsaken Knight fell to the ground, quite for that instant forgetting both love and hatred: and Amphialus (finding him self also in such weaknes, as he loked for speedy death) glad of the victorie, though little hoping to enjoy it, puld up his visar, meaning with his dagger to give him death; but in stead of death, he gave him life: for, the aire so revived his spirits, that comming to himself, and seeing his present danger, with a life conquering death, he tooke Amphialus by the thigh, & together rose himselfe, and overturned him. But Amphialus scrambled up againe, both now so weake indeede, as their motions rather seemed the afterdrops to a storme, then any matter of great furie.

But Amphialus might repent himselfe of his wilfull breaking
his good sword: for, the forsaken Knight (having with the extreme- 
temitie of justly-conceived hate, and the unpitifulnes of his 
owne neere-threatnng death, blotted out all complements of 
courtesie) let flie at him so cruelly, that though the blowes 
were weake, yet weaknes upon a weakned subject, proved such 
strëgth, that Amphialus having attempted in vaine, once or twise 
to close with him, receaving wound upő wound, sent his whole 
burden to strike the earth with falling, since he could strike his foo 
no better in standing: geving no other tokens of himself, then as 
of a man even ready to take his oath to be Deathes true servant.

Which when the hardie brothers of Anaxius perceaved, not 
recking law of armes, nor use of chivalrie, they flew in to 
defende their friende, or revenge their losse of him. But they 
were foorthwith encountred with the two brave cõpanions of 
the forsaken Knight; whereof the one being all in greene, both 
armour and furniture, it seemed a pleasant garden, wherein 
grewe orange trees, which with their golden fruiites, cunningly 
beaten in, & embrodered, greatly enriched the eye-pleasing 
colour of greene. In his shield was a sheep, feeding in a pleasant 
field, with this word, Without feare, or envie. And therfore was 
called the Knight of the sheep. The other Knight was all in 
milke white, his attiring els, all cutte in starres, which made of 
cloath of silver, and silver spangles, each way seemed to cast 
many aspects. His device was the very Pole it selfe, about 
which many starres stirring, but the place it selfe lefte voide. 
The word was, The best place yet reserved. But these four 
Knights, inheriting the hate of their friends, began a fierce 
combat: the forsaken Knight hismelfe not able to helpe his 
side, but was driven to sit him downe, with the extreame faint-
nes of his more & more fainting body. But those valiant 
couples seeking honour by dishonouring, and to build safety 
upon ruine, gave new appetites, to the almost glutted eies of 
the beholders: and now bloud began to put sweat from the full 
possession of their outsides, no advantage being yet to be seen;
onely the Knight of the sheepe seeming most deliver, and 
affecting most all that viewed him, when a company of soldiers 
sent by Cecropia, came out in boates to the Ilands: and all 
came running to the destruction of the three Knights, whereof 
the one was utterly unable to defend himselfe.

But then did the other two Knights shewe their wonderfull
courage, and fidelitie. For turning backe to backe, and bothe bestriding the blacke forsaken Knight (who had fainted so long till he had lost the feeling of faintnesse) they helde playe against the rest, though the two brothers unkindly helped them; till Philanax (who watchfully attended such traiterous practises) sent likewise over, both by boate and swimming, so choise a number as did put most of the other to the sworde. Onely the two Brothers, with some of the bravest of them, carrying away the body of Amphialus, which they would rather have died, then have left behind them.

So was the forsaken Knight (layed upon clokes) carried home to the campe. But his two friends knowing his earnest desire not to be knowen, covering him from any bodies eyes, conveyed him to their owne tente: Basilius himselfe conquering his earnest desire to see him, with feare to displease him, who had fought so notably in his quarrell. But Fame set the honour upon his backe, which he would not suffer to shine in his face: no mans mouth being barrein of prayses to the noble Knight, that had bettered the most esteemed Knight in the world: every bodie praying for his life, and thinking that therein they prayed for themselves. But he him selfe, when by the diligent care of friends, and well applied cunning of surgeons, he came to renewe againe the league betweene his minde and body, then fell he to a freshe warre with his owne thoughts, wrongfully condemning his manhood, laying cowardise to him selfe, whome the impudentest backbiter would not so have wrōged. For his courage (used to use victory as an inheritaunce) could brooke no resistance at any time: but now that he had promised him selfe, not onely the conquest of him, but the scaling of the walles, and delivery of Pamela, though he had done beyond al others expectation, yet so short was he of his owne; that he hated to looke upon the Sunne, that had seene him do so weakely: and so much abhorred all visitation or honour, whereof he thought him selfe unworthy, that he besought his two noble friends to carry him away to a castle not far of, where he might cure his wounds, and never be knowne till he made sucesse excuse this (as he thought) want in him. They lovingly obeyed him, leaving Basilius and all the campe very sorrie for the parting of these three unknowne Knights, in whose prowesse they had reposed greatest trust of victory.
But they being gone, Basilius and Philanax gave good order to the strengthening of the siege, fortifying themselves, so as they feared no more any such sudden onset, as that of Anaxius. And they within (by reason of Anaxius hurt, but especially of Amphialus-his) gave themselves only to diligent watch and ward, making no sallies out, but committing the principal trust to Zoilus and Lycurgus. For Anaxius was yet forced to keep his chamber. And as for Amphialus, his body had such wounds, and gave such wounds to his mind, as easily it could not be determined, whether death or he made the greater hast one to the other: for when the diligent care of cunning surgeons, had brought life to the possession of his own right, Sorrows and Shame (like two corrupted servants) came waiting of it, persuading nothing but the giving over of it selfe to destruction. They laide before his eyes his present case, painting every piece of it in moste ougly colours: they shewed him his love wrapped in despaire, his fame blotted by overthrow; so that if before he languished, because he could not obtaine his desiring, he now lamented because he durst not desire the obtaining. Recreant Amphialus, (would he say to him selfe) how darest thou intitle thy selfe the lover of Philoclea, that hast neither shewed thy self a faithfull coward, nor a valiant rebell, but both rebellious and cowardly, which no law can quite, nor grace have pitie of? Alas life, what little pleasure thou dost me, to give me nothing but sense of reproach, and exercise of ruine? I would sweete Philoclea, I had died, before thy eies had seene my weaknes: & then perchaunce with some sigh thou wouldest have confessed, thou hadst lost a worthy servant. But now, caitiff that I am, what ever I have done, serves but to build up my rivals glory. To these speeches he would couple such gestures of vexation, & would fortifie the gestures with such effects of furie, as sometimes offering to tear...
up his wounds, sometimes to refuse the sustenance of meat, & counsell of phisitions, that his perplexed mother was driven to make him by force to be tended, with extreame corsey to her selfe, & annoiance to him: till in the end he was contented to promise her, he would attempt no violence upon himself, upon condition he might be troubled by no body, but onely his Phisitions: his melancholy detesting all company, so as not the very surgeons nor servants durst speak unto him in doing him service: only he had praised his mother, as she tendered his life, she would procure him grace; and that without that, she would never come at him more.

His mother, who had confined all her love only unto him, set only such about him, as were absolutely at her commandment, whom she forbad to let him know any thing that passed in the castle, till his wounds were cured, but as she from time to time should instruct them: she (for her selfe) being resolved, now she had the government of all things in her owne hands, to satisfie her sonnes love, by their yeelding, or satisfie her owne revenge in their punishment. Yet first, because he should be the freer from outward force, she sent a messenger to the campe, to denounce unto Basilius, that if he did not presently raise his siege, she would cause the heads of the three Ladies, prisoners, to be cut of before his eyes. And to make him the more feare a present performance, she caused his two daughters & Zelmane to be led unto the walls, where she had made a scaffold, easie to be seen by Basilius: and there caused the to be kept, as ready for the slaughter, til answere came from Basilius. A sight full of pittie it was, to see those three (all excelling in all those excellencies, wherwith Nature can beautifie any body: Pamela giving sweetnes to majesty, Philoclea enriching noblenes with humblenes, Zelmane setting in womanly beautie manlike valour) to be thus subjected to the basest injury of unjust Fortune. One might see in Pamela a willingnesse to die, rather then to have life at others discretion, though sometimes a princely disdain would sparkle out of her Princely eies, that it should be in others power to force her to die. In Philoclea a pretie feare came up, to endamaske her rosie cheekes: but it was such a feare, as rather seemed a kindly childe to her innate humblenes, then any other dismaiednes: or if she were dismaied, it was more for Zelmane, then for her selfe; or if
more for her selfe, it was because Zelmane should loose her. As for Zelmane, as she went with her hands bound (for they durst not adventure on her well knowne valour, especially amög people which perchâce might be moved by such a spectacle to some revolte) she was the true image of overmaistred courage, & of spite, that sees no remedie. For her breast swelled withall, the bloud burst out at her nose, and she looked paler then accustomed, with her eies cast on the ground, with such a grace, as if she were fallen out with the heavens, for suffering such an injury. The lookers on were so moved withal, as they misliked what themselves did, and yet still did what themselves misliked. For some, glad to rid themselves of the dangerous annoyaunce of this siege, some willing to shorten the way to Amphialus-his succession (whereon they were dependents) some, & the greatest some, doing because others did, and suffering because none durst begin to hinder, did in this sort set their hands to this (in their owne conscience) wicked enterprise.

4 But whê this message was brought to Basilius, & that this pittifull preparation was a sufficient letter of credit for him to beleive it, he called unto him his chief coûcelors: amög which, those he chiefly trusted were Philanax and Kalander (lately come to the campe at Basilius cômandement, & in him selfe wery of his solitary life, wanting his sons presence, & never having heard him his beloved guestes since they parted from him). Now in this doubt what he should do, he willed Kalander to give him his advise: who spake much to this purpose. You coûmand me Sir (said he) to speake, rather because you will keepe your wonted grave, & noble manner, to do nothing of importâce without coûcell, then that in this cause (which indeed hath but one way) your mind needs to have any counsell: so as my speech shall rather be to coûrme what you have alredy determined, thê to argue against any possibilitie of other determination. For what sophistical scholler can finde any question in this, whether you will have your incomparable daughters live, or dye? whether since you be here to cause their deliverance, you will make your being here the cause of their destruction? for nothing can be more unsensible, then to thinke what one doth, & to forget the end why it is done. Do therfore as I am sure you meane to doo, remove the
But since maze onely judgemet seek you armes, siege, siege, say, a own threaten, you daughters. in his this my you trusted, to you, terrified when before not to (whe binds Prince had more meanes ties recover the would bring father. Philanax^ your If enimie is Lord threatning? the away, any these winning of time is the purchase of life, & worse by no meanes then their deaths că befal unto you. A mă might use more words, if it were to any purpose to guild gold, or that I had any cause to doubt of your mind: But you are wise, & are a father. He said no more, for he durst not attempt to persuade the marrying of his daughter to Amphialus, but left that to bring in at another consultation. But Basilius made signe to Philanax, who stāding a while in a maze as inwardly perplexed, at last thus delivered his opiniō.

If ever I could wish my faith untried, & my counsell untrusted, it should be at this time, whē in truth I must coëfesse I would be cōtent to purchase silēce with discredit. But since you cōmand, I obey: onely let me say thus much, that I obey not to these excellent Ladies father, but to my Prince: & a Prince it is to whō I give coīsēl. Therefore as to a Prince I say, that the grave and (I well know) true-minded counsell of my Lord Kalander had come in good time whē you first tooke armes, before al your subjects gate notice of your intention, before so much blood was spēt, & before they were drivē to seek this shift for their last remedy. But if now, this force you away, why did you take armes? since you might be sure when ever they were in extremitie they would have recourse to this threatening? and for a wise man to take in hand that which his enimie may with a word overthrow, hath in my conceit great incongruity, & as great not to forethink what his enemy in reason wil doo. But they threaten they wil kil your daughters. What if they promised you if you removed your siege, they would honorably send home your daughters? would you be angled by their promises? truly no more ought you be terrified by their threatnings. For yet of the two, promise binds faith more then threatening. But indeede a Prince of judgemēt ought not to consider what his enimies promise, or threaten, but what the promisers and threatners in reasō wil do: & the neerest cojeclure therunto, is what is best for their own behoofe to do. They threatē if you remove not, they wil kil your daughters, and if you doo remove, what surety have you, but that they will kil thē, since if the purpose be to cut off
al impediments of Amphialus-his ambitiö, the same cause wil continue when you are away; & so much the more encouraged, as the revenging power is absent, & they have the more oportunitie to draw their factious friends about them: but if it be for their security onely, the same cause wil bring forth the same effect: & for their security they wil preserve thë. But it may be said, no man knows what desperate folkes will do: it is true, and as true that no reason nor policie can prevent what desperate folkes wil do: & therfore they are amög those dangers, which wisdome is not to reckë. Only let it suffice to take away their despaire, which may be by granting pardon for what is past; so as the Ladies may be freely delivered. And let them that are your subjects, trust you that are their Prince: doo not you subject your selfe to trust them, who are so untrusty as to be manifest traitors. For if they finde you so base-minded, as by their th[r]eatning to remove your force, what indignitie is it, that they would not bring you unto, still by the same threatning? since then if Love stir them, love will keep them from murthering what they love; and if Ambition provoke them, ambitious they will be, when you are away, as well as while you are here: take not away your force, which bars not the one, & bridels the other. For as for their shewes and words they are but to feare babes, not worthy once to move a worthy mans conceit; which must still côtider what in reaso they are like to do. Their despaire I grant you shall do wel to prevent, which as it is the last of all resolutions, so no man fals into it, while so good a way as you may offer, is open unto thë. In së, you are a Prince, & a father of people, who ought with the eye of wisdome, the hand of fortitude, and the hart of justice to set downe all private conceits, in comparison of what for the publike is profitable.

6 He would have proceeded on, whë Gynecia came rûning in amazed for her daughter Pamela, but mad for Zelmane; & falling at Basilius feet, besought him to make no delay: using such gestures of cópassiö instead of stopped words, that Basilius, otherwise enough tender minded, easily granted to raise the siege, which he saw dangerous to his daughters: but indeed more carefull for Zelmane, by whose besieged person, the poore old man was streightly besieged: so as to rid him of the famine of his minde, he went in speed away; discharging his soul-
diors: only leaving the authority, as before, in Philanax his hands, he himselfe went with Gynecia to a strong Castle of his, where he took couſell how first to deliver Zelmane, whom he called the poore stranger, as though onely Law of hospitalitie moved him; and for that purpose sent divers messengers to trafﬁcke with Cecropia.

CHAP. 20.

The sweete resistance of the true sisters to the sower assaultes of their false Aunt. The whipping of Philoclea and Pamela. The patience of both and passions for their lovers.

Cecropia by this meanes rid of the present daunger of the besieged (desiring Zoilus and Lycurgus to take the care, till their brother recovered, of revictualling, and furnishing the Citie, both with men and what els wanted, against any new occasion should urge them, she her selfe disdainning to harken to Basilius, without he would grant his daughter in marriage to her son, which by no means he would be brought unto) bent all the sharpenesse of her malicious wit, how to bring a comfortable grant to her sonne; whereupon she well found no lesse then his life depended. Therfore for a while she attempted all meanes of eloquent praying, and flattering perswasion, mingling sometimes gifts, somtimes threatnings, as she had cause to hope, that either open force, or undermining, would best winn the castle of their Resolution. And ever as much as she did to Philoclea, so much did she to Pamela, though in manner sometimes differing, as she found fit to levell at the ones noble height, and the others sweet lowlinesse. For though she knew her sonnes harte had wholly given it selfe to Philoclea, yet seeing the equall gifts in Pamela, she hoped, a faire grant would recover the sorrow of a faire refusal: cruelly enteing the present impoysoning the one, as soone as the others affection were purchased.

But in vaine was all her vaine oratory employed. Pamelaes determination was built upō so brave a Rock, that no shot of hers could reach unto it: and Philoclea (though humbly seated)
was so invironed with sweete rivers of cleere vertue, as could neither be battrd, nor undermined: her witty perswasions had wise answeres; her eloquence recompenced with sweetnes; her threatenings repelled with disdaine in the one, & patience in the other; her gifts either not accepted, or accepted to obey, but not to bind. So as Cecropia in nature violent; cruel, because ambitious; hateful, for old rooted grudge to their mother, & now spitefull because she could not prevale with girles, as she counted them; lastly, drawne on by her love to her son, & held up by a tyrannical authoritie, forthwith followed the byas of her own crooked disposition, & doubling and redoubling her threatenings, fell to co firme some of her threatened effects: first withdrawing al cōfort, both of servāts, & service from thē. But that those excellēt Ladies had bene used unto, eve at home, & thē fōud in theśelves how much good the hardnes of educatiō doth to the resistāce of misery. Then dishonorably using them both in dyet, and lodging, by a contempt to pull downe their thoughts to yeelding. But as before, the consideration of a prison had disgraced al ornamēts, so now the same cōsideratiō made thē attend al diseasefulnes. Then stil, as she found those not pre vaile, would she go forward with giving them terrors, sometimes with noices of horror, sometimes with suddaine frightings in the night, when the solitary darkenesse thereof might easier astonish the disarmed senses. But to all Vertue, and Love resisted, strengthened one by the other, when each found it selve over vehemently assaulted. Cecropia still sweetning her fiercenesse with faire promises, if they would promise faire; that feeling evill, and seing a way far better, their minds might the sooner be mollified. But they that could not taste her behaviour, when it was pleasing, indeed could worse now, when they had lost al taste by her injuries.

3 She resolving all extremities, rather then faile of cōquest, pursued on her rugged way: letting no day passe, without new and new perplexing the poore Ladies minds, and troubling their bodies: and still swelling, the more she was stopped, and growing hot with her owne doings, at length, abominable rage carried her to absolute tyrānies, so that taking with her certaine olde women (of wicked dispositions, and apt for envie-sake to be cruel to youth and beautie) with a countenāce impoysoned with malice, flew to the sweet Philocola, as if so many Kites
should come about a white Dove, & matching violent gestures with mischievous threatnings, she having a rod in her hand (like a fury that should carry wood to the burning of Dianas temple) fell to scourge that most beautifull body: Love in vaine holding the shield of Beautie against her blind cruelty. The Son drew clouds up to hide his face from so pitiful a sight; & the very stone wals did yeeld drops of sweate for agonie of such a mischiefe: each senselesse thing had sense of pittie; onely they that had sense, were senseles. Vertue rarely found her worldly weaknes more, then by the oppression of that day: and weeping Cupid told his weeping mother, that he was sorie he was not deaf, as well as blind, that he might never know so lamentable a worke. Philoclea, with tearefull eyes, and sobbing breast (as soon as her wearines rather then compassion, gave her respite) kneeled downe to Cecropia, and making pittie in her face honourable, and torment delightfull, besought her, since she hated her (for what cause she tooke God to witnesse she knew not) that she would at once take away her life, and not please her self with the tormenting of a poore Gentlewoman. If (said she) the common course of humanitie cannot move you, nor the having me in your owne walles, cannot claime pittie: nor womanly mercie, nor neere alliance, nor remembrance (how miserable so ever now) that I am a Princes daughter; yet let the love (you have often tolde me) your sonne beares me, so much procure, that for his sake, one death may be thought inough for me; I have not lived so many yeares, but that one death may be able to conclude them: neither have my faults, I hope, bene so many, but that one death may satisfie them. It is no great suite to an enimie, when but death is desired. I crave but that, and as for the graunting your request, know for certaine you lose your labours, being every day furthereof-minded from becomming his wife, who useth me like a slave. But that in stead of getting grace renued againe Cecropias, fury: so that (excellent creature) she was newly again tormented by those hellish monsters: Cecropia using no other words, but that she was a proud and ungratefull wench: and that she would teach her to know her owne good, since of her selfe she would not conceive it.

So with silence and patience (like a faire gorgeous armour, 4 hammered upon by an ilfavoured Smith) she abode their pittiles dealing with her: till, rather reserving her for more, then
meaning to end, they left her to an uncomfortable leysure, to consider with her selfe her fortune; both helplesse her selfe, being a prisoner, and hopeles, since Zelmane was a prisoner: who therein onely was short of the bottome of miserie, that she knew not how unworthilie her Angell, by these devils was abused: but wanted (God wot) no stings of griefe, when those words did but strike upon her hart, that Philoclea was a captive, and she not able to succour her. For well she knew the confidence Philoclea had in her, and well she knew, Philoclea had cause to have confidence: and all troden under foot by the wheel of senselesse Fortune. Yet if there be that imperious power in the soule, as it can deliver knowledge to another, without bodilie organs; so vehement were the workings of their spirites, as one mette with other, though themselves perceaved it not, but only thought it to be the doubling of their owne loving fancies. And that was the onely wordly thing, whereon Philoclea rest'd her minde, that she knewe she should die beloved of Zelmane, and shoulde die, rather then be false to Zelmane. And so this most daintie Nimphe, easing the paine of her minde with thinking of another's paine; and almost forgetting the paine of her bodie, through the paine of her minde, she wasted, even longing for the conclusion of her tedious tragedie.

But for a while she was unvisited, Cecropia employing her time in using the like crueltie upon Pamela, her harte growing not onely to desire the fruite of punishing them, but even to delight in the punishing them. But if ever the beames of perfection shined through the clowdes of affliction, if ever Vertue tooke a bodie to shewe his (els unconceaveable) beautie, it was in Pamela. For when Reason taught her there was no resistance, (for to just resistance first her harte was enclined) then with so heavenly a quietnes, and so gracefull a calmenes, did she suffer the divers kindes of tormentes they used to her, that while they vexed her faire bodie, it seemed, that she rather directed, then obeyed the vexation. And when Cecropia ended, and asked whether her harte woulde yeelde: she a little smiled, but such a smiling as shewed no love, and yet could not but be lovelie. And then, Beastly woman (saide she) followe on, doo what thou wilt, and canst upon me: for I know thy power is not unlimited. Thou maist well wracke this sillie bodie, but me thou canst never overthrowe. For my part, I will not doo thee the
pleasure to desire death of thee: but assure thy self, both my life and death, shall triumph with honour, laying shame upon thy detestable tyranny.

And so, in effect, conquering their doing with her suffering, while Cecropia tried as many sorts of paines, as might rather vexe them, then spoyle them (for that she would not do while she were in any hope to winne either of them for her sonne) Pamela remained almost as much content with triall in her selfe, what vertue could doo, as grieved with the miserie wherein she found her selfe plunged: only sometimes her thoughts softned in her, when with open wings they flew to Musidorus. For then she would thinke with her selfe, how grievously Musidorus would take this her miserie; and she, that wept not for her selfe, wept yet Musidorus-his teares, which he would weep for her. For gentle Love did easlier yeeld to lamentation, then the constancy of vertue would els admitte. Then would she re-member the case wherein she had left her poore shepheard, and she that wished death for her self, feared death for him; and she that condemned in her selfe the feeblenes of sorrow, yet thought it great reason to be sory for his sorow: & she that long had prayed for the vertuous joyning themselves together, now thinking to die herself, hartely prayed, that long time their fortunes might be seperated. Live long my Musidorus (would she say) and let my name live in thy mouth; in thy harte my memorie. Live long, that thou mayst love long the chast love of thy dead Pamela. Then would she wish to her selfe, that no other woman might ever possesse his harte: and yet scarcely the wish was made a wish, when her selfe would finde fault with it, as being too unjust, that so excellent a man should be banished from the comfort of life. Then would she fortifie her resolution, with bethinking the worste, taking the counsell of vertue, and comfort of love.
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

CHAP. 21.

Cecropias indurate tyrannies. *Her devise with the death of one to threaten another. Philoclea threatened, persisteth. The execution done in sight of Philoclea & Zelmane. Philocleas sorrow for her sister.

So these diamonds of the world whom Nature had made to be preciously set in the eyes of her creatures, to be the chiefe workes of her workemanship, the chiefe ornaments of the world, and Princesses of felicitie, by rebellious injury were brought to the uttermost distres that an enemies hart could wish, or a womans spite invent: Cecropia dayly in one or other sorte punishing the, still with her evill torments giving them feare of worse, making the feare it selfe the sorriest torment of all; that in the end wearie of their bodies they should be content to bestow them at her appointmet. But as in labour, the more one doth exercise it, the more by the doing one is enhaied to doo; strength growing upo the worke, so as what at first would have seemed impossible, after growes easie: so these Princesses second to none, and far from any second, only to be matched by theselves, with the use of suffering their minds gat the habit of sufferinge so, as all feares & terrors were to them but summons to a battaile, whereof they knew before had they would be victorious, & which in the suffering was painfull, being suffered, was a trophe to it self: whereby Cecropia found her self still farder of: for where at first she might perchance have perswaded them to have visited her sonne, and have given him some comforne in his sickness, drawing neere to the coñines of Deaths kingdome, now they protested, that they would never otherwise speake to him, then as to the enemy, of most unjust cruelty towards them, that any time or place could ever make them know.

This made the poison swell in her cankred brest, perceiving that (as in water) the more she grasped the lesse she held: but yet now having run so long the way of rigour, it was too late in reason, and too contrary to her passion, to returne to a course of meekenesse. And therefore (taking counsell of one of her olde associates who so far excelled in wickednesse as that she had not onely lost all feeling of conscience, but had gotten a very
glory in evill) in the ende they determined, that beating, and other such sharp dealing did not so much pull downe a womans harte, as it bred anger, and that nothing was more enemy to yeielding, then anger; making their ſeſner harts take on the armour of obstinacy: (for thus did their wicked mindes blind to the light of vertue, & owly eied in the night of wickednes interpret of it) & that therfore that was no more to be tried. And for feare of death (which no question would doo most with them) they had bene so often threatened, as they began to be familiarly acquainted with it, and learned to esteeme threatening wordes to be but words. Therefore the last, but best way now was, that the one seing indeede the others death, should perceive, there was no dallying meant: and then there was no doubt, that a womans soule would do much, rather then leave so beautifull a body.

This being concluded, Cecropia went to Philoclea, and tolde 3 her, that now she was to come to the last parte of the play: for her part, though she found her hard harted obstinacie such, that neither the sweetnesse of loving meanes, nor the force of harde meanes could prevale with her, yet before she would passe to a further degree of extremity; she had sought to win her sister; in hope, that her sonne might be with time satisfied with the love of so faire a Lady: but finding her also rather more then lesse wilful, she was now minded that one of their deathes should serve for an example to the other, that despising worthy folks was more hurtfull to the desipier, then the despised: that yet because her sonne especially affected her, & that in her owne selfe she was more inclinable to pittie her, thē she had deserved, she would begin with her sister; who that afternoone should have her head cut of before her face; if in the mean time one of them, did not pull out their il-wrought stiches of unkindnes, she bad her looke for no other, nor læger time thē she told her. There was no assault givē to the sweet Philocleas mind, that entered so far, as this: for where to all paines and daungers of her selfe, foresight with (his Lieutenant Resolution) had made ready defence; now with the love she bare her sister, she was driven to a stay, before she determined: but long she staied not, before this reason did shine unto her, that since in her selfe she preferred death before such a base servitude, love did teach her to wish the same to her sister. Therefore crossing her armes,
& looking sideward upon the groûd, Do what you wil (said she) with us: for my part, heaven shall melt before I be removed. But if you will follow my counsell, for your owne sake (for as for praiers for my sake I have felt how little they prevayle) let my death first serve for example to win her, who perchance is not so resolved against Amphialus, and so shall you not onely justly punish me (who indeede doo hate both you and your sonne) but, if that may moove you, you shall doo more vertuously in preserving one most worthy of life, and killing an other most desirous of death: lastly in winning her, in stead of a peeves unhappie creature, that I am, you shall besse your sonne with the most excellent woman in all praise-worthy thinges, that the worlde holdeth. But Cecropia, (who had already set downe to her selfe what she would do) with bitter both termes, & countenaunce, told her, that she should not neede to woo death over-egerly: for if her sister going before her did not teach her witt, herselxe should quickly follow. For since they were not to be gotten, there was no way for her sonnes quiet, but to know, that they were past getting. And so since no intreating, nor threatening might prevayle, she bad her prepare her eies for a new play, which she should see within fewe houres in the hall of that castle.

A place indeed overfit for so unfit a matter: for being so stately made that the bottome of it being even with the grounde, the roofe reached as hie as any part of the castle, at either ende it had convenient lodgeings. In the one end was (one storie from the ground) Philocleas abode, in the other of even height, Pamela, and Zelmannes in a chamber above her: but all so vaulted of strong, and thickly built stone, as one could no way heare the other: each of these chambers had a litle windowe to looke into the hall, but because the sisters should not have so much comforte, as to looke out to one another, there was (of the outsides) curtaynes drawne, which they could not reach with their hands, so barringe the reach of their sight. But when the houre came that the Tragedie should beginne, the curtaynes were withdrawn from before the windowes of Zelmane, and of Philoclea: a sufficient challenge to call their eies to defende themselves in such an incounter. And by and by came in at one ende of the hall, with about a dozen armed souldiers a Ladie, led by a couple, with her handes bounde before her: from above her eyes to her
lippes muffled with a faire kerchiefe, but from her mouth to the shoulders all bare: and so was led on to a scaffold raised a good deale from the floore, and all covered with crimsin velvet. But neither Zelmane, nor Philoclea needed to be tolde, who she was: for the apparell she ware made them too well assured, that it was the admirable Pamela. Whereunto the rare whitenesse of her naked necke gave sufficient testimonie to their astonished senses. But the fayre Ladie being come to the scaffold, and then made to kneele downe, and so lefte by her unkinde supporters, as it seemed that she was about to speake somewhat (whereunto Philoclea, poore soule, earnestly listned, according to her speach even minded to frame her minde, her harte never till then almost wavering to save her sisters life) before the unfortunate Ladie could pronounce three wordes, the executioner cutt of the ones speech, and the others attention, with making his sworde doo his cruell office upon that beautifull necke. Yet the pitilesse sworde had such pittie of so pretious an object, that at first it did but hitte flat long. But little availed that, since the Ladie falling downe astonnished withall, the cruell villayne forced the sworde with another blowe to divorce the faire marriage of the head and body.

And this was done so in an instant, that the very act did overrun Philoclea's sorrow (sorrow not being able so quickly to thunderbolte her harte thorough her senses, but first onely opprest her with a storme of amazement) but when her eies saw that they did see, as condemning themselves to have seene it, they became weary of their owne power of seing: & her soule then drinking up woe with great draughts, she fel downe to deadly traubes: but her waiting jaylors with cruell pitty brought lothed life unto her; which yet many times tooke his leave as though he would indeed depart: but when he was staied by force, he kept with him deadly Sorrow, which thus exercised her mourning speech. Pamela my sister, my sister Pamela, woe is me for thee, I would I had died for thee. Pamela never more shall I see thee: never more shall I enjoy thy sweet companie, and wise counsell. Alas, thou arte gone to beautifie heaven, and haste thou lefte me here, who have nothing good in me, but that I did ever love thee, and ever will lament thee? Let this day be noted of all vertuous folkes for most unfortunate: let it never be mentioned, but among curses; and cursed be they that
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKE

did this mischiefe, and most accursed be mine eyes that behelde it. Sweete Pamela; that head is striken of, where onely wise-
dome might be spoken withall; that bodie is destroyed, which was the living booke of vertue. Deare Pamela, how haste thou
lefte me to all wretchednesse, and misery? Yet while thou
livedst, in thee I breathed, of thee I hoped. O Pamela, how
much did I for thy excellencie honour thee, more then my
mother, and love thee more then my selfe? Never more shall
I lie with thee: never more shall we bathe in the pleasant river
together: never more shall I see thee in thy shephearde apparell.
But thou arte gone, and where am I? Pamela is dead; and live
I? My God, And with that she fell againe in a soune, so as it
was a great while before they could bring her to her selfe againe;
but being come to her-selfe, Alas (said she) unkind women, since
you have given me so many deathes, torment me not now with
life: for Gods sake let me goe, and excuse your hands of more
blood. Let me follow my Pamela, whom ever I sought to
follow. Alas Pamela, they will not let me come to thee. But
if they keepe promise, I shall tredde thine owne steppes after
thee. For to what am I borne (miserable soule) but to be most
unhappie in my selfe, and yet more unhappie in others? But ó
that a thousand more miseries had happened unto me, so thou
haddest not dyed: Pamela, my sister Pamela. And so, like
lamentable Philomela, complained she the horrible wrong done
to her sister, which if it stird not in the wickedly closed minds
of her tormentors, a pittie of her sorrow, yet bredde it a
wearinesse of her sorrow: so as onely leaving one to prevent any
harme she should doo her selfe, the rest went away, consulting
againe with Cecropia, how to make profite of this their late
bloodie act.
CHAP. 22.

1 Cecropias pelllicie to use Zelmanes intercession. 2 Zelmanes selfe-conflict. 3 Her motion to Philoclea rather to dissemble then dye. 4 Philoclea's resolution rather to dye then dissemble. 5 At sight of Philoclea's head Zelmanes extasies, 7 desperate deseignes, 8 and comfortlesse complaints.

IN the ende, that woman that used most to keep company with Zelmane, told Cecropia, that she founde by many most sensible proofes in Zelmane, that there was never woman so loved another, as she loved Philoclea: which was the cause that she (further then the commandement of Cecropia) had caused Zelmanes curtaines to be also drawne: because having the same spectacle that Philoclea had, she might stand in the greater feare for her, whom she loved so wel: and that indeed she had hit the needle in that devise: for never saw she creature so astonished as Zelmane, exceedingly sory for Pamela, but exceedingely exceeding that exceedingnes in feare for Philoclea. Therefore her advice was, she should cause Zelmane to come and speake with Philoclea. For there being such vehemencie of friendship between them, it was both likely to move Zelmane to perswade, and Philoclea to be perswaded. Cecropia liked wel of the counsell, and gave order to the same woman to go deale therein with Zelmane, and to assure her with othe, that Cecropia was determined Philoclea should passe the same way that Pamela had done, without she did yeeld to satisfie the extremity of her sonnes affection: which the woman did, adding therunto many (as she thought) good reasons to make Zelmane thinke Amphialus a fit match for Philoclea.

But Zelmane (who had from time to time understood the 2 cruell dealing they had used to the sisters, & now had her own eies wounded with the sight of ones death) was so confused withall (her courage still rebelling against her wit, desiring still with force to doo impossible matters) that as her desire was stopped with power, so her coceit was darkned with a mist of desire. For blind Love, & invincible valure stil would cry out, that it could not be, Philoclea should be in so miserable estate, and she not relieve her: and so while she haled her wit to her courage,
she drew it from his owne limits. But now *Philocleas* death (a word able to marshall al his thoughts in order) being come to so short a point either with smal delay to be suffred, or by the giving her selfe to another to be prevented, she was drive to think, and to desire some leasure of thinking: which the woman granted for that night unto her. A night that was not halfe so blacke, as her mind; not halfe so silent, as was fit for her musing thoughts. At last, he that would faine have desperately lost a thousand lives for her sake, could not finde in his harte, that she should loose any life for her owne sake; and he that despised his owne death in respect of honour, yet could well nye dispense with honor it self in respect of *Philocleas* death: for once the thought could not enter into his harte, nor the breath issue out of his mouth, which could consent to *Philocleas* death for any bargaine. Then how to prevent the next degree to death (which was her being possed by another) was the point of his minds labour: and in that he found no other way, but that *Philocleas* should pretend a yeielding unto Cecropias request; & so by speaking with Amphialus, and making faire (but delaying) promises, procure libertie for Zelmane; who onely wishet but to come by a sword, not doubting then to destroy them all, and deliver *Philocleas*: so little did both the mē, and their forces seeme in her eyes, looking downe upon them from the hye toppe of affections tower.

3 With that minde therefore (but first wel bound) she was brought to *Philoclea*, having alredy plotted out in her coeite, how she would deale with her: & so came she with hart and eyes, which did each sacrifice either to Love upon the aultar of Sorrow: and there had she the pleasing displeasing sight of *Philoclea*: *Philoclea*, whō alredy the extreme sense of sorrow had brought to a dulnesse therin, her face not without tokens that beautie had bene by many miseries cruellly battered, & yet shewed it most the perfection of the beautie, which could re-maine unoverthrowne by such enimies. But whē Zelmane was set downe by her, & the womē gone away (because she might be the better perswaded whē no body was by, that had heard her say she would not be perswaded) then began first the eyes to speake, and the harts to cry out: Sorrow a while would needes speake his owne language without using their tongues to be his interpreters. At last Zelmane brake silence, but spake with the
onely eloquence of amazement: for all her long methodized oration was inherited onely by such kinde of speeches. Deare Ladie, in extreame necessities we must not. But alas unfortune wretch that I am, that I live to see this day. And I take heaven and earth to witnesse, that nothing: and with that her brest swelled so with spite and griefe, that her breath had not leasure to turne her selfe into words. But the sweet Philoclea that had alredie dyed in Pamela, and of the other side had the heavines of her hart somthing quickned in the most beloved sight of Zelmane, gessed somewhat at Zelmanes minde; and therefore spake unto her in this sort. My Pyrocles (said she) I know this exceeding comfort of your presence, is not brought unto me for any good-will that is owed unto me: but (as I suppose) to make you perswade me to save my life with the ransome of mine honour: although no bodie should be so unfit a pleader in that cause, as your selfe, yet perchance you would have me live. Your honour? God forbid (said Zelmane) that ever, for any cause, I should yeeld to any touch of it. But a while to pretend some affection, til time, or my libertie might worke somthing for your service: this, if my astonished senses would give me leave, I would faine have persuadedyou.

To what purpose my Pyrocles? (said Philoclea) of a miserable time what gaine is there? hath Pamelaes example wrought no more in me? is a captive life so much worth? cã ever it goe out of these lips, that I love any other but Pyrocles? shal my tongue be so false a traitor to my hart, as to say I love any other but Pyrocles? And why should I do all this? to live? O Pamela, sister Pamela, why should I live? onely for thy sake Pyrocles I would live: but to thee I know too well I shall not live; and if not to thee, hath thy love so base alay, my Pyrocles, as to wish me to live? for dissimulation, my Pyrocles, my simplicitie is such, that I have hardly bene able to keepe a straight way; what shall I doo in a crooked? But in this case there is no meane of dissimulation, not for the cunningest: present answere is required, and present performance upon the answere. Art thou so terrible, ð Death? No my Pyrocles; and for that I doo thanke thee, and in my soule thanke thee; for I confesse the love of thee is heerein my chiefest vertue. Trouble me not therefore, deare Pyrocles, nor double not my death by tormenting my resolution: since I cannot live with thee, I wil dye for thee. Onely

s. A.  
HH  
481
remember me deare Pyrocles; and love the remembrance of me: and if I may crave so much of thee, let me be thy last love, for though I be not worthy of thee (who indeed art the worthiest creature living) yet remember that my love was a worthy love. But Pyrocles was so overcome with sorrow (which wisdome & vertue made just in so excellent a Ladies case, ful of so excellët kindnes) that words were ashamed to come forth knowing how weake they were to expresse his mind, & her merit: and therfore so stayed in a deadly silence, forsaken of hope, & forsaking comfort: till the appointed gardians came in, to see the fruits of Zelmanes labour: & then Zelmane warned by their presence, fel againe to perswade, though scarcely her selfe could tell what; but in sum, desirous of delayes. But Philoclea sweetly continuing costant, & in the end punishing her importunity with silence, Zelmane was faine to ende. Yet craving an other times coëference, she obtained it, & divers others; till at the last Cecropia found it was to no purpose, and therfore determined to follow her owne way. Zelmane yet stil desirous to win (by any means) respit, even wasted with sorrow, & uncertaine, whether in worse case in her presëce, or absence, being able to do nothing for Philocleas succour, but by submitting the greatest corage of the earth to fall at the feete of Cecropia, and crave stay of their sentence till the uttermost was seene, what her perswasions might doe.

Cecropia seemed much to be moved by her importunitie, so as divers dayes were wonne of painfull life to the excellent Philoclea: while Zelmane suffred some hope to cherish her mind, especially trusting upon the helpe of Musidorus, who (she knew) would not be idle in this matter, till one morning a noise awaked Zelmane, from whose over-watchfull mind, the tired body had stolne a little sleep: and streight with the first opening of her eyes, Care taking the woonted place, she ranne to the window which looked into the hall (for that way the noise guided her,) and there might she see (the curtaine being left open ever since the last execution) seven or eight persons in a cluster upon the scaffold: who by & by retiring themselves, nothing was to be seene thereupon, but a bason of golde, pitifully enameled with bloud, and in the midst of it, the head of the most beautifull Philoclea. The horriblenes of the mischiefe was such, as Pyrocles could not at first beleeve his own senses,
but bent his woful eyes to discerne it better: where too well he might see it was Philocleas selfe, having no veile, but beautie, over the face, which still appeared to be alive: so did those eyes shine, even as they were wont, and they were woont more then any other: and sometimes as they moved, it might well make the beholder think, that death therin had bowred their beutie, and not they any way disgraced by death: so sweet and persaring a grace they caried with them.

It was not a pitie, it was not an amazement, it was not a sorow which then laid holde on Pyrocles, but a wilde furie of desperate agonie, so that he cried out, O tyraunt heaven, traytor earth, blinde providence; no justice, how is this done? how is this suffered? hath this world a government? If it have, let it poure out all his mischiefes upon me, and see whether it have power to make me more wretched then I am. Did she excell for this? have I prayed for this? abominaile hande that did it; detestable devil that commauded it; cursed light that beheld it: and if the light be cursed, what are then mine eyes that have seene it? And have I seen Philoclea dead, and doo I live? and have I lived, not to help her, but to talke of her? and stande I still talking? And with that (caried with the madness of anguish, not having a redier way to kill himselfe) he ranne as hard as ever he could, with his head against the wall, with intension to braine himself: but the haste to doo it, made the doing the slower. For, as he came to give the blow, his foot tript, so as it came not with the full force: yet forcible inough to strike him downe, and withall, to deprive him of his sense, so that he lay a while, comforted by the hurt, in that he felte not his discomfort.

And when he came againe to himselfe, he heard, or he thought he heard a voice, which cried, Revege, Revenge; whether indeed it were his good Angell, which used that voice to stay him from unnaturall murderinge of him selfe; or that his wandering spirites lighted upon that conceite, and by their weakenes (subject to apprehensions) supposed they heard it. But that indeed, helped with Vertue, and her valiant servant Anger, stopped him from present destroying him selfe: yeelding, in reason and manhoode, first to destroy, man, woman, and childe, that were any way of kinne to them that were accessarie to this crueltie; then to raze the Castle, and to builde a sumptuous
monument for her sister, and a most sumptuous for her selfe; and then, himselfe to die upon her tomb. This determining in himselfe to do, and to seeke all means how (for that purpose) to get out of prison: he was content a while to beare the thirst of death: and yet went he againe to the windowe, to kisse the beloved head with his eies, but there saw he nothing but the scaffold, all covered over with skarlet, and nothing but solitarie silence, to mourn this mischiefe. But then, Sorrow having disperste it selfe from his harte, in all his noble partes, it proclaimed his authoritie, in cries, and teares, and with a more gentle dolefulnes, could pour out his inward evill.

8 Alas (said he) and is that head taken away too, so soone from mine eyes? What, mine eyes, perhappes they envie the excellencie of your sorrow? Indeede, there is nothing now left to become the eyes of all mankind, but teares: and wo be to me, if any exceede me in wofulnes. I do conjure you all, my senses, to accept no object, but of Sorow: be ashamed, nay, abhor to thinke of comfort. Unhappie eyes, you have seene too much, that ever the light should be welcome to you: unhappie eares, you shall never heare the musicke of Musicke in her voice: unhappie harte, that hast lived to feel these pangues. Thou hast done thy worst, World, & cursed be thou, and cursed art thou, since to thine owne selfe thou hast done the worst thou couldest doe. Exiled Beautie, let onely now thy beautie be blubbered faces. Widowed Musick, let now thy tunes be rorings, and lamentations. Orphane Vertue, get thee winges, and flie after her into heaven; here is no dwelling place for thee. Why lived I, alas? Alas why loved I? to die wretched, and to be the example of the heavens hate? And hate, & spare not, for your worst blow is striken. Sweet Philoclea, thou art gone, and hast caried with thee my love; & hast thy love in me, & I wretched ma do live; I live, to die continually, till thy revenge do give me leave to dy: & then dy I will, my Philoclea, my hart willinglie makes this promise to it selfe. Surely he did not looke upon thee, that gave the cruell blow: for no eye coulde have abidden to see such beautie overthrown by such mischiefe. Alas, why should they divide such a head from such a bodie? no other bodye is worthy of that head; no other head is woorthie of that body: O yet, if I had taken my last leave, if I might have taken a holie kisse from that dying mouth. Where art
thou Hope which promisest never to leave a mā while he liveth? Tell me, what canst thou hope for? nay tell me, what is there which I would willingly hope after? Wishing power (which is accounted infinite) what now is left to wish for? She is gone, and gone with her all my hope, all my wishing. Love, be ashamed to be called Love: cruel Hate, unspeakable Hate is victorious over thee. Who is there now left, that can justify thy tyrannie, and give reason to thy passion? O cruel divorce of the sweetest marriage that ever was in Nature: Philoclea is dead, and dead is with her all goodnesse, all sweetnesse, all excellencie. Philoclea is dead, and yet Life is not ashamed to continue upon the earth. Philoclea is dead: O deadly word; which containeth in it selfe the uttermost of all misfortunes. But happie worde when thou shalt be said of me, and long it shall not be, before it be said.

CHAP. 23.

1A Ladies kinde comforts to Pyrocles comfortlesse unkindnesse. 2His hardly knowing her. 3Her unmasking of Cecropias fruitlesse sophistrie. 4Their medley of solace and sorowe.

Then stopping his woordes with sighes, drowning his sighes in teares, & drying againe his teares in rage, he would sitte a while in a wandring muse, which represented nothing but vexations unto him: then throwing himselfe somtimes upon the floore, and sometimes upon the bedde: then up againe, till walking was wearisome, and rest loathsome: and so neither suffering foode, nor sleepe to helpe his afflicted nature, all that day and night he did nothing, but weep Philoclea, sigh Philoclea, and cry out Philoclea: till as it happened (at that time upon his bed) towarde the dawning of the day, he heard one stirre in his chamber, by the motion of garmets; and he with an angry voice asked, Who was there? A poore Gentlewoman (answered the partie) that wish long life unto you. And I soone death to you (said he) for the horrible curse you have given me. Certainly (said she) an unkinde answere, and far
unworthy the excellencie of your mind; but not unsutable to
the rest of your behaviour. For most parte of this night I have
hearde you (being let into your chamber, you never perceiving
it, so was your minde estraunged from your senses) and have
hearde nothing of Zelmane, in Zelmane, nothing but weake
waylings, fitter for some nurse of a village, then so famous
a creature as you are. O God (cried out Pyrocles) that thou
wert a man that usest these wordes unto me. I tell thee I am
sory: I tell thee I will be sory in despite of thee, and all them
that would have me joyfull. And yet (replied she) perchaunce
Philoclea is not dead, whom you so much bemone. I would we
were both dead of that condition, said Pyrocles. See the folly of
your passion (said she) as though you should be neerer to her,
you being dead, and she alive; then she being dead, & you alive:
& if she be dead, was she not borne to die? what then do you
crie out for? not for her, who must have died one time or other;
but for some fewe yeares: so as it is time, & this world that
seeme so lovely things, and not Philoclea unto you. O noble
Sisters (cried Pyrocles) now you be gone (who were the onely
exalters of all womankind) what is left in that sex, but babling,
and businesse? And truly (said she) I will yet a little longer
trouble you. Nay, I pray you doo (said Pyrocles) for I wishe for
nothing in my shorte life, but mischiefes, and combers: and I
am content you shall be one of them. In truth (said she) you
would thinke your selfe a greatly priviledged person, if since the
strongest buildings, and lastingest monarchies are subject to end,
onely your Philoclea (because she is yours) should be exempted.
But indeede you bemone your selfe, who have lost a friende:
you cannot her, who hath in one act both preserved her honour,
and left the miseries of this worlde. O womans philosophie,
childish follie (said Pyrocles) as though if I do bemone my selfe;
I have not reason to doo so, having lost more then any Monarchie,
nay then my life can be woorth unto me. Alas (said she) com-
forte your selfe, Nature did not forget her skill, when she had
made them: you shall find many their superiours, and perchaunce
such, as (when your eyes shall looke abroad) your selfe will like
better.

2 But that speech put all good maners out of the conceit of
Pyrocles; in so much, that leaping out of his bed, he ran to have
 striken her: but comming neere her (the morning then winning
the field of darkenesse) he saw, or he thought he sawe, indeede, the very face of Philoclea; the same sweetinesse, the same grace, the same beautie: with which carried into a divine astonishment, he fell downe at her feete. Most blessed Angell (said he) well haste thou done to take that shape, since thou wouldest submit thy selfe to mortall sense; for a more Angelicall forme could not have bene created for thee. Alas, even by that excellent beautie, so beloved of me, let it be lawfull for me to aske of thee, what is the cause, that she, that heavenly creature, whose forme you have taken, should by the heavens be destined to so unripe an ende? Why should injustice so prevaile? Why was she scene to the world, so soone to be ravished from us? Why was she not suffered to live, to teach the world perfection? Doo not deceive thy selfe (answered she) I am no Angell; I am Philoclea, the same Philoclea, so truely loving you, so truly beloved of you. If it be so (said he) that you are indeede the soule of Philoclea, you have done well to keepe your owne figure: for no heaven could have given you a better. Then alas, why have you taken the paines to leave your blisfull seat to come to this place most wretched, to me, who am wretchednes it selfe, & not rather obtain for me, that I might come where you are, there eternally to behold, & eternally to love your beauties? you know (I know) that I desire nothing but death, which I only stay, to be justly revenged of your unjust murtherers. Deare Pyrocles (said she) I am thy Philoclea, and as yet living: not murdred, as you supposed, and therefore to be comforted. And with that gave him her hand. But the sweet touch of that hande, seemed to his astraied powers so heavenly a thing, that it rather for a while confirmed him in his former beliefe: till she, with vehement protestations (and desire that it might be so, helping to perswade that it was so) brought him to yeeld; yet doubtfully to yeeld to this height of al comfort, that Philoclea lived: which witnessing with the teares of joy, Alas (said he) how shall I beleive mine eies any more? or doo you yet but appeare thus unto me, to stay me from some desperate end? For alas I sawe the excellent Pamela beheaded: I saw your head (the head indeede, and chiefe parte of all natures workes) standing in a dishe of golde, too meane a shrine (God wote) for such a relike. How can this be, my onely deare, and you live? or if this be not so, how can I beleve mine owne senses? and
if I can not beleve thē, why should I now beleve these blessed
tidings they bring me?

3  The truth is (said she) my Pyrocles, that nether I (as you
finde) nor yet my deare sister is dead: although the mischievously
sytte Cecropia used slightes to make either of us thinke so of
other. For, having in vaine attempted the fardest of her wicked
elocuence, to make eyther of us yeeld to her sonne, and seeing
that neither it, accompanied with great flatteries, and riche
presents, could get any grounde of us, nor yet the violent way
she fell into of crueltie, tormenting our bodies, could prevayle
with us; at last, she made either of us thinke the other dead,
and so hoped to have wrested our mindes to the forgetting of
vertue: and first she gave to mine eyes the miserable spectacle
of my sisters (as I thought) death: but indeede not my sister: it
was onely Artesia, she who so cunningly brought us to this
misery. Truly I am sorry for the poore Gentlewoman, though
justly she be punished for her double falshood: but Artesia
muffled so, as you could not easily discern her; and in my
sisters apparell (which they had taken from her under colour of
giving her other) did they execute: And when I (for thy sake
especially deare Pyrocles) could by no force, nor feare be won,
they assayed the like with my sister, by bringing me downe
under the scaffolde, and (making me thrust my head up through
a hole they had made therin) they did put about my poore necke
a dishe of gold, whereout they had beaten the bottome, so as
having set bloud in it, you sawe how I played the parte of death
(God knowes even willing to have done it in earnest) and so had
they set me, that I reached but on tiptoes to the grounde, so as
scarcely I could breathe, much lesse speake: And truely if they
had kepte me there any whit longer, they had strangled me, in
steed of beheading me: but then they tooke me away, and
seeking to see their issue of this practise, they found my noble
sister (for the deare love she vouchsafeth to beare me) so grieved
withall, that she willed them to doo their uttermost crueltie
unto her: for she vowed, never to receive sustenaunce of them,
that had bene the causers of my murther: and finding both of
us, even given over, not like to live many houres longer, and my
sister Pamela, rather worse then my selfe, (the strength of her
harte worse bearing those indignities) the good woman Cecropia
(with the same pittie as folkes keepe foule, when they are not
fatte inough for their eating) made us know her deceit, & let us come one to another; with what joye you can well imagine, who I know feele the like; saving that we only thought our selves reserved to miseries, and therefore fitter for condoling, then congratulating. For my parte, I am fully perswaded, it is but with a little respite, to have a more feeling sense of the tormentes she prepares for us. True it is, that one of my guardians would have me to beleive, that this proceedes of my gentle cousin Amphialus: who having hearde some inckling that we were evill entreated, had called his mother to his bedside, from whence he never rose since his last combat, and besought, & charged her upon all the love she bare him, to use us with all kindnesse: vowing, with all the imprecacons he could imagine, that if ever he understood for his sake, that I received further hurt then the want of my libertie, he woulde not live an houre longer. And the good woman sware to me that he would kill his mother, if he knewe how I had bene dealte with; but that Cecropia keepes him from understanding thinges how they passe, onely having heard a whispering, and my selfe named, he had (of abundaunce, forsooth, of honorable love) given this charge for us. Whereupon this enlargement of mine was growne: for my parte I know too well their cunning (who leave no mony unoffered that may buy mine honour) to beleive any worde they say, but (my deare Pyrocles) even looke for the worste, and prepare my selfe for the same. Yet I must confess, I was content to robbbe from death, and borrowe of my misery the sweet comfort of seeing my sweet sister, and moste sweete comforte of thee my Pyrocles. And so having leave, I came stealing into your chamber: where (O Lord) what a joy it was unto me, to heare you solemnise the funerals of the poore Philoclea? That I my selfe might live to heare my death bewailed? and by whom? by my deare Pyrocles. That I saw death was not strong enough to divide thy love from me? O my Pyrocles, I am too well paide for my pains I have suffred: joyfull is my woe for so noble a cause; and welcome be all miseries, since to thee I am so welcome. Alas how I pittied to heare thy pittie of me; and yet a great while I could not finde in my hart to interrupt thee, but often had even pleasure to weepe with thee: and so kindly came forth thy lamentations, that they inforced me to lament to, as if indeed I had beene a looker on,
to see poore Philoclea dye. Til at last I spake with you, to try whether I could remove thee fro sorrow, till I had almost procured my selfe a beating.

And with that she pretily smiled, which, mingled with her teares, one could not tell whether it were a mourning pleasure, or a delightful sorrow: but like whē a few Aprill drops are scattered by a gentle Zephyrus among fine coloured flowers. But Pyrocles, who had felt (with so smal distāce of time) in himselfe the overthrow both of hope and despaire, knew not to what key he should tune his mind, either of joy, or sorrow. But finding perfite reason in neither, suffred himselfe to be caried by the tide of his imagination, & his imaginations to be raised even by the sway, which hearing or seing, might give unto thē: he saw her alive, he was glad to see her alive: he saw her weep, he was sory to see her weep: he heard her cōfortable speeches, nothing more gladsome: he hard her prognosticating her own destructiō, nothing more dolefull. But when he had a little taken breath from the panting motion of such contrarietie in passions, he fell to consider with her of her present estate, both comforting her, that certainly the worst of this storme was past, since alreadie they had done the worst, which mans wit could imagine: and that if they had determined to have killed her, they would have now done it: and also earnestly counselling her, and inhabling his counsels with vehement prayers, that she would so far second the hopes of Amphialus, as that she might but procure him liberty; promising then as much to her, as the liberalitie of loving corage durst promise to himselfe.

CHAP. 24.

1 Amphialus excuseth. 2 The Princesses accuse. 3 Cecropia seeking their death 4 findeth her owne. 5 Amphialus—his death-panges and selfe-killing. 6 The wofull knowledge of it.

Ut who would lively describe the manner of these speeches, should paint out the lightsome coulours of affection, shaded with the deepest shadowes of sorrow, finding them betweene hope and feare, a kind of sweetenes in teares: til Philoclea content to receave a kisse, and but a kisse of Pyrocles, sealed up with
moving lippes, and closed them up in comfort: and her-selfe
(for the passage was left betweene them open) went to her
sister: with whom she had stayed but a while, fortifying one
another (while Philoclea tempered Pamela's just disdaine, and
Pamela ennobled Philocleas sweete humblenesse) when Amphialus
came unto them: who never since he had heard Philoclea named,
could bee quiet in himselfe, although none of them about him
(fearing more his mothers violence the his power) would discover
what had passed: and many messages he sent to know her estate,
which brought answere backe, according as it pleased Cecropia
to indite them, till his hart full of unfortunate afflication, more
and more misgiving him, having impatiently borne the delay of
the nights unfitness, this morning he gat up, and though full
of wounds (which not without daunger could suffer such exercise)
he apparelled himselfe, and with a countenance, that shewed
strength in nothing but in griefe, he came where the sisters
were; and weakely kneeling downe, he besought them to
pardon him, if they had not bene used in that castle according
to their worthines, and his dutie; beginning to excuse small
matters, poore Gentleman, not knowing in what sort they had
bene handled.

But Pamelaes hye hart (having conceived mortalll hate for the
injurie offred to her and her sister) couldscarcely abide his
sight, much lesse heare out his excuses; but interrupted him
with these words. Traitor (said she) to thine owne blood, and
false to the profession of so much love as thou hast vowed, doo
not defile our eares with thy excuses; but pursue on thy crueltie,
that thou and thy godly mother have used towards us: for my
part, assure thy self, and so do I answere for my sister (whose
mind I know) I do not more desire mine owne safetie then thy
destruction. Amazed with this speech, he turned his eye, ful
of humble sorrowfulnessse, to Philoclea. And is this (most ex-
cellent Ladie) your doome of me also? She, sweete Ladie, sate
weeping: for as her most noble kinsman she had ever favoured
him, & loved his love, though she could not be in love with his
person; and now partly unkindnes of his wrong, partly pittie
of his case, made her sweete minde yeelde some teares, before
she could answere; and her answere was no other, but that she
had the same cause as her sister had. He replyed no further, but
delivering from his hart two or three (untaught) sighes, rose, and
with most low reverence went out of their chamber: and streight by threatening torture, learned of one of the women, in what terrible manner those Princesses had bene used. But when he heard it, crying out, O God; and then not able to say any more (for his speech went backe to rebounde woe upon his hart) he needed no judge to goe upon him: for no man could ever thinke any otherworthy of greater punishmēt, thē he thought himselfe.

3 Ful therefore of the horriblest despaire, which a most guiltie conscience could breed, with wild lookes promising some terrible issue, understanding his mother was on the toppe of the leades, he caught one of his servants swords from him, and none of them daring to stay him, he went up, carried by furie, in steede of strength; where she was at that time, musing how to goe thorough with this matter, and resolving to make much of her Neeces in shew, and secratly to impoison them; thinking since they were not to be wonne, her sonnes love woulde no otherwise be mitigated.

4 But when she sawe him come in with a sword drawne, and a looke more terrible then the sword, she streight was strickē with the guiltines of her own conscience: yet the wel known humblenes of her son somwhat animated her, till he, comming nearer her, and crying to her, Thou damnable creature, onely fit to bring forth such a monster of unhappines as I am; she fearing he would have stricken her (though indeed he meant it not, but onely intended to kill himselfe in her presence) went backe so far, til ere she were aware, she overthrew her selfe from over the Leades, to receave her deathes kisse at the ground: and yet was she not so happie as presently to dye, but that she had time with hellish agonie to see her sonnes mischiefe (whom she loved so well) before her end; when she confess (with most desperate, but not repêting mind) the purpose she had to impoison the princesses, & would then have had them murthered. But everie bodie seing, and glad to see her end, had left obedience to her tyranny.

5 And (if it could be) her ruine increased woe in the noble hart of Amphialus, who when he saw her fal, had his owne rage stayed a little with the soddennes of her destruction. And was I not enough miserable before (said he) but that before my end I must be the death of my mother? who how wicked so ever,
yet I would she had receaved her punishmët by some other. O Amphialus, wretched Amphialus; thou hast lived to be the death of thy most deere copanion & friend Philoxenus, and of his father, thy most carefull fosterfather. Thou hast lived to kill a Ladie with thine owne handes, and so excellent, and vertuous a Lady, as the faire Parthenia was: thou hast lived to see thy faithfull Ismenus slaine in succouring thee, and thou not able to defende him: thou hast lived to shew thy selfe such a coward, as that one unknowne Knight could overcome thee in thy Ladies presence: thou hast lived to beare armes against thy rightfull Prince, thine owne unkle: Thou hast lived to be accounted, and justly accounted, a traitor, by the most excellent persons, that this world holdeth: Thou hast lived to bee the death of her, that gave thee life. But ah wretched Amphialus, thou hast lived for thy sake, and by thy authoritie, to have Philoclea tormented: O heavens, in Amphialus castle, where Amphialus commaunded; tormented, tormented? torment of my soule, Philoclea tormented: and thou hast had such comfort in thy life, as to live all this while. Perchance this hande (used onely to mischievous aëtes) thinkes it were too good a deede to kill me; or else filthy hande, onely woorthy to kill women, thou art afraide to strike a man. Feare not cowardly hand, for thou shalt kill but a cowardly traitor: and doo it gladlie; for thou shalt kill him, whome Philoclea hateth. With that, furiously he tare open his doublet, and setting the pommell of the sworde to the grounde, and the point to his brest, hee fell upon it. But the sworde more mercifull then hee to himselfe, with the slipping of the pommell, the point swarved, and razed him but upon the side: yet with the fall, his other wounds opened so, as hee bledde in such extremitie, that Charons boate might verie well be carried in that flood: which yet he sought to hasten by this meanes. As he opened his dublet, and fell, there fell out Philocleas knives, which Cecropia at the first had taken from her, and delivered to her sonne; and he had ever worne them next his hart, as the only relique he had of his Saint: now seeing them by him, (his sword being so, as weakenes could not well draw it out from his doublette) he tooke the knives, and pulling one of them out, and many times kissing it, and then, first with the passions of kindnes, and unkindnes, melting in teares, O deare knives, you are come in
a good time, to revenge the wrong I have done you all this while, in keeping you from her blessed side, and wearing you without your mistresse leave. Alas, be witnes with me, yet before I die, (and well you may, for you have layn next my hart) that by my consent, your excellent mistresse should have had as much honour, as this poore place could have brought forth, for so high an excellencie; and now I am condemned to die by her mouth. Alas, other, far other hope would my desire often have given me: but other event it hath pleased her to lay upon me. Ah Philoclea (with that his teares gushed out, as though they would strive to overflow his bloud) I would yet thou knewest how I love thee. Unworthie I am, unhappie I am, false I am; but to thee, alas, I am not false. But what a traitor am I, any way to excuse him, whom she condemneth? Since there is nothing left me, wherein I may do her service, but in punishing him, who hath so offended her. Deare knife, then doo your noble mistresses commaundement. With that, he stabbed himselfe into divers places of his breast, and throte, untill those wounds (with the old, freshly bleeding) brought him to the senselesse gate of Death. 6 By which time, his servants having (with feare of his furie) abstained a while from comming unto him, one of them (pre-ferring duetifull affection before fearfull duetie) came in, and there found him swimming in his owne bloud, there giving a pittifull spectacle, where the conquest was the conquerors over-throw, and self-ruine the onely triumph of a battaile, fought betwenee him, and himselfe. The time full of danger, the person full of worthines, the maner full of horror, did greatlie astonish all the beholders; so as by and by, all the town was full of it, and then of all ages came running up to see the beloved body; every body thinking, their safetie bledde in his woundes, and their honor died in his destruction.
Anaxius—his rages for the death, Queen Helens coming for the cure of Amphialus. Her complaints over him. Her passport and safeconduet, to carry him to her Chirurgion. The peoples sorrow, set downe in a song.

But when it came, (and quickly it came) to the eares of his proude friende Anaxius, (who by that time was growe well of his woüd, but never had come abroad, disdayning to abase himselfe to the companie of any other but of Amphialus) he was exceedingly vexed, either with kindnes, or (if a proud hart be not capable therof) with disdaine, that he, who had the honor to be called the friend of Anaxius, should come to such an unexpected ruine. Therfore, then comming abroad, with a face red in anger, and engrained in pride, with liddes rysed up, and eyes levelling from toppe to the toe of them that met him, treading, as though he thought to make the earth shake under him, with his hande upon his sword; short speeches, and disdainfull answeres, giving streight order to his two brothers, to goe take the oath of obedience, in his name, of all the souldiers, and Citizens in the towne: and withall, to sweare them to revenge the death of Amphialus, upon Basilius. He himself went to see him, calling for all the surgeons & physicians there; spending some time in vewing the body, and threatning them all to be hanged, if they did not heale him. But they (taking view of his woundes, and falling down at Anaxius feete) assured him, that they were mortall, & no possible meanes to keep him above two dayes alive: and he stood partly in doubt, to kil, or save them, betweene his own furie, and their humblenes. But vowing, with his owne hands to kill the two sisters, as causers of his friends death: when his brothers came to him, & told him they had done his commandement, in having receaved the oath of allegiance, with no great diffi-
cultie: the most part terrified by their value, & force of their servants, & many that had bene forward actors in the rebellion, willing to do any thing, rather then come under the subjection of Basilius againe; and such fewe as durst gainsay, being cut of by present slaughter.

But withall (as the chiefe matter of their comming to him)
they told Anaxius, that the faire Queen Helen was come, with an honorable retinue, to the towne: hüblie desiring leave to see Amphialus, who she had sought in many places of the world; & lastly, being returned into her owne countrie, she heard together of the late siege and of his combat with the strange Knight, who had dangerously hurt him. Wherupon, full of loving care (which she was content even to publish to the world, how ungratefully soever he dealt with her) she had gotten leave of Basilius, to come by his frontiers, to carry away Amphialus with her, to the excellentest surgeon then knowen, whom she had in her Countrey, but so olde, as not able to travaile: but had given her soveraigne annointments, to preserve his body withal, till he might be brought unto him: and that Basilius had granted leave: either naturall kindnes prevailing over all the offences done, or rather glad to make any passage, which might leade him out of his countrie, and from his daughters. This discourse Lycurgus understanding of Helene, delivered to his brother, with her vehement desire to see the body, and take her last farewell of him. Anaxius, though he were fallen out with all woman-kind (in respect of the hate he bare the sisters, whom he accounted murtherers of Amphialus) yet at his brothers request, granted her leave. And she (poore Lady) with grievous expectation, and languishing desire, caried her faint legs to the place where he lay, ether not breathing, or in all appearance breathing but death.

3 In which pittious plight when she saw him, though Sorow had set before her minde the pittifulllest conceit thereof that it could paint, yet the present sight went beyonde all former apprehensions: so that beginning to kneele by the bodie, her sight ranne from her service, rather then abide such a sight; and she fell in a soune upon him, as if she could not choose but die of his wounds. But when her breath (aweary to be closed up in woe) broke the prison of her faire lippes, and brought memorie (with his servaunt senses) to his naturall office, she yet made the breath convey these dolefull wordes with it. Alas (said she) Amphialus, what strange diseases be these, that having sought thee so long, I should be now sore to finde thee? that these eyes should looke upon Amphialus, and be grieved withall? that I should have thee in my power without glory, and embrace thee without comfort? How often have I blest the means that
ARCADIA. LIB. 3.

might bring me neer thee? Now, woe worth the cause that brings me so neer thee. Often, alas, often hast thou disdained my teares: but now, my deare Amphialus, receive them: these eies can serve for nothing else, but weepe for thee; since thou wouldest never vouchsafe them thy comforte, yet disdaine not them thy sorrowe. I would they had bene more deare unto thee; for then hast thou lived. Woe is me that thy noble harte could love who hated thee, and hate who loved thee. Alas, why should not my faith to thee cover my other defects, who only sought to make my Crowne thy foote-stoole, my selfe thy servaunt? that was all my ambition; and alas thou disdainedst it to serve them, by whom thy incomparable selfe were disdained. Yet (Ô Philoclea) wheresoever you are, pardon me, if I speake in the bitternes of my soule, excellent may you be in all other things (and excellent sure you are since he loved you) your want of pittie, where the fault onely was infinitenesse of desert, cannot be excused. I would, O God, I would that you had graunted his deserved suite of marrying you, and that I had bene your serving-maide, to have made my estate the foile of your felicitie, so he had lived. How many weary steps have I trodden after thee, while my onely complaint was, that thou werte unkinde? Alas I would now thou werte, to be unkind. Alas why wouldest thou not comauind my service, in persuading Philoclea to love thee? who could, or (if every one could) who would have recounted thy perfections so well, as I? who with such kindly passions could have stirred pittie for thee as I? who should have delivered not onely the wordes but the teares I had of thee? and so shouldest thou have exercised thy disdaine in me, and yet used my service for thee.

With that the body moving somewhat, and giving a grone full of deaths musicke, she fell upon his face, & kist him, and with all cried out. O miserable I, that have onely favour by miserie: and then, would she have returned to a fresh careere of complaints, when an aged and wise Gentleman came to her, and besought her, to remember what was fit for her greatnesse, wisdome, & honour: and with al, that it was fitter to shew her love, in carrying the body to her excellent Surgeon, first applying such excellent medicines as she had received of him for that purpose, rather then onely shew her selfe a woman-lover in fruitles lametations. She was streight warned with the obedi-
ence of an overthrown mind, and therefore leaving some surgeons of her owne to dresse the body, went her selfe to Anaxius, & humbling her selfe to him, as lowe as his owne pride could wish, besought him, that since the surgeons there had utterly given him over, that he would let her carrie him away in her litter with her, since the worst he could have should be to die, and to die in her armes that loved him above al things; & where he should have such monuments erected over him, as were fit for her love, & his worthines: beseeching him withall, since she was in a country of enemies (where she trusted more to Anaxius valour, then Basilius promise) that he would convey them safely out of those territories. Her reasons something moved him, but nothing thoroughly perswaded him, but the last request of his helpe: which he straught promised, warranting all securitie, as long as that sword had his master alive. She as happy therein as unhappines could be (having received as small cofort of her owne surgeons as of the others) caused yet the body to be easily conveyed into the litter: all the people then beginning to roare and crie, as though never till then they had lost their Lorde. And if the terrour of Anaxius had not kept them under, they would have mutinied, rather then suffered his bodie to be caried away.

But Anaxius him selfe riding before the litter, with the choyce men of that place, they were aeraid even to crie, though they were readie to crie for feare: but (because that they might doo) every bodie forced (even with harming themselves) to doo honour to him: some throwing themselves upon the grounde; some tearing their clothes, and casting duste upon their heads, and some even wounding themselves, and sprinkling their owne bloud in the aire. Among the rest, one accounted good in that kinde, and made the better by the true feeling of sorrowe, roared out a song of Lamentation, which (as well as might be) was gathered up in this forme.

Since that to death is gone the shepheard hie,
Whom most the silly shepheards pipe did pryse,
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

And you 6 trees (if any life there lies
In trees) now through your porous barkes receave
The straunge resounde of these my causefull cries:
And let my breath upon your braunches leave,  
*My* breath distinguish'd into wordes of woe,  
That so I may signes of my sorrowe leave.  
But if among yourselves some one tree growe,  
That aptest is to figure miserie,  
Let it embassage beare your grieves to showe.  
The weeping Myrrhe I thinke will not denie  
Her helpe to this, this justest cause of plaint.  
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.  
And thou poore Earth, whom fortune doth attain  
In Natures name to suffer such a harme,  
As for to loose thy gemme, and such a Saint,  
Upon thy face let coaly Ravens swarme:  
Let all the Sea thy teares accounted be:  
Thy bowels with all killing mettals arme.  
Let golde now rust, let Diamonds waste in thee:  
Let pearls be wan with woe their damme doth beare:  
Thy selfe henceforth the light doo never see.  
And you, o flowers, which sometimes Princes were,  
Till these straunge altrings you did hap to trie,  
Of Princes losse your selves for tokens reare.  
Lilly in mourning blacke thy whitenes die:  
O Hiacinthe let Ai be on thee still.  
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.  
O Echo, all these woods with roaring fill,  
And doo not onely marke the accents last,  
But all, for all reach out my wailefull will:  
One Echo to another Echo cast  
Sounde of my griefes, and let it never ende,  
Till that it bath all woods and waters past.  
Nay to the heav'ns your just complaining sende,  
And stay the starrs inconstant constant race,  
Till that they doo unto our dolours bende:  
And aske the reason of that speciall grace,  
That they, which have no lives, should live so long,  
And vertuous soules so soone should loose their place?  
Aske, if in great men good men doo so thronge,  
That he for want of elbowe roome must die?  
Or if that they be skante, if this be wronge?
Did Wisedome this our wretched time espie
In one true chest to rob all Vertues treasure?
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

And if that any counsell you to measure
Your dolefull tunes, to them still playning say,
To well felte griefe, plainte is the onely pleasure.

"O light of Sunne, which is entit'led day,
O well thou doost that thou no longer bidest;
For mourning light her blacke weedes may display.

O Phoebus with good cause thy face thou hidest,
Rather then have thy all-beholding eye
Fould with this sight, while thou thy chariot guidest.
And well (me thinks) becomes this vaultie skie
A stately tombe to cover him deceased.
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.

O Philomela with thy brest oppressed
By shame and griefe, helpe, helpe me to lament
Such cursed harmes as cannot be redressed.
Or if thy mourning notes be fully spent,
Then give a quiet eare unto my playning:
For I to teach the world complainte am bent.
You dimmy clowdes, which well employ your stayning
This cheerefull aire with your obscured cheere,
Witnesse your wofull teares with daily rayning.
And if, ô Sunne, thou ever didst appeare,
In shape, which by mans eye might be perceived;
Vertue is dead, now set thy triumph here.
Now set thy triumph in this world, bereaved
Of what was good, where now no good doth lie;
And by thy pompe our losse will be conceaved.

O notes of mine your selves together tie:
With too much griefe me thinkes you are dissolved.
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

Time ever old, and yonge is still revolved
Within it selfe, and never tasteth ende:
But mankind is for aye to nought resolved.
The filthy snake her aged coate can mende,
And getting youth againe, in youth doth flourish:
But unto Man, age ever death doth sende.
The very trees with grafting we can cherish,
So that we can long time produce their time:
But Man which helpeth them, helplesse must perish.

Thus, thus the mindes, which over all doo clime,
When they by yeares experience get best graces,
Must finish then by deaths detested crime.

We last short while, and build long lasting places:
Ab let us all against foule Nature crie:
We Natures workes doo helpe, she us defaces.

For how can Nature unto this reply?
That she her child, I say, her best child killeth?
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now apply.

Alas, me thinkes, my weakned voice but spilleth,
The vehement course of this just lamentation:
Me thinkes, my sound no place with sorrow filleth.

I know not I, but once in detestation
I have my selfe, and all what life containeth,
Since Death on Vertues fort hath made invasion.

One word of woe another after traineth:
Ne doo I care how rude be my invention,
So it be seene what sorrow in me raigneth.

O Elements, by whose (men say) contention,
Our bodies be in living power maintained,
Was this mans death the fruite of your dissention?

O Phisickes power, which (some say) hath restrained
Approch of death, alas thou helpest meagerly,
When once one is for Atropos distrained.

Great be Physitions brags, but aid is beggerly,
When rooted moisture failes, or growth drie,
They leave off al, and say, death comes too eagerlie.

They are but words therefore that men do buy,
Of any since God AEsculapius ceased.
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

Justice, justice is now (alas) oppressed:
Bountifulnes hath made his last conclusion:
Goodnes for best attire in dust is dressed.
Shepheards bewaile your uttermost confusion;
And see by this picture to you presented,
Death is our home, life is but a delusion.
THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

For see alas, who is from you absented?
Absented? nay I say for ever banished
From such as were to dye for him contented?
Out of our sight in turne of hand is vanished
Shepherd of shepherds, whose well settled order
Private with welth, publike with quiet garnished.
While he did live, farre, farre was all disorder;
Example more prevailing then direction,
Far was homestrife, and far was foe from border.
His life a law, his looke a full correction:
As in his health we healthfull were preserved,
So in his sicknesse grew our sure infection.
His death our death. But ah; my Muse hath swarved,
From such deepe plaint as should such woes descrie,
Which he of us for ever hath deserved.
The stile of heavie hart can never flie
So high, as should make such a paine notorious:
Cease Muse therfore: thy dart & Death applie;
And farewell Prince, whom goodnesse hath made glorious.

CHAP. 26.

1The publike griefe amplified. 2Anaxius death-threatning to the Princesses. 3Their resolutenes in it. 4His returne, and stop. 5Zelmanes brave challenge unto him 6scorned by him. 7His love to Pamela scorned by her. 8His brothers brave loves have as meane successe.

The general consort of al such numbers mourning, perfourmed so the naturall times of sorrow; that even to them (if any such were) that felt not the losse, yet others grief taught them griefe; having before their compassionate sense so passionate a spectacle, of a young man, of great beautie, beautified with great honour, honored by great valure, made of inestimable valure, by the noble using of it, to lye there languishing, under the arrest of death, and a death, where the manner could be no comfort to the discomfortablenes of the matter. But when the bodie was carried thorough the gate, and the people (saving such
as were appointed) not suffred to goe further, then was such an universal crie, as if they had all had but one life, and all receaved but one blow.

Which so moved Anaxius to consider the losse of his friend, that (his minde apter to revenge, then tendernesse) he presently giving order to his brother to keepe the prisoners safe, and unvisited, till his retourne from coveying Helen, he sent a messenger to the sisters, to tel them this curteous message: that at his retourne, with his owne hands, he would cut off their heads, and send them for tokens to their father.

This message was brought unto the sisters, as they sate at that time together with Zelmane, conferring how to carrie themselves, having heard of the death of Amphialus. And as no expectation of death is so painfull, as where the resolution is hindered by the intermixing of hopes, so did this new alarum, though not remove, yet move somewhat the cōstancy of their minds, which were so unconstantly dealt with. But within a while, the excellent Pamela had brought her minde againe to his old acquaintance: and then, as carefull for her sister (whom most dearly she loved) Sister (said she) you see how many acts our Tragedy hath: Fortune is not yet a weare of vexing us: but what? A shippe is not counted strong for byding one storme? It is but the same trumpet of death, which now perhaps gives the last sounde: and let us make that profite of our former miseries, that in them we learned to dye willingly. Truely said Philoclea, deare sister, I was so beaten with the evils of life, that though I had not vertue enough to despise the sweetnesse of it, yet my weaknesse bredde that strength, to be weare of the paines of it: onely I must confesse, that little hope, which by these late accidents was awaked in me, was at the first angrie withall. But even in the darkenesse of that honour, I see a light of comfort appeare; and how can I treade amisse, that see Pamelas steppes? I would onely (O that my wish might take place) that my schoole-Mistres might live, to see me say my lesson truely. Were that a life, my Philoclea? said Pamela. No, no, (said she) let it come, and put on his worst face: for at the worst it is but a bug-beare. Joy is it to me to see you so well resolved; and since the world will not have us, let it lose us. Onely (with that she stayed a little, and sight) onely my Philoclea, (then she bowed downe, and whispered in her eare)
only Musidorus, my shepheard, comes betweene me and death, and makes me thinke I should not dye, because I know he would not I should dye. With that Philoelea sighed also, saying no more, but looking upon Zelmane: who was walking up & downe the chamber, having heard this message from Anaxius, and having in times past heard of his nature, thought him like enough to performe it, which winded her againe into the former maze of perplexitie. Yet debating with her selfe of the manner how to prevent it, she continued her musing humour, little saying, or indeed, little finding in her hart to say, in a case of such extremitie, where peremptorily death was threatened: and so stayed they; having yet that comfort, that they might tarrie togither. Pamela nobly, Philoelea sweetly, and Zelmane sadly, and desperately none of them entertaining sleepe, which they thought should shortly begin, never to awake.

4 But Anaxius came home, having safely conducted Helen: and safely he might wel do it: For though many of Basilius Knights would have attempted something upon Anaxius, by that meanes to deliver the Ladies, yet Philanax, having received his masters commadement, & knowing his word was givē, would not cōsent unto it. And the black-Knight (who by thē was able to carie abroad his woûds) did not know therof; but was bringing forces, by force to deliver his Lady. So as Anaxius, interpreting it rather feare, then faith, and making even chance an argument of his vertue, returned: and as soone as he was returned, with a felon hart calling his brothers up with him, he went into the chamber, where they were all three togither; with full intention to kill the sisters with his owne hands, and send their heads for tokens to their father: Though his brothers (who were otherwise inclined) disswaded him: but his reverence stayed their persuasions. But when he was come into the chamber, with the very words of cholerike threatening climing up his throate, his eies first lighted upon Pamela; who hearing he was comming, and looking for death, thought she would keepe her owne majestie in welcomming it; but the beames thereof so strake his eyes, with such a counterbuffe unto his pride, that if his anger could not so quickly love, nor his pride so easily honor, yet both were forced to finde a worthinesse.

5 Which while it bred a pause in him, Zelmane (who had
ready in her mind both what and how to say) stept out unto him, & with a resolute staydnes (void either of anger, kindnes, disdaine, or humblenesse) spake in this sort. Anaxius (said she) if Fame have not bene overpartiall to thee, thou art a man of exceeding valour. Therefore I doo call thee even before that vertue, and will make it the judge betwenee us. And now I doo affirme, that to the eternall blot of all the faire actes that thou hast done, thou doest weakly, in seeking without daunger to revenge his death, whose life with daunger thou mightst perhaps have preserved: thou doost cowardly, in going about by the death of these excellent Ladies, to prevent the just punishmèt, that hereafter they by the powers, which they better then their father, or any other could make, might lay upon thee; and doost most basely, in once presenting thy selfe as an executioner; a vile office upon men, and in a just cause: beyond the degree of any vile worde, in so unjust a cause, and upon Ladies, and such Ladies. And therefore, as a hangman, I say, thou art unworthy to be counted a Knight, or to be admitted into the companie of Knights. Neither for what, I say, will I alleadge other reasons, of wisdome, or justice, to proove my speech, because I know thou doost disdaine to be tied to their rules: but even in thine owne vertue (whereof thou so much gloriest) I will make my triall: and therefore defie thee, by the death of one of us two, to prove, or disprove these reproaches. Choose thee what armes thou likest, I onely demaund, that these Ladies (whom I defend) may in liberty see the combat.

When Zelmane began her speech, the excellency of her beautie, and grace, made him a little content to heare. Besides that, a new lesson he had read in Pamela, had already taught him some regard. But when she entered into braverie of speech, he thought at first, a mad, and railing humor possest her; till, finding the speeches hold well together, and at length come to flatte challenge of combat; he stood leaning back with his bodie and head, sometimes with bent browes looking upon the one side of her, sometimes of the other, beyonde marvell marvailing, that he, who had never heard such speeches from any Knight, should be thus rebuffed by a woman; and that marvell made him heare out her speech: which ended, he turned his head to his brother Zoilus, and said nothing, but
only lifting up his eyes, smiled. But Zelmane finding his minde, Anaxius (said she) perchaunce thou disdaynest to answere me, because, as a woman, thou thinkest me not fitte to be fought withall. But I tell thee, that I have bene trayned up in martial matters, with so good successe, that I have many times overcome better Knightes then thy selfe: and am well knownen to be equall in feates of armes, to the famous Pyrocles, who slewe thy valiaunt Uncle, the Giant Euardes. The remembraunce of his Uncles death something netled him, so as he answered thus.

Indeed (saide he) any woman may be as valiaunt as that coward, and traytorly boy, who slewe my Uncle trayterouslie, and after ranne from me in the plaine field. Five thousand such could not have overcome Euardes, but by falshood. But I sought him all over Asia, following him still from one of his cony-holes to another: till, comning into this Countrie, I heard of my friendes being besieged, and so came to blowe away the wretches that troubled him. But wheresoever the miserable boy flye, heaven, nor hell, shall keep his harte from being torne by these handes. Thou lyest in thy throate (said Zelmane) that boye, where ever he went, did so noble actes, as thy harte (as proude as it is) dares not thinke of, much lesse perchaunce. But to please thee the better with my presence, I tell thee, no creature can be neerer of kinne to him, then my selfe: and so well we love, that he woulde not be sorrier for his owne death, then for mine: I being begotten by his father, of an Amazon Ladie. And therefore, thou canst not devise to revenge thy selfe more upon him, then by killing me: which, if thou darest doo manfullie, doo it; otherwise, if thou harme these incomparable Ladies, or my selfe, without daring to fight with me, I protest before these Knightes, and before heaven, and earth, (that will reveale thy shame) that thou art the beggerliest dastardly villaine, that dishonoureth the earth with his steppes: and if thou lettest me over-live them, so will I blaze thee. But all this could not move Anaxius, but that he onely said, Evill should it become the terror of the world, to fight, much lesse to skolde with thee.

But (said he) for the death of these same (pointing to the Princesses) of my grace, I give them life. And withall, going to Pamela, and offeringe to take her by the chin, And as for you,
Minion (said he) yeeld but gently to my will, and you shall not only live, but live so happily, He would have said further, whē Pamela, displeased both with words, matter, and maner, putting him away with her faire hand, Proud beast (said she) yet thou plaiest worse thy Comedy, then thy Tragedy. For my part, assure thy selfe, since my destiny is such, that at ech moment my life & death stand in equall balance, I had rather have thee, & think thee far fitter to be my hangman, then my husband. Pride & anger, would faine have cruelly revēged so bitter an answer, but already Cupid had begun to make it his sport, to pull his plumes: so that, unused to a way of courtesie, and put out of his byas of pride, he hastily went away, grumbling to himselfe, betwene threatning & wishing; leaving his brothers with thē: the elder of whom, Lycurgus, liked Philoclea, & Zoilus would nedes love Zelmane; or at lest, entertain themselves with making thē beleve so. Lycurgus more braggard, & nere his brothers humor, begā, with setting forth their bloud, their deedes, how many they had despised, of most excellent womē; how much they were bōūd to them, that would seek that of them. In summe, in all his speeches, more like the bestower, then the desirer of felicitie. Whom it was an excellent pastime (to those that would delight in the play of vertue) to see, with what a wittie ignorance she would not understand: and how, acknowledging his perfections, she would make, that one of his perfections, not to be injurious to Ladies. But when he knew not how to replie, then would he fall to touching and toying, still vewing his graces in no glasse but self-liking. To which, Philocleas shamefastnes, and humblenes, were as strong resisters, as choller, and disdaine. For though she yeelded not, he thought she was to be overcome: and that thought a while stayed him from further violence. But Zelmane had eye to his behaviour, and set in her memorie, upon the score of Revenge, while she her selfe was no lesse attempted by Zoilus; who lesse full of bragges, was forwardest in offering (indeed) dishonourable violence.
Zelmanes persuasions to temporize, and referre them to Basilius.

Anaxius-his embassage to treate the mariage.  

Basilius recourse to a newe Oracle, and his negative thereon.  

The flattering relation of his Mercuric.  

The brothers course to resist force without, and use force within.

But when after their fruitlesse labours they had gone away, called by their brother, (who began to be perplexed betweene new conceived desires, and disdaine, to be disdained) Zelmane (who with most assured quietnesse of judgement looked into their present estate) earnestly persuadeth the two sisters, that to avoide the mischiefes of prowde outrage, they would onely so farre sute their behaviour to their estates, as they might winne time; which as it could not bring them to worse case then they were, so it might bring forth inexpefted relief. And why (said Pamela) shal we any longer flatter adversity? Why should we delight to make our selves any longer balls to injurious Fortune, since our owne kinne are content traitorously to abuse us? Certainely, in mishap it may be some conforte to us, that we are lighted in these fellows handes, who yet will kepe us from having cause of being miserable by our friends meanes. Nothing grieues me more, then that you, noble Ladie Zelmane (to whome the worlde might have made us able to doo honour) shoule receave onely hurte by the contagion of our miserie. As for me, and my sister, undoubtedly it becomes our birth to thinke of dyeing nobly, while we have done, or suffered nothing, which might make our soule ashamed at the parture from these bodies.  

Hope is the fawning traitour of the minde, while under colour of friendship, it robbes it of his chiefe force of resolution. Vertuous and faire Ladie (said Zelmane) what you say is true; and that truth may well make up a part in the harmonie of your noble thoughts. But yet the time (which ought alwaies to be one) is not tuned for it; while that may bring foorth any good, doo not barre your selfe thereof: for then would be the time to die nobly, when you ca not live nobly. Then so earnestly she persuaded with them both, to referre themselves to their fathers consent (in obtaining whereof
they knewe some while would be spent) and by that means to temper the mindes of their prowde woers; that in the ende Pamela yeelded to her, because she spake reason; and Philoclea yeelded to her reason, because she spake it.

And so when they were againe sollicited in that little 2 pleasing petition, Pamela forced her selfe to make answere to Anaxius, that if her father gave his consent she would make her selfe believe, that such was the heavenly determination, since she had no means to avoide it. Anaxius (who was the most franke promiser to himselfe of successe) nothing doubted of Basilius consent, but rather assured him selfe, he would be his oratour in that matter: And therefore he chose out an officious servaunt (whome he esteemed very wise, because he never found him but just of his opinion) and willed him to be his embassadour to Basilius, and to make him knowe, that if he meant to have his daughter both safe and happie, and desired him selfe to have such a sonne in lawe, as would not onely protect him in his quiet course, but (if he listed to accept it) would give him the monarchy of the worlde, that then he should receave Anaxius, who never before knewe what it was to pray any thing. That if he did not, he would make him know, that the power of Anaxius was in every thing beyonde his will, and yet his will not to be resisted by any other power. His servaunt with smiling and caste-up looke, desired God to make his memorie able to conteine the treasure of that wise speach: and therefore besought him to repeate it againe, that by the oftener hearing it, his mind might be the better acquainted with the divinenesse therof, and that being gratiously granted, he then doubted not by carying with him in his conceit, the grace wherewith Anaxius spake it, to persuade rocky minds to their owne harme: so little doubted he to win Basilius to that, which he thought would make him thinke the heavens opened, when he harde but the proffer thereof. Anaxius gravely allowed the probabilitie of his conjecture, and therefore sent him away, promising him he should have the bringing up of his second sonne by Pamela.

The messenger with speede perfioumed his Lords com-3 maundement to Basilius, who by nature quiet, and by superstition made doubtfull, was lothe to take any matter of armes in hand, wherin already he had found so slowe successe; though
Philanax vehemently urged him therunto, making him see that his retiring back did encourage injuries. But Basilius betwixt the feare of Anaxius might, the passio of his love, & jealousie of his estate, was so perplexed, that not able to determine, he tooke the common course of me, to flye only thē to devotiō, whē they want resolutiō: so detaining the messenger with delayes, he deferred the directing of his course to the counsell of Apollo, which because himself at that time could not well go to require, he entrusted the matter to his best trusted Philanax: who (as one in whom obedience was a sufficient reason unto him) wente with diligence to Delphos, where being entred into the secrete place of the temple, and having performed the sacrifices usuall, the spirite that possesse the pro[p]hesying woman, with a sacred fury, attended not his demaund, but as if it would argue him of incredulitie, tolde him, not in darke wonted speeches, but plainely to be understood, what he came for, and that he should returne to Basilius, and will him to denye his daughters to Anaxius and his brothers, for that they were reserved for such as were better beloved of the gods. That he should not doubt, for they should returne unto him safely and speedily. And that he should keepe on his solitary course, till bothe Philanax and Basilius fully agreed in the understanding of the 
former prophecie: withall, commaunding Philanax from thence forward to give tribute, but not oblation, to humane wisedome.

4 Philanax then finding that reason cannot shewe it self more reasonable, then to leave reasoning in things above reason, returnes to his Lorde, and like one that preferred truth before the maintaining of an opinion, hidde nothing from him, nor from thence foorth durste any more disswade him, from that which he founde by the celestiall providence directed; but he him selfe looking to repayre the government as much as in so broken an estate by civill dissention he might, and fortifying with notable arte, bothe the lodges, so as they were almost made unapprochable, he lefte Basilius to bemone the absence of his daughters, and to bewayle the imprisonment of Zelmane: yet wholly given holily to obey the Oracle, he gave a resolute negative unto the messenger of Anaxius, who all this while had waited for it, yet in good termes desiring him to shewe him selfe, in respect of his birth and profession, so Princely a Knight, as without forcing him to seeke the way of force,
to deliver in noble sorte those Ladies unto him, and so should the injurie have bene in Amphialus, and the benefite in him.

The messenger went backe with this answere, yet having ever used to sugre any thing which his Maister was to receave, he tolde him, that when Basilius first understood his desires, he did overreach so farre all his most hopefull expectations, that he thought it were too great a boldnesse to harken to such a man, in whome the heavens had such interest, without asking the Gods counsell, and therefore had sent his principall counsailour to Delphos, who although he kepte the matter never so secrete, yet his diligence, inspired by Anaxius his priviledge over all worldly thinges, had founde out the secrete, which was, that he should not presume to marrie his daughters, to one who already was enrolled among the demie-Gods, and yet much lesse he should dare the attempting to take them out of his hands.

Anaxius, who till then had made Fortune his creator, and Force his God, nowe beganne to finde an other wisedome to be above, that judged so rightly of him: and where in this time of his servauntes wayting for Basilius resolution, he and his brothers had courted their Ladies, as whome they vouchsafed to have for their wives, he resolved now to dally no longer in delayes, but to make violence his Oratour, since he had found persuasions had gotten nothing but answeres. Which intention he opened to his brothers, who having all this while wanted nothing to take that way, but his authoritie, gave spurres to his running, and, unworthy men, neither feeling vertue in themselves, nor tendering it in others, they were headlong to make that evill consorte of love and force, when Anaxius had worde, that from the Tower there were descried some companies of armed men, marching towards the towne; wherefore he gave presente order to his servauntes, and soouldiers, to goe to the gates and walles, leaving none within but himselfe, and his brothers: his thoughts then so full of their intended pray, that Mars-his lowdest trumpet could scarcely have awaked him.
CHAP. 28.

1 Zoilus the messenger, and first offerer of force, is forced to fly, and die. 4 Lycurgus pointed to kill, is fought withal, foiled, & killed. 8 Anaxius the Revenger with Pyrocles the Punisher brave, and bravely combatted.

But while he was directing what he would have done, his yongest brother Zoilus, glad that he had the commission, went in the name of Anaxius, to tel the sisters, that since he had answere from their father, that he and his brother Licurgus, should have them in what sort it pleased them, that they would now graunt them no longer time, but presently to determine, whether they thought it more honorable comfort to be compelled, or persuawed. Pamela made him answere, that in a matter whereon the whole state of her life depended, and wherein she had ever answered, she would not lead, but follow her parents pleasure; she thought it reason she should, either by letter, or particular messenger understand somthing from the themselves, & not have her beleef bound to the report of their partiall servants, & therefore, as to their words, she & her sister, had ever a simple & true resolution, so against their unjust force, God, they hoped, would either arme their lives, or take away their lives.

Wel Ladies (said he) I wil leave my brothers, who by & by wil come unto you, to be their own embassadors, for my parte, I must now do my self service. And with that turning up his mustachoes, and marching as if he would begin a paven, he went toward Zelmane. But Zelmane (having had all this while of the messengers being with Basilius, much to do to keepe those excellent Ladies from seeking by the pasport of death, to escape those base dangers whereunto they found themselves subject) still hoping that Musidorus would finde some meanes to deliver them; and therefore had often both by her owne example, & comfortable reasons, persuawed the to overpasse many insolent indignities of their proud suters, who thought it was a sufficient favour not to doo the uttermost injurie, now come againe to the streight she most feared for them, either of death or dishonor, if heroicall courage would have let her, she
had bee ne beyonde herselfe amazed: but that yet held up her wit, to attend the uttermost occasion, which evē then brought his hairie forehead unto her: for Zoilus smacking his lippes, as for the Prologue of a kisse, and something advancing himselfe, Darling (said he) let thy hart be full of joy, and let thy faire eies be of counsel with it, for this day thou shalt have Zoilus, whō many have lōged for; but none shall have him, but Zel mane. And oh, how much glory I have to think what a race will be betwene us. The world, by the heavens, the world will be too litle for them: And with that, he would have put his arme about her necke, but she, withdrawing her selfe from him, My Lord (said she) much good may your thoughts do you, but that I may not dissemble with you, my nativitie being cast by one that never failed in any of his prognostications, I have bene assured, that I should never be apt to beare children. But since you wil honor me with so hie favor, I must onely desire that I may perfomre a vow which I made among my coti triwomẹn, the famous Amazons, that I would never marrie none, but such one as was able to withstand me in Armes: therfore, before I make mine own desire serviceable to yours, you must vouchsafe to lend me armor and weapons, that at least, with a blow or two of the sword, I may not finde my selfe perjured to my selfe. But Zoilus (but laughing with a hartie lowdnes) went by force to embrace her; making no other answere, but since she had a minde to trie his Knight hood, she should quickly know what a man of armes he was: and so, without reverence to the Ladies, began to struggle with her.

But in Zel mane then Disdaine became wisdome, & Anger 3 gave occasion. For abiding no longer abo ad in the matter, she that had not put off, though she had disguised, Pyrocles, being farre fuller of strong nimblenes, tript up his feete, so that he fel down at hers. And withall (meaning to pursue what she had begun) puld out his sword, which he ware about him: but before she could strike him withall, he gat up, and ranne to a faire chamber, where he had left his two brethre, preparing themselves to come downe to their mistresses. But she followed at his heeles, & evē as he came to throw himself into their arms for succor, she hit him with his own sword, such a blow upō the wast, that she almost cut him a süder: once, she sundred
his soule fro his body, seding it to Proserpina, an angry Goddesse against ravishers.

But Anaxius, seing before his eyes the miserable end of his brother, fuller of despite the wrath, & yet fuller of wrath then sorow, looking with a wofull eye upon his brother Lycurgus, Brother, said he, chastise this vile creature, while I go down, & take order lest further mischief arise: & so went down to the Ladies, whom he visited, doubting there had bene some further practise the yet he conceived. But finding the only strong in pacience, he went & lockt a great Iron gate, by which onely any body might mounte to that part of the Castle, rather to conceal the shame of his brother, slaine by a woman, then for doubt of any other anoyance, and the went up to receave some comfort of the execution, he was sure his brother had done of Zelmane.

But Zelmane no sooner saw those brothers, of whom Reaso assured her she was to expect revege, but that she leapt to a target, as one that well knew the first marke of vulture to be defence. And the accepting the oportunitie of Anaxius going away, she waited not the pleasure of Lycurgus, but without any words (which she ever thought vaine, whē resoluto tooke the place of persuasion) gave her owne hart the contentment to be the assailer. Lycurgus, who was in the dispositio of his nature hazardous, & by the luckie passing through many dangers, growne confident in himselfe, went toward her, rather as to spoile, then to fight, so farre from feare, that his assurednesse disdained to hope. But whē her sword made demonstrations above al flattery of argumēts, & that he found she prest so upon him, as shewed that her courage sprang not from blind despair, but was garded both with cunning & strength: self-love the first in him divided it selfe fro vain-glory, & made him find that the world of worthines had not his whole globe comprised in his brest, but that it was necessary to have strong resistāce against so strong assailing. And so between the, for a few blowes, Mars himself might have bin delighted to looke on. But Zelmane, who knew that in her case, slownesse of victorie was little better the ruine, with the bellowes of hate, blew the fire of courage, and he striking a maine blow at her head, she warded it with the shield, but so warded, that the shield was cut in two pieces, while it protected her, & withall she ran in
to him, and thrusting at his brest, which he put by with his target, as he was lifting up his sword to strike again, she let fall the piece of her shield, and with her left hand catching his sword of the inside of the pōmel, with nimble & strong sleight, she had gottē his sword out of his hand before his sence could cōvey to his imaginatiō, what was to be doubted. And having 6 now two swords against one shield, meaning not foolishly to be ungratefull to good fortune, while he was no more amazed with his being unwepned, then with the suddainnes thereof, she gave him such a woūd upō his head, in despite of the shields over-weak resistāce, that withal he fel to the groud, astonished with the paine, & agast with feare. But seing Zelmane ready to cōclude her victori in his death, bowing up his head to her, with a countenance that had forgotten al pride, Enough excellent Lady, said he, the honor is yours: Wherof you shall want the best witnes, if you kil me. As you have takē frō men the glory of māhood, returne so now againe to your owne sex, for mercy. I wil redeeme my life of you with no smal services, for I will undertake to make my brother obey all your commādements. Grant life I beseech you, for your own honor, and for the persons sake that you love best.

Zelmane represt a while her great hart, either disdaining to be cruell, or pitiful, & therfore not cruell: & now the image of humane condition, begā to be an Orator unto her of compassiō, whē she saw, as he lifted up his armes with a suppliāts grace, about one of thē, unhappily, tied a garter with a Jewell, which (givē to Pyrocles by his aunt of Thessalia, & greatly esteemed by him) he had presēted to Philoclea, & with inward rage promising extream hatred, had scene Lycurgus with a proud force, & not with out some hurt unto her, pull away frō Philoclea, because at entreatie she would not give it him. But the sight of that was like a cyphar, signifying all the injuries which Philoclea had of him suffred, & that remēbrance feeding upō wrath, trod down al cōceits of mercy. And therfore saying no more, but, No villaine, dye: It is Philoclea that sēds thee this tokē for thy love. With that she made her sword drink the blood of his hart, though he wresting his body, & with a coītenāce prepared to excuse, wold fain have delayed the receiving of deaths embassadors.
But neither that staied Zelmanes hand, nor yet Anaxius crie unto her, who having made fast the Iron gate, even then came to the top of the staires, when, contrarie to all his imaginations, he saw his brother lie at Zelmanes mercie. Therefore crying, promising, and threatening to her to hold her hand: the last grone of his brother was the onely answer he could get to his unrespected eloquence. But then Pittie would faine have drawne teares, which Furie in their spring dried; and Anger would faine have spoken, but that Disdaine sealed up his lippes; but in his hart he blasphemed heaven, that it could have such a power over him; no lesse ashamed of the victorie he should have of her, then of his brothers overthrow: and no more spited, that it was yet unrevenge, then that the revenge should be no greater, then a womans destruction. Therefore with no speach, but such a groning crie, as often is the language of sorrowfull anger, he came running at Zelmane, use of fighting then serving in stead of patient consideration what to doo. Guided wherewith, though he did not with knowledge, yet did he according to knowledge, pressing upon Zelmane in such a wel defended manner, that in all the combats that ever she had fought, she had never more need of quicke senses, & ready vertue. For being one of the greatest men of stature then living, as he did fully answere that stature in greatness of might, so did he exceed both in greatness of courage, which with a coutenance formed by the nature both of his mind & body, to an almost horrible fiercenes, was able to have carried feare to any mind, that was not privie to it selfe of a true & constant worthines. But Pyrocles, whose soule might well be separated fro his body, but never alienated fro the remembring what was comely, if at the first he did a little apprehend the dangerousnes of his adversarie, whom once before he had something tried, & now perfectly saw, as the very picture of forcible furie: yet was that apprehension quickly stayed in him, rather strengthening, then weakning his vertue by that wrestling; like wine, growing the stronger by being moved. So that they both, prepared in harts, and able in hands, did honor solitarines there with such a combat, as might have demaunted, as a right of fortune, whole armies of beholders. But no beholders needed there, where manhood blew the trumpet, & satisfaction did whette, as much as glorie. There was strength against nimblenes; rage, against
resolution, fury, against vertue; confidence, against courage; pride, against noblenesse: love, in both, breeding mutual hatred, & desire of revenging the injurie of his brothers slaughter, to Anaxius, being like Philocleas captivity to Pyrocles. Who had seen the one, would have thought nothing could have resisted; who had marked the other, would have marveiled that the other had so long resisted. But like two contrarie tides, either of which are able to carry worldes of shippes, and men upon them, with such swiftnes, as nothing seemes able to withstand them: yet meeting one another, with mingling their watrie forces, and struggling together, it is long to say whether streame gets the victorie: So betweene these, if Pallas had bene there, she could scarcely have tolde, whether she had nurced better in the feastes of armes. The Irish greyhound, against the English mastiffe; the sword-fish, against the whale; the Rhinoceros, against the elephat, might be models, & but models of this cobat. Anaxius was better armed defensively: for (beside a strong caske bravely covered, wherwith he coverd his head) he had a huge shield, such perchance, as Achilles shewed to the pale walles of Troy, wherewithall that body was covered. But Pyrocles, utterly unarmed for defence, to offend had the advantage: for, in either hand he had a sword, & with both hands nimbly performed that office. And according as they were diversely furnished, so did they differ in the manner of fighting. For Anaxius most by warding, and Pyrocles oftnest by avoyding, resisted the adversaries assault. Both hastie to end, yet both often staying for advantage. Time, distance, & motio custom made them so perfect in, that as if they had bene fellow Counsellers, and not enemies, each knewe the others minde, and knew how to prevent it. So as their strength fayled them sooner then their skill, and yet their breath fayled them sooner then their strength. And breathles indeed they grew, before either could complaine of any losse of bloud.
So consenting by the mediation of necessitie, to a breathing time of truce, being withdrawn a little one from the other; Anaxius stood leaning upon his sword, with his grym eye, so setled upon Zelmane, as is wont to be the look of an earnest thought. Which Zelmane marking, &c., according to the Pyroclean nature, fuller of gay braverie in the midst, then in the beginning of däger; What is it (said she) Anaxius, that thou so deeply musest on? Dooth thy brothers exäple make thee thinke of thy fault past, or of thy cominig punishmet? I think (said he) what spiteful God it should be, who, envying my glory, hath brought me to such a waywarde case, that neither thy death can be a revenge, nor thy overthrow a victorie. Thou dost well indeede (saide Zelmane) to impute thy case to the heavenly providence, which will have thy pride find it selfe (even in that whereof thou art most proud) punished by the weake sex, which thou most contemnest.

But then, having sufficiently rested themselves, they renewed againe their combatte, farre more terribly then before: like nimble vaulters, who at the first and second leape, doo but stirre, and (as it were) awake the fierie and ærie partes, which after in the other leapes, they doo with more excellencie exercise. For in this pausing, ech had brought to his thoughts the manner of the others fighting, and the advantages, which by that, and by the qualitie of their weapons, they might work themselves; and so againe repeated the lesson they had said before, more perfectly, by the using of it. Anaxius oftener used blowes, his huge force (as it were) more delighting therein, and the large protection of his shield, animating him unto it. Pyrocles, of a more fine, and deliver strength, watching his time when to give fitte thrustes; as, with the quick obeying of his bodie, to his eyes quicke commandement, he shunned any harme Anaxius could do to him: so would he soon have made an end of Anaxius, if he had not foud him a mà of wonderful, & almost matchlesse excellëcy in matters of armes. Pyrocles used divers saynings, to bring Anaxius on, into some inconvenience. But Anaxius keeping a sound
maner of fighting, never offered, but seeing faire cause, & then followed it with wel-governed violence. Thus spent they a great time, striving to doo, and with striving to doo, wearying themselves, more then with the very doing. Anaxius finding Zelman so neere unto him, that with little motion he might reach her, knitting all his strength together, at that time mainly foyned at her face. But Zelmane strongly putting it by with her right hande sword, comming in with her left foote, and hande, woulde have given him a sharpe visitation to his right side, but that he was faine to leape away. Whereat ashamed, (as having never done so much before in his life)
A LIST OF MISPRINTS IN THE QUARTO, WHICH HAVE BEEN CORRECTED.

51. 4. Reversed t in then
57. 3. sufficient 29. perceived
58. 1. soonest
73. 9. Gentleman
78. 13. applie [correction supplied by catchword]
79. 24. injury
90. 34. the the before Princesse
96. 35. Basilius
100. 9. wenr
101. 13. peatle
114. 2. Masidorus
116. 10. shephadrs 19. constancic
118. 16. Menetcas
120. 38. from hec
122. 21. youug
127. 2. conclude
134. 8. others
141. 24. the
153. 10. ot like
154. 39. nothiug
167. 11. litle
183. 16. woule
186. 24. Enarchus
215. 33. turned parenthesis before delighted
220. 5. The
229. 19. shc
233. 22. the cries
238. 26. turned u in though
269. 4. afterwarwarde
285. 27. LElius
318. 33. judgement
322. 16. minlegd
336. 16. But
360. 33. of of them
386. 18. of of that
401. 19. forcibie
436. 9. turned n in perchance
444. 9. Q misprints 3 for 8
448. 30. themselvcs
452. 17. servc
A LIST OF MISPRINTS

471. 20. hunanitie
485. 16. Q misprints 17 for 23
487. 6. a a more 40. beleeve
489. 25. same
505. 9. wth
507. 25. injurions
509. 8. rhat
511. 13. presnme

A LIST OF MISPRINTS IN THE QUARTO, WHICH SHOULD HAVE BEEN CORRECTED.

26. 28. Amphalus
41. 23. as( well
47. 10. of of 27. preferree
59. 24. Amphilus
95. 27. Artexias [should be Artesias]
233. 32. accomplished [should perhaps have been printed accomplished]
239. 2. Fenus
344. 20. Dorus [should be Pas]
471. 33. comma after "Cecropias"
NOTES

In the following references to the text the lines are numbered from the top of the page, including titles, but not, of course, the headline. The page numbers are in heavier type.

The folio editions are as follows:


(D) The Countesse of Pembrokes Arcadia. Written by Sir Philip Sidney Knight. Now the fourth time published, with some new additions Of The same Author. London. Imprinted for Mathew Lownes. Anno Domini. 1605. [Some copies have "Imprinted for Simon Waterson "]

(E) The Countesse of Pembrokes Arcadia. Written by Sir Philip Sidney Knight. Now the fourth time published, with some new additions. London. Imprinted by H. L. for Simon Waterson 1613. [Some copies have "Imprinted by H. L. for Mathew Lownes "]

(F) The Countesse of Pembrokes Arcadia. Written by Sir Philip Sidney Knight. Now the fift time published, with some new Additions. Also a supplement of a defect in the third part of this History. By Sir W. Alexander. Dublin, Printed by the Societie of Stationers. 1621. Cum Privilegio.

(F') The Countesse of Pembrokes Arcadia. Written by Sir Philip Sidney, Knight. Now the sixt time published, with some new Additions. London Imprinted by H. L. for Matthew Lownes. 1623. [The same edition as F with a new title-page.]

(G) The Countesse Of Pembrokes Arcadia. Written by Sir Philip Sidney Knight. Now the sixt time published, with some new Additions. Also a supplement of a defect in the third part of this Historie, By Sir W. Alexander. London, Printed by W. S. for Simon Waterson. 1627.
NOTES

(G') The | Countesse | of Pembroses | Arcadia. | Written by Sir | Philip Sidney | Knight. | Now the seventh time published, | with some new Additions. | With the supplement of a Defect in the third | part of this History, by | Sir W. A. Knight. | Whereunto is now added a sixth Booke, | By R. B. of Lincolnes Inne, Esq. | London printed by H. L. and R. Y. and are | sold by S. Waterson in S. Pauls Church-yard, 1629.

[The same edition as G with a new title-page.]

(H) The | Countesse | of Pembroses | Arcadia. | Written by Sir Philip Sidney | Knight. | Now the eighth time published, | with some new Additions. | With the supplement of a Defect in the third | part of this History, by | Sir W. A. Knight. | Whereunto is now added a sixth Booke, | By R. B. of Lincolnes Inne, Esq. | London, | Printed for Simon Waterson and | R. Young, Anno 1633.

(I) The | Countesse | of Pembroses | Arcadia. | Written by Sir Philip Sidney | Knight. | Now the ninth time published, with a | twofold supplement of a defect in the third | Book: the one by St W. A. Knight; the | other, by | Mr Ja. Johnston Scoto-Brit. | dedicated to K. James, and now | annexed to this work, for | the Readers be | notit. | Whereunto is also added a sixth Booke, | By R. B. of Lincolnes Inne, Esq. | London, | Printed for J. Waterson and | R. Young, 1638.

(K) The | Countess | of Pembroke's | Arcadia | Written by | S' Philip Sidney | Knight. | The tenth Edition. | With his Life and Death; a brief Table of the principal | Heads, and some other new Additions. | London, | Printed by William Du-Gard: and are to bee sold by | George Calvert, at the | half Moon in the new buildings in Paul's | Church-yard; and Thomas Pierrepont, at the Sun in | Paul's Church-yard, M. DC. LV.

(L) The | Countess | of Pembrooke's | Arcadia | Written by | Sir Philip Sidney | Knight. | The eleventh Edition | With his Life and Death; a brief Table of the principal | Heads, and some other new Additions. | London, | Printed by Henry Lloyd, for William Du-Gard: and are to bee sold by George Calvert, at the half Moon in the new | buildings; and Thomas Pierrepont, at the Sun in St. Paul's | Church-yard, MDCLXII.

(M) The | Countess | of Pembroke's | Arcadia | Written by | Sir Philip Sidney | Knight. | The Thirteenth Edition. | With his Life and Death; a brief Table of the principal | Heads, and some other new Additions. | London, | Printed for George Calvert, at the Golden-Ball in | Little-Britain, MDCLXXIV.

In the following notes each of these folios is referred to by the capital letter prefixed to it in the above list. Q = 1590.

3. 26. D having many fancies 29. LM this chief

3. 3. F—M if much good 10. A—M in a 12—13. M and most heartily 14. C ornament of 17. This notice, as well as the division into chapters, and the summaries preceding them, are omitted in all the folio editions.
NOTES

After the epistle, To My Deare Ladie and Sister, etc., the folios, with the exception of E, insert the following preface:

To the Reader.

The disfigured face, gentle Reader, wherewith this worke not long since appeared to the common view, moved that noble Lady, to whose Honour [H—M insert "it was"] consecrated, to whose protection it was committed, to take in hand the wiping away those spots wherewith the beauties thereof were unworthily blemished. But as often in [DF—M omit "in"] repairing a ruinous house, the mending of some olde part occasioneth the making of some new: so here her honourable labour begunne in correcting the faults, ended in supplying the defectes; by the view of what was ill done guided to the consideration of what was not done. Which part with what advise entred into, with what successe [DF—M accesce] it hath [F—M had] beene passed through, most by her doing, all by her directing, if they may be entreated not to define, which are unfurnisht of meanes to discerne, the rest (it is hoped) will favourably censure. But this they shall, for theyr better satisfaction, understand, that though they finde not here what might be expected, they may finde nevertheless as much as was intended, the conclusion, not the perfection of Arcadia: and that no further then the Authours own writings, or knownen determinations could direct. Whereof who sees not the reason, must consider there may be reason which hee sees not. Albeit I dare affirm hee either sees, or from wiser judgements then his owne may heare, that Sir Philip Sidneies writings can no more be perfected without Sir Philip Sidney, then Apelles pictures without Apelles. There are that thinke the contrary: and no wonder. Never was Arcadia free from the conder of such Cattell. To us, say they, the pastures are not pleasant: and as for the flowers, such as we light on we take no delight in, but the greater part growe not within our reach. Poore soules! what talke they of flowers? They are Roses, not flowers, must doe them good, which if they finde not here, they shall doe well to go [F—M omit "go"] feed elsewhere: Any place will better like them: For without Arcadia nothing growes in more plenty, then Lettuce suitable to their Lippes, If it be true that likenes is a great cause of liking, and that contraries, inferre contrary consequences: then is it true, that the worthles Reader can never worthevly esteeme of so worthye a writing: and as true, that the noble, the wise, the vertuous, the curteous, as many as have had any acquaintance with true learning and knowledge, will with all love and dearesse entertaine it, as well for affinity with themselfes, as being child to such a father. Whom albeiit it do not exactly and in every lineament represent; yet considering the fathers untimely death prevented the timely birth of the childje, it may happily seeme a thanke-woorthy labour, that the defects being so few, so small, and in no principall part, yet the greatest unlikenes is rather in defect then in deformity. But howsoever it is, it is now by [KLM omit "by"] more then one interest The Countesse of Pembrokes Arcadia: done, as it was, for her: as it is, by her. Neither shall these pains be the last (if no unexpected accident cut off her determination) which the everlasting love of her excellent brother, will make her consecrate to his memory.

H. S.

[After the above KLM insert thirteen leaves containing The Life and Death of Sir Philip Sidney and many epigrams and epitaphs.]
5. 26. FGH shore
6. 3. ABDEF graze G—M grace 27. A—M to us E cherries
31. HI others 35. I minde how 38. L sweetness fairness
7. 2. BD—M the sight 32. A—M then by
8. 1. A other HI of the 3. G—M others A we two
destruction? therewithall hee offered wilfully to cast himselfe againe
her mate 20. BD—GK—M man 30. A—M such superstition
36. A—M corde
15. A—M nothing wherewith to 16. F—I not to KLM nought to
20. HI omits well 30. GKLM fisherman 34. LM so full
12. 4—11. C find the, now sir 16—17. A—M confines there
dwelleth 19. HI stirs FGK come 27. AC is sweet
31. A—M omit but in that respect,
13. 3. D Locenia 5. A sorrowful-mind B—M print two words
12. BD—GK—M misfortune 17. E the length 30. F—M the
refreshing 33. ACF—M disposition 39. G voice musick H—M
voice-musick
15. 6—7. KLM print provision is...of magnificence in Italics 19. C
countenance 20—21. E aswell care of them that did serve, as to be
served. 35. A—M was thus
16. 2. M he had had 6. A—M that they were 12. HI
respectively 13. C sight 20. KLM Laconian Pirats 29. G—M
Missenia
35. A—M follie, meane while
18. 9. C ane other 10. DG—M were only 22. KLM be-
stowed nothing on 23. H—M skil on the
19. 2. D which extraordinary 5. C treasures 28. A did
serve 29. G—M as the zealous
20. 21. I proceedings 37. C lodgings
When virtues HI beautie HI may them know 25. BD—M
then C them
22. 4. BD—M smoothed 6. BDFG on time 11. D in-
tempered 17. G—M omit his before bluntnesse 23. I she
33. F—M with grosse
preparing...celebrated 26. G—M his countrey 32. C ane
33. LM fancied
24. 5—26. 14. KLM print this letter in Italics, with the exception of
wisdom...to follow [24. 12—13] and hee cannot...is good [26. 3] which
lines are in Roman type.
stretched 31. LM your obedience 38. BD—M example
25. 5. I be not to be unpleasant, then 29. BD—M whether a 33. I measures
unpleasant, then 29. BD—M having left 29. BD—M the contents 35. I keeps
having left 29. BD—M to each mans C to catch mans 36. ABD—M then had
28. 8. KLM print ease, the Nurse of Poetrie in Italics 17—18.
29. 3—4. BD—M but being 12. E were throughly 28. A—
M omit and attend
30. 1. E this 3—4. Instead of before...marriage, E has not long since
15. HI that, as if 37. BD—H or worse 1—M alike or worse
31. 35. C Chlitophon
32. 14. C affection 31. A had guilded
33. 24. C ane 36. A—M in the meane while
34. 13. HI omit the 22. KLM omit they 28. H—M power
35. 3. HI insert him after assured 12. BD celeration 19.
BD—M example 27. F—M it is
36. 5. KLM from whom 13. BD—M now to think 18. HI
to take 27. F—M it is
37. 1. I his succour 5. LM inroades 8. GH where
38. 34. G—M braver
39. 3. ABC incamping 14. G or the cause 22. A—M
made them 32. BDF—L his generall 37. HI omit to be
40. 13. BDF—I was captaine 25. M against the 33. F—M
omit ever 40. E raunsome
41. 2. E the Captaine 13. GH grates 20. AC gave
27. BD—M example 33. BDFGKL master
42. 2. AC gave HI giveth 15. FG left wind 26. HI
omit as M prints at
43. 2. KLM objections ABDF—M lightning 3. I beginne
44. 6. KLM valor 29. K Palladians
45. 5. L here is here 6. LM now begotten 7. F—M
who alreadie 8—9. HI his onely benefite 31. GHI all readie
out 27. E Now I have
47. 3. BDF—L names of priviledges 4. A—M the Spartane
6. KLM print fellowes and servaunts in Italics 7—8. BD—M con-
tention 10. KLM print forgetfulness in Italics 16. HI omit
the 21. I omits that 24. DF—M then lose E thou to lose
32. HI bad them
NOTES

48. From p. 48 to p. 49 l. 14 C prints "Parthenea" 5. F Kaland-


51. 10. A btahbādēd C btahbandoned instead of both abandoned 11. KLM taking 17. BD omit to 24. A—I Messena KLM Messina


54. 5. C bare she was if the voward failed, yet that woulde conquer Daiphantus marking I bare she was, if 6. AC to Jupiter DFGHKLM saith he I quoth he 33. FGKLM whereof he

55. 4. KL its self of its own M it self of its own 20. KLM leav off at her secretar 23. M come 39. BD—M points KLM without any

56. 7. M love hath 10. M through I have ever though weakness 27. KLM thought KLM omit in 28. I as thinke 29. C of the these

57. 24. G depe sight 27. HI Pyrocles his countenance KLM Pyrocles's countenance C attentation 36. HI burden 38. HI praise

58. 7. F—M which had 20. L known 27. A—M either


63. 16. HI of her 17. DF—M Phineus 19. BD—M tongues 20. L enquire 21. HI she was 23. E uncer-
taine 29. F—M pulled 38. A—IL Citophon

527
NOTES

64. 3. C unto me 4. A—DF—M and cause of doubte E and cause of his doubt 20. CF—IL black-a-more boye K black-a-Moor-boy M Block-a-Moor Boy 24. C about a dozen 30. LM overpast 36. KLM in the

65. 1. E omits but 6. GHI his cóflict 16. HI cannot F accomplished 18. KLM into tears 37. LM omit selfe

66. 24. CE possessor of G—M possessed of 31. F—M estate 33. KLM heart

67. 25. BD—M besought for 29. F—M unto you 31. A—M monuments 34. ILM wert 37. M Then you must


69. 7. KLM omit a 16. KLM waited on 18. KLM this letter KLM shall 20. KLM my 38. BD—M not yet A—M to discover so much 40. KLM affections

70. 18. A will knew 20. LM omit I feare 33. KLM with thus

71. 1. ABCE injury 3. BD—I thine 7. BD—M withall so to 13. AC and unhappye 20. DF—M stage of 26. F meeding 38. ABCE omit the before thickest

72. 10. KLM caus, if at 37. LM of this

73. 36. B—M rose

74. 2. E he had 24. A—F monuments engraved G—M monuments engravd 25. A—M durably 30. AC louelinesse 34. A—M were possible 38. A—M a freshe searche


76. 27. KLM Since that

77. 2. FGKLM which was HI cause 28. D she are 33—34. KLM print to say...womanish in Italics 37—38. KLM print your behaviour...unto it in Italics 40. A—M imperfections A—M to soften

78. 3. KLM print this line in Italics A—M either excellentlie 10. A—M all of them generallie 11. A—M omit right 12. After bastarde KLM print Love in Italics 13—14. KLM print engendred...idleness in Italics 18. G—M yeeding 23. E this much 31. A—F these kinde of loves G—M these kinds of loves 35. A—M womanize 36. B a distaffe spinner D a distaffe a spiner F—M a distaffe, a spinner

528
NOTES

79. 12. LM of his own 14. KLM had been 15. DF—M this I must 23. A—M omit to 28. FGKLM doe well
29. A—M disposition 34—35. KLM print Kite...Hauk in Italics
36. F—M who is so 39. A—M to them
A—M deepe sigh 31. G—M speake
83. 2. A—M was unable 4—5. A—M omit as if...burthen
9. C if he had 10. KLM omit a 15. HI the more to melt 21. KLM upon the other HI well point out 36. A—M with the two 38. AC at his
84. 1. A—M are farre fitter 13. HI no nothing 18—19. KLM print between friends...tedious in Italics 23. C if I by chance 24. K Queen of Amazons LM Queen of Amazon 36. A—M whom so well
86. 3—4. KLM print a heart...lothsom in Italics 5—6. KLM print nothing...friend in Italics 7—8. KLM print less...will in Italics 14. F—M from my 16. A—L taken 18. A—M unmarked by any, to BD—M escape 21. KLM Philanax’s letter 33. A—M me to be found 34. DF—M mine own 39. AC cope
87. 3. EHI pantofle 9. F—M unto me 10. KLM not to name 13. KLM omit any 17. A—M as if he would have had a 37. E omits backe
88. 14—15. KLM print They are...thoughts in Italics 19. HI mine own 20. A—M pleasure 23. A—M omit a 25—26. KLM print open...themselves in Italics 28. KLM print generall goodness in Italics 29—30. KLM print everie one...themselves in Italics 40. A—M hath alreadie brought

S. A.

LL

529
NOTES


94. 2. A—M are even miserable 9. A—M such vehement suits 24. C unfortunate 27. A—M And therewith 34. L counsels 38. KLM print a noble...case in Italics 39. E vexeth me so much


530
NOTES

32. A—M idlenes, and with 33. A—M diss waed 34. A—M overrune

39. A—M obeyed to that 40. A—M markte

103. 5. A—M possessioners A—M nor absolute 11. A—M
in pleasure 24. HI not with admiration 34. HI have sate
36. HI Ensigne-bearer 37. A—M the humblenes 38. A—M
beautie

104. 5. E omits a 13. HI eyes 16. F—M which he
attentive unto it 38. G Arthesia

105. 2. F—M some other harts 7. G Arthesias 19. EILM
gentlewoman 24. AC all ready

it is not 40. LM matcht

107. 13. KLM their companion's 17. A—M beginning
26. F—M worthinesse 34. BDF—M was for a 36. BD—M
scape

108. 13. K Philantus 22. HI could not 30. KLM
Ermelin 37. HI who had 38. F—M the triall

109. 11. HI omit by 20. E sith 25. KLM ill apparelled
31. DF—M omit his 38. A—I two adversaries KLM but
two adversaries 40. A—M himselfe came to FG stickler

110. 9. A—M but even in 20. A abickering 23. F—M
he sent him 35. A—M all the other heavenly

111. 3. F—M readily he 16. AC ill by apparelled 17. A—M
corient of 25. HI with some great 33. K keep him 39. HIM
out of the Princes

112. 12. E omits or 22. A—M come, on which 24. KLM
before 35. A—M sometimes cast up 36. HI strove

113. 1. A—M burthen 4. C has no division into stanzas
Helicon prints 13. LM is plain 19. M these Woods
24—25. LM print all is...experience in Italics 36. A—M in the Pulpit

114. 5. M compassion on me 6. HI pardoning of them
throughly 29. F—M sight of a 39. HI names had the
40. A—M of the Goddesse

115. 6. F—M of mind 7. F—M me such a thraldome
8. E I think, I had spoken 18. HI not to the 23. F—M
omit again 24—26. KLM print Love...tyrant in Italics

his rayment KLM omit the 31. DF—M omit thus 32. F—K
note of interrogation instead of semicolon after Shepheard 34—36. KLM
print highest...miserable in Italics

117. 3—4. KLM print the most...capacitie in Italics 5. F—M
greater 6. A—M wit to discerne 9—10. G—M omit and his
NOTES

senses...reward him  17—18. KLM print though...honorable in Italics
30. A—M well provided

118. 5. F—M his tale  6. LM brother to the  18. A—M
manners 19. E maner  22. A—M that sued to be  29. KLM
omit so

119. 8. BD—M print Theatre in Roman type  A—M omit a
after such E sorts  12. A—M omit tree to tree  13. A—M
insert tree to tree after from  17. A—M inquiring diverse questions
20. E sport for the  27. E sith  39. LM like a

120. 3—4. A—M composition  7. DF—M omit upon
17. A—M was presented to  18. E omits the before twice
34. A—M she neither  37. DF—M omit to  39. A—D
presenting

121. 1. A—M his  12. DF—M grace and pity 19. BD—M
Chirurgerie  21. A—M ever with the contempt of cowardes
24. A—M omit great  28. E was returning  33. A—M her wit

122. 4. A—M bloodie strife  7. A—M eie  15. HI meanes
18. BD—M a horrible fowl e  22. LM omit I  25. BD—M
on my  26. A—M this yong shepheard with a wonderfull courage having

123. 1. KL not instead of nor  8. A—M easily decipher
20. A—M head and breast  23. HI on himselfe ILM fully
25. A—M great while  33. A—DF—M omit us  35. KLM
not instead of nor  40. A—M construction

others 26. HI meanes  37. HI first was curious  40. BD—M
desired  A—M the Pastorals

125. 7. KLM omit of  11. G—M beast  16. E cause then
18. F—M those words  20. A—M mistrusting greatly Cecropia

126. 1. G—M Eclogue  4—6. A—M And because many of the
shepheardes were but newlie come, hee did in a gentle manner chastise their
negligence with making  7—8. A—M omit later come  16. KLM
according  18. KLM omit chiefe  20. M bawl 22—23. A
answere. as the one halfe saying. C answer: as the one halfe saying. D
answere as the one halfe; saying: BEFG answer as the one halfe, saying: HI
answere: as the one halfe, saying: KLM answer at the one half, saying;
24. England's Helicon has "We love, etc." but omits ll. 25, 27, 29, 31, 33
25. HI other  29. A—M in a quire
30. G desaire fall  34. H And in who

127. 1. F—M Then joyning all their  England's Helicon omits
ll. 1 and 2  5. F—M song  7. A—M have "Thyris" instead of
"Lalus"  10. A—M troubled mind  13. A—M Thyris and
H most deep deep silent  25. D—M true-love BE comma
after "true love loves" DF—M put a comma after "true-love" and omit
"loves" A—M have "his" instead of "those" G—M his love
with others 26. A—M Thyris

128. 4. A—M Thyris  5. A—E omit "is"  7. KLM
sweet 18. FG title  25. E worlds BD—M shall yield
26. FGK decke your LM deck you BDE wish your comparison
28. A—M Thyris
NOTES

129. 5. FGI—M from the 6. HI love with lovers hurt is
she did beare

130. 6. E charmes 7. A—M case KLM Muse my, my
sorrow 9. BD—M one point 11. A—M can foile 15. A—M
thrall 16. A—M Thyris 27. L we well the 31—32. DE
have no space between l. 31 and l. 32 32. E omits Dorus
34. DFGKLM Here plaints

10. A—M Thyris A—M thus my 12. A—M which too
much sawe. 13. Instead of this line A—I have the following:
If shee still hate loves lawe,

KLM:
If shee did hate love's law,

14. CF—M earthly A—M doth melt 15. CF—M earthly
17. KLM heart fire 19. A—M Thus doth 20. A—M Thyris
A—M Thus doth 21—22. Instead of these lines A—M have the
following:
That I growe like the beast,
Which bears the bytt a weaker force doth guide,

23. Instead of this line A—I have the following:
Yet patience must abide.

KLM:
Yet patience must abide.

14—26. Instead of these lines A—M have the following:
Such weight it hath which once is full possest.
Dorus. Such weight it hath which once is full possest
That I become a vision.

27. Instead of this line A—I have the following:
Which hath in others head his only being

KLM:
Which hath in others held his only being,

28. Instead of this line A—M have the following:
And lives in fancie seing.

29. Instead of this line A—I have the following:
O wretched state of man in selfe division!

KL:
O wretched state of man in self-divisions!

30—31. Instead of these lines A—M have the following:
Thyris. O wretched state of man in self division
O well thou saeest! a feeling declaration
Thy toong hath made of Cupids deepe incision.

33. A—M But now hoarse voyce, doth 35. A—M singing thou hast
got the

132. 1. A—M singing thou hast got the 2. A—M have "Good
Thyris mine," instead of "New friend of mine;"
3. A—FH—M
My hart doth  
My hearth doth  
4. A—M hadst facilitie  
5. E thy godesse  
8. This Eclogue...commendations. This sentence is not in the folio editions  

132. 19—140. 30. this sone...vaine annoy. In all the folio editions this passage is to be found in the third Eclogues

132. 20. A—M had ever subjected  
23. A—D the couthe

33. G—M eye  
D chipping notes

133. 9. LM shepherds  
14. E—M our wits  
21—22. E has no space between l. 21 and l. 22  
24. E—M because I loved

27. F—M recounted be  
29. LM omit "was"  
35. DE into hem

134. 2. I where n' order is  
6. BDE beast  
28. LM with you love

30. LM cloathed  
33. I song

135. 4. HI her eyes faire  
30. M omits "not"

136. 7. C omits "he"  
8. E—M murther  
13. M common

20. E—M may  
21. C When fall on they  
23. HKLM be us'd

30. A—M glorie M swelly in  
35. C you strengths

137. 1. E—M will I sing  
4. FG domewards

11. L what shee  
17. C omits be  
17—19. KLM print this is...themselves in Italics

20. KLM melancholy  
32. D pray you

138. 20. C Pulling KLM Pulling G—M have "or" instead of "and"  
19. Cf. Appendix p. 565 l. 48  
21. D cars

139. 4. KLM their servants  
9. D live alone

II. F—M this life  
13. L good good haps  
25. FGKLM The father

28. HI The common-wealth  
39. F—M fault

140. 5. HI content  
7. E—M these are your

11. D wonders  
31. Cf. Appendix p. 565 l. 29  
32—33. easilie...his person.

In all the folio editions this sentence occurs in the third Eclogues

140. 33—141. 2. But Basilius to...performed in. This passage is not in the folio editions, but cf. Appendix p. 564 l. 30

141. 2—143. 9. this doble Sestine...song at evening. In all the folio editions this passage is to be found in the second Eclogues

141. 8. A—M give  
20. M affliction

142. 19. BD—I all those  
29. A—M I hate my selfe

30. KLM my ears  
31. HI maintaine

143. 3. C whose reproche  
4. KLM mourning  
8. A—M transfer Kliaus to l. 9  
10—13. Zelmane seing...Philocleas cares. Cf. Appendix p. 566 l. 1  
13—14. laying fast...Hope. Cf. Appendix p. 563 l. 23

24. G—M becomes KLM monument HI our praise  
28. DF—M but as death  
31. LM humane lives

144. 5. G—M omit "doo"  
6. BD—M doth haps

7. KLM deceived  
9—14. What exclaiming...unto it. Cf. Appendix p. 564 l. 1  
14—16. Yea, he fel...body. Cf. Appendix p. 566 l. 7  
16—18. But the...time waste. Cf. Appendix p. 564 l. 16  
18—20. and therefore...one side.

This sentence does not occur in the folio editions  
20—23. and considering...death. Cf. Appendix p. 564 ll. 17, 22

145. 8. F—M pastorall times  
10. F—M of the  
13. A—M angry  
18. LM whose deserts  
22. ABCE—M terrors  
24. I his vice

29. A—M to be witnesse

534
NOTES

in margin 19. I matters of HI tragedie 26. I lost duties 27. E omits his before friends

160. 7. A-M occasions 11. HI widowhood LM widowed


163. 5. A-M was thus to 18. E omits (said he) 27. A-M their Prince 30. I Historiographers 31. I Astrologe 34. KLM insert is before to shew 38. E has:

On barren sweetes they feeding sterve:


166. 9. G-M omit his LM omit in 13. KLM of a rebound 34. A-M though but in


170. 1. F-M her selfe to that 8. E-M omit by 29. KLM ere she was A-M the badge 35. BD-M hath an


172. 7. A-M banished 17. ILM omit as 20. C has no division into stanzas

173. 16. LM she had present 17. DF-M retraction 19. C has no division into stanzas BD-M a stedfast 21. KLM defile my fancies FHI no comma after "defasie" 22. A-M shames

174. 16. M extremity 17. H hath oppressed

175. 7. F-M most excellent 19. A-M she ravingly have


NOTES

179. 8. A—M change did 34. E all but one 39. A—M
fine cleenes
180. 4. LM strength of mine 5. A—M confesse, that as
late 16—17. A—M you, the onely honour 22. A—M so ever
he be 30. I omits since 38. KLM delivered how
182. 20. E my sister 34. F—M their walking
183. 3. A—M omit But 4. A encreased, But cæ C en-
creased But came (There is a dot after encreased which looks like a
broken comma) BDF—M increased, but came 6. C condition
8—9. A—FI time a day GHKLM time aday 13. DF—M of
the agony
184. 4. ABD—M for victories C as victories 38. A—ILM
latter
age
as the abiding 10. E—M they shining 14. I were fault-
finding F—M & so given to 17. E—M omit a 40. A—M
insert and his lawes before as it were A—M his axioms
187. 10. A—M omit can E—M omit if 20. A—M delight
in their 26. AC by an accasion BD—I by an occasion KLM
by occasion 32. A—M was come 34. A—M betwenee their
188. 5. KLM folks 33. I omits his 39. E—M requiring
A—M of life
189. 9. A—M time so set KLM omit of 14. A—M of
Musidorus 23. D cruell heart F—M ill 31. D uttermost
heart
190. 11. KLM an habit 15. A—M nothing I so much
38. I yeares of war
191. 10. LM bound in his 12. A—M till now being both sent
for by Eunarchus, & finding Pyrocles able
192. 28. M others 30. LM where the
193. 2. KLM thunder 5. A—M floting kingdomes 6. L
natural 7. A—M the desolation A—HKLM far-being I
accused D on point 19. A—M omit not 24. H—M daies
cleerenesse EM so blindly
194. 1. A—M roaring voices 3. KLM passion 6. I for
his 9. KLM in the huge 17. KLM Musidorus's infancie
25. G—M of a great 32. A—M they mente to
195. 9. A—M Navie they lately had, they had left but one little peece
5. A—M exceeding 33. F—M on him, and
196. 14. BDE print Phrigia in Roman type 16. LM wicked
say, ever 36. BDE print Thessalia in Roman type 37. A—K
unsuccesse LM success
197. 3. A—M no humour 3—4. LM print there is no...service-
able in Italics 4. M whom impudent 5. A—M those of disparate

537
ambition 7. F—M as a servitude 11. KLM stirred up a
thought A—M take him away A—M from being 28. F—M
things prepared 34. I destroyed vertue 39. BD print Pontus
in Roman type E—M have "Bithynia" instead of "Pontus"

198. 8. A—M he ever profest 18. F—M the Tyrant
that wisht...worste of all:
199. 1. KLM causeth 25. HIM murder 32. D this
case 34. KLM Pamela smiling
200. 1. A—M making it a KLM omit in 3. KLM they
slew 34. M Art or some 35. F—M by some chaunce
37. E—M with a loud
to deliver them 27. BD—M fostered up in
202. 1. I hand 5. I for of good 6. KLM incline
avenge 24. KLM bearing up E—M land of Bithynia
27. G—M of the country 28—29. A—M revengefulness
30. A—M inconstant in his
203. 9. M burden 25. A—M insert death of the after late
BD—H print Phrigia in Roman type 38. A—M bubble blowne up
204. 1. A—M foresaw their 12. ABCE—M enclining
17. A—KM to their dead carcasses L to their death carcasses 22. KL
mariage to to the 33. M on the top
hands: and so they were
206. 1. E—M omit ever A—M make one occasion 5. G—M
valour
207. 4. A—M which a certaine A—M omit it 14. A—M
there instead of these 17. E—M griefe, and my
208. 11. HI have had mee 14. KLM ingrafted 23. C
such a one 39. I no farther 40. F omits a before bastarde
209. 3. A—M or to doo 5. ABD be used E—M she
used 9. A—M remembraunce, of naughtiness delightes 10. A—M
his trappes 27. EFGKLM my sea 29. KLM omit my
34. KLM murtherers 38. A—M felt a pitty 39. A—M
unslaine duety
11. A—M well deserving 25. HI filiall pitie 28. BD—M
agonie 29. BD—M so you shal 32. CKLM to take
38. CF—KM his brother
211. 2. CF—M but of two 7. A—M assayled 29. BD—M
it in others 31. A—M omit their 32. G—M valour
212. 18. G—M once united by 28. E—I this access of
KLM his access of 29. HI bale no longer A—M vitall spirites
32. F—M omit for 35. A—M omit men
NOTES

213. 1. A—M turningnes A of of sleights C off of sleightes
3. M grow of good 7. M denial will but 8. M make the
had more come 30. KLM omit his 32. L Plexirios 34. C
leave 35. G—M enjoy some benefite

214. 1. BD—I print Lycia and Armenia in Roman type 4. BD—I
print Armenia in Roman type 10. E— HKLM Evarus I Evarus
yong 16. BD—I print Lycia in Roman type

my graces E—M said I 16. M power 22. M farther
30. E—M as I 31. E—M my selfe

216. 4. G—M stole 11. KLM and speaking 12. M
River side 13. M in Greece M the praise 22. A—M
still would slippe 31 D thought it was 32. A as on bodie
C as no one bodie

217. 8. C omits it 25. M of a shrugging. 27. C omits so

218. 3. C make warres 8. E—K plaid then 12. KLM
perfection 33. M tongues may

219. 2. KLM angels 5. HIM two heavenly 30. M to
kiss

untie 29. BD—L their glad M there glad 37—38. E—M
omit commas in margin 40. A—M Hir thighes

hate-spott F—M Emerlin 38. Warn Snow

222. 12. E—M dwell therein 17. HI perfection 27. KLM
rayment 29. M of instead of upon 30. M bearing it away
G—M But when Zelmae 36. F—M in her selfe shee had

bastinado 33. KL bearing [catchword, instead of harkening] M hearing
[catchword] 36. D kill courtesie

224. 26. M omits yet 29. BD—M print Macedon in Roman type

225. 1. I prints Arcadian in Roman type 11. E solitarie paces
16. D left the smart 28. M hate to Zelmae

had 27. KLM he was forced 31. D at the first 34. F
omits if

life is helpe 21. F—M Which cries 32. HI judgements
35. F—M mournefull

228. 12. M then dip so 17. A—M have:
(Though in despaire) for Love so forthe me;
18. A—L shall Erona M shall Erona's 25. KLM dost move
26. A—M causefull 35. KLM omit "that" 36. A—M
beate us on to blisse

539
NOTES

229. 2. A—M Of windes  7. BD enflame 14. HI the
flames  36. E—M omit commas in margin  37. M his face
 39. HI onely lace

230. 1. LM touch  A—M we did  2. A—M that hand
these childish  23. C lamentation  31. BD—M knew
32. A—M From any joy  33. KLM In mortaille  35. M
Which swelling  36. M help  37. B—M painfulnesse
39. A—M this ougly

231. 15. A—M outward  A—M that most  30. M farther
32. A—M this Dialogue

232. 2. M omits a  3. A—M omit unto him after fully
24. G—M it could be no  26. M all them statues  28. ACF—M
Lydians BDE Lydians  35. C omits of after king
 BD—I
print Armenia in Roman type

233. 3. KLM by persuasions  KLM by threatnings  9. A—M
omit by before knife 14. M to to the holy  19. F—M no man
CKLM nor child  35. M praise her self  36. C tow
39. BD—I print Lycians in Roman type

234. 3. M on both  6. I Euardes M Euardus  22. E—M
were of farre greater  23. M Pyracles H Euardes M Euardus
24. BD—I print Bithinia and Hircania in Roman type
 28. M
Pyracles H Euardes  29. M these Princes

235. 1. M omits as  5. A—M her to preserve  6. CG—K
united  14. A—M shalbe still gnawing  23. M omits in
25. A—M partie

236. 3. A—M fruits of denying  A—M omit As  6. M
Amphitius's  F—L further M farther  8. KLM for his
death 11. A—M conditions  15. KLM omit yet to  17. LM
know 19. M constancy  24. E—M or weapon HI by or
30. M lamentation  31. LM unto the world  32. F—M by
all means  35. M reward  38. LM omit all

237. 8. C your years

238. 3. A—M full in your  A—M tattlings  6. KLM
omit it after have  9. F—M omit a before seven  13. M in my
neck 17. HI old instead of wold 18. HI old instead of wold
19. M omits as  34. C a long lace  M omits of before a man
37. M skirked

239. 2. HI of faire  3. BD—M parenthesis after priest, not
before  GKLM put the concluding parenthesis after had  EF no
concluding parenthesis  5. D we said BD—M ballads 19. M
deceit 31. AC blinde young, with BD—G blind, young with
HIKLM blind, young, with  26. M arrows too  35. M of
such  37. M did breed  38. Instead of this line A—M have the
following:

To lye, to steale, to pry, and to accuse,
NOTES

240. 2. A—M feete  11. F—M omit "stil"  H be deckt
I bedeckt  17. Instead of this line A—L have the following:
But for that Love is worst which rules the eyes,
M has:
But for that Love is worst that rules the eyes,
Ladies  28. M should  30. M with the beautifying her  35. D
would be

241. 4. C prehemencie  8. BDEFH—L that did ever M
omits did  12. M omits of  19. KL print And so...rejoice in
Roman type  M prints in May...rejoice in Roman type  HIM they
stole  25. F—M blessing, never to ask him  31. KLM such
instead of as  32. M Skrich-owl  40. M to the second

242. 4. F—M of that bargain  8. M the instead of this
26. BD his King  30. KLM beeing at first married

243. 3. KLM omit in before himselfe  E—M omit a after and
the other  34. E—M make them  38. M Father into a

244. 3. A—M attempt  11. M omits a before less  M
omits of before three  12. M behaved himself  16. M omits all
32. M fall to dispar  38. BD—GKLM omit I before repeat

245. 7. A thinking on other B—M thinking on no other  8
BD—M at first  E—M measures  12. M victorious over
the  17. EFGKLM besides was HI besides that she was  25. A
harm form  31. F—M print Sycophants in Italics

246. 12. I putting off objection  15. F—M many like
16—17. KLM print Ambition...lingring in Italics  17—18. KLM
print ever urgeth...successes in Italics

27. A—M hill where upon his  36. HI strove, strove to be M
starve, starve to be  37. GHKLM bolled I booled

brought thus to  19. F—M the same  27. LM omit him after
give  29. M farther  34. M bring him to a  35. BD she
should

249. 5. HI out of every  7. BD husbands mother  11. E—M
to put to her  17. A—M with a sword  20. F—M naked, yet
standing  40. HI engraven

250. 3. A—M did even  5. F—M in his Court  10. HI
his Sons counsell  35. A—M whose cause  36. F—M omit that
M omits it

251. 4. M in valor  20. I sometimes use  23. M is
sacrificed

252. 1. AC were not only  6. KLM of the devils  15. F
the could be  17. G—M sleep in their  20. M comforts
happy, be they  KLM that bee not  27. M omits thy  D to

541
this respect 28. HI a great part 31. M comly argument
32. KLM the head D with so wicked E—M only desire


254. 5. HI (said she) 20. HI asswaging 21. I my heart 24. G—M bent to 27. KLM no instead of to after yield 29. BD he should


256. 8. F—M omit so 30. E—L streame


258. 20. F—I consisted 27. A—M passe by the KLM respect 32. KLM hath com 36. M omits all

259. 11. A—M me into a 27. BD let it be E—M let it not be 33. M decree 37. C how he should

260. 7. BD surfet joy 28. F—M should I doe

261. 2. E—M to be loved 10. H Evarchus M had almost 15—18. E—M mouthes did, they passed the promise of mariage: which faine Pyrocles would have sealed with the chiefe armes of his desire; but Philoclea commanded the contrary. 33. BD—M my eares M so sweetly be fed 38. M farther


265. 10. G—M to get away 20. A—M ran all away 29. D she should A—M the sharpe remembrance 34—35. C Gentlemen

266. 3. M omits is 8. HI words full of 9. KLM such an one 11. A—M the delight A to thers 13. KLM such an one 23. KLM gave way 30. HIM what he had 31. KLM was the Prince 35. LM we would not 37. C transposes use and his
NOTES


268. 18. M whatsoever 23. BD lowlinesse 27. I omits in before my selfe 37. ABC villanie

269. 3. M with that trifling 17. I injures 29. A—E in ende 33. M till he were


271. 3. M beholden to 5. LM the instead of that 12. M sight to me 22. A in in mine 33. HI railed 36. I omits as

272. 3. M as it were 11. M transposes with and only 13—14. KLM print amongst...unpunished in Italics


277. 17. A—M alas poore


543
NOTES

282. 1. M farther 5. I alas more the 10. HI follow this 15. KLM print what in Italics 16. KLM print why in Italics 25. KLM omit fit before time
284. 11. LM as that time 19. KLM servant 20. LM Andronama 24. M farther A—M sonne, nor ever to 27. F—M insert an before eye LM Wee are 31. LM run a Tilt 32. KLM stranger
289. 11. M sand 24. KLM omit and 30. A—M a wethercocke
292. 1. A—M But in such sort 5. M our selves into either 10. F—M called instead of towarde 17. M do give 22. A—M the most martail D omits a 23. A—M bewondred E—M rare beautie 27. C the time 40. FGHKLIM into a stray I into a strange
293. 3. E—L would he 4. M not he suffer 9. M omits it 17. A—M vertue to rule it 24. KLM that gracious

544
NOTES

15. KLM each other, from delivering 18. FGHI omit as 21. E—M
each promised 25. D no more then those 28. A—M those
two worthie 30. M in their pitiful 34. M than dying in him-
self 37. M having believing

295. 3. M transposes us and to A—M care of him 12. M
the case M farther M transposes I and did

296. 1. C and the excellencie 5. M school than Love
Roman type 20. A—M with all speepe 26. M went to seek
presently 40. HIM swounings KL swoundings

297. 6. A—M harbingers 11. A—M transposes it and is
12. A—M gives me 22. A—M the modestie LM are amazed
25. BD—M transposes we and forthwith 31. A—M shortly would
opresse 33. A—M with that word she wept 38. A—M thinke
that I was

298. 2. G doe, because 8. A—M your well placed
24. I justly received 28. A—M come once into 32. F—M
that I may do 33. A—M transpose may and yet 37. M when
you were 40. M petition

299. 3. M her of her lightness 6. M and instead of that
11. A—M was of her selfe 26. A—M Otanes BD—M print
Giants in Roman type 27. M that instead of as 28—29. A—M
so far engaged 39. A—M auncient Lord 40. C good Castle

300. 2. M Plexyriuo 8. C that one child-birth 10. A—M
cunning to winne 15. M by Trebisond 18. C forget
28. F—M to a death 33. K omitted a before Tygre 37. A—L
his beast 39. M there instead of they A—M had in that G—M
monstrous strength

301. 4. F—M to perish 7. BD—M omit inverted commas in
margin 7—8. KLM print the journey...ways in Italies 11. A—M
not to trouble 24. D hast bene 25. M great friends
30. A—M Otanes 38. A—M Otanes

302. 30. CDG—M renowned 32. CDG—M renowned
36. KLM of the comparison

303. 1. M judges to speak 6. A—M longer from Erona
7. A—M who had made 9. KLM who, seemed a 10. KLM
omit parenthesis 24. KLM omit so M our selves unto 31. K
hath been LM have been 33. A—M And so having

into my mind 25. AC commas in margin 30. A—M shore, so
that they sawe 31. HI insert he after Then 32. GHI came
to the captain 33. HI it would seeme G—M dissuaded

drave us two 21. LM print less evill...a friend in Italies 29. A—M
evill auditors 30. A—M but by being last alive 33. M were

S. A. MM

545
NOTES

reduced M omits when 34. M weary, weary of those 35. M
was fast tied 39. KLM omit a before fire

306. 6. LM print a common...war in Italics 7. G—M all we
are E—M by some man 13. M till truly 17. M as it
might 22. LM to abide it 25. M omits owne 28. CF—M
to abide 40. KLM such manner

desired him that 31. H—M transpose so and be

308. 2. KLM and spake 22. A—M And so went 24. KLM
so much molested 28. E—M with such anguish

309. 3. M had been an 11. KLM smiling 34. A—M
fault 37. D though wise

transpose "finde" and "I" 9. M strength 11. I
Love makes
A wakes the the jealous 15. HI doe doeful 16. I
my prayers
prostrate 19. M jewel small

311. 10. KLM cried save 21. F—M trembling 23. F—M
omit a after such 24. E—M omit such HI omit an 25. A
omits for 38. A—M made him runne among

312. 1. KLM him for ever 5. FGKLM they verie killing
6. KLM by conquering 10. G—M he had 12. E—M and
his eyes 21. G—M being suter to 23. M he stoopped
30. A—M upon the side

28. A—M hindering the succour 32. F—M transpose onely and the
34. M opening

314. 3. KLM go up to 4. M guess of that A—M the
court gate 9. G—M daring approach 12. KLM his kindness
31. M to their 32. M crueltys 33. K omits the before
principal 38. E—M I am sent

315. 18. G—M looked to M he would never 22. F—M
the farmers 24. A—M al the Gentlemē 30. HI mislikings
35. LM the riches 39. LM to dividing

23. A—M this zealous rage M bent to these 24. A—M there
be instead of are 26. C new feared C Here he nether 30. F
It I is then G It is I then 31. M omits it 34. C a strangers
37. HI on me 38. M farther 39. LM omit it

317. 5. M omits or KLM omit not 12. KLM to make
with much labour 26. A—GKLM example a lesson to you HI
example a lesson unto you 31. LM omit with

318. 7. I transpose you and now 19. A—M such an admirable
38. KLM bent again such 40. M did guide

319. 2. A—M fault on his 20. BDEF shamefastnesse, in
nature, GH shamefastnesse in nature, I shamefactnesse in nature:
KLM shamefastness in nature; 30. M in the peoples
320. 4. M he had a prologue 5. M omits a 9. HI happy men 12. C your good Prince BD—HKLM or good Basilius 20. A—M never stay 23. HI most upon the 27. KLM scambling 31. M as the blow 39. M None were


323. 4. BD live or go 18. A—M glorious name of liberty 25. HI omit man FGLM speake to other 31. M funeral 40. KLM omit to before your health


326. 4. A—M of the cave 5. KLM was it is his 7. A—L fall 8. A—M omit inverted commas in margin 21. BD—M come with an 30. A—M this solitarie 39. FGKLM hold in (in my conceit) one II hold (in my conceit) in one


MM 2

547
NOTES

332. 1. HI way for her 11. BD—M murther 29. M in the two 31. M then taken 32. A—M begging of life
40. F—M guiltiness

333. 2. I Princesse 3. A—M women both more 16. B—E which he had not 30. BD he should yeeld 32. M love of her
38. A—M could give

334. 4. M an year 22. C be the authoritie 33. A—M this practise 37. KLM will to escape 39. F—M should lay

335. 9. A—M from her malice 14. A—M at the humble
16. F—M hated 18. BD—M print Pyramis in Roman type
33. LM of a far


BD—M recovering of his


339. 4. KLM a skirmish 13. A—M the Reasonable


31. BD fam’d

343. 3. I then thou mine KLM ear 4. LM do breed 5. L omits "a" 7. A—M others woe 8. KLM omit "so"

344. 12—19. the more...required. This passage is not in the folio editions
344. 20—348. 27. This dialogue is not in the folio editions
348. 28—349. 2. Some speech...persons. This passage is not in the folio editions, but cf. Appendix p. 564 ll. 11, 12, 30
349. 2—3. See Appendix p. 564 l. 40. 6. ABD—M delight am tyr’d
22. KLM no other 37. BD—M of sight a

548
NOTES

350. 3. KLM root 8. HK Klaius instead of Strephon 9. B
But cause 13. M from anchors Hope 23. M the years is
24. A—M no comma at end of line 25. BDG—M Hatefuly growne
BDEF sprong G—M sprung
37. A—M Thus, Thus alas, I had my

351. 1. A—M Thus, Thus alas, I had my 16. I transposes
"I" and "now" ACM shall fall 17. ABDEF sole have bent
CG—M sole have bent 20. KL earthy 21. L earthy
23. A—E heavens sell 27. A—M desastres to me 28. KLM
thou from, O mee! 30. M and to dedest 31. M and to detest
32. A—M But now I and end (O Klaius) now and end
33. A—M hatefull musique

351. 35—352. 1. So wel...own troubles. Cf. Appendix p. 564 l. 45
352. 1—5. And...unto them. This passage is not in the folio editions
6—11. Which he in parte to satisfie...uttered. Cf. Appendix p. 565 l. 40
12. A—M have:

Philisides.  
Echo.

Oh! I A—M I have mett 17. A—M approche: then tell me
which for to enjoy 29. K will no give F—M give me leave
30. A—M thy physic 31. KLM say they again A—M thy
advise for th' ev'ills 32. A—M of his harme 35. A—L that
leans M that learns BD—I to fannie KLM to fantasie
37. KLM made on mee these tormentes on mee to 38. A—GKLM go
die? Yea

353. 1. KLM from them from mee fall's 3. KLM can that art
bee A—HKLM have "that" instead of "which" I omits "which"
KLM by speech 5. HI these words KLM transpose "more"
and "me" C to blisse 7. A—M omit "bad" A—M but how
8. FGHM what I doe gaine KL what I do again KLM since
under her 10. Instead of this line A—M have the following:
Silly rewarde! yet among women hath she of vertu the most, Most.
What makes them be unkind? KLM speak forth ha'ist 18. A—M
Whence can pride come BD beautie he thence 22. AC is their
23. Instead of this line A—E have the following:
Tell yet againe me the names of these faire form'd to do ev'ills. Devill's.
F—I:

Tell yet againe me the names of those faire form'd to do ev'ills? Devill's.
KLM:

Tell yet again met the names of those fair form'd to doe ev'ills? Devill's.
24. AC Devill's? if in hell such devill's do a bide, to the hells I BD Devils?
if in hell such devill's do abide, to the hells I E Devils? if in hell such devil
do abide, to the hells I F—L if in hell such devill doe abide, to the hells I M
if hell such devil do abide, to the hells I 25. A—M omit "After this
well placed Echo," but cf. Appendix p. 565 l. 48 25—35. the other...private
desires. See Appendix p. 566 l. 19 36. A—E second Eclogues F—I second
Eclogues

549
NOTES

354. 11. A—M from looking out 15. KLM omit a 19. A—M
beames to thawe awaye 25. A—M omit commas in margin
28. I—M unexpected 34. M omits that after but

355. 5—6. KLM omit his cheere...Hope encouraging (exactly one line
in F—I) 8. C omits away 15. A—M first up to heaven
16. D mazed KLM omit the 20. KLM omit for 25. I—M
omit so 26. BD—M omit It was not an amazement 32. F—M into
lamentation 38. M other but Pamela 39. M despising it,
greedily

356. 7. A—M that image 18. KLM thought good to 19. M
omits to after and 21—22. A—M never pen did more quakingly
24. LM omit the before Muses BD—M print Muses in Roman type
34. M omits he M omits & before being A—M ended, was diverse
35. D til this reason

357. 13. A—M not now to grow 22. C craftie wretch
24. KLM last moment 28. I omits "of" 34. KLM cannot
bee hope 37. KLM tears of man

358. 1. E—M that do I not conceive 3. ACE—M that do I not
conceive C mouse clime 7. A—M an only relenting 11. D
love he reserved 12. A—M he thence must A—M only he liv'd
13. F—M the triumphes 14. A—M must I be A—M such
monument 20. A—M Planets tend 26. KLM omit "me"
after "had" 32. KLM veil 37. D hand- nayls

359. 3. A—M doo so excessive 5. A—M O not HKL
H had afforded 6. C leane D omits "a" 7. A—M Love
be so 8. KL boy should bee a M Boy, should he a
such faith be abolish 13. KLM not yet thus refresh
I worthy then such 21. F—M omit "more" 22. BD—M I
well should find

360. 14. G flame of fewel LM flame or farewell 22. KLM
transpose in and of 34. A—M beastfull might have bene 36. LM
full of graceful 38. F—M omit and

361. 7. G—M to them L who excellencies 14. BD—M
stirred up 17. KLM omit and 25. F—M omit yet

362. 8. BD—M burthened 10. G—M deliver to them
11. GHKL M smelling grapes 12. KLM childe with Bacchus
15. M cold wine 20. F—M on Zelmane 23. HI transpose
in vaine and crying 25. D omits the before injury 26. I—M
omit a before foure 28. BD—M omit that after time 30. A—M
omit of after mile 38. C Princesse

363. 35. C all speaches 36. A—M this country 37. A—M
but younger

364. 2. IKL obtaining 6. KLM of a subjection 8. KLM
omit on after troden 26. M have need to 28. L stop 29. M
nor instead of or 38. A—M omit commas in margin

365. 2. BDE it were faine 5. A—M two daughters 17. A—M
then an ordinary 18—19. A—M omit commas in margin KLM
print in all miseries...folks in Italics, all excepted, which is in Roman type
NOTES

33. I fine-wittie 34. A—M these goodly you 39. A—M omit commas in margin

366. 9. E—M transpose are and ever 11. M may once by 13. A—L under these base M under those base 15. A—M happie my policy hath brought matters 38. GHKL loveliness

38—39. A—M omit commas in margin

367. 9. IKLM was not dainty I into instead of unto 16. I tuftes 17. M black lustre 31. KLM murder

368. 2. G—M hapned 22. I motion of her 24. M transposes her and hear 28. M thy instead of the at end of line

32. H—M degree of death 33. AC omit am


371. 5. LM So that calling 7. I letters to those 9. KLM motion 10. E or instead of of 20. E—M he was then 22. I humours do blow 27. E—M transpose hide and indeed

372. 21. E—M as it were 26. A—M omit commas in margin KLM print new...remedies in Italics I required I omits there 28. I states 32. I states A—M he should be assailed


37. E—M yeares 40. A—M wittes instead of wills


375. 1. A—M to do some thing 3. A—E hand 5. KLM about where 31. A—M more beautifull 32. F—M transpose is and it 35. C when hee


38. F & constraints must


34. ABD—M color instead of full stop after knots C prints knots. but in E—M but she in hart 35. A—D full stop instead of comma after one
right better servitude 7. KLM carried away 9. M Amphialus
effectually L lauishing M languishing 14. E—M omit
intend 34. A—M even where she stood

382. 35—383. 22. O all-seeing Light...vertuous Musidorus. KLM
print this prayer in Italics M prints And pausing a while (383. 20)
said she (383. 21) Musidorus (383. 22) in Roman type

that I and thy creature 12. M omits so 13. E—M confidently
on 17. I if so seeme 21. KLM becom's of mee 30. D
they hap begun

384. 9. A—M fortune, which shoulde not onely have 14. LM
matcht 22. A—M at lest 36. LM rise

385. 20. HI amated mind 23. H burthen 25. KLM
omit as 27. K of this unassailed 37. A—M scarcely
40. A—M he would hide

386. 4. M omits the after more 18. A—M the country
24. I farther 25. E—M but to view 37. BD—M not knowing

387. 4. F—M rekening 6. HI into his 13. A—M
vampalt 24. I whether the pity A—M revenge against the
other 26. ABD and his hinde to his 34. BDE weapon 36. D
flew in peeces

388. 5. FGHKLM and the grones 11. M accident 13. I
33. F—M hand 35. A—M exercises

389. 8. A—M in the never 16. KLM went to battel
18. A—M mistrusting those verie guards lest they 24. KLM only
his face for 27. KLM upon his enemy 35. A—M away from
himselfe 37. F—M omit when

390. 2. BD escaping valiant hand ABD by base 10. A—M
But thus with G—M valour 15. E—M thrust just into 19. M
side of the 22. HI Philanax's KLM Philanax 25. A—HKLM
Deaths 28. F—M see their I murderers 29—30. E—I
Philanax sword KLM Philanax's sword 31. E—M squire
34. E—I omit his KLM Amphialus's G—M valour 35. E—M
to a most shamefull

391. 1—2. E—M asking advise of no other thought 6. A under
the the hande 10. M towards to him 11. BD—M meaning
to take 15. F—M espied 23. ABC bewaile and untimely
25. E—M falling feete 33. LM the caus of 36. A—M
where being 39. E—I Philanax men KLM Philanax's men

392. 5. KLM black as darkness 7. LM made him know
in margin 35. I scarcely 36. BD—HKLM armour

393. 5. E—M house 22. F—M right let backward 30.
KLM Fortune and Valor 35. I cryed unto him
NOTES


398.  24. G—M otherwise  36. E—M all that I


405.  7. KLM honouring it  15. I then she  21. E—M that would not be  26. G of of Autumn  27. I prints "april of your age" in Italies  34. A—M hidden  38. KLM imperfection

406.  14. KLM omit that  39. A—M chafe at the

553
NOTES

407. 5. A—M when instead of but 13. HI miserable foolish
34. A—M might have not 35. A—M so if chaunceable 35—36.
A—M omit as now being, the not being 38. KLM omit if

408. 3. KLM changeable effects 14. ABD his goodly F—M
omit a before earth 15. BD—M height of the ring E—M or
instead of nor 18—19. A—M omit or...of these 20—21. A—M
omit and eternitie...inconstancie 28. F—M absolutly 30. C un-
expresseable F—K unexpressible 31. E—M omit a after without
32—33. I unpossible 33. KLM unless that you will

regard any 17. M of the contrarities 20. I up to so high
22. A—M of a base 25. KL yield'd M yield 27. KLM
directed to an end of preservation 35. A—M this beastly absurditie

410. 1. A—M omit so 2. KLM print Books...defects in Italics
4. KLM need 21. M be known F—M if there were
A—M ougly shamefulnes

411. 9. F—M so fowle 12. A—M amazement of a M self-
excusing 33. LM both by any more

then to 20. M equital 21. I omits side 27. A—M who
restrained 32. C obeience A—M and so had 33. A—M
knowledges

413. 4. M both safe by 7. KLM consider he was A—M
and instead of but 15. M matter E—M dislike 21. ABE—M
will armed KLM comma before armed 22. A—M omit will 23. M
be prisoner 33. A—M omit much 37. I Philantus

print true...of honor in Italics 21. KLM reprehension 22. M
effect the glory 28. LM them a charge 31. A—M whence
she might 32. KLM And so soon as

415. 2. KLM and goodly 10. H of a tawnie 11. BD—M
figures 20. A—M facing the castle 25. KLM an hors
26. A—E freckned F—M freckled M stain 29. KLM when he
came

416. 1. E yet hunts it 5. A—M any thing to say to him
12. A—M Sunne in a cleare day shines 13. BD—M pawing upon
the M farther foot 15. G—M trumpets A—M sounding
ABD—HK together, Together they ILM together, together they 17.
E—M into the rest 19. M omits a before pleasant 24. F—M
breath of the other 25. E—M omit but 36. A—M omit the
before one D prints on instead of one F—M till they being
E—M come to the 40. M guided his blow

417. 3. KLM customed 5. A—M such force 7. M
farther E—I Phalantus horse KLM Phalantus's hors 17. I
seeing 23. M farther 24. M omits yet 25. F—I bring
to me the 32. A—M boiling into his 35. KLM print great
spending...remnants in Italics
NOTES

418. 2. A—M disdaining 14. DG—M renowned
28. KLM slave of weakness

419. 9. LM shee instead of he 16. K transposes to and bee
22. KLM slave of weakness

420. 7. G—M his quarrel 19. BD—M encreased their
of comma after one HI colon 22. A—M ever bred 32. F—M
lothsomnesse 35. A—M grew pale 37. ABC rocked a sleepe
D—M rocked asleepe

421. 4—5. A—M imported 10. A—M But by that time
22. LM adventurers

422. 3. A—M Where understanding 10—22. M prints this
passage in Italics, Amphialus excepted, which is in Roman type 13—14. A
and and make 14. A—M to heaven 15. F—M omit the before
wings G—M valor 18. E—M omit as 23. F—L print
this line in Italics KLM To his (m A—M transpose quickly and he
24—34. M prints this passage in Italics, Argalus excepted, which is in Roman type
24. D wore instead of more 36. A—M was al guided
D guided instead of guided 37. HI womens 38. F—M and
so spred 39. M out in the

423. 6. M worn in the Just, in time that 8. A—M In his shield
with striking 30. A—M maisters

424. 1. A—I Amphialus disarmed KLM Amphialus's disarmed
2. KLM force of Amphialus 5. I—M extend A—M blow
16. HI and mortall 17. A—M had over striken 25. AC
arise instead of arise 29. AC dissending BD descending 30. I
each on his 31. F—M garnished in bloud 32. HI rose with

425. 8. A—M of his best blood 11. KLM so instead of as after
not 21. AC semi-colon after sobbes 27. A—M as ever your
harte 29. M I might 33. D unwelcomme to me 34. A—M
Is that

if he had him 12. M to rest himself 26. F—M fallen? how
wert 30. LM omit in 31. A—M thou lead me

427. 1. A—M omit second my deare 26. CE—HKLM her
woman 27. A—M into the boat 28. A—M she would not
depart KLM com on the other 31. A—D these warlike E—M
their warlike 34. LM all was easful

428. 3. E—I Amphialus fame KLM Amphialus's fame EF
such was was his 4. M till did but 13. M forth to him 20. I
others

429. 1. BDEF merily G—M merily 6. BD—M print
throughout "Dametas" 10. K that every went 21. A—M
every body helping on 25. A—M omit and 29. A—M panting
33. A—M omit not after "Amphialus" 36. A—M him, that by
next morning

430. 10. LM omit to 14. HI from divers horses A—M
colour nor fashion 19. A—M with a great number of armes

555
26. A—M dog, and there is
30. A—M caused in a border about
33. E—M impatience
34. F in the land
35. I waited on

431. 16. A—D Dametas's friend
18. G—M the Letter
22. KLM omit "as"
26. A—M with all my
29. E—M paines
30. HI omit "I"
C omits "such"
31. B The
terrible words
32. A—D Dametas's courage
E—I Dametas
courage
KL Dameta's courage
M Damelas's courage
33. E thundrings
36. ABD—M this answere

432. 1. C omits (having...horsebacke)
E—M into the
5—8. C omits (the Gentlemen...scituated) and puts a semi-colon after little
5. F—M Gentleman
8. ABD—M for being
11. K inconveniences
15. C omits (contrarie...vices)
17. C omits (if he were overcome)
and puts a semi-colon after use
27. C omits (chosen for the purpose)
and puts a comma after judges
31. A—M Dametas horse
33. BC jogd blacke with
34. C omits that

433. 6. C when we was
19. M withal began to strike
20. A—M started back a good way
25. E—M omit of
26. A—L could
leade him
28. M followed him with
39. KLM used to the flail

434. 13. F—M to rise
19. BD sleepish
A—M quietnes
instead of countenaunce
30. F—M upon his

435. 2. A—M to his practize
11. F—M forced hiselve
14. F framed no smiling
20. C free scope
22. BD—M himselfe unto
26—27. A—EG—M sorts of the Amphiliains
F sorts of the Amphiliains
28. E—M discontent
32. A—M to his lure
33. A—M of the six

436. 5. M that one of them
6. KLM omit had
7. M than an ordinary
16. BD—M condemned
C hie hatred Pamela
31. M got
32. A—M a seate
33. D comfort
A—M discomforts

437. 10. D praise
16. D then creation
36—37. I transposes wearied and wounded

438. 5. A—M afterwarde to a promised gratefulnes towards
15. L destroying of her M destruction of her
20. C farther
28. A—DF—M thy wretched wiles
E they wretched wiles
31. I spake somewhat with

438. 39—439. 1. LM print who do...inferiors in Italics

439. 5. M according to Merits
7. A—M bare to Ismenus
15. A—D was occasiö of the E—M was by occasiö of the
16. HI Evardes
17. HI exceeding strong
19. F—M of parts worthy
23. M farthest-fetcht
28. HI inflexible
32. C side-gate

440. 15. F—M murthered I transposes he and did
18. A—M omit commas in margin
35. I transposes once and had

441. 9. F—M insert any before company
30. E wallaes, which
was a
35. D all possessed mindes

442. 1. B—M omit division into stanzas
A—M to see my wrongs
for
4. A—M his center keepeth
8. A—M night of evils
9. E

556
NOTES


443. 7. KLM he was 9. A—M were excused by the 29. E—M omit and ABCEF omit with 33. C three adventures 37. I lighted GHKLM beames of their 38. G—M valour 40. D examples

444. 1. KLM of this fight 12. A—M following over-earnestly 15—16. A—M omit commas in margin KLM print courage...manhood in Italics

445. 5. AM omit commas in margin KLM print unwelcom...injury in Italics M misprints unwtleome 9. M not only for the anlookedforness 13. A—M them a servant of 20. D omits alreadie 22. A—M whereon the one KLM was ready dead 26. M send a Damosel 28. F—M have done KLM as glad as any 32. M entertained 37. B then enemie


447. 22. H looking upon 33. A—M loath to departe


449. 1. BD was as subject to 4. A—M omit foorth A—M who was come into 11. A—M needes lende his 14. E—M of a faithfull 15. BD making of the marble E—M making of two marble 16. M Basilius caused himself A—M add the following epitaph:

The Epitaph.

His being was in her alone:
And he not being, she was none. [M gone]

They jo'ed one joy, one grieve they griev'd,
One love they lov'd, one life they liv'd.
The hand was one, one was the sword
That did his death, hir death afford.

As all the rest, so now the stone
That tomes the two, is justly one.

Argalus & Parthenia.

C omits division into stanzas

450. 5. G—M full of their 23. D all his mishaps 28. A—M So as all that 29. D—M and in the 30. BD the delight began to restore to each boy his

451. 18. A—M could no lager patch up 21. G maried the yong 27. M but by denial 39. E—M then they should look 36—37. A—M omit commas in margin KLM print lust may...servant in Italics 37. HI indeed, is a servant
NOTES

452. 4. E—M omit if 9. KLM print No is no...mouth in Italics
10. B—M omit commas in margin C speaking of a woman
KLM print a lover’s...liked in Italics 17. F—M example 20. D
obtained an habitation 23. M on both sides 30. C Jupiter
I the
manly-wooing 35. BD—M who would never like

453. 4. ABCG—M over-superstitiously D F over-superstitiously
who...obeied in Italics 28. M a Gentlewoman of

454. 3. G if thou liked not 5. M such an answer 6. I
also A—M daintily joyned 37—38. A—M by an excellent
painter excellently painted, with

455. 1. E—M omit with M prints was in Italics 4. A—M
forced favour 9. ABD—M formed into C formed in to
15. KLM Catoblepas 18. M beasts 28. A—M this combat
35. BD—M upon the quarrell 39. F—M that I confess,

omitted nowe HI most curteous 20. D not fire 22. A—M
fetching still new spirit 23. A—M keeping their sight that way as a
matter of 28. E—M motion of the Sunne 30. F—M omit his
31. E—M that instead of both

457. 2. BD—M assuring trust 4. F—M their horses 6. KLM
advantages 17. A—M staying their blacke couler, as if 18—19.
M so along a space 19. HI as well as his 30. F—M came
to himselfe 34. E—M his sword 39. A—M omit he was

458. 9. M was upon his 26. CD but a morsel 29. A—M
brought to fresh feeding 31. F—M of this manner of fight

459. 11. A—M strake him so mightie 16. M force give place
18. ABCE—M also was driven D was driven also
A—M the
sterne of cunning 23—24. M when only I 24. E—M fought
causelesse 31. F—M into this place 37. M ashamed E
my soule 40. D with thy owne

460. 26. C tale ship 26—27. KLM print make unto...com-
parison in Italics 34. M blow 35. M one of these

461. 1. FGI the latter 2. A—M hope 3. F—M brake
out into these 38. I seemed after-drops KLM of a storm

462. 8. BD—M burthen LM for instead of foe 23. C
silver sprangles 27. A—M began a most fierce 35. LM most
to deliver 36. E—HKLM most of all that I almost all that
39. F—M omit the before one

that hast BD—M battered the most 26. M would not have so

464. 10. ABCF Amphialus-is D Amphialus-is E—M to
one to another 17. BD—GK Chirurgians HLM Chirurgians I
Chirurgious 19. I—M waiting on it 27. GHKLM or instead
of nor

465. 8. BD—GK Chirurgians HILM Chirurgions 12. D
only to him 19. A—M because she would be the 31. HI in
a womanly
NOTES


467. 2. LM and therefore is 3. A—M omit commas in margin F—M it pleaseth 3—4. KLM print in extremities...of life in Italics 11. FGHKLM in amaze 28. F—M great, so to forethink 33—34. KLM print promiss...threatning in Italics 33—37. A—M omit commas in margin


470. 19. D omits same 22. E—M noise of


472. 13. F—M working 18. E—M would die F—M then to bee false 27. K though the clouds affliction 28. M self instead of els 32. KLM shee used to her 39. F—M but thou canst

473. 4. I her doing with their suffering 7. KLM she was in 11. D when in open 14. A—I Musidorus teares KLM Musidorus's tears

474. 7. A—M set in the eyes of men, to be 13. A—M sorest torment 22. I wherein they knew E—M they should be 25. BD—M further off 29. F—M to their enemie


476. 1. D aside ward 10. E—I of peevish 14. G—M both with bitter termes 28. KLM also vaulted 32. ABCE—M looke one to another D looke one to an other 34. E—K But then the houre 35. BD—GKLM beginne, and curtaynes HI begin, and the curtains

477. 1. KLM mouth to her 12. A—M even minding to 18. I at the first 30. I life into her 31. D when it was 36. E—M gone to a beautified heaven 37. ABD—M hast left me C hath left me 38. D ever did lament


479. 9. KLM more sensible 10. G Philiclea 20. A—M was most likely both to move 25. D extremities 29. D that instead of the after understood
NOTES

480. 7. G—L nor halfe 27. I—M how she should deale
33. A—M of that beautie 35. CM the woman 39. D to be
their
481. 5. M omits that after with 7. E—M no leasure A—M
turne it selfe into 9. D of the heart
482. 7. E—M omit so 17. KLM omit was 20. E—M
uncertainty 32. A—M taking his woonted
483. 3. BD—M over her face 6. ABD—M borrowed her beautie
C borrow- (end of line) her beautie 9. D omits an before amazement
21. F—M caried by the 22. F nor having 31. A—M Revenge,
Revenge unto him 35. KLM omit it 37. E—M destroying
of himself 39. K omits to after accessarie
484. 5. D omits he 9. ABCE—M into all his D into his
10. F—M teares, nor with a 18. C Unpappie 21. AC unhappie hast,
that haste 23. D to thy owne 28. I omits I after
loved 31. A—M hast left thy love in me 32. KLM they revenge
35. M look on thee when he gave the
485. 3. E—M that I would willingly 5. D with her is al my
hope 7. D can justice 12. KLM upon earth 13. BD
all my misfortunes C mis-fortune 28. M till I as it 30.
A—M omit he 33. E—M death unto you
486. 6. KLM wayling 9. KLM in the despite of 12.
though I do bemone 32. F—M reason so to doe 34. F—M
omits had 38. AC But that the speech
therefore bee comforted 33. A—M with teares of joy 37. BD
chiefe part indeed of all
488. 1. E—M omit now 6. BD—M farthest 10. A—L
into of cruely tormenting our M into of cruely tormenting our
14. A—M indeede it was not my sister 27—28. M so they had set
31. I but when they 35. B neither to receive
489. 2. LM with that joy 6—7. KLM torment 7. F
that of one of my 8. IM proceeds from 13. KLM omit the
before imprecations D imprecation 14. M farther 15. D
want of libertie 20. D of a abundance 25. CF—M prepare
thy selfe for the 35. C well-come be all my miseries 36. D
I pittie 37. D finde in mine
490. 10. M frame his mind 18. E—L contrarieties M con-
traries 19. KLM but instead of both 23. A—M now they
would have done it 25. M we might 32. BD—M who could
lively 33. KLM should lively paint the lightsom
34. A—I
finding then betweene 36. A—M his instead of with after sealed up
491. 1. BDEF moning lips 3. E—M omit had 9. E—M
messengers 10. A—F brought answers 11. M to in indite
A—M unfortunate affection 15. M with the countenance 22. D
mortall hatred 26. M to the possession 27. K their cruelitie
28. C ungodly 31. LM with his speech 34. D omits most
560
NOTES

492. 7. LM of great punishment 11. A—M was upon the top
15. K with his matter 33. BD—GKLM murdered 39. KLM
transpose enough and miserable
493. 3. HI Philoxinus 7. KLM Ismenius 9. KLM
my instead of thy 10. D the instead of thy 32. M by that means
D his double
494. 1. E—M omit a before good 9. M given me by other
event 24. A—M omit there before giving 32. D in their
destruction
495. 14. A—M omit up 15. I eyes levelled A—M from
top to toe 32–33. M difficulties 33. G—M valour
496. 24. A—M breathing nothing but 28. E—M all the former
34–35. KLM transpose yet and made 36. A—M strange disasters
497. 2. D transpose hast and thou 4. A—M but to weep
perfection
498. 23. A commas in margin
498. 30–502. 19. Among the rest...hath made glorious. In all the
folio editions this passage is to be found in the fourth Eclogues C omits
division into stanzas
498. 35. A—M Who most the silly 38. C bark
The bowels KLM will all 19. IM Princes weare 20. M
Tell these 21. I foretokens 25. M these words 30. KLM
all words 32. C stars in constant constant
500. 6. A—M omit commas in margin C Too well 8. G
that thou no 9. E—M mourning night 19. I be full spent
24. E daily raving 25. ACE o Sinne 27. AC set the triumph
30. ACD by the pompe 34. M it still 35. LM its self
omit commas in margin
502. 4. M of her sight C of our fight 12. BD grow our
14. F—M For such deep house 26. A—M consort of whose mourning
27. A—M naturall tunes of 29. F—M having before both their
24. I lost sound 33. ABCE Pamela steppes 38. D would not
have
have no comma after sadly and put a semi-colon after desperately 22. A—D
them was E—M then was 23. A—M bringing force 26. BD
his brother 28. F—M with still intention 37. E—M upon
his pride
505. 1. F—M already instead of ready 4. G—M Fame hath
not 21–23. BD omit be tied...thou so much
506. 6. A—M overcome braver Knightes 8. HI Evardes
S. A. 561
NOTES


508. 15. F—M unexpected 18. Between "Fortune" and since A—M insert since our owne parents are content to be tyrants over us 28—29. B—M omit commas in margin 35. B—M omit commas in margin A—M then will bee the time

509. 7. I gave consent 25. KLM the measure of that 40. KLM he hath found


512. 18. BD—M have their beleefe 19. A—M servant 26. D omits if 27. C having hard all this 29. D these excellent 36. D either for

513. 19. D such a one 23. E—M omit but 32. KLM stronger nimbleness 37. D mistresse


515. 4. I on the inside 25. E—M insert the before humane 26. FGHKLM as if hee lifted

516. 7. LM But when Pity 10. KLM omit a after such 17—18. E—M therewith 18. KLM yet hee did 20. KLM and that in all the 29. BD—M remembring of what 40. KLM omit as before glorie

517. 3. F—L semi-colon after revenging E—M injuries C slauchter 18—19. I perchance such 20. A—M that great body 23. KLM so they did differ

518. 3. A—M So that consenting 20. BD—M more terrible 36. D sayings


562
APPENDIX

The Eclogues being distributed in a different manner in all the folios, I append here an outline of the Eclogues as printed in 1593, giving the prose paragraphs which were then introduced. Such poems as appeared in 1593 for the first time will be printed in vol. II.

THE FIRST ECLOGES.

Basilius, because Zelmane so would have it etc. [see p. 126. l. 1—p. 132. l. 7 incl.].

Dorus did so well in answering Thyrsis, that every one desired to heare him sing something alone. Seing therfore a Lute lying under the Princesse Pamela feete glad to have such an errand to approch her, he came, but came with a dismaied grace, all his bloud stirred betwixt feare and desire. And playing upon it with such sweetenes, as every bodie wondered to see such skill in a shepeheard, he sang unto it with a sorrowing voice these Elegiake verses:

Dorus.—Fortune, Nature, Love, long have contended about me,
Which etc. [see vol. II.].

Dorus when he had soong this, having had all the while a free beholding of the faire Pamela (who could well have spared such honor, and defended the assault he gave unto hir face with bringing a faire staine of shamefastnes unto it) let fall his armes, and remained so fastened in his thoughts, as if Pamela had graffed him there to growe in continuall imagination. But Zelmane espying it, and fearing he should too much forget himselfe, she came to him, and tooke out of his hand the Lute, and laying fast hold of Philocleas face with her eyes, she soong these Sapphikes speaking as it were to hir owne hope.

If mine eyes can speake to doo harty errande,
Or mine etc. [see p. 143. l. 15—p. 144. l. 8 incl.].

Great was the pleasure of Basilius, and greater would have bene Gynacias, but that she found too well it was intended to her daughter. As for Philoclea she was swetely ravished withall. When Dorus desiring in a secret maner to speake of their cases, as perchance the parties intended might take some light of it, making lowe reverence to Zelmane, began this provoking song in hexameter verse unto her. Whereunto she soone finding whither his words were directed (in like tune and verse) answered as foloweth:

Dorus. Zelmane.

Dorus. Lady reservd by the heav'ns to do pastors company honnor,
Joyning etc. [see vol. II.].

563
APPENDIX

What exclaiming praises Basilius gave to this Eclogue any man may ghesse, that knowes love is better then a paire of spectacles to make every thing seeme greater which is sene through it: and then is never tongue tied where fitt commendation (whereof womankinde is so likerouse) is offered unto it. But before any other came in to supplie the place, Zelmane having heard some of the shepheards by chaunce name Strephon and Klaius, supposing thereby they had bene present, was desirous both to heare them for the fame of their frindly love, and to know them, for their kindenesse towards her best loved frinde. Much grieved was Basilius, that any desire of his mistresse should bee unsatisfied, and therefore to represent them unto hir (aswell as in their absence it might be) he commended on Lamon, who had at large sett down their country pastimes and first love to Urania to sing the whole discourse which he did in this manner.

A Shepheards tale no height of stile desires
To raise etc. [see vol. II.].

As Lamon would have proceded, Basilius knowing, by the wasting of the torches that the night also was farre wasted, and withall remembering Zelmanes hurt, asked hir whither she thought it not better to reserve the complaint of Klaius till an other day. Which she, perceiving the song had alreadie wore out much time, and not knowing when Lamon would ende, being even now stepping over to a new matter, though much delighted with what was spoken, willingly agreed unto. And so of all sides they went to recommend themselves to the elder brother of death.

The end of the first Booke.

THE SECOND ECLOGUES.

The rude tumult of the Enisplians gave occasion etc. [see p. 339. l. 1—p. 344. l. 9 incl.].

When they had ended to the good pleasing of the assistants, especiallie of Zelmane, who never forgot to give due commendatios to her friend Dorus, Basilius called for Lamon to end his discourse of Strephon & Klaius, wherewith the other day he marked Zelmane to have bene exceedingly delighted. But him sicknesses had staied from that assemblie. which gave occasion to Histor and Damon two yonge shepheards, taking upó them the two frindly rivalles names, to present Basilius with some other of their complaints Eclogue-wise, and first with this double Sestine.

Strephon. Klaius.

Strephon. Ye Goteheard Gods, that love the grassie mountaines, Ye Nymphes etc. [see p. 141. l. 4—p. 143. l. 9 incl.].

But, as though all this had bene but the taking of a taste of their wailings, Strephon againe bega this Dizaine, which was answered unto him in that kind of verse which is called the crowne.

Strephon. Klaius.

Strephon. I Joy in griefe, and doe detest all joyes: Despise delight etc. [see p. 349. l. 5—p. 351. l. 34 incl.].

So well were these wailefull complaints accorded to the passions of all the princely hearers, while every one made what he heard of another the ballance of his owne fortune, that they stood a long while striken in a sad and silent
consideration of them. Which the olde Geron no more marking then condemning in them, desirous to set forth what counsails the wisedome of age had layde up in store against such fancies (as he thought) follies of youth (yet so as it might not apere that his wordes respected them) bending himselfe to a young shepheard named Philisides, (who neither had daunced nor song with them, and had all this time layne upon the ground at the foote of a Cyppresse tree, leaning upon his elbowe with so deepe a melancholy that his sences caried to his minde no delight from any of their objects) he strake him upon the shoulder, with a right old mans grace, that will seeme livelier then his age will afford him, And thus began unto him his Ecloge.

Geron. Philisides.

Geron. Up, up Philisides, let sorrowes goe, Who yelds etc. [see vol. II.].

Geron was even out of countenance, finding the words he thought were so wise, winne so little reputation at this young mans hands; and therefore sometimes looking upon an old acquittance of his called Mastix, one of the repiningest fellows in the world, and that beheld no body but with a minde of mislike (saying still the world was amisse, but how it should be amended, he knew not) sometimes casting his eyes to the ground, even ashamed to see his gray haires despired, at last he spied his two dogges, whereof the elder was called Melampus, and the younger Lalaps (in deed the jewells he ever had with him) one brawling with another; which occasion he tooke to restore himselfe to his countenance, and rating Melampus, he began to speake to his dogges, as if in them a man should finde more obedience then in unbridled young men.

Geron. Mastix.

Geron. Downe, downe Melampus; what? your fellow bite? I set you etc. [see vol. II.].

And away with his doggs streight he went as if he would be sure to have the laste worde: all the assemblie laughing at the lustines of the olde fellowe who departed muttering to himselfe he had sene more in his daies then twentie of them. But Basilius, who never before had heard Philisides (though having seldome failed to be at these metings) desired him hee woulde begin some Ecloge with some other of the shepheardes according to the accustomed guise. Philisides though very unwilling, at the Kings comauandmet offred to sing with Thyrsis. But he directly refused him, seing, he should within few daies be maried to the faire Kala; and since he had gotten his desire he would sing no more. Then the king willed Philisides to declare the discourse of his owne fortunes unknown to them as being a stranger in that countrie but hee praid the King to pardon him, the time being farre to joyful to suffer the rehearsall of his miseries. But to satisifie Basilius someway, hee began an Eclogue betwixt himselfe and the Echo, framing his voice so in those desert places as what wordes he would have the Echo replie unto, those he woulde sing higher then the rest; and so, kindelie framed a disputation betwixt himselfe and it, which with these hexameters in the following order he uttered.

Philisides.

Echo.

Faire Rocks, goodly rivers, sweet woods, when shall I see peace? Peace, Peace? etc. [see p. 352. l. 12—p. 355. l. 24 incl.].

Philisides was commended for the placing of his Echo, but little did hee regarder their praises, who had sett the foundation of his honour there, where hee was most despisde: and therefore returning againe to the traine of his
APPENDIX

desolate pensiveness, Zelmanes seing no body offer to fill the stage, as if her long restrayned conceates did now burst out of prison: she thus desiring her voice should be accorded to nothing, but to Philocleas eares, threw downe the burden of her minde in Anacreous kinde of verses.

My muse what ails this ardour
To blase etc. [see vol. 11.]

Basilius when shee had fully ended her song, fell prostrate upon the ground, and thanked the Gods they had preserved his life so longe, as to heare the very musicke they themselves used, in an earthly body. And then with like grace to Zelmane never left intreating her till she had (taking a Lyra Basilius helde for her) song these Phalezciakes

Reason, tell me thy mind, if here be reason
In this strange etc. [see vol. 11.]

Dorus had long he thought kept silence from saying, somewhat which might tend to the glorie of her in whom all glory to his seeming was included, but nowe hee brake it, singing these verses called Asclepiadites.

O sweet woods the delight of solitarines!
O how much etc. [see vol. 11.]

The other Shepeheards were offring themselves to have continued the sportes, but the night had so quietlie spent the most parte of herselue among them that the king for that time licèsed the. And so bringing Zelmane to her lodging, who would much rather have done the same for Philoclea, of all sides they went to counterfett a sleepe in their bedd, for a trewe one there agonies could not aforde them. Yet there they Lay (so might they be moste solitarie for the foode of their thoughts) til it was neere noone the next day, after which Basilius was to continue his Appollo devotions, and the other to meditate upon their private desires.

The end of the second Eclogues.

The following variations have been noted between the text printed above from A and the other folios:

563. 17. KLM had sung thus 18. M transposes well and have
29. E maner so to

564. 4. E mankind is so LM liquorish 39. LM state of
their wailings 47. F—M a good while KLM in sad & silent

565. 10. LM this Eclogue 33. C to the customed guise
48. KLM the place of his 49. HI omit sett after had LM
foundations

566. 1. C Zelmane 2. KLM long constrained conceits
4. BD—M Anacreons 8. KLM as hear the 16. KLM
Asclepiades 21. KLM licensed them to depart 23. I beds
DF their agonies 26. I to mediate 28. F—I print Eclogues
in Roman type KLM have “Book” instead of “Eclogues”
ALPHABETICAL TABLE OF THE PERSONAGES IN ARCADIA

[The following Table does not contain the Personages introduced in the Eclogues.]

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ALPHABETICAL TABLE OF THE PERSONAGES IN ARCADIA</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Aeschylus, Bk. III, Ch. 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Agenor, brother of Philanax, Bk. III, Ch. 7, 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amiclas, King of Lacedaemon, Bk. I, Ch. 5, 7, 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amphialus, nephew of Basilius, Bk. I, Ch. 10, 11, 15, Bk. II, Ch. 11, 15, 18, 27, Bk. III, Ch. 2—9, 11—18, 23, 24, 25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anaxius, nephew of Euardes, Bk. II, Ch. 18, 19, 24, Bk. III, Ch. 15, 19, 25—29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andromana, Queen of Iberia, Bk. I, Ch. 16, Bk. II, Ch. 15, 20, 21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Antiphilus, Bk. II, Ch. 13, 14, 23, 24, 29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arcadia, King of, see Basilius</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Argalus, Bk. I, Ch. 5—8, 16, Bk. III, Ch. 12, 16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Argos, King of, Bk. III, Ch. 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Armenia, King of, see Tiridates</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Armenia, Queen of, see Artaxia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Artaxia, Queen of Armenia, Bk. I, Ch. 16, Bk. II, Ch. 13, 15, 19, 23, 29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Artesia, Bk. I, Ch. 15—17, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 14, 21, 23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baccha, Bk. I, Ch. 16, Bk. II, Ch. 22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barzanes, King of Hycania, Bk. II, Ch. 10, 13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Basilius, King of Arcadia, Bk. I, Ch. 3, 4, 13—17, 19, Bk. II, Ch. 1, 4, 11, 12, 15, 16, 25—28, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 4, 8, 9, 11—13, 15, 16, 18—20, 25, 27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bithynia, King of, Bk. II, Ch. 22, 23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cecropia, mother of Amphialus, Bk. I, Ch. 11, 15, 19, Bk. II, Ch. 27, 28, Bk. III, Ch. 2—6, 9—12, 14, 17—24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chremes, father of Dido, Bk. II, Ch. 19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Claius, Bk. I, Ch. 1, 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clinias, Bk. II, Ch. 26—28, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 4, 7, 11, 13, 14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clitophon, son of Kalander, Bk. I, Ch. 4—6, 8, 10, 11, 17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Codrus, Bk. III, Ch. 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Corinth, Queen of, see Helen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crete, King of, Bk. II, Ch. 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ctesiphon, Bk. III, Ch. 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Personages</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Daiphantus, see Pyrocles</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Daiphantus, see Zelmane, daughter of Plexirtus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dametas, Bk. I, Ch. 3, 4, 13, 19, Bk. II, Ch. 2—5, 25, 28, Bk. III, Ch. 13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Demagoras, Bk. I, Ch. 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dido, Bk. II, Ch. 18, 19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dorilaus, Prince of Thessalia, father of Musidorus, Bk. II, Ch. 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dorus, see Musidorus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drialus, Bk. III, Ch. 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ehs, Princess of, Bk. I, Ch. 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elpine, Bk. I, Ch. 17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Erona, Queen of Lycia, Bk. I, Ch. 16, Bk. II, Ch. 10, 12, 13, 18, 29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Erona, Queen of Lycia, see Andromana</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eurylen, nephew of Amiclas, Bk. I, Ch. 5, 7, 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Galatia, King of, see Leonatus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Giants, the two, and their sons, Bk. II, Ch. 9, 23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gynecia, wife of Basilius, Bk. I, Ch. 3, 13—15, 17—19, Bk. II, Ch. 1, 4, 16, 25, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 9, 16, 19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Helen, Queen of Corinth, Bk. I, Ch. 7, 10, 11, 16, 17, Bk. II, Ch. 21, Bk. III, Ch. 25, 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Helots, the, Bk. I, Ch. 2, 5—7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hippolitus, Bk. III, Ch. 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Iberia, King of, Bk. II, Ch. 15, 19, 20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Iberia, Queen of, see Andromana</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ismenus, brother of Artesia, Bk. I, Ch. 11, 15, Bk. III, Ch. 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kalander, Bk. I, Ch. 2—10, Bk. III, Ch. 19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knight, the Black, see Musidorus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knight, the Forsaken, see Musidorus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knight, the Green, Bk. III, Ch. 15, 18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knight, the Ill-apparelled, see Pyrocles</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knight, the White, Bk. III, Ch. 15, 18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lacedemon, King of, see Amiclas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lacemon, Bk. I, Ch. 16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lalus, Bk. I, Ch. 17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Leitus, Bk. II, Ch. 21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Leon, Bk. I, Ch. 17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Leonatus, King of Galatia, brother of Plexirtus, Bk. II, Ch. 10, 22—24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Leontius, Bk. III, Ch. 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Leucippe, Bk. I, Ch. 16, Bk. II, Ch. 22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Leucippos &amp; Nelsus, Bk. II, Ch. 7, 9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lycia, Queen of, see Erona</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lycurgus, brother of Anaxius, Bk. III, Ch. 15, 18—20, 25—28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lydia, King of, Bk. II, Ch. 6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Macedonia, King of, see Euarchus

Megalus, Bk. III, Ch. 8

Memnon, Bk. III, Ch. 7
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Book</th>
<th>Chapter(s)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Menalcas, Bk. 1</td>
<td>Ch. 18</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milo, Bk. III</td>
<td>Ch. 8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miso, wife of Dametas</td>
<td>Bk. 1</td>
<td>Ch. 3, Bk. II, Ch. 2, 5, 6, 11, 14—16, 24, 25, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mopsa, daughter of Dametas</td>
<td>Bk. 1</td>
<td>Ch. 3, Bk. II, Ch. 2, 5, 6, 11, 14, 25, Bk. III, Ch. 1, 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Musidorus, Prince of Thessalia</td>
<td>Bk. 1</td>
<td>Ch. 1—6, 8—12, 14, 15, 17—19, Bk. II, Ch. 2, 3, 5—11, 13, 18—27, 29, Bk. III, Ch. 1, 8, 15, 18, 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nelsus</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nestor, Bk. 1</td>
<td>Ch. 17</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nisus, Bk. III</td>
<td>Ch. 7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Otaves, brother of Barzanes</td>
<td>Bk. 11</td>
<td>Ch. 23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Palemon, Bk. III</td>
<td>Ch. 8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Palladius, son of Andromana</td>
<td>Bk. II</td>
<td>Ch. 15, 20, 21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pamela, daughter of Basilius</td>
<td>Bk. 1</td>
<td>Ch. 3, 13, 15, 17—19, Bk. II, Ch. 2, 3, 5, 6, 11, 12, 14, 25, 28, Bk. III, Ch. 1, 2, 6, 9, 10, 11, 14, 19—21, 23, 24, 26—28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pamphilus, Bk. II</td>
<td>Ch. 18</td>
<td>19, 22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pannonia, King of</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paphlagonia, King of</td>
<td>Bk. II</td>
<td>Ch. 10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Parthenia, Bk. 1</td>
<td>Ch. 5, 7, 8, 16, Bk. III, Ch. 12, 16</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phalantus, brother of Helen, Queen of Corinth</td>
<td>Bk. I, Ch. 15—17, Bk. III, Ch. 11</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pheblius, Bk. I</td>
<td>Ch. 17</td>
<td>Bk. III, Ch. 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Philanax, Bk. 1</td>
<td>Ch. 4, 28, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 4, 8, 9, 13, 15, 16, 18, 19, 26, 27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Philiscides, Bk. II</td>
<td>Ch. 21</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Philoclea, daughter of Basilius</td>
<td>Bk. 1</td>
<td>Ch. 3, 13—14, 17, 19, Bk. II, Ch. 4, 5, 11, 12, 14, 16, 17, 21, 24—26, 28, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 3, 5, 6, 9, 11, 12, 14, 19—24, 26—28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Philoxenus, Bk. I</td>
<td>Ch. 11</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phrygia, King of</td>
<td>Bk. II</td>
<td>Ch. 7, 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phrygia, the new King of</td>
<td>Bk. II</td>
<td>Ch. 8, 23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plangus, son of the King of Iberia</td>
<td>Bk. II</td>
<td>Ch. 10, 12, 13, 15, 29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plexirtus, brother of Leonatus</td>
<td>Bk. II</td>
<td>Ch. 10, 22—24, 29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plistonax, Bk. III</td>
<td>Ch. 8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Policrates, Bk. III</td>
<td>Ch. 7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Polixena, Bk. I</td>
<td>Ch. 17</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Polycetes, Bk. I</td>
<td>Ch. 17</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pontus, King of</td>
<td>Bk. II</td>
<td>Ch. 9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pontus, the new King of</td>
<td>Bk. II</td>
<td>Ch. 9, 10, 22—24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pyrocles, Prince of Macedonia, sometimes called Daiphantus, Zelmane, the Ill-apparelled Knight</td>
<td>Bk. I, Ch. 5—10, 12—19, Bk. II, Ch. 1—4, 6—29, Bk. III, Ch. 2, 14, 19—24, 26—29</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarpedon, Bk. III</td>
<td>Ch. 8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strephon, Bk. I</td>
<td>Ch. 1, 2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strophilus, Bk. III</td>
<td>Ch. 8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Name</td>
<td>Book</td>
<td>Chapter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>---------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Telamon</td>
<td>I</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Telenor</td>
<td>see</td>
<td>Tydeus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thessalia,</td>
<td>see</td>
<td>Dorilaus and Musidorus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thrace, King</td>
<td>II</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Timotheus,</td>
<td></td>
<td>father of Philoxenus, I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tiridates,</td>
<td>II</td>
<td>10, 13, 15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tressennius,</td>
<td>III</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tydeus &amp; Telenor</td>
<td>II</td>
<td>10, 22, 23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Urania</td>
<td>I</td>
<td>2, 16, 17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zelmane,</td>
<td>see</td>
<td>Pyrocles</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zelmane,</td>
<td></td>
<td>Plexirtus' daughter, sometimes called Daiphantus, I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>II, 20—23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zoana</td>
<td>I</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zoilus, brother</td>
<td>III</td>
<td>15, 18—20, 25—28</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDEX OF FIRST LINES OF POEMS

A hatefull cure with hate to heale 325
Alas how long this pilgrimage doth last 227
And are you there old Pas? in troth I ever thought 344
Apollo great, whose beames the greater world do light 328
As I my little flocke on Ister banke 132

Come Dorus, come, let songs thy sorowes signifie 127
Come shepheards weedes, become your masters minde 113

Dorus, tell me, where is thy wonted motion 340
Faire rocks, goodly rivers, sweet woods, when shall I see peace? Peace 352

His being was in her alone 557
I Joye in griefe, and doo detest all joyes 349
If mine eyes can speake to doo harty errande 143
In faith, good Histor, long is your delay 137
In vaine, mine Eyes, you labour to amende 147

Let not old age disgrace my high desire 149
Loved I am, and yet complaine of Love 253

Me thought some staves he mist: if so, not much amisse 285
My sheepe are thoughts, which I both guide and serve 163
My words, in hope to blaze my stedfast minde 173

Now thanked be the great God Pan 122
Now was our heav'ly vaulete deprived of the light 394

Over these brookes trusting to ease mine eyes 257
Poore Painters oft with silly Poets joyne 239
Since so mine eyes are subject to your sight 155
Since that to death is gone the shepheard hie 498

The Fire to see my woes for anger burneth 442
Thou Rebell vile, come, to thy master yelde 339
Thy elder care shall from thy carefull face 327
Transformd in shew, but more transformd in minde 76

Unto a caitife wretch, whom long affliction holdeth 357
We love, and have our loves rewarded 126
What length of verse can serve brave Mopsas good to show 21
What toong can her perfections tell 218
Wyth two strange fires of equall heate possest 310

You Gote-heard Gods, that love the grassie mountaines 141
You living powres enclosed in stately shrine 172

571
CORRIGENDA

130. 35.  *Add inverted commas in the margin*

231. 10.  *Add full stop after Basilius*

257. 4.  *for you selves read your selves*

262. 35.  *for "Evardes" read "Euardes"*

325. 13.  *The mark of quotation should be in the margin*

334. 5.  *for towar[ds] read towar[d]s*